T. E. PETERSON'S
Cheap Book Store,
Cor. Fifth & Arch sts.
PHILADELPHIA.

Theological Seminary.
PRINCETON, N. J.
Part of the
ADDISON ALEXANDER LIBRARY,
which was presented by
MESSRS. R. L. AND A. STUART.

Case, Division SCC
Shelf, Section 3405
Book, No. V.2:1

S. L. Alexander


Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2011 with funding from
Princeton Theological Seminary Library

http://www.archive.org/details/historyofreforma21burn

BISHOP BURNET'S

HISTORY

OF

THE REFORMATION

OF THE

CHURCH OF ENGLAND.

A New Edition,

EMBELLISHED WITH

TWENTY-TWO PORTRAITS & FRONTISPIECE.

IN SIX VOLUMES:

VOL. II.—PART I.

LONDON:

PRINTED BY J. F. DOVE, ST. JOHN'S SQUARE;

FOR RICHARD PRIESTLEY, HIGH HOLBORN.

1820.

PROPERTY OF PRINCETON THEOLOGICAL SEMINARY.

THE

PREFACE.

THE favourable reception which the former part of this Work had, together with the new materials that were sent me from noble and worthy hands, have encouraged me to prosecute it, and to carry down the History of the Reformation of this Church, till it was brought to a complete settlement in the beginning of Queen Elizabeth's reign, which I now offer to the world.

The great zeal of this age for what was done in that, about religion, has made the History of it to be received and read with more than ordinary attention and care: and many have expressed their satisfaction in what was formerly published, by contributing several papers of great consequence to what remained: and since I found no part of the first volume was more universally acceptable, than that wherein I was only a transcriber, I mean the Collection of Records and Authentic Papers, which I had set down in confirmation of the more remarkable and doubtful parts of the History; I continue the same method now. I shall repeat nothing here that was in my former Preface; but refer the reader to such things as concern this History in general, and my encouragement in the undertaking and prosecution of it, to what is there premised to the whole work: and therefore I shall now enlarge on such things as do more particularly relate to this volume.

The papers that were conveyed to me from several hands are referred to, as the occasion to mention them occurs in the History, with such acknowledgments as I thought best became this way of writing, though far short of the merits of those who furnished me with them. But the storehouse from whence I drew the greatest part both of the History

and Collection, is the often-celebrated Cotton Library; out of which, by the noble favour of its truly learned owner, Sir John Cotton, I gathered all that was necessary for composing this part, together with some few things which had escaped me in my former search, and belong to the first part: and those I have mixed in the Collection added to this volume upon such occasions as I thought most pertinent. But among all the remains of the last age, that are with great industry and order laid up in that treasury, none pleased me better, nor were of more use to me, than the Journal of King Edward's reign, written all with his own hand: with some other papers of his, which I have put by themselves in the beginning of the Collection: of these I shall say nothing here, having given a full account of them in the history of his reign, to which I refer the reader. I find most of our writers have taken parcels out of them, and Sir John Heyward has transcribed from them the greatest part of his book; therefore I thought this a thing of such consequence, that upon good advice I have published them all, faithfully copied from the originals.

But as others assisted me towards the perfecting this part, so that learned divine, and most exact inquirer into historical learning, Mr. Fulman, rector of Hamton Meysey in Gloucestershire, did most signally oblige me, by a collection of some mistakes I had made in the former Work. He had for many years applied his thoughts with a very searching care to the same subject, and so was able to judge more critically of it than other readers. Some of those had escaped me, others had not come within my view; in some particulars my vouchers were not good, and in others I had mistaken my authors. These I publish at the end of this volume, being neither ashamed to confess my faults, nor unwilling to acknowledge from what hand I received better information. My design in writing is to discover truth, and to deliver it down impartially to the next age; so I should think it both a mean and criminal piece of vanity to suppress this discovery of my errors. And though the number and consequence of them had been greater than it is, I should rather have submitted to a much severer penance, than have left the world in the mistakes I had led them into: yet I was not a little pleased to find that they were

neither many nor of importance to the main parts of the History; and were chiefly about dates, or small variations in the order of time. I hope this part has fewer faults, since that worthy person did pursue his former kindness so far as to review it beforehand: and with great judgment to correct such errors as he found in it: those I had formerly fallen into, made me more careful in examining even the smallest matters. Yet, if after all my care, and the kind censures of those who have revised this Work, there is any thing left that may require a further retractation, I shall not decline to make it so soon as I see there is need of it, being, I hope, raised above the poor vanity of seeking my own reputation by sacrificing truth to it.

Those to whose censure I submitted this whole History in both its parts, were chiefly three great divines, whose lives are such examples, their sermons such instructions, their writings such unanswerable vindications of our church, and their whole deportment so suitable to their profession, that as I reckon my being admitted into some measure of friendship with them, among the chief blessings of my life, so I know nothing can more effectually recommend this Work, than to say that it passed with their hearty approbation, after they had examined it with that care, which their great zeal for the cause concerned in it, and their goodness to the author, and freedom with him, obliged them to use. They are so well known, that, without naming them, those of this age will easily guess who they are; and they will be so well known to posterity, by their excellent writings, that the naming them is so high an advantage to my book, that I much doubt whether it is decent for me to do it. One of them, Dr. Lloyd, is now, while I am writing, by his Majesty's favour, promoted to the bishoprick of St. Asaph: a dignity to which how deservedly soever his great learning, piety, and merit, have advanced him, yet I particularly know how far he was from any aspirings to it. It was he I described in my former Preface that engaged me first to this design, and for that reason he has been more than ordinary careful to examine it with that exactness that is peculiar to him. The other two are the reverend, learned, and judicious deans of Canterbury and St. Paul's, Dr. Tillotson and Dr. Stillingfleet, too well known to receive any addition from the characters I can give of them.

Others gave me supplies of another sort, to enable me to go through with an undertaking that put me to no small expense. I am not ashamed to acknowledge, that the straitness of my condition made this uneasy to me, being destitute of all public provision: but I should be much ashamed of my ingratitude, if I did not celebrate their bounty who have taken such care of me, as not to leave this addition of charge on one who lives not without difficulties. I must again repeat my thanks, for the generous kindness, protection, and liberal supplies, of Sir Harbottle Grimstone, master of the rolls, this being the sixth year of my subsistence under him, to whom I must ever acknowledge that I am more beholding than to all men living. The noble Mr. Boyle, as he employs both his time and wealth for the good of mankind (for which he considers himself as chiefly born, and which he has promoted not only in his own excellent writings, that have made him so famous over all the world, but in many other designs that have been chiefly carried on at his cost), so hath he renewed his kindness to me in largesses suitable to so great a mind. Others were also pleased to join their help. The Right Honourable the Lord Finch, now lord high chancellor of England, whose great parts, and greater virtues, are so conspicuous, that it were a high presumption in me to say any thing in his commendation, being in nothing more eminent than in his zeal for and care of this church, though it might be of some importance to have its history well digested, and therefore, as he bore a large share of my expense, so he took it more particularly under his care, and under all the burdens of that high employment which he now bears, yet found time for reading it in manuscript, of which he must have robbed himself, since he never denies it to those who have a right to it on any public account; and hath added such remarks and corrections as are no small part of any finishing it may be judged to have. The Lord Russel, the inheritor of that zeal for true religion, and the other virtues that have from the first beginnings of the Reformation, in a continued entail, adorned that noble family of Bedford, beyond most others of the kingdom, did espouse the interests of the protestant religion in this particular, as he has done on all other more public occasions; and by a most liberal supply encouraged me to prosecute this undertaking.

That worthy counsellor, whose celebrated integrity and clear judgment have raised him so high in his profession, Anthony Keck, Esq. did also concur in easing me of the charge that searching, copying, and gathering materials, put me to: and having received as much from these my noble benefactors, as did enable me to carry on my design, I did excuse myself at other persons' hands, who very generously offered to supply me in the expense which this Work brought with it. That was done in a most extraordinary manner by the Right Honourable the Earl of Halifax; whom, if I reckon among the greatest persons this age has produced, I am sure all that know him will allow that I speak modestly of him: he, indeed, offered me the yearly continuance of a bounty that would not only have defrayed all this expense, but have been an entire and honourable subsistence to me; and though my necessities were not so pressing as to persuade me to accept it, yet so unusual a generosity doth certainly merit the highest acknowledgments I can make for it.

But I now turn to that which ought to be the chief subject of this Preface, to remove the prejudices, by which weak and unwary persons have been prepossessed in their judgments concerning the Reformation, during that period of it that falls within this volume. I know the duty of an historian leads him to write as one that is of neither party, and I have endeavoured to follow it as carefully as I could, neither concealing the faults of the one party, nor denying the just praises that were due to any of the other side; and have delivered things as I found them, making them neither better nor worse than indeed they were: but now that I am not yet entered into that province, and am here writing my own thoughts, and not relating the actions of other men, I hope it will be judged no indecent thing to clear the reader's mind of those impressions which may either have already biassed him too much, or may, upon a slight reading of what follows, arise in his thoughts; unless he were prepared and armed with some necessary reflections, which every one that may possibly read this History has not had the leisure, or other opportunities, to make to such a degree as were needful.

It is certainly an unjust way of proceeding, in any that is

to be a judge, to let himself be secretly possessed with such impressions of persons and things as may bias his thoughts: for where the scales are not well adjusted, the weight cannot be truly reckoned. So that it is an indirect method to load men's minds with prejudices, and not to let them into the trial of truth, till their inclinations are first swayed such a way. I deny not but in matters of religion most commonly men receive such notions, before they can well examine them, as do much determine them in the inquiries they make afterwards, when their understandings grow up to a fuller ripeness: but those preoccupations, if rightly infused, are rather such as give them general notions of what is good and honest in the abstracted ideas than concerning matters of fact: for every wise and pious man must avoid all such methods of instruction as are founded on falsehood and craft: and he that will breed a man to love truth, must form in him such a liking of it, that he may clearly see he would bribe him into no opinion or party by false or indirect arts: but since men are generally so apt to let some easy notions enter into their minds, which will preengage their affections, and for most part those who set themselves to gain proselytes do begin with such arts, it will not be amiss to give the reader such an account of these as may prepare him against them, that so he may with a clearer mind consider what is now to be delivered to him, concerning the reformation of religion among us.

I shall begin with that which is most commonly urged: that the whole church being one body, the changes that were made in religion did break that unity, and dissolve the bond by which the catholic church is to be knit together, and that therefore the first reformers began, and we still continue, a schism in the church.

In answer to this it is to be considered, that the bishops and pastors of the church are obliged to instruct their people in the true faith of Christ, according to the Scriptures: the nature of their function, being a sacred trust, binds them to this; they were also at their consecration engaged to it, by a formal sponsion, according to the questions and answers that are in the Roman pontifical to this day. Pastors owe it as a debt to their people, to teach them according to the Scriptures: they owe a charity to their brethren, and are

to live with them in the terms of brotherly love and friendly correspondence; but if that cannot be had on easier terms than the concealing necessary truths and the delivering gross errors to those committed to their charge, it is certain that they ought not to purchase it at so dear a rate. When the pastors of this church saw it overrun with errors and corruptions, they were obliged by the duty they owed to God and to their people to discover them; and to undeceive their misled flocks. It is of great importance to maintain peace and unity; but if a party in the Church does set up some doctrines and practices that do much endanger the salvation of souls, and make advantages by these, so that there is no hope left to gain them by rational and softer methods, then, as St. Peter was to be withstood to his face in a lesser matter, much more are those, who pretend no higher than to be his successors, to be withstood, when the things are of great moment and consequence. When heresies sprung up in the primitive church, we find the neighbouring bishops condemned them without staying for the concurrence of other churches; as in the case of Samosatenus, Arius, and Pelagius: and even when the greatest part of the church was become Semi-arian, and many great councils, chiefly that at Ariminum, consisting of above eight hundred bishops, as some say, had through ignorance and fear complied, the orthodox bishops did not forbear to instruct those committed to their care according to the true faith. A general concurrence is a thing much to be laboured for; but when it cannot be had, every bishop must then do his duty so as to be answerable to the chief Bishop of souls.

So that instead of being led away by so slight a prejudice, we must turn our inquiries to this, Whether there were really such abuses in the church as did require a reformation? and whether there was any reason to hope for a more general concurrence in it? In the following History, the reader will see what corruptions were found to be both in the doctrine and worship of this church: from whence he may infer what need there was of reformation. And it is very plain, that they had no reason to expect the concurrence of other churches; for the council of Trent had already made a great progress, and it was very visible, that, as the

court of Rome governed all things there, so they were resolved to admit of no effectual reformation of any considerable matters; but to establish, by a more formal decision, those errors and abuses that had given so much scandal to the Christian world for so many ages.

This being the true state of the case, it is certain, that if there were really great corruptions, either in belief or manners in this church, then the bishops were bound to reform them: since the backwardness of others in their duty could not excuse them from doing theirs, when they were clearly convinced of it. So that the reader is to shake off this prejudice, and only to examine whether there was really such need of a reformation? Since, if that be true, it is certain the bishops of this as well as of other churches were bound to set about it; and the faultiness of some could be no excuse to the rest.

The second prejudice is, that the Reformation was begun and carried on, not by the major part of the bishops and clergy, but by a few selected bishops and divines, who, being supported by the name of the king's authority, did frame things as they pleased; and by their interest at court got them to be enacted in parliament: and after they had removed such bishops as opposed them, then they procured the convocation to consent to what was done: so that, upon the matter, the Reformation was the work of Cranmer, with a few more of his party, and not of this church, which never agreed wholly to it, till the bishops were so modelled as to be compliant to the designs of the court. In short, the resolution of this is to be taken from a common case; when the major part of a church is, according to the conscience of the supreme civil magistrate, in an error, and the lesser part is in the right. The case is not hard, if well understood; for in the whole Scripture there is no promise made to the major part of the pastors of the church; and there being no Divine promise made about it, it is certain that the nature of man is such, that truth separated from interest hath few votaries: but when it is opposite to it, it must have a very small party. So that most of those things which needed reformation, being such as added much to the wealth and power of the clergy, it had been a wonder, indeed, if the greater part had not opposed it. In that case, as the smaller

part were not to depart from their sentiments, because opposed in them by a more numerous party that was too deeply concerned in the matter; so it was both natural for them, and very reasonable to take sanctuary in the authority and protection of the prince and the law. That princes have an authority in things sacred, was so universally agreed to in King Henry's reign, and was made out upon such clear evidence of reason and precedents, both in the Jewish state, and in the Roman empire when it turned Christian, that this ground was already gained. It is the first law in Justinian's code, made by Theodosius when he came to the empire, That all should every where, under severe pains, follow that faith which was received by Damasus, bishop of Rome, and Peter of Alexandria. And why might not the King and laws of England give the like authority to the Archbishops of Canterbury and York?

When the empire, and especially the eastern part of it, had been, during the reign of Constantius, and Valens succeeding him after a short interval, so overspread with Arianism, it is scarce to be imagined how it could have been reformed in any other manner: for they durst not, at first, trust it to the discretion of a synod; and yet the question then on foot was not so linked with interest, being a speculative point of divinity, as those about which the contests were in the beginning of the Reformation.

It is not to be imagined how any changes in religion can be made by sovereign princes, unless an authority be lodged with them of giving the sanction of a law to the founder, though the lesser part of a church: for as princes and lawgivers are not tied to an implicit obedience to clergymen, but are left to the freedom of their own discerning, so they must have a power to choose what side to be of where things are much inquired into. The jurisdiction of synods or councils is founded either on the rules of expediency and brotherly correspondence, or on the force of civil laws: for when the Christian belief had not the support of law, every bishop taught his own flock the best he could, and gave his neighbours such an account of his faith, at or soon after his consecration, as satisfied them, and so maintained the unity of the church. The formality of synods grew up in the church, from the division of the Roman empire and the dignity of

the several cities; which is a thing so well known, and so plainly acknowledged by the writers of all sides, that it were needless imposing on the reader's patience to spend time to prove it. Such as would understand it more perfectly, will find it in De Marca the late archbishop of Paris's books, de Concordia Imperii and Sacerdotii, and in Blondell's works, De la Primaute de l'Eglise. None can imagine there is a Divine authority in that which sprung from such a beginning. The major part of synods cannot be supposed to be, in matters of faith, so assisted from Heaven, that the lesser part must necessarily acquiesce in their decrees, or that the civil powers must always measure their laws by their votes: especially where interest does visibly turn the scales. And this may satisfy any reasonable man as to this prejudice; that if Archbishop Cranmer and Holgate, the two primates and metropolitans of this church, were in the right in the things that they procured to be reformed, though the greater part of the bishops, being biassed by base ends, and generally both superstitious and little conversant in the true theological learning, did oppose them, and they were thereby forced to order matters so, that at first they were prepared by some selected bishops and divines, and afterwards enacted by king and parliament, this is no just exception to what was so managed. And such a reformation can no more be blasted by being called a parliament-religion, than the reformations made by the kings of Israel without or against the majority of the priests, could be blemished by being called the king's religion.

A third prejudice is, that the persons who governed the affairs at court were weak or ill men: that the King being under age, things were carried by those who had him in their power. And for the two great ministers of that reign, or rather the administrators of it, the Dukes of Somerset and Northumberland, as their violent and untimely deaths may seem to be effects of the indignation of Heaven for what they did; so they were both eminently faulty in their administration, and are supposed to have soughttoo much their own ends. This seems to cast a blemish on their actions, and to give some reason to suspect the things were not good which had such instruments to advance them.

But this prejudice, compounded of many particulars,

when taken to pieces, will appear of no force to blast the credit of what they did. By our law the king never dies, and is never young nor old; so that the authority of the king is the same, whether administered by himself or by his governors, when he is under age: nor are we to judge of men by the events that befal them. These are the deepest secrets of Divine Providence, into which it is impossible for men of limited understandings to penetrate: and if we make judgments of persons and things by accidents, we shall very often most certainly conclude falsely. Solomon made the observation, which the series of human affairs ever since hath fully justified, that there are just men to whom it happens according to the work of the wicked; and wicked men to whom it happens according to the work of the righteous: and the inquiring into these seemingly unequal steps of God's governing the world is a vanity. As for the Duke of Northumberland, the Reformation is not at all concerned in him; for if we believe what he said, when there was the least reason to suspect him, on the scaffold, he was all the while a papist in his heart. And so no wonder if such a man, striking in for his own ambitious ends with that which was popular, even against the persuasions of his conscience, did very ill things. The Duke of Somerset was indeed more sincere; and though he was not without his faults (which we may safely acknowledge, since the man of infallibility is not pretended to be without sin), yet these were not such heinous transgressions, but rather such as human infirmity exposes most men to, when they are raised to a high condition. He was too vain, too much addicted to his own notions, and, being a man of no extraordinary parts, he was too much at the disposal of those who by flatteries and submissions insinuated themselves into him; and he made too great haste to raise a vast estate to be altogether innocent: but I never find him charged with any personal disorders, nor was he ever guilty of falsehood, of perverting justice, of cruelty, or of oppression. He was so much against the last of these, that he lost the affections of the nobility for being so careful of the commons, and covering them from the oppression of their landlords. The business of his brother, though it has a very ill appearance, and is made to look worse by the lame account our books give of it,

seems to have been forced on him: for the Admiral was a man of most incurable ambition, and so inclined to raise disturbance, that, after so many relapses and such frequent reconciliations, he still breaking out into new disorders, it became almost necessary to put him out of a capacity of doing more mischief. But if we compare the Duke of Somerset with the great ministers even in the best courts, we shall find him better than most of them; and if some few have carried their prosperity better, many more, even of those who are otherwise recorded for extraordinary persons, have been guilty of far greater faults. He who is but a little acquainted with history, or with the courts of princes, must needs know so much of this argument, that he will easily cure himself of any ill effects which this prejudice may have on him.

A fourth prejudice is raised from the great invasions which were then made upon the church-lands, and things dedicated to pious uses; which is a thing hated by men of all religions, and branded with the odious names of sacrilege and robbing of God; so that the spoils of religious houses and churches seem to have been the secret motives that at first drew in and still engage so many to the Reformation. This has more weight in it than the former, and therefore deserves to be more fully considered.

The light of nature teaches, that those who are dedicated to the service of God, and for instructing the people, ought to be so well provided for, that they may be delivered from the distractions of secular cares, and secured from the contempt which follows poverty; and be furnished with such means as may both enable them to know that well wherein they are to instruct others, and to gain such an interest in the affections of those among whom they labour, as modest hospitality and liberal alms-giving may procure. In this all nations and religions have so generally agreed, that it may be well called a law of nations, if not of nature. Had churchmen been contented with this measure, it is very probable things had never run to the other extreme so much as they have done. But as the Pope got to himself a great principality, so the rest of his clergy designed to imitate him in that as much as was possible: they spared no pains, nor thought they any methods too bad that could set for-

ward these projects. The belief of purgatory, and the redeeming of souls out of it by masses, with many other public cheats imposed on the world, had brought the wealth of this and other nations into their hands. Upon the discovery of this imposture, it was but a reasonable and just proceeding of the government to reassume those lands, and dispose otherwise of them, which had been for most part fraudulently drawn from the former ages: for indeed the best part of the soil of England being in such ill hands, it was the interest of the whole kingdom to have it put to better uses. So that the abbeys being generally raised and endowed by the efficacy of those false opinions, which were infused into the people, I can see no just exception against the dissolution of them, with the chantries, and other foundations of like superstition; and the fault was not in taking them away, but in not applying a greater part of them to uses truly religious.

But most of these monasteries had been enriched by that which was indeed the spoil of the church: for in many places the tithes which belonged to the secular clergy were taken from them, and by the authority of papal bulls were given to the monasteries. This was the original of the greatest mischief that came on this church at the Reformation: the abbots having possessed themselves of the tithes, and having left to those who served the cure either some small donative or stipend, and at best the small tithes or vicarage, those who purchased the abbey-lands from the crown in the former reign, had them with no other charge reserved for the incumbents but that small pittance that the abbots had formerly given them: and this is now a much less allowance than the curates had in the times of popery: for though they had now the same right by their incumbency that they then had, yet in the time of superstition, the fees of obits, exequies, soul-masses, and such other perquisites, did furnish them so plentifully, that, considering their obligation to remain unmarried, they lived well, though their certain maintenance was but small: but these things falling off by the Reformation, which likewise leaves the clergy at liberty in the matter of marriage, this has occasioned much ignorance and scandal among the clergy. I shall not enter into the debate about the Divine right of tithes: this I am sure of,

a decent maintenance of the clergy is of natural right, and that it is not better looked to is a public reproach to the whole nation; when, in all other religions and nations, those who serve at the altar live by it. The ancient allowances for the curates in market-towns being generally so small, because the number and wealth of the people made the perquisites so considerable, has made those places to be too often but ill supplied: and what way this makes for the seducers of all hands, when the minister is of so mean a condition, and hath so incompetent a maintenance, that he can scarce secure himself from extreme want and great contempt, I leave it to every man to judge.

This is as high a contempt of religion and the gospel as any can be, and is one of those things for which this nation has much to answer to God; that now, in one hundred and twenty years time, so little has been done by public authority for the redress of such a crying oppression. Some private persons have done great things this way, but the public has yet done nothing suitable to the occasion: though their neighbour nation of Scotland has set them a very good example; where, by the great zeal and care of King James, and the late blessed King, acts and orders of parliament have been made for examining the whole state of the clergy, and for supplying all poor livings so plentifully, that in glebe and tithes all benefices are now raised to at least fifty pounds sterling yearly. What greater scorn can be put on religion, than to provide so scantily for those that are trusted with the care of souls, that some hundreds of parishes in England pay not 10*l.* a year to their pastors, and perhaps some thousands not fifty? This is to be numbered among those crying sins that are bringing down vengeance on us, since by this many souls are left to perish, because it is not possible to provide them with faithful and able shepherds. I shall not examine all the particular reasons that have obstructed the redress of this mischief, but those concerned in it may soon find some of them out in themselves. And here I acknowledge a great and just prejudice lies against our Reformation, which no man can fully answer. But how faulty soever we may be in this particular, they of the church of Rome have little reason to object it to us, since the first and true occasion of it was of their own doing. Our

fault is, that, at the dissolution of the monasteries, restitution was not made to the parish priests of what the popes had sacrilegiously taken from them. And now that we are upon the utter extirpation of popery, let us not retain this relic of it. And I pray God to inspire and direct his Majesty and his two Houses of Parliament effectually to remove this just, and, for ought I know, only great scandal of our English Reformation.

A fifth prejudice, which seems to give ill impressions of our Reformation, is, that the clergy have now no interest in the consciences of the people, nor any inspection into their manners; but they are without yoke or restraint. All the ancient canons for the public penance of scandalous offenders are laid aside, and our clergy are so little admitted to know or direct the lives and manners of their flocks, that many will scarce bear a reproof patiently from them: our ecclesiastical courts are not in the hands of the bishops and their clergy, but put over to the civilians, where too often fees are more strictly looked after than the correction of manners. I hope there is not cause for so great a cry; but so it is, these courts are much complained of; and public vice and scandal are but little inquired after, or punished; excommunication is become a kind of secular sentence, and is hardly now considered as a spiritual censure, being judged and given out by laymen, and often upon grounds which, to speak moderately, do not merit so severe and dreadful a sentence. There are, besides this, a great many other abuses, brought in in the worst times, and now purged out of some of the churches of the Roman communion, which yet continue, and are too much in use among us; such as pluralities, nonresidences, and other things of that nature: so that it may be said, that some of the manifest corruptions of popery, where they are recommended by the advantages that accompany them, are not yet thoroughly purged out, notwithstanding all the noise we have made about reformation in matters much more disputable, and of far less consequence.

This whole objection, when all acknowledged, as the greatest part of it cannot be denied, amounts indeed to this, that our Reformation is not yet arrived at that full perfection that is to be desired. The want of public penance, and penitentiary canons, is indeed a very great defect: our church

does not deny it, but acknowledges it in the preface to the Office of Commination. It was one of the greatest glories of the primitive church, that they were so governed, that none of their number could sin openly without public censure, and a long separation from the holy communion; which they judged was defiled by a promiscuous admitting of all persons to it. Had they consulted the arts of policy, they would not have held in converts by so strict a way of proceeding, lest their discontent might have driven them away; at a time when to be a Christian was attended with so many discouragements, that it might seem dangerous, by so severe a discipline, to frighten the world out of their communion. But the pastors of that time resolved to follow the rules delivered them by the apostles, and trusted God with the success, which answered and exceeded all their expectations: for nothing convinced the world more of the truth of that religion, than to see those trusted with the care of souls watch so effectually over their manners, that some sins, which in these loose ages in which we live pass but for common effects of human frailty, men were made to abstain from the communion for many years, and did cheerfully submit to such rules as might be truly medicinal for curing those diseases in their minds.

But, alas! the churchmen of the latter ages being once vested with this authority, to which the world submitted as long as it saw the good effects of it, did soon learn to abuse it; and to bring the people to a blind subjection to them. It was one of the chief arts by which the papacy swelled to its height: for confessors, instead of bringing their penitents to open penance, set up other things in the room of it; pretending they could commute it, and in the name of God accept of one thing for another; and they accepted of a penitent's going, either to the holy war, or, which was more holy of the two, to one of the Pope's wars against heretics, or deposed princes; and gave full pardons to those who thus engaged in their design. Afterwards (when the Pope had no great occasion to kill men, or the people no great mind to be killed in his service) they accepted of money, as an alms to God: and so all public penance was laid down, and murder or merchandise was set up in its room. This being the state of things at the Reforma-

tion, it is no wonder if the people could not be easily brought to submit to public penance; which had been for some ages entirely laid aside: and there was reason why they should not be forward to come under the yoke of their priests, lest they should have raised upon that foundation such a tyrannical dominion over them, as others had formerly exercised. This made some reformed churches beyond sea bring in the laity with them into their courts; which if they had done merely as a good expedient, for removing the jealousy which the world then had of ecclesiastical tyranny, there was no great objection to have been made to it; but they made the thing liable to very great exception, when they pretended a Divine institution for those lay-elders. Here in England, it is plain the nation would not bear such authority to be lodged with the clergy at first; but it will appear, in the following Work, that a platform was made of an ecclesiastical discipline, though the bishops had no hope of reducing it into practice till the King should come to be of age, and pass a law for the authorizing of it: but he dying before this was effected, it was not prosecuted with that zeal that the thing required in Queen Elizabeth's time: and then those who in their exile were taken with the models beyond seas, contending more to get it put in the method of other churches, than to have it set up in any other form, that contention begat such heat, that it took men off from this and many other excellent designs. And whereas the presbyters were found to have had anciently a share in the government of the churches, as the bishop's council and assistants, some of them that were of hot tempers demanding more than their share, they were by the immoderate use of the counterpoise kept out of any part of ecclesiastical discipline; and all went into those courts commonly called the *spiritual courts;* without making distinction between those causes of testaments, marriages, and such other suits, that require some learning in the civil and canon law, and the other causes of the censures of the clergy and laity, which are of a more spiritual nature, and ought indeed to be tried only by the bishops and clergy; for they are no small part of the care of souls, which is incumbent on them: and by them only excommunications ought to be made, as being a suspension from the sacred rights of Christians, of which

none can be the competent judges but those to whom the charge of souls is committed. The worst that can be said of all these abuses is, that they are relics of popery, and we owe it to the unhappy contests among ourselves that a due correction has not been yet given to them.

From hence one evil has followed, not inferior to these from whence it flows, that the pastoral charge is now looked on by too many, rather as a device only for instructing people, to which they may submit as much as they think fit, than as a care of souls, as indeed it is and it is not to be denied but the practice of not a few of us of the clergy has confirmed the people in this mistake; who consider our functions as a method of living, by performing Divine offices, and making sermons, rather than as a watching over the souls of the flocks committed to us, visiting the sick, reproving scandalous persons, reconciling differences, and being strict at least in governing the poor, whose necessities will oblige them to submit to any good rules we shall set them for the better conduct of their lives. In these things does the pastoral care chiefly consist, and not only in the bare performing of offices, or pronouncing sermons, which every one almost may learn to do after some tolerable fashion. If men had a just notion of this holy function, and a right sense of it before they were initiated into it, those scandalous abuses of plurality of benefices with cure (except where they are so poor and contiguous, that both can scarce maintain one incumbent, and one man can discharge the duty of both very well), non-residences, and the hiring out that sacred trust to pitiful mercenaries at the cheapest rates, would soon fall off. These are things of so crying a nature, that no wonder if the wrath of God is ready to break out upon us. These are abuses that even the church of Rome, after all her impudence, is ashamed of; and are at this day generally discountenanced all France over. Queen Mary here in England, in the time of popery, set herself effectually to root them out: and that they should be still found among protestants, and in so reformed a church, is a scandal that may justly make us blush. All the honest prelates at the council of Trent endeavoured to get residence declared to be of Divine right, and so not to be dispensed with upon any consideration whatsoever: and

there is nothing more apparently contrary to the most common impressions which all men have about matters of religion, than that benefices are given for the office to which they are annexed: and if in matters of men's estates, or of their health, it would be a thing of high scandal for one to receive the fees, and commit the work to the care of some inferior or raw practitioner, how much worse is it to turn over so important a concernment, as the care of souls must be confessed to be, to mean hands? And to conclude, those who are guilty of such disorders have much to answer for, both to God, for the neglect of those souls for which they are to give an account and to the world, for the reproach they have brought on this church and on the sacred functions, by their ill practices. Nor could the divisions of this age ever have risen to such a height, if the people had not been possessed with ill impressions of some of the clergy, from those inexcusable faults, that are so conspicuous in too many that are called shepherds; "who clothe themselves with the wool, but have not fed the flock; that have not strengthened the diseased, nor healed the sick, nor bound up that which was broken, nor brought again that which was driven away, nor sought that which waslost, but have ruled them with force and cruelty." And if we would look up to God, who is visibly angry with us, and has made us base and contemptible among the people, we should find great reason to reflect on those words of Jeremy, "The pastors are become brutish, and have not sought the Lord; therefore they shall not prosper, and all their flocks shall be scattered."

But I were very unjust if, having ventured on so plain and necessary a reprehension, I should not add, that God has not so left this age and church, but there is in it a great number in both the holy functions, who are perhaps as eminent in the exemplariness of their lives, and as diligent in their labours, as has been in any one church in any age since miracles ceased. The humility and strictness of life in many of our prelates, and some that were highly born, and yet have far outgone some others from whom more might have been expected, raises them far above censure, though perhaps not above envy. And when such think not the daily instructing their neighbours a thing below them,

but do it with as constant a care as if they were to earn their bread by it; when they are so affable to the meanest clergymen that come to them; when they are so nicely scrupulous about those whom they admit into holy orders, and so large in their charities, that one would think they were furnished with some unseen ways; these things must raise great esteem for such bishops, and seem to give some hopes of better times. Of all this I may be allowed to speak the more freely, since I am led to it by none of those bribes, either of gratitude, or fear, or hope, which are wont to corrupt men to say what they do not think: but I were much to blame if, in a work that may perhaps live some time in the world, I should only find fault with what is amiss, and not also acknowledge what is so very commendable and praiseworthy. And when I look into the inferior clergy there are chiefly about this great city of London, so many, so eminent, both for the strictness of their lives, the constancy of their labours, their excellent and plain way of preaching (which is now perhaps brought to as great a perfection as ever was since men spoke as they received it immediately from the Holy Ghost,) the great gentleness of their deportment to such as differ from them, their mutual love and charity, and, in a word, for all the qualities that can adorn ministers or Christians, that if such a number of such men cannot prevail with this debauched age, this one thing to me looks more dismally than all the other affrighting symptoms of our condition; that God having sent so many faithful teachers, their labours are still so ineffectual.

I have now examined all the prejudices that either occur to my thoughts, or that I have not met with in books or discourses, against our Reformation; and I hope, upon a free inquiry into them, it will be found that some of them are of no force at all, and that the other, which are better grounded, can amount to no more than this, that things were not managed with that care, or brought to that perfection, that were to be desired: so that all the use we ought to make of these objections, is to be directed by them to do those things which may complete and adorn that work, which was managed by men subject to infirmities, who neither could see every thing, nor were able to accomplish all that they had projected, and saw fit to be done.

But from the matter of the following History another objection of another sort may arise, which, though it has no relation to the Reformation, yet leaves no small imputation on the nation, as too apt to change, and be carried about with every religion in vogue; since, in little more than twenty years time, there were four great changes made in religion; and in all these the main body of the nation turned with the stream: and it was but a small number that stood firm, and suffered for their consciences. But if the state of the nation be well considered, there will be nothing in all this so strange as at first view it may perhaps appear: for in the times of popery the people were kept in such profound ignorance, that they knowing nothing of religion beyond the outward forms and pageantry, and being highly dissatisfied with the ill lives of the clergy, and offended with their cruelty against those that contradicted their opinions, it is no wonder that they were inclined to hear preachers of any sort, who laid out to them the reasons of the doctrine they delivered, and did not impose it on them in gross, as the others had done. These teachers, being also men of innocent tempers and good lives, and being recommended to the compassion of the nation by their sufferings, and to their esteem by their zeal and readiness to run all hazards for their consciences, had great advantages to gain on the belief and affections of the people. And, to speak freely, I make no doubt but if the Reformation had been longer a hatching under the heat of persecution, it had come forth perfecter than it was. This disposition of the people, and King Henry's quarrelling with the Pope, made the way easy for the first change: but then the severities about the supremacy on one hand, and the Six Articles on the other, made people to stagger and reel between the two religions. And all people being fond of new things, and the discoveries of the impostures of the priests and lewdness of the monks increasing their dislike of them, it was no wonder the Reformation went on with so little tumult and precipitation till King Edward's time. But though there were then very learned and zealous divines, who managed and carried on the changes that were made, yet still the greater part of the clergy was very ignorant and very corrupt; which was occasioned by the pensions that were reserved out of the rents

of the suppressed monasteries to the monks during their lives, or till they were provided with livings. The abbey-lands that were sold, with the charge of these annexed to them, coming into the hands of persons who had no mind to have that burden lie longer on them, they got these monks provided with benefices, that so they might be eased of that charge. And for the other abbeys that still remained with the crown, the same course was taken; for the monks were put into all the small benefices that were in the King's gift. So that the greatest part of the clergy were such as had been formerly monks or friars, very ignorant for most part, and generally addicted to their former superstition, though otherwise men that would comply with any thing rather than forfeit their livings. Under such incumbents nothing but ignorance and unconcernedness in religion could prevail. By this means it was that the greater part of the nation was not well instructed, nor possessed with any warmth and sincere love to the Reformation, which made the following change under Queen Mary more easily effected. The proceedings in King Edward's time were likewise so gentle and moderate, flowing from the calm temper of Archbishop Cranmer, and the policy of others, who were willing to accept of any thing they could obtain, hoping that time would do the business, if the overdriving it did not precipitate the whole affair; that it was an easy thing for a concealed papist to weather the difficulties of that reign. There were also great scandals given by the indiscretion of many of the new preachers. The misgovernment of affairs under the Duke of Somerset, with the restless ambition of the Duke of Northumberland, did alienate the nation much from them; and a great aversion commonly begets an universal dislike of every thing that is done by those whom we hate.

All these things concurred to prepare the minds of the people to the change made by Queen Mary: but in her reign popery did more plainly discover itself in the many repeated burnings, and the other cruelties then openly exercised: the nation was also in such danger of being brought under the uneasy yoke of Spanish government, and they were many of them in fear of losing their new-gotten church-lands. These things, together with the loss of Calais in the end of her reign, which was universally much resented as a

lasting dishonour to the nation, raised in them a far greater aversion to her government, and to every thing that had been done in it, than they had to the former. The genius of the English leads them to hate cruelty and tyranny: and when they saw these were the necessary concomitants of popery, no wonder it was thrown out with so general an agreement, that there was scarce any considerable opposition made to it, except by some few of their clergy, who, having changed so often, were ashamed of such repeated recantations: and so resolved at last to stand their ground; which was the more easy to resolve on under so merciful a Prince, who punished them only by a forfeiture of their benefices; and, that being done, took care of their subsistence for the rest of their lives; Bonner himself not being excepted, though so deeply dyed in the blood of so many innocents.

All these things laid together, it will not seem strange that such great alterations were so easily brought about in so short a time. But from the days of Queen Elizabeth, that the old monks were worn out, and new men better educated were placed in churches, things did generally put on a new visage: and this church has since that time continued to be the sanctuary and shelter of all foreigners, and the chief object of the envy and hatred of the popish church, and the great glory of the Reformation; and has wisely avoided the splitting asunder on the high points of the Divine decrees, which have broken so many of the reformed beyond sea; but in these has left divines to the freedom of their several opinions: nor did she run on that other rock, of defining at first so peremptorily the manner of Christ's presence in the sacrament, which divided the German and the Helvetian churches; but in that did also leave a latitude to men of different persuasions. From this great temper it might have reasonably been expected, that we should have continued united at home; and then for things sacred, as well as civil, we had been out of the danger of what all our foreign enemies could have contrived or done against us.

But the enemy, while the watchmen slept, sowed his tares even in this fruitful field; of which it may be expected I should give some account here, and the rather because I end this Work at the time when those unhappy differences first

arose; so that I give them no part in this History: and yet I have, in the search I made, seen some things of great importance, which are very little known, that give me a clearer light into the beginnings of these differences than is commonly to be had; of which I shall discourse so as becomes one who has not blindly given himself up to any party, and is not afraid to speak the truth even in the most critical matters.

There were many learned and pious divines in the beginning of Queen Elizabeth's reign, who, being driven beyond sea, had observed the new models set up in Geneva, and other places, for the censuring of scandalous persons, of mixed judicatories of the ministers and laity: and these, reflecting on the great looseness of life which had been universally complained of in King Edward's time, thought such a platform might be an effectual way for keeping out a return of the like disorders. There were also some few rites reserved in this church, that had been either used in the primitive church, or, though brought in of later time, yet seemed of excellent use to beget reverence in holy performances; which had also this to be said for them, that the keeping these still was done in imitation of what Christ and his apostles did, in symbolizing with the Jewish rites, to gain the Jews thereby as much as could be; so it was judged necessary to preserve these, to let the world see that, though corruptions were thrown out, yet the reformers did not love to change only for change sake, when it was not otherwise needful: and this they hoped might draw in many, who otherwise would not so easily have forsaken the Roman communion. Yet these divines excepted to those, as compliances with popery; and though they professed no great dislike to the ceremonies themselves, or doubt of their lawfulness, yet were they against their continuance, upon that single account, which was indeed the chief reason why they were continued. But all this debate was modestly managed, and without violent heat or separation: afterwards some of the Queen's courtiers had an eye to the fair manors of some of the greater sees, and, being otherwise men of ill tempers and lives, and probably of no religion, would have persuaded the Queen, that nothing could unite all the reformed churches so effectually, as to bring the English church to

the model beyond sea; and that it would much enrich the crown, if she took the revenues of bishopricks and cathedrals into her own hands. This made those on the other hand, who laid to heart the true interest of the protestant religion, and therefore endeavoured to preserve this church in that strong and well-modelled frame to which it was brought (particularly the Lord Burleigh, the wisest statesman of that age, and perhaps of any other), study how to engage the Queen out of interest to support it: and they demonstrated to her, that these models would certainly bring with them a great abatement of her prerogative: since, if the concerns of religion came into popular hands, there would be a power set up distinct from hers, over which she could have no authority.

This she perceived well, and therefore resolved to maintain the ancient government of the church: but by this means it became a matter of interest; and so these differences, which might have been more easily reconciled before, grew now into formed factions; so that all expedients were left unattempted which might have made up the breach: and it becoming the interest of some to put it past reconciling, this was too easily effected. Those of the division, finding they could not carry their main design, raised all the clamours they could against the churchmen; and put in bills into the parliament against the abuses of pluralities, non-residences, and the excesses of the spiritual courts. But the Queen being possessed with this, that the parliaments meddling in these matters tended to the lessening of her authority, of which she was extremely sensible, got all these bills to be thrown out. If the abuses, that gave such occasion to the malecontented to complain, had been effectually redressed, that party must have had little to work on: but these things furnished them with new complaints still. The market-towns being also ill-provided for, there were voluntary contributions made for lectures in these places. The lecturers were generally men that overtopped the incumbents in diligent and zealous preaching, and they, depending on the bounty of the people for their subsistence, were engaged to follow the humours of those who governed those voluntary contributions. All these things tended to the increase of the party; which owed its chief growth to the

scandalous maintenance of the ministers of great towns, for which reason they were seldom of great abilities; and to the scandals given by the pluralities and non-residences of others that were over-provided. Yet the government in civil matters was so steady all the Queen's reign, that they could do no great thing, after she once declared herself so openly and resolutely against them.

But upon King James's coming to the crown, and the divisions that came to be afterwards in parliaments, between the too too-often-named parties for the court and country, and clergymen being linked to the interests of the crown, all those who in civil matters opposed the designs of the court; resolved to cherish those of the division, under the colour of their being hearty protestants, and that it was the interest of the reformed religion to use them well, and that all protestants should unite: and indeed the differences between them were then so small, that, if great art had not been used to keep them asunder, they had certainly united of their own accord. But the late unhappy wars engaged those who before only complained of abuses into a formed separation, which still continues, to the great danger and disgrace of the protestant religion. I shall not make any observations on latter transactions, which fall within all men's view; but it is plain, that from the beginning there have been laboured designs to make tools of the several parties, and to make a great breach between them; which lays us now so open to our common enemy. And it looks like a sad forerunner of ruin, when we cannot, after so long experience of the mischievous effects of these contests, learn to be so wise as to avoid the running on those rocks, on which our fathers did so unfortunately split; but, on the contrary, many steer as steadily towards them, as if they were the only safe harbours where they may securely weather every storm.

But being now to lead the reader into so agreeable a prospect, as I hope the Reformation of the Church will be to him, I will hold him yet a little longer before I open it, and desire him, for his better preparation to it, to reflect on the nature of religion in general, and of the Christian in particular. That religion is chiefly designed for perfecting the nature of man, for improving his faculties, governing his actions, and securing the peace of every man's conscience,

and of the societies of mankind in common, is a truth so plain, that, without further arguing about it, all will agree to it. Every part of religion is then to be judged by its relation to the main ends of it: and since the Christian doctrine was revealed from Heaven, as the most perfect and proper way that ever was for the advancing the good of mankind, nothing can be a part of this holy faith but what is proportioned to the end for which it was designed. And all the additions that have been made to it, since it was first delivered to the world, are justly to be suspected; especially where it is manifest at first view that they were intended to serve carnal and secular ends. What can be reasonably supposed in the papacy, where the popes are chosen by such intrigues, either of the two crowns, the nephews of the former pope, or the craft of some aspiring men, to entitle them to infallibility or universal jurisdiction? What can we think of redeeming souls out of purgatory, or preserving them from it by tricks, or some mean pageantry, but that it is a foul piece of merchandise? What is to be said of implicit obedience, the priestly dominion over consciences, the keeping the Scriptures out of the people's hands, and the worship of God in a strange tongue; but that these are so many arts to hoodwink the world, and to deliver it up into the hands of the ambitious clergy? What can we think of the superstition and idolatry of images, and all the other pomp of the Roman worship, but that by these things the people are to be kept up in a gross notion of religion, as a splendid business, and that the priests have a trick of saving them, if they will but take care to humour them, and leave that matter wholly in their hands? And, to sum up all, what can we think of that constellation of prodigies in the sacrament of the altar, as they pretend to explain it, and all really to no purpose, but that it is an art to bring the world by wholesale to renounce their reason and sense, and to have a most wonderful veneration for a sort of men who can with a word perform the most astonishing things that ever was?

I should grow too large for a preface, if I would pursue this argument as far as it will go. But if, on the other hand, we reflect on the true ends of this holy religion, we must needs be convinced that we need go no where else out of this church to find them; but are completely instructed

in all parts of it, and furnished with all the helps to advance us to that which is indeed "the end of our faith, the salvation of our souls." Here we have the rules of holy obedience, and the methods of repentance and reconciliation for past sins, clearly set before us: we believe all that doctrine which Christ and his apostles delivered, and the primitive church received: we have the comfort of all those sacraments which Christ instituted, and in the same manner that he appointed them: all the helps to devotion that the gospel offers are in every one's hand. So what can it be that should so extravagantly seduce any who have been bred up in a church so well constituted, unless a blind superstition in their temper, or a desire to get heaven in some easier method than Christ has appointed, do strangely impose on their understandings, or corrupt their minds. Indeed, the thing is so unaccountable, that it looks like a curse from Heaven on those who are given up to it for their other sins; for an ordinary measure of infatuation cannot carry any one so far in folly. And it may be laid down for a certain maxim, that such as leave us have never had a true and well-formed notion of religion, or of Christianity in its main and chief design; but take things in parcels, and without examining them suffer themselves to be carried away by some prejudices which only darken weaker judgments.

But if it is a high and unaccountable folly for any to forsake our communion, and go over to those of Rome, it is at the same time an inexcusable weakness in others, who seem full of zeal against popery, and yet upon some inconsiderable objections do depart from the unity of this body, and form separated assemblies and communions; though they cannot object any thing material, either to our doctrine or worship: but the most astonishing part of the wonder is, that in such differences there should be so little mutual forbearance or gentleness to be found; and that these should raise such heats, as if the substance of religion were concerned in them. This is of God, and is a stroke from Heaven on both sides for their other sins: we of the church-communion have trusted too much to the supports we receive from the law, we have done our duties too slightly, and have minded the care of souls too little; therefore God, to punish and awaken us, has suffered so many of our people

to be wrested out of our hands: and those of the separation have been too forward to blood and war, and thereby have drawn much guilt on themselves, and have been too compliant with the leaders of their several factions, or rather apt to outrun them. It is plain, God is offended with us all, and therefore we are punished with this fatal blindness, not to see at this time the things that belong to our peace.

And this leads me to reflections of another sort, with which I shall conclude this preface, which I have now drawn out to a greater length than at first I intended. It is apparent the wrath of God hangs over our heads, and is ready to break out upon us. The symptons of our ill condition are as sad as they are visible: and one of the worst is, that each sort and party is very ready to throw the guilt of it off themselves, and cast it on others with whom they are displeased: but no man says, What have I done? The clergy accuse the laity, and the laity condemn the clergy. Those in the city charge the country, and the country complains of the city: every one finds out somewhat wherein he thinks he is least concerned, and is willing to fix on that all the indignation of Heaven, which, God knows, we ourselves have kindled against ourselves. It cannot be denied, since it is so visible, that universally the whole nation is corrupted, and that the gospel has not had those effects among us which might have been expected, after so long and so free a course as it has had in this island. Our wise and worthy progenitors reformed our doctrine and worship; but we have not reformed our lives and manners. What will it avail us to understand the right methods of worshipping God, if we are without true devotion, and coldly perform public offices without sense and affection, which is as bad as a bead-roll of prayers, in whatever language they be pronounced? What signifies our having the sacraments purely administered among us, if we either contemptuously neglect them, or irreverently handle them, more perhaps in compliance with law, than out of a sense of the holy duties incumbent on us? For what end are the Scriptures put in our hands, if we do not read them with great attention, and order our lives according to them? and what does all preaching signify, if men go to church merely for form, and hear sermons only as set discourses, which they will censure or

commend as they think they see cause, but are resolved never to be the better for them? If to all these sad considerations we add the gross sensuality and impurity that is so avowedly practised that it is become a fashion, so far it is from being a reproach; the oppression, injustice, intemperance, and many other immoralities, among us; what can be expected, but that these abominations, receiving the highest aggravation they are capable of from the clear light of the gospel which we have so long enjoyed, the just judgments of Heaven should fall on us so signally as to make us a reproach to all our neighbours. But as if all this were not enough to fill up the measure of our iniquities, many have arrived at a new pitch of impiety, by defying Heaven itself, with their avowed blasphemies and atheism: and if they are driven out of their atheistical tenets, which are indeed the most ridiculous of any in the world, they set up their rest on some general notions of morality and natural religion, and do boldly reject all that is revealed: and where they dare vent it, (alas! where dare they not do it?) they reject Christianity and the Scriptures with open and impudent scorn, and are absolutely insensible of any obligation of conscience in any thing whatsoever: and even in that morality which they, for decency's sake, magnify so much, none are more barefacedly and grossly faulty. This is a direct attempt against God himself; and can we think that he will not visit for such things, nor be avenged on such a nation? And yet the hypocrisy of those who disguise their flagitious lives with a mask of religion, is perhaps a degree above all; though not so scandalous till the mask falls off, and that they appear to be what they truly are. When we are all so guilty, and when we are so alarmed by the black clouds that threaten such terrible and lasting storms, what may be expected but that we should be generally struck with a deep sense of our crying sins, and turn to God with our whole souls? But if, after all the loud awakenings from Heaven, we will not hearken to that voice, but will still go on in our sins, we may justly look for unheard-of calamities, and such miseries as shall be proportioned to our offences; and then we are sure they will be great and wonderful.

Yet if, on the other hand, there were a general turning

to God, or at least if so many were rightly sensible of this, as, according to the proportion that the mercies of God allow, did some way balance the wickedness of the rest, and if these were as zealous in the true methods of imploring God's favour, as others are in procuring his displeasure; and were not only mourning for their own sins, but for the sins of others; the prayers and sighs of many such might dissipate that dismal cloud which our sins have gathered; and we might yet hope to see the gospel take root among us; since that God, who is the author of it, is merciful, and full of compassion, and ready to forgive; and this holy religion, which by his grace is planted among us, is still so dear to him, that if we by our own unworthiness do not render ourselves incapable of so great a blessing, we may reasonably hope that he will continue that which at first was by so many happy concurring providences brought in, and was, by a continued series of the same indulgent care, advanced by degrees, and at last raised to that pitch of perfection which few things attain in this world. But this will best appear in the ensuing History, from which I fear I may have too long detained the reader.

10*th September*, 1680.

CONTENTS.

BOOK I.

Of the life and reign of King Edward the Sixth.

	Page
KING Edward's birth and baptism	1,2
His education and temper	2
Cardan's character of him	3
A design to create him prince of Wales	4
King Henry dies, and he succeeds	*ib.*
King Henry's will	5
Debate about choosing a protector	6
The Earl of Hartford is chosen	7
It is declared in council	*ib.*
The bishops take out commissions	8
Reasons for a creation of peers	9
Affairs of Scotland	12
Laymen in ecclesiastical dignities	*ib.*
Images taken away in a church in London	14
The progress of image-worship	*ib.*
Many pull down images	17
Gardiner is offended at it	*ib.*
The Protector writes about it	18
Gardiner writes to Ridley about them	*ib.*
Commissions to the justices of peace	19
The form of coronation changed	20
King Henry's burial	*ib.*
Soul-masses examined	21
A creation of peers	23
The King is crowned	24
The Lord Chancellor is turned out	*ib.*
The Protector made by patent	27
The affairs of Germany	30
Ferdinand made King of the Romans	*ib.*
The Diet at Spire	*ib.*
Emperor makes peace with France, and with the Turk	31
And sets about the ruin of the protest	*ib.*
Protestant princes meet at Frankfort	34
Duke of Saxe, and Landgrave of Hesse, arm	35
Peace between England and France	36
Francis the First dies	*ib.*
A reformation set about in England	38
A visitation resolved on	41
Some Homilies compiled	42
Injunctions for the visitation	44
Injunctions for the bishops	46
Censures passed upon them	*ib.*
Protector goes into Scotland	49
Scotland said to be subject to England	*ib.*
Protector enters Scotland	52
Makes offers to the Scots	53
The Scots' defeat at Musselburgh	54
Protector returns to England	56
The visitors execute the injunctions	57
Bonner protests, and recants	58
Gardiner would not obey	*ib.*
His reasons against them	*ib.*
He complains to the Protector	60
The Lady Mary complains also	62
The Protector writes to her	*ib.*
The parliament meets	63
An act repealing severe laws	64
An act about the communion	65
Communion in both kinds	66

Page
Private masses put down..... 67
An act about the admission of bishops..... 68
Ancient ways of electing bishops 69
An act against vagabonds 72
Chantries given to the King ... 73
Acts proposed, but not passed . 75
The convocation meets ..... *ib.*
And makes some petitions .... *ib.*
The clergy desire to have representatives in the House of Commons..... 76
The grounds of that..... 77
The affairs of Germany 80
Duke of Saxe taken..... 81
The Archbishop of Cologn resigns 82
A decree made in the diet..... 83
Proceedings at Trent..... 84
The council removed to Bulloigne *ib.*
The French quarrel about Bulloigne 85
The Protector and the Admiral fall out 86

Anno 1548.

Gardiner is set at liberty 89
Marquis of Northampton sues a divorce 90
The arguments for it 91
A progress in the Reformation . 94
Proclamation against innovation 95
All images taken away 96
Restraints put on preachers ... 97
Some bishops and doctors examine the public offices and prayers 98
Corruptions in the office of the communion..... 100
A new office for the communion 103
It is variously censured 104
Auricular confession left indifferent ..... *ib.*
Chantry lands sold..... 108
Gardiner falls into new troubles 109
He is ordered to preach..... 111
But gives offence, and is imprisoned 112
A catechism set out by Cranmer 113
A further reformation of public offices 115
A new Liturgy resolved upon.. 116
The changes made in it..... 118
Preface to it 126
Reflections made on it..... 127
All preaching forbid for a time. 129
Affairs of Scotland 130
The Queen of Scots sent to France 132
Page
The siege of Hadingtoun..... 132
A fleet sent against Scotland .. 133
But without success..... 134
The siege of Hadingtoun raised *ib.*
Discontents in Scotland 136
The affairs of Germany 137
The book of the *Interim* 138
Both sides offended at it 139
Calvin writes to the Protector.. 140
Bucer writes against Gardiner . 141
A session of parliament..... 142
Act for the marriage of the clergy *ib.*
Which was much debated..... 143
Arguments for it from Scripture *ib.*
And from the fathers 144
The reasons against it examined 146
An act confirming the Liturgy. 149
Censures passed upon it 150
The singing of psalms set up... 151

Anno 1549.

An act about fasts 152
Some bills that did not pass ... 154
A design of digesting the common law into a body..... *ib.*
The Admiral's attainder..... 155
He was sent to the Tower..... 156
The matter referred to the parliament..... 158
The bill against him passed.... 159
The warrant for his execution.. 160
It is signed by Cranmer..... 161
Censures upon that ..... *ib.*
Subsidies granted..... 162
A new visitation 163
All obey the laws except Lady Mary 165
A treaty of marriage for her ... 166
The council required her to obey *ib.*
Christ's presence in the sacrament examined..... 167
Public disputations about it... 169
The manner of the presence explained..... 172
Proceedings against anabaptists 177
Of these there were two sorts .. *ib.*
Two of them burnt..... 179, 180
Which was much censured.... 180
Disputes concerning infant baptism 181
Predestination much abused... *ib.*
Tumults in England..... 182
Some are soon quieted..... 184
The Devonshire rebellion ..... *ib.*
Their demands 185
An answer sent to them..... 186
They make new demands 187

Page
Which are rejected..... 188
The Norfolk rebellion ..... *ib.*
The Yorkshire rebellion 189
Exeter besieged 190
It is relieved, and the rebels defeated 191
The Norfolk rebels are dispersed *ib.*
A general pardon 192
A visitation of Cambridge ..... *ib.*
Dispute about the Greek pronunciation..... 194
Bonner in new troubles 195
Injunctions are given him ..... *ib.*
He did not obey them 196
He is proceeded against..... *ib.*
He defends himself..... 198
He appeals 202
But is deprived..... 203
Censures passed upon it 204
The French fall into Bulloigne. 206
Ill success in Scotland..... 207
The affairs of Germany 208
A faction against the Protector 209
Advices about foreign affairs... 210
Paget sent to the Emperor..... 211
But can obtain nothing..... 214
Debates in council..... *ib.*
Complaints of the Protector... 215
The counsellers leave him..... 217
The city of London joins with them..... 219
The Protector offers to submit. *ib.*
He is accused, and sent to the Tower..... 222
Censures passed upon him..... *ib.*
The papists much lifted up..... 223
But their hopes vanish 224
A treaty with the Emperor *ib.*
A session of parliament..... 225
An act against tumults ..... *ib.*
And against vagabonds..... 226
Bishops move for a power of censuring ..... *ib.*
An act about ordinations..... 227
An act about the Duke of Somerset ..... *ib.*
The Reformation carried on ... 229
A book of ordinations made... 230
Heath disagrees to it, and put in prison ..... *ib.*
Interrogations added in the new book..... 232
Bulloigne was resolved to be given to the French..... 234
Pope Paul the Third dies..... 235
Cardinal Pole was elected pope *ib.*
Julius the Third chosen..... 236

Anno 1550.

Page
A treaty between the English and French..... 237
Instructions given to the English Ambassador..... *ib.*
Articles of the treaty..... 238
The Earl of Warwick governs all 239
Ridley made bishop of London 240
Proceedings against Gardiner 241
Articles sent to him 242
He signed them with exceptions *ib.*
New articles sent him..... 243
He refuses them, and is hardly used ..... *ib.*
Latimer advises the King about his marriage 244
Hooper made bishop of Gloucester..... 245
But refuses the episcopal garments *ib.*
Upon that, great heats arose... *ib.*
Bucer's opinion about it 246
And Peter Martyr's 247
A German congregation at London..... 248
Polydore Virgil leaves England 249
A review made of the Common Prayer-Book ..... *ib.*
Bucer's advice concerning it .. *ib.*
He writ a book for the King ... 251
The King studies to reform abuses 252
He keeps a Journal of his reign 253
Ridley visits his diocess..... 254
Altars turned to communion tables 255
The reasons given for it..... 256
Sermons on working-days forbidden..... 257
The affairs of Scotland 258
And of Germany ..... *ib.*

Anno 1551.

The compliance of the popish clergy 260
Bucer's death and funeral..... 263
His character 264
Gardiner is deprived..... 265
Which is much censured 266
Hooper is consecrated 267
Articles of Religion prepared.. 268
An abstract of them..... *ib.*
Corrections in the Common Prayer-Book 272

Page
Reasons of kneeling at the communion 274
Orders for the King's chaplains 275
The Lady Mary has mass still.. *ib.*
The King is earnest against it.. 277
The council write to her about it 278
But she was intractable..... 280
And would not hear Ridley preach 282
The designs of the Earl of Warwick..... 283
The sweating sickness..... 284
A treaty for a marriage with the daughter of France 285
Conspiracy against the Duke of Somerset 286
The King is alienated from him 287
He is brought to his trial..... 288
Acquitted of treason, but not of felony 291
Some others condemned with him 292
The seal is taken from the Lord Rich 293
And given to the Bishop of Ely *ib.*
Churchmen being in secular employments much censured ..... *ib.*
Duke of Somerset's execution. 296
His character 299
Affairs of Germany 300
Proceedings at Trent..... 301

Anno 1552.

A session of parliament 304
The Common Prayer-Book confirmed .... *ib.*
Censures passed upon it..... 305
An act concerning treasons.... 306
An act about fasts and holy-days 307
An act for the married clergy .. 308
An act against usury 309
A bill against simony not passed 311
The entail of the Duke of Somerset's estate cut off..... *ib.*
The Commons refuse to attaint the Bishop of Duresme by bill.. 313
The parliament is dissolved.... 314
A reformation of the ecclesiastical courts is considered 315
The chief heads of it..... 317
Rules about excommunication. 323
Projects for relieving the poor clergy 325
Heath and Day deprived..... 326
The affairs of Ireland 327
A change in the order of the garter 330
Paget degraded from the order 332
The increase of trade..... 333
Cardan passes through England 335
The affairs of Scotland..... *ib.*
The affairs of Germany..... 337
Proceedings at Trent..... 339
An account of the council there 340
A judgment of the histories of it 341
The freedom of religion established in Germany 343
The Emperor is much cast down *ib.*

Anno 1553.

A regulation of the privy council 344
A new parliament ..... *ib.*
The bishoprick of Duresme suppressed, and two new ones were to be raised 345
A visitation for the plate in churches 347
Instructions for the President in the north..... 348
The form of the Bishops' letters-patents..... 349
A treaty with the Emperor.... 351
The King's sickness..... 354
His care of the poor..... *ib.*
Several marriages 355
He intends to leave the crown to Lady Jane Gray 356
Which the judges opposed at first *ib.*
Yet they consented to it, except Hales 357
Cranmer is hardly prevailed with 358
The King's sickness becomes desperate..... *ib.*
His last prayer 359
His death and character ..... *ib.*

BOOK II.

The life and reign of Queen Mary.

Page

Queen Mary succeeds, but is in great danger 364
And retires to Suffolk..... *ib.*
She writes to the council..... 365
But they declare for the Lady Jane *ib.*
The Lady Jane's character.... *ib.*
She unwillingly accepts the crown 366
The council write to Queen Mary 367
They proclaim the Lady Jane, Queen ..... *ib.*
Censures passed upon it..... 368
The Duke of Northumberland much hated 370
The council send an army against Mary ..... *ib.*
Ridley preaches against her ... 372
But her party grows strong.... *ib.*
The council turn, and proclaim her queen 372, 373
The Duke of Northumberland is taken ..... *ib.*
Many prisoners are sent to the Tower 374
The Queen comes to London.. *ib.*
She was in danger in her father's time 375
And was preserved by Cranmer 376
She submitted to her father.... *ib.*
Designs for changing religion.. 377
Gardiner's policy..... *ib.*
He is made chancellor..... 378
Duke of Northumberland and others attainted ..... *ib.*
He at his death professes he had been always a papist..... 379
His character 380
King Edward's funeral 381
The Queen declares she will force no conscience 382
A tumult at Paul's..... *ib.*
A proclamation against preaching 383
Censures passed upon it..... *ib.*
She uses those of Suffolk ill ... 384
Consultations among the reformed 385
Judge Hales barbarously used 386
Cranmer declares against the mass 387
Bonner's insolence 388

Page

Cranmer and Latimer sent to the Tower 390
Foreigners sent out of England *ib.*
Many English fly beyond sea.. 391
The Queen rewards those who had served her 392
She is crowned, and discharges a tax 393
A parliament summoned..... 394
The reformed bishops thrust out of the House of Lords..... *ib.*
Great disorders in elections.... *ib.*
An act moderating severe laws. 395
The marriage of the Queen's mother confirmed..... 396
Censures passed upon it..... 397
The Queen is severe to the Lady Elizabeth..... 398
King Edward's laws about religion repealed..... *ib.*
An act against injuries to priests 399
An act against unlawful assemblies *ib.*
Marquis of Northampton's second marriage broken..... 400
The Duke of Norfolk's attainder annulled 401
Cranmer and others attainted.. *ib.*
But his see is not declared void 402
The Queen resolves to reconcile with Rome..... *ib.*
Cardinal Pole sent legate 404
But is stopped by the Emperor *ib.*
The Queen sends to him..... 405
His advice to the Queen 406
Gardiner's methods are preferred 408
The House of Commons offended with the Queen's marriage then treated about ..... *ib.*
The parliament is dissolved ... 409
1,200,000 crowns sent to corrupt the next parliament ..... *ib.*
Proceedings in the convocation 410
Disputes concerning the sacrament *ib.*
Censures passed upon them ... 417

Anno 1554.

Ambassadors treat with the Queen for her marriage 418
Articles agreed on ..... *ib.*

Page
The match generally disliked .. 419
Plots to oppose it are discovered 420
Wiat breaks out in Kent..... *ib.*
His demands..... 422
He is defeated and taken.. 422, 423
The Lady Jane and her husband executed 424
Her preparations for death .... *ib.*
The Duke of Suffolk is executed 426
The Lady Elizabeth is unjustly suspected 427
Many severe proceedings ..... *ib.*
The imposture in the wall..... 428
Instructions for the bishops ... *ib.*
Bishops that adhere to the Reform deprived 429
The mass every where set up .. 432
Books against the married clergy 433
A new parliament 434
The Queen's regal power asserted ..... *ib.*
The secret reasons for that act *ib.*
Great jealousies of the Spaniards 437
The bishoprick of Duresme restored *ib.*
Disputes at Oxford 439
With Cranmer ..... *ib.*
And Ridley..... 441
And Latimer..... 442
Censures passed upon them ... 443
They are all condemned..... *ib.*
The prisoners in London give reasons why they would not dispute 445
King Philip lands..... 447
And is married to the Queen .. *ib.*
He brings a great treasure with him..... 448
Acts of favour done by him.... *ib.*
He preserves the Lady Elizabeth 449
He was little beloved..... 450
But much magnified by Gardiner *ib.*
Bonner's carriage in his visitation 451
No reordination of those ordained in King Edward's time..... 453
Bonner's rage 454
The sacrament stolen 455
A new parliament ..... *ib.*
Cardinal Pole's attainder repealed 456
He comes to London..... *ib.*
And makes a speech to the parliament..... 457
The Queen is believed with child *ib.*
The parliament petition to be reconciled..... 458
The Cardinal absolves them.... *ib.*
Laws against the see of Rome repealed 459

Page
A proviso for church-lands 460
A petition from the convocation *ib.*
An address from the inferior clergy 461
Laws against heretics revived.. 463
An act declaring treasons ..... *ib.*
Another against seditious words 464
Gardiner in great esteem..... 465
The fear of losing the church-lands *ib.*
Consultations how to deal with heretics..... 467
Cardinal Pole for moderate courses *ib.*
But Gardiner is for violent ones 468
To which the Queen is inclined 469

1555.

They begin with Rogers and others 470
Who refusing to comply are judged 470, 471
Rogers and Hooper burnt 472, 473
Sanders and Taylor burnt 473, 474
These cruelties are much censured 475
Reflections made on Hooper's death 476
The burnings much disliked... 477
The King purges himself..... *ib.*
A petition against persecution . 478
Arguments to defend it..... 479
More are burnt..... 480
Ferrar and others burnt..... 481
The Queen gives up the church-lands 483
Pope Julius dies, and Marcellus succeeds 484
Paul the Fourth succeeds him 485
English ambassadors at Rome . *ib.*
Instructions sent for persecution 487
Bonner required to burn more 488
The Queen's delivery in vain expected ..... *ib.*
Bradford and others burnt 490-493
Sir Thomas More's works published 494
His letter of the Nun of Kent.. 495
Ridley and Latimer burnt..... 497
Gardiner's death and character 501
The temper of the parliament is much changed..... 504
The Queen discharges tenths and first-fruits..... *ib.*
An act against those that fled beyond sea rejected..... 505
An act debarring a murderer from the benefit of clergy opposed 506

Page
Sir Anthony Kingston put in the Tower 508
Pole holds a convocation..... *ib.*
The heads of his decrees 509
Pole's design for reforming of abuses 511
Pole will not admit the Jesuits to England 513
Philpot's martyrdom 514
Foreign affairs..... 515
Charles the Fifth's resignation . *ib.*
Cranmer's trial 518
He is degraded..... 522
He recants ..... *ib.*
He repents of it 525
His martyrdom..... *ib.*
His character ..... *ib.*
Others suffer on the like account 528
A child born in the fire, and burnt 529
The Reformation grows..... 531
Troubles at Frankfort among the English there ..... *ib.*
Pole is made archbishop of Canterbury 533
Some religious houses are endowed 534
Records are raised..... *ib.*
Endeavours for the Abbey of Glastonbury 536
Foreign affairs..... 537
The Pope is extravagantly proud *ib.*
He dispenses with the French King's oath 538
And makes war with Spain.... 540

Anno 1557.

A visitation of the universities . 541
The persecution set forward ... 543
A design for setting up the Inquisition 544
Burnings for religion 545
Lord Stourton hanged for murder 549
Page
The Queen is jealous of the French 551
The battle at St. Quintin.....552
The Pope offended with Cardinal Pole 553
He recalls him 554
The Queen refuses to receive Cardinal Peito 555
A peace between the Pope and Spain 556
A war between England and Scotland ..... *ib.*
The affairs of Germany 558
A persecution in France ..... *ib.*

Anno 1558.

Calais is besieged..... 560
And it and Guisnes are taken.. 561
Sark taken by the French 563
And retaken strangely ..... *ib.*
Great discontents in England.. 564
A parliament is called 565
King of Sweden courts the Lady Elizabeth 567
But is rejected by her ..... *ib.*
She was ill used in this reign .. 568
The progress of the persecution 570
The methods of it..... 572
An expedition against France . 573
Many strange accidents..... 574
A treaty of peace..... *ib.*
The battle of Graveling..... 575
Many protestants in France ... *ib.*
Dolphin marries the Queen of Scots 576
A convention of estates in Scotland ..... *ib.*
A parliament in England 578
The Queen's sickness and death 578, 579
Cardinal Pole dies 579
His character ..... *ib.*
The Queen's character..... 580

BOOK III.

Of the settlement of the reformation of religion in the beginning of Queen Elizabeth's reign.

Queen Elizabeth succeeds 583
And comes to London 584
She sends a dispatch to Rome *ib.*
But to no effect..... 585
King Philip courts her..... *ib.*
The Queen's council 586
A consultation about the change of religion 587
A method proposed for it 588
Many forward to reform 590
Parker named to be Archbishop of Canterbury 591

Anno 1559.

Page
Bacon made lord keeper 593
The Queen's coronation ..... *ib.*
The parliament meets 595
The treaty at Cambray 596
A peace agreed on with France 597
The proceedings of the parliament 598
An address to the Queen to marry 599
Her answer to it ..... *ib.*
They recognise her title..... 600
Acts concerning religion..... 601
The bishops against the supremacy 603
The beginning of the high commission..... 604
A conference at Westminster.. 605
Arguments for the Latin service 606
Arguments against it 608
The conference breaks up..... 610
The Liturgy corrected and explained 611
Debates about the Act of Uniformity 612
Arguments for the changes then made 614
Bills proposed, but rejected ... 616
The bishops refuse the oath of supremacy..... 617
The Queen's gentleness to them 618
Injunctions for a visitation 619
The Queen desires to have images retained ..... *ib.*
Reasons brought against it 620
The heads of the injunctions... 621
Reflections made on them..... 623
The first high commission 624
Page
Parker's unwillingness to accept of the Archbishoprick of Canterbury 626
His consecration 628
The fable of the Nag's-head confuted..... 629
The Articles of Religion prepared 631
An explanation of the presence in the sacrament 633
The translation of the Bible ... *ib.*
The beginnings of the divisions 635
The Reformation in Scotland .. 636
Mill's martyrdom 637
It occasions great discontents.. 638
A revolt at St. John's Town... 639
The French King intends to grant them liberty of religion 641
But is killed ..... *ib.*
A truce agreed to..... 642
The Queen Regent is deposed *ib.*
The Scots implore the Queen of England's aid..... 643
Leith besieged by the English.. 644
The Queen Regent dies..... *ib.*
A peace is concluded..... 645
The Reformation settled by parliament..... *ib.*
Francis the Second dies 646
The civil wars of France 647
The wars of the Netherlands... 649
The misfortunes of the Queen of Scotland 651
Queen Elizabeth deposed by the Pope..... 652
Sir Fr. Walsingham's letter concerning the Queen's proceeding with papists and puritans ..... *ib.*
The conclusion 657



King Edward VI

THE BODLEIAN LIBRARY

THE

HISTORY,

&c.

BOOK I.

Of the Life and Reign of King Edward the Sixth.

1547. Edward VI. born.

EDWARD, the sixth King of England of that name, was the only son of King Henry the Eighth, by his best beloved Queen Jane Seymour, or St. Maur, daughter to Sir John Seymour, who was descended from Roger St. Maur, that married one of the daughters and heirs of the Lord Beauchamp, of Hacche. Their ancestors came into England with William the Conqueror; and had, at several times, made themselves considerable by the noble acts they did in the wars. He was born at Hampton Court, on the 12th day of October, being St. Edward's Eve, in the year 1537, and lost his mother the day after he was born;* who died, not by the cruelty of the chirurgeons ripping up her belly to make way for the Prince's birth (as some writers gave out, to represent King Henry barbarous and cruel in all his actions; whose report has been since too easily followed); but, as the original letters that are yet extant, shew, she was well delivered of him, and the day fol-

* The Queen died on the 14th, say Hall, Stow, Speed, and Herbert; on the 15th, saith Hemmings; on the 17th, if the letter of the physicians be true in Fuller's Church History, p. 422, which was copied from its original, in the Cotton Library: on the 24th of October, in a journal written by Cecil; that was, in twelve days after King Edward's birth; so it is in the Herald's Office.

PART II.

lowing was taken with a distemper, incident to women in that condition, of which she died.

1547. And christened.

He was soon after christened, the Archbishop of Canterbury and the Dukes of Norfolk and Suffolk being his godfathers, according to his own Journal; though Hall says, the last was only his godfather when he was bishopped. He continued under the charge and care of the women till he was six years old, and then he was put under the government of Dr. Cox and Mr. Cheek: the one was to be his preceptor for his manners, and the knowledge of philosophy and divinity; the other for the tongues and mathematics. And he was also provided with masters for the French, and all other things becoming a Prince, the heir of so great a crown.

His disposition.

He gave very early many indications of a good disposition to learning, and of a most wonderful probity of mind; and, above all, of great respect to religion, and every thing relating to it. So that, when he was once in one of his childish diversions, somewhat being to be reached at, that he and his companions were too low for, one of them laid on the floor a great Bible that was in the room to step on; which he beholding with indignation, took up the Bible himself, and gave over his play for that time. He was in all things subject to the orders laid down for his education, and profited so much in learning, that all about him conceived great hopes of extraordinary things from him, if he should live: but such unusual beginnings seemed rather to threaten the too early end of a life, that, by all appearance, was likely to have produced such astonishing things. He was so forward in his learning, that, before he was eight years old, he wrote Latin letters to his father, who was a prince of that stern severity, that one can hardly think those about his son durst cheat him by making letters for him. He used also at that age to write both to his godfather, the Archbishop of Canterbury, and to his uncle, who was first made Viscount Beauchamp, as descended from that family, and soon after Earl of Hartford. It seems Queen Katherine Parr understood Latin, for he wrote to her also in the same language. But the full character of this young

Prince is given us by Cardan, who wrote it after his death, and in Italy, where this Prince was accounted a heretic, so that there was nothing to be got or expected by flattering him; and yet it is so great, and withal so agreeing in all things to truth, that as I shall begin my Collection of Papers at the end of this volume with his words in Latin, so it will be very fit to give them here in English.

Collect. Numb. 1.

Cardan's character of him.

"All the graces were in him. He had many tongues when he was yet but a child: together with the English, his natural tongue, he had both Latin and French; nor was he ignorant, as I hear, of the Greek, Italian, and Spanish, and perhaps some more. But for the English, French, and Latin, he was exact in them; and apt to learn every thing. Nor was he ignorant of logic, of the principles of natural philosophy, nor of music. The sweetness of his temper was such as became a mortal; his gravity becoming the majesty of a king; and his disposition suitable to his high degree. In sum, that child was so bred, had such parts, was of such expectation, that he looked like a miracle of a man. These things are not spoken rhetorically, and beyond the truth, but are indeed short of it." And afterwards he adds, "He was a marvellous boy: when I was with him, he was in the fifteenth year of his age, in which he spoke Latin as politely and as promptly as I did. He asked me, what was the subject of my books, *de Rerum Varietate*, which I had dedicated to him? I answered, that in the first chapter I gave the true cause of comets, which had been long inquired into, but was never found out before. What is it? said he. I said, it was the concourse of the light of wandering stars. He answered, how can that be, since the stars move in different motions? how comes it that the comets are not soon dissipated, or do not move after them according to their motions? To this I answered, they do move after them, but much quicker than they, by reason of the different aspect, as we see in a crystal, or when a rainbow rebounds from the wall; for a little change makes a great difference of place. But the King said, how can that be, where there is no subject to receive

PART II.

1547.

that light, as the wall is the subject for the rainbow? To this I answered, that this was as in the milky way, or where many candles were lighted, the middle place where their shining met was white and clear. From this little taste it may be imagined what he was. And, indeed, the ingenuity and sweetness of his disposition had raised in all good and learned men the greatest expectation of him possible. He began to love the liberal arts before he knew them, and to know them before he could use them: and in him there was such an attempt of nature, that not only England, but the world, has reason to lament his being so early snatched away. How truly was it said of such extraordinary persons, that their lives are short, and seldom do they come to be old! He gave us an essay of virtue, though he did not live to give a pattern of it. When the gravity of a King was needful, he carried himself like an old man; and yet he was always affable and gentle, as became his age. He played on the lute; he meddled in affairs of state; and for bounty, he did in that emulate his father; though he even, when he endeavoured to be too good, might appear to have been bad: but there was no ground of suspecting any such thing in the son, whose mind was cultivated by the study of philosophy."

A design to create him Prince of Wales.

It has been said, in the end of his father's life, that he then designed to create him Prince of Wales: for though he was called so, as the heirs of this crown are, yet he was not by a formal creation invested with that dignity. This pretence was made use of to hasten forward the attainder of the Duke of Norfolk, since he had many offices for life, which the King intended to dispose of, and desired to have them speedily filled, in order to the creating of his son Prince of Wales. In

King Henry dies.

the mean time his father died, and the Earl of Hartford and Sir Anthony Brown were sent by the council to give him notice of it, being then at Hartford, and to bring him to the Tower of London; and having brought him to Enfield, with his sister, the Lady Elizabeth, they let him know of his father's death, and that he was now

Jan. 31.

their King. On the 31st of January the King's death was published in London, and he proclaimed King.

1547. King Edward came to the Tower.

At the Tower, his father's executors, with the rest of the privy council, received him with the respects due to their King: so tempering their sorrow for the death of their late master, with their joy for his son's happy succeeding him; that by an excess of joy they might not seem to have forgot the one so soon, nor to bode ill to the other by an extreme grief. The first thing they did, was the opening King Henry's will; by which they found he had nominated sixteen persons to be his executors, and governors to his son, and to the kingdom, till his son was eighteen years of age. These were the Archbishop of Canterbury; the Lord Wriothesley, lord chancellor; the Lord St. John, great master of the household; the Lord Russel, lord privy-seal; the Earl of Hartford, lord great chamberlain; the Viscount Lisle, lord admiral; Tonstall, bishop of Duresme; Sir Anthony Brown, master of the horse; Sir William Paget, secretary of state; Sir Edward North, chancellor of the court of Augmentations; Sir Edward Montague, lord chief justice of the Common Pleas; Judge Bromley, Sir Anthony Denny, and Sir William Herbert, chief gentlemen of the privy-chamber; Sir Edward Wotton, treasurer of Calais; and Dr. Wotton, dean of Canterbury and York. These, or the major part of them, were to execute his will, and to administer the affairs of the kingdom. By their consent were the King and his sisters to be disposed of in marriage: but with this difference, that it was only ordered that the King should marry by their advice; but the two sisters were so limited in their marriage, that they were to forfeit their right of succession if they married without their consent; it being of far greater importance to the peace and interest of the nation who should be their husbands, if the crown did devolve on them, than who should be the King's wife. And by the act passed in the thirty-fifth year of King Henry, he was empowered to leave the crown to them, with what limitations he should think fit. To the executors, the King added, by his will, a privy-council, who should be assisting to them. These were, the Earls of Arundel and Essex; Sir Thomas Cheyney, treasurer of the

King Henry's will opened.

PART II.

1547.

household; Sir John Gage, comptroller; Sir Anthony Wingfield, vice-chamberlain; Sir William Petre, secretary of state; Sir Richard Rich, Sir John Baker, Sir Ralph Sadler, Sir Thomas Seymour, Sir Richard Southwell, and Sir Edmund Peckham. The King also ordered, that if any of the executors should die, the survivors, without giving them a power of substituting others, should continue to administer affairs. He also charged them to pay all his debts, and the legacies he left, and to perfect any grants he had begun, and to make good every thing that he had promised. The will being opened and read, all the executors, Judge Bromley and the two Wottons only excepted, were present, and did resolve to execute the will in all points, and to take an oath for their faithful discharge of that trust.

Debate about choosing a protector.

But it was also proposed, that for the speedier dispatch of things, and for a more certain order and direction of all affairs, there should be one chosen to be head of the rest, to whom ambassadors and others might address themselves. It was added, to caution this, that the person to be raised to that dignity should do nothing of any sort without the advice and consent of the greater part of the rest. But this was opposed by the Lord Chancellor; who thought that the dignity of his office, setting him next the Archbishop of Canterbury, who did not much follow secular affairs, he should have the chief stroke in the government; therefore, he pressed that they might not depart from the King's will in any particular, neither by adding to it, nor taking from it. It was plain, the late King intended they should be all alike in the administration, and the raising one to a title or degree above the rest was a great change from what he had ordered. And whereas it was now said, that the person to be thus nominated was to have no manner of power over the rest, that was only to exalt him into a high dignity with the less envy or apprehension of danger; for it was certain great titles always make way for high power. But the Earl of Hartford had so great a party among them, that it was agreed to, the Lord Chancellor himself consenting, when he saw his opposition was without effect, that one





Edward Seymour

1547.

should be raised over the rest in title, to be called the Protector of the King's realms, and the Governor of his person. The next point held no long debate, who should be nominated to this high trust; for they unanimously agreed, that the Earl of Hartford, by reason of his nearness of blood to the King, and the great experience he had in affairs, was the fittest person. "So he was declared Protector of the realm, and Governor to the King's person; but with that special and express condition, that he should not do any act but by the advice and consent of the other executors, according to the will of the late King." Then they all went to take their oaths; but it was proposed, that it should be delayed till the next day, that so they might do it upon better consideration. More was not done that day; save that the Lord Chancellor was ordered to deliver up the seals to the King, and to receive them again from his hands; for King Henry's seal was to be made use of, either till a new one was made, or till the King was crowned: he was also ordered to renew the commissions of the judges, the justices of peace, the presidents of the North and of Wales, and of some other officers. This was the issue of the first council day under this King: in which the so easy advancement of the Earl of Hartford to so high a dignity gave great occasion to censure, it seeming to be a change of what King Henry had designed. But the King's great kindness to his uncle made it pass so smoothly; for the rest of the executors, not being of the ancient nobility, but courtiers, were drawn in easily to comply with that which was so acceptable to their young King: only the Lord Chancellor, who had chiefly opposed it, was to expect small favour at the new Protector's hands. It was soon apparent what emulation there was between them: and the nation being then divided between those who loved the old superstition, and those who desired a more complete reformation, the Protector set himself at the head of the one, and the Lord Chancellor at the head of the other party.

The Earl of Hartford chosen.

The next day the executors met again, and first took their oaths most solemnly for their faithful executing

Which is declared in council.

PART II.

1547.

the will: they also ordered all those who were by the late King named privy-councillors to come into the King's presence, and there they declared to the King the choice they had made of his uncle; who gave his assent to it: it was also signified to the lords of the council, who likewise, with one voice, gave their consent to it: and dispatches were ordered to be sent to the Emperor, the French King, and the Regent of Flanders, giving notice of the King's death, and of the constitution of the council, and the nomination of the Protector during the minority of their young King. All dispatches were ordered to be signed only by the Protector; and all the temporal lords, with all the bishops about the town, were commanded to come and swear allegiance to the King. On the 2d of February, the Protector was declared lord treasurer and earl marshal, these places having been designed for him by the late King upon the Duke of Norfolk's attainder. Letters were also sent to Calais, Bulloigne, Ireland, the marches of Scotland, and most of the counties of England, giving notice of the King's succession, and of the order now settled. The will was also ordered to be enrolled, and every of the executors was to have an exemplification of it under the great seal; and the clerks of council were also ordered to give to every of them an account of all things done in council under their hands and seals: and the bishops were required to take out new commissions of the same form with those they had taken out in King Henry's time, (for which see page 412 of the former Part,) only with this difference, that there is no mention made of a vicar-general in these commissions, as was in the former, there being none after Cromwell advanced to that dignity. Two of these commissions are yet extant; one taken out by Cranmer, the other taken out by Bonner. But this was only done by reason of the present juncture, because the bishops being generally addicted to the former superstition, it was thought necessary to keep them under so arbitrary a power as that subjected them to; for they hereby held their bishopricks only during the King's pleasure, and were to exercise them as his delegates in his name,

Feb. 2.

The bishops take out commissions for their bishopricks.

1547. Collect. Numb. 2.

and by his authority. Cranmer set an example to the rest, and took out his commission, which is in the Collection: but this was afterwards judged too heavy a yoke, and therefore the new bishops that were made by this King were not put under it; (and so Ridley, when made bishop of London in Bonner's room, was not required to take out any such commission:) but they were to hold their bishopricks during life.

The reason of the new creation of many noblemen.

There was a clause in the King's will, requiring his executors to make good all that he had promised in any manner of ways. Whereupon Sir William Paget, Sir Anthony Denny, and Sir William Herbert, were required to declare what they knew of the King's intentions and promises; the former being the secretary, whom he had trusted most, and the other two those that attended on him in his bedchamber during his sickness; though they were called gentlemen of the privy-chamber; for the service of the gentlemen of the bedchamber was not then set up. Paget declared, that, when the evidence appeared against the Duke of Norfolk, and his son the Earl of Surrey, the King, who used to talk oft in private with him alone, told him, that he intended to bestow their lands liberally; and since, by attainders and other ways, the nobility were much decayed, he intended to create some peers; and ordered him to write a book of such as he thought meetest: who thereupon proposed the Earl of Hartford to be a duke; the Earl of Essex to be a marquis; the Viscount Lisle to be an earl; the Lords St. John, Russel, and Wriothesley to be earls; and Sir Thomas Seymour, Sir Thomas Cheyney, Sir Richard Rich, Sir William Willoughby, Sir Thomas Arundel, Sir Edmund Sheffield, Sir John St. Leiger, Sir ——— Wymbish, Sir ——— Vernon of the Peak, and Sir Christopher Danby, to be barons. Paget also proposed a distribution of the Duke of Norfolk's estate: but the King liked it not, and made Mr. Gates bring him the books of that estate; which being done, he ordered Paget "to tot upon the Earl of Hartford" (these are the words of his deposition) a thousand marks; on the Lord Lisle, St. John, and Russel, 200*l.*

PART II.

1547.

a year; to the Lord Wriothesley 100*l.* and for Sir Thomas Seymour 300*l.* a year; but Paget said it was too little, and stood long arguing it with him; yet the King ordered him to propose it to the persons concerned, and see how they liked it. And he putting the King in mind of Denny, who had been oft a suitor for him, but he had never yet in lieu of that obtained any thing for Denny; the King ordered 200*l.* for him, and four hundred marks for Sir William Herbert, and remembered some others likewise: but Paget having, according to the King's commands, spoken to these who were to be advanced, found that many of them desired to continue in their former ranks, and thought the lands the King intended to give were not sufficient for the maintenance of the honour to be conferred on them; which he reported to the best advantage he could for every man, and endeavoured to raise the King's favour to them as high as he could. But while this was in consultation, the Duke of Norfolk, very prudently apprehending the ruin of his posterity, if his lands were divided into many hands, out of which he could not so easily recover them; whereas, if they continued in the crown, some turn of affairs might again establish his family; and, intending also to oblige the King by so unusual a compliment, sent a desire to him that he would be pleased to settle all his lands on the Prince, (the now King) and not give them away: for, said he, according to the phrase of that time, "they are good and stately gear." This wrought so far on the King, that he resolved to reserve them for himself, and to reward his servants some other way. Whereupon Paget pressed him once to resolve on the honours he would bestow, and what he would give with them, and they should afterwards consider of the way how to give it. The King, growing still worse, said to him, "that, if aught came to him but good, as he thought he could not long endure, he intended to place them all about his son, as men whom he trusted and loved above all other; and that, therefore, he would consider them the more." So, after many consultations, he ordered the book to be thus filled up: "The Earl of Hartford to be earl marshal

and lord treasurer, and to be duke of Somerset, Exeter, or Hartford, and his son to be Earl of Wiltshire, with 800*l.* a year of land, and 300*l.* a year out of the next bishop's land that fell void; the Earl of Essex to be marquis of Essex; the Viscount Lisle to be earl of Coventry; the Lord Wriothesley to be earl of Winchester; Sir Thomas Seymour to be a baron and lord admiral; Sir Richard Rich, Sir John St. Ledger, Sir William Willoughby, Sir Edward Sheffield, and Sir Christopher Danby, to be barons; with yearly revenues to them, and several other persons." And having, at the suit of Sir Edw. North, promised to give the Earl of Hartford six of the best prebends that should fall in any cathedral, except deaneries and treasurerships; at his suit he agreed that a deanery and a treasurership should be instead of two of the six prebendaries. And thus, all this being written as the King had ordered it, the King took the book and put it in his pocket, and gave the Secretary order to let every one know what he had determined for them: but before these things took effect the King died. Yet being, on his death-bed, put in mind of what he had promised, he ordered it to be put in his will, that his executors should perform every thing that should appear to have been promised by him. All this Denny and Herbert confirmed, for they then waited in his chamber; and, when the Secretary went out, the King told them the substance of what had passed between them, and made Denny read the book over again to him; whereupon Herbert observed that the Secretary had remembered all but himself: to which the King answered, he should not forget him; and ordered Denny to write 400*l.* a year for him. All these things being thus declared upon oath, and the greatest part of them having been formerly signified to some of them, and the whole matter being well known and spread abroad, the executors, both out of conscience to the King's will, and for their own honours, resolved to fulfil what the King had intended, but was hindered by death to accomplish. But, being apprehensive both of wars with the Emperor and French King, they resolved not to lessen the King's treasure nor revenue, nor to

PART II.

1547.

sell his jewels or plate, but to find some other ways to pay them; and this put them afterwards on selling the chantry-lands.

The affairs of Scotland.

The business of Scotland was then so pressing, that Balnaves, who was agent for those that had shut themselves within the castle of St. Andrew's, had this day 1180*l.* ordered to be carried to them for a half year's pay to the soldiers of that garrison: there were also pensions appointed for the most leading men in that business. The Earl of Rothes' eldest son had 280*l.* Sir James Kircaldy had 200*l.* and many others had smaller pensions allowed them, "for their amity," as it is expressed in the council-books. That day the Lord Protector knighted the King, being authorized to do it by letters-patents. So it seems, that as the laws of chivalry required that the King should receive knighthood from the hand of some other knight; so it was judged too great a presumption for his own subject to give it, without a warrant under the great seal. The King, at the same time, knighted Sir John Hublethorn, the lord mayor of London. When it was known abroad what a distribution of honour and wealth the council had resolved on, it was much censured; many saying, that it was not enough for them to have drained the dead King of all his treasure, but that the first step of their proceedings in their new trust was to provide honour and estates for themselves; whereas it had been a more decent way for them to have reserved their pretensions till the King had come to be of age. Another thing in the attestations seemed much to lessen the credit of the King's will, which was said to be signed the 30th of December, and so did bear date: whereas this narration insinuates, that it was made a very little while before he died, not being able to accomplish his design in these things which he had projected; but it was well known that he was not so ill on the 30th of December.

Feb. 6, 1547. the King knighted.

Secular men had their ecclesiastical dignities.

It may perhaps seem strange, that the Earl of Hartford had six good prebends promised him; two of these being afterwards converted into a deanery and a treasurership. But it was ordinary at that time: the Lord Cromwell had been dean of Wells; and many other se-

cular men had these ecclesiastical benefices without cure conferred on them; for which, there being no charge of souls annexed to them, this might seem to be an excuse. Yet even those had a sacred charge incumbent on them in the cathedrals; and were just and necessary encouragements, either for such as by age or other defects were not fit for a parochial charge, and yet might be otherwise capable to do eminent service in the church; or for the support of such as in their parochial labours did serve so well as to merit preferment, and yet perhaps were so meanly provided for as to need some farther help for their subsistence. But certainly they were never intended for the enriching of such lazy and sensual men, who, having given themselves up to a secular course of life, had little of a churchman but the habit and name; and yet used to rail against sacrilege in others, not considering how guilty themselves were of the same crime, enriching their families with the spoils of the church, or with the goods of it, which were put into their hands for better uses: and it was no wonder that, when clergymen had thus abused these endowments, secular men broke in upon them; observing plainly, that the clergy who enjoyed them made no better use of them than laics might do. Though, instead of reforming an abuse that was so generally spread, they, like men that minded nothing more than the enriching of themselves, took a certain course to make the mischief perpetual, by robbing the church of those endowments and helps it had received from the munificence of the founders of its cathedrals, who were generally the first Christian kings of this nation; which, had it been done by law, would have been a thing of very bad consequence; but as it was done, was directly contrary to the Magna Charta, and to the King's coronation oath.

But now they that were weary of the popish superstitions observing that Archbishop Cranmer had so great a share of the young King's affection, and that the Protector and he were in the same interests, began to call for a further reformation of religion; and some were so full of zeal for it, that they would not wait on the slow motions of the state. So the curate and churchwardens

PART II.

1547. Images removed without authority out of one church in London.

of St. Martin's, in Ironmonger-lane, in London, took down the images and pictures of the saints, and the crucifix out of their church, and painted many texts of Scripture on the walls; some of them, "according to a perverse translation," as the complaint has it; and in the place where the crucifix was, they set up the King's arms with some texts of Scripture about it: upon this the Bishop and Lord Mayor of London complained to the council. And the curate and churchwardens, being cited to appear, answered for themselves; that the roof of their church being bad, they had taken it down, and that the crucifix and images were so rotten, that when they removed them they fell to powder: that the charge they had been at in repairing their church was such, that they could not buy new images: that they had taken down the images in the chancel, because some had been guilty of idolatry towards them. In conclusion, they said, what they had done was with a good intention, and if they had in any thing done amiss, they asked pardon, and submitted themselves. Some were for punishing them severely; for all the papists reckoned that this would be a leading case to all the rest of this reign; and if this was easily passed over, others would be from that remissness animated to attempt such things every where. But, on the other hand, those at court who had designed to set forward a reformation, had a mind only so far to check the heat of the people, as to keep it within compass, but not to dishearten their friends too much. Cranmer and his party were for a general removing of all images; and said that, in the late King's time, order being given to remove such as were abused to superstition: upon that there were great contests in many places what images had been so abused, and what not; and that these disputes would be endless unless all were taken away.

An account of the progress of image worship.

In the purest times of Christianity they had no images at all in their churches. One of the first councils, namely, that at Elvira, in Spain, made a canon against the painting what they worshipped on the walls. Epiphanius was highly offended when he saw a veil hanging before the door of a church with a picture on it,

which he considered so little as not to know well whose picture it was, but thought it might be Christ's, or some other saint's; yet he tore it, and gave them of that place money to buy a new vail in its room. Afterwards, with the rest of the pomp of heathenism, images came to be set up in churches; yet so as that there was no sort of worship paid to them. But in the time of Pope Gregory the First, many went into extremes about them; some were for breaking them, and others worshipped them; that Pope thought the middle way best, neither to break, nor to worship them, but to keep them only to put the people in mind of the saints. Afterwards, there being subtle questions started about the unity of Christ's person and will, the Greek emperors generally inclined to have the animosities, raised by these, removed by some comprehensive words to which all might consent; which the interest of state, as well as religion, seemed to require: for their empire every day declining, all methods for uniting it were thought good and prudent: but the bishops were stiff and peremptory; so in the sixth general council they condemned all who differed from them: upon this the emperors that succeeded would not receive that council, but the bishops of Rome ordered the pictures of all the bishops, who had been at that council, to be set up in the churches; upon which the emperors contended against these or any pictures whatsoever in churches: and herein that happened which is not unusual, that one controversy rising occasionally out of another, the parties forsake the first contest, and fall into sharp conflicts about the occasional differences. For now the emperors and popes quarrelled most violently about the use of images, and ill names going a great way towards the defaming an opinion, the popes and their party accused all that were against images, as favouring Judaism, or Mahometanism, which was then much spread in Asia and Africa: the emperors and their party accusing the others of gentilism and heathenish idolatry. Upon this occasion, Gregory the Third first assumed the rebellious pretension to a power to depose Leo, the emperor, from all his dominions in Italy. There was one general council at

PART II.

1547.

Constantinople that condemned the use or worship of images; and soon after another at Nice did establish it; and yet, at the same time, Charles the Great, though not a little linked in interest to the bishops of Rome, holding both the French and imperial crowns by the favour of the popes, wrote, or employed Alcuinus (a most learned countryman of ours, as these times went), to write in his name against the worship of images. And in a council at Frankfort it was condemned, which was also done afterwards in another council at Paris. But in such ages of ignorance and superstition, any thing that wrought so much on the senses and imaginations of the people was sure to prevail in conclusion: and this had, in a course of seven more ages, been improved, by the craft and impostures of the monks, so wonderfully, that there was no sign of Divine adoration that could be invented that was not applied to these images. So in King Henry's time that temper was found, that such images, as had been abused to superstition, should be removed; and, for other images, external worship, such as kneeling, censing, and praying before them, was kept up; but the people were to be taught that these were not at all intended to the image, but to that which was represented by it; and upon this there was much subtle arguing. Among Cranmer's papers, I have seen several arguments for a moderate use of images. But to all these they opposed the second commandment, as plainly forbidding all visible objects of adoration, together with what was in the Scriptures against the idolatry of the heathens, and what the fathers had written against the gentiles; and they added, that how excusable soever that practice might have been in such dark and barbarous ages, in which the people knew little more of Divine matters than what they learned from their images, yet the horrible abuses that followed on the bringing them into churches, made it necessary now to throw them all out. It was notorious that the people every where doted on them, and gave them Divine honour: nor did the clergy, who were generally too guilty themselves of such abuses, teach them how to distinguish aright; and the acts of worship that were allowed were such, that

beside the scandal such worship had in it, and the danger of drawing people into idolatry, it was in itself inexcusable to offer up such external parts of religious adoration to gold or silver, wood or stone. So Cranmer, and others, being resolved to purge the church of this abuse, got the worst part of the sentence that some had designed against the curate and churchwardens, to be mitigated into a reprimand; and, as it is entered in the council-books, "In respect of their submission, and of some other reasons which did mitigate their offence (these were Cranmer's arguments against images), they did pardon their imprisonment, which was at first determined, and ordered them to provide a crucifix, or at least some painting of it till one were ready, and to beware of such rashness for the future." But no mention is made of the other images.

Many begin to pull down images.

The carriage of the council in this matter discovering the inclinations of the greatest part of them; and Dr. Ridley having in his Lent sermon preached against the superstition that was generally had to images and holy-water, it raised a great heat over England: so that Gardiner, hearing that, on May-day, the people of Portsmouth had removed and broken the images of Christ and the saints, writ about it, with great warmth, to one Captain Vaughan, that waited on the Protector, and was then at Portsmouth. "He desired to know whether he should send one to preach against it; though he thought that was the casting precious stones to hogs, or worse than hogs, as were these Lollards. He said, that Luther had set out a book against those who removed images, and himself had seen them still in the Lutheran churches; and he thought the removing images was on design to subvert religion and the state of the world: he argues for them from the King's image on the seal, Cæsar's image on the coin brought to Christ, the King's arms carried by the heralds: he condemns false images; but for those that were against true images, he thought they were possessed with the devil." Vaughan sent his letter to the Protector, with one from Gardiner to himself, who finding the reasoning in it not so strong but that it might be answered, wrote to him him-

At which Gardiner is much offended.

PART II.

1547. The Protector writ to him about it. The letters are in Fox's Acts and Monuments.

self: "That he allowed of his zeal against innovations, but that there were other things that needed to be looked to as much. Great difference there was between the civil respect due to the King's arms, and the worship given to images. There had been a time in which the abuse of the Scriptures was thought a good reason to take them from the people, yea, and to burn them: though he looked on them as more sacred than images; which, if they stood merely as remembrances, he thought the hurt was not great; but it was known that for the most part it was otherwise; and, upon abuse, the brazen serpent was broken, though made at God's commandment: and it being pretended that they were the books of the people, he thought the Bible a much more intelligible and useful book. There were some too rash, and others too obstinate. The magistrate was to steer a middle course between them; not considering the antiquity of things so much, as what was good and expedient." Gardiner writ again to the Protector, complaining of Bale and others, who published books to the dishonour of the late King; and that all were running after novelties; and often inculcates it, that things should be kept in the state they were in, till the King were of age; and, in his letters, reflects both on the Archbishop of Canterbury and the Bishop of Duresme, for consenting to such things.

Gardiner writ to Ridley, who had preached against images.

But finding his letters had no effect on the Protector, he wrote to Ridley: "That, by the law of Moses, we were no more bound not to have images than not to eat blood-puddings. Image and idol might have been used promiscuously in former times, as king and tyrant were; yet there was a great difference between these, according to the notions we now have. He cites Pope Gregory, who was against both adoring and breaking them: and says, the worship is not given to the image, so there is no idolatry, but to him represented by it; and as the sound of speech did by the ear beget notions in us, so he did not see but the sight of an image might stir up devotion. He confessed there had been abuses, as there is in every thing that is in men's hands: he thinks imagery, and graving, to be of as good use for

instruction, as writing or printing: and because Ridley had also preached against the superstition of holy-water to drive away devils, he added that a virtue might be in water, as well as in Christ's garment, St. Peter's shadow, or Elisha's staff. Pope Marcellus ordered Equitius to use it; and the late King used to bless cramp-rings both of gold and silver, which were much esteemed every where; and when he was abroad, they were often desired from him. This gift he hoped the young King would not neglect. He believed the invocation of the name of God might give such a virtue to holy-water as well as to the water of baptism." For Ridley's answer to this, I never saw it; so these things must here pass without any reply: though it is very probable an ordinary reader will, with a very small measure of common sense and learning, see how they might have been answered. The thing most remarkable here is about these cramp-rings, which King Henry used to bless, of which I never met with any thing before I saw this letter; but since I understand the office of blessing of these rings is extant, as it was prepared for Queen Mary's use, as shall be told in her reign, it must be left to conjecture, whether he did it as a practice of former kings, or whether, upon his being made supreme head, he thought fit to take on him, as the Pope did, to consecrate such things, and send them about; where, to be sure, fancy and flattery would raise many stories of the wonderful effects of what he had so blessed: and, perhaps, these might have been as true as the reports made of the virtues of Agnus Dei's, touched beads, blessed pebbles, with such other goodly ware, which the friars were wont to carry about and distribute to their benefactors as things highly sanctified. This I set down more fully, and have laid some things together that fell not out till some months after this, being the first step that was made towards a reformation in this reign.

Feb. 12. The commission of the justices of the peace.

Upon this occasion, it is not unlikely that the council wrote their letters to all the justices of peace of England, on the 12th of February, letting them know that they had sent down new commissioners to them, for keeping the peace: ordering them to assemble together,

PART II.

and first to call earnestly on God for his grace to discharge their duties faithfully, according to the oaths
1547. which they were to take; and that they should impartially, without corruption or sinister affection, execute their office, so that it might appear that they had God and the good of their King and country before their eyes: and that they should divide themselves into the several hundreds, and see to the public peace; and that all vagabonds and disturbers of the peace should be duly punished; and that once every six weeks they should write to the Lord Protector and council, the state in which the county was, till they were otherwise commanded. That which was sent into the county of
Collect. Numb. 3. Norfolk will be found in the Collection.

But now the funeral of the deceased King, and the coronation of his son, were to be dispatched. In the coronation-ceremonies that had been formerly used, there were some things that did not agree with the present laws of the land; as the promise made to the abbots for maintaining their lands and dignities. They were also so tedious, that a new form was ordered
Collect. Numb. 4. to be drawn, which the reader will find in the Collection. The most material thing in it is the first ceremony, whereby the King being shewed to the people at the four corners of the stage, the Archbishop was to demand their consent to it; and yet in such terms as should demonstrate he was no elective prince; "for he being declared the rightful and undoubted heir, both by the laws of God and man, they were desired to give their good wills and assents to the same, as by their duty of allegiance they were bound to do." This being
Feb. 13. King Henry buried. agreed on the 13th of February, on the day following King Henry's body was, with all the pomp of a royal funeral, removed to Syon, in the way to Windsor. There great observation was made on a thing that was no extraordinary matter: he had been extreme corpulent, and dying of a dropsy, or something like it, it was no wonder if, a fortnight after, upon so long a motion, some putrid matter might run through the coffin. But Syon having been a house of religious women, it was called a signal mark of the displeasure of Heaven,

that some of his blood and fat dropped through the lead in the night: and to make this work mightily on weak people, it was said, that the dogs licked it next morning. This was much magnified in commendation of Friar Peto, afterwards made cardinal, who (as was told in page 238 of the former Part) had threatened him in a sermon, at Greenwich, "that the dogs should lick his blood." Though, to consider things more equally, it had been a wonder indeed if it had been otherwise. But having met with this observation in a MS. written near that time, I would not envy the world the pleasure of it. Next day he was brought to Windsor, and interred in St. George's Chapel. And he having by his will left that church 600*l.* a year for ever for two priests to say mass at his tomb daily, for four obits yearly, and a sermon at every obit, with 10*l.* to the poor, and for a sermon every Sunday, together with the maintenance of thirteen poor knights; the judges were consulted how this should be well settled in law: who advised, that the lands which the King had given should be made over to that college by indentures tripartite; the King being one party, the Protector and the other executors a second, and the Dean and Chapter of Windsor a third party. These were to be signed with the King's hand, and the great seal put to them, with the hands and seals of all the rest; and then patents were to be given for the lands, founded on the King's testament, and the indentures tripartite.

Soul-masses examined.

But the pomp of this business ministered an occasion of inquiring into the use and lawfulness of soul-masses and obits, which came to be among the first things that were reformed. Christ had instituted the sacrament to be celebrated in remembrance of his death; and it was a sacrament only to those who did participate in it: but that the consecrating the sacrament could be of any use to departed souls, seemed a thing not easy to be conceived: for if they are the prayers of the living that profit the dead, then these would have done as well without a mass. But the people would not have esteemed bare prayers so much, nor have paid so dear for them. So that the true orginal of soul-masses was

PART II.

1547.

thought to have been only to increase the esteem and wealth of the clergy. It is true, in the primitive church, there was a commemoration of the saints departed in the daily sacrifice (so they termed the communion), and such as had given any offence at their death were not remembered in it: so that for so slight an offence as the leaving a priest tutor to one's children, which might distract them from their spiritual care, one's name was to be left out of that commemoration in Cyprian's time; which was a very disproportioned punishment to that offence, if such commemorations had been thought useful or necessary to the souls departed. But all this was nothing to the private masses for them, and was indeed nothing at first but an honourable mention of such as had died in the faith. And they, believing then generally that there was a glorious thousand years to be on earth, and that the saints should rise, some sooner and some later, to have their part in it, they prayed in general for their quiet rest, and their speedy resurrection. Yet these prayers growing, as all superstitious devices do, to be more considered, some began to frame an hypothesis to justify them by; that of the thousand years being generally exploded. And in St. Austin's time they began to fancy there was a state of punishment even for the good in another life, out of which some were sooner and some later freed, according to the measure of their repentance for their sins in this life. But he tells us, this was taken up without any sure ground, and that it was no way certain. Yet by visions, dreams, and tales, the belief of it was so far promoted, that it came to be generally received in the next age after him; and then, as the people were told that the saints interceded for them, so it was added that they might intercede for their departed friends. And this was the foundation of all that trade of soul-masses and obits. Now the deceased King had acted like one who did not believe that these things signified much: otherwise he was to have but ill reception in purgatory, having, by the subversion of the monasteries, deprived the departed souls of the benefit of the many masses that were said for

them in these houses: yet it seems, at his death, he would make the matter sure; and to shew he intended as much benefit to the living as to himself, being dead, he took care that there should be not only masses and obits, but so many sermons at Windsor, and a frequent distribution of alms for the relief of the poor. But, upon this occasion, it came to be examined what value there was in such things. Yet the Archbishop plainly saw that the Lord Chancellor would give great opposition to every motion that should be made for any further alteration; for which he and all that party had this specious pretence always in their mouths, That their late glorious King was not only the most learned prince, but the most learned divine in the world (for the flattering him did not end with his life), and that therefore they were at least to keep all things in the condition wherein he had left them, till the King were of age. And this seemed also necessary on considerations of state; for changes in matter of religion might bring on commotions and disorders, which they, as faithful executors, ought to avoid. But to this it was answered, that as their late King was infinitely learned (for both parties flattered him, dead as well as living), so he had resolved to make great alterations, and was contriving how to change the mass into a communion: that therefore they were not to put off a thing of such consequence, wherein the salvation of people's souls was so much concerned, but were immediately to set about it. But the Lord Chancellor gave quickly great advantage against himself to his enemies, who were resolved to make use of any error he might be guilty of, so far as to ease themselves of the trouble he was like to give them.

The creation of peers.

The King's funeral being over, order was given for the creation of peers. The Protector was to be Duke of Somerset; the Earl of Essex to be Marquis of Northampton; the Viscount Lisle to be Earl of Warwick; the Lord Wriothesley, Earl of Southampton: beside the new creation of the Lords Seymour, Rich, Willoughby of Parham, and Sheffield: the rest, it seems, excusing themselves from new honours, as it appeared

PART II.

1547.

from the deposition of Paget, that many of those, on whom the late King had intended to confer titles of honour, had declined it formerly. On the 20th of February, being Shrove-Sunday, the King was crowned by the Archbishop of Canterbury, according to the form that was agreed to. The Protector serving in it as lord steward, the Marquis of Dorset as lord constable, and the Earl of Arundel as earl marshal, deputed by the Protector. A pardon was proclaimed, out of which the Duke of Norfolk, Cardinal Pole, and some others, were excepted.

Feb. 20. Coronation.

The Lord Chancellor is removed from his office.

The first business of importance after the coronation, was the Lord Chancellor's fall; who, resolving to give himself wholly to matters of state, had, on the 18th of February, put the great seal to a commission, "directed to Sir Robert Southwell, master of the rolls, John Tregonnel, Esq. master of Chancery, and to John Oliver, and Anthony Bellasis, clerks, masters of Chancery; setting forth, that the Lord Chancellor being so employed in the affairs of state that he could not attend on the hearing of causes in the court of Chancery, these three masters, or any two of them, were empowered to execute the Lord Chancellor's office in that court, in as ample manner as if he himself were present; only their decrees were to be brought to the Lord Chancellor to be signed by him, before they were enrolled." This being done without any warrant from the Lord Protector, and the other executors, it was judged a high presumption in the Lord Chancellor thus to devolve on others that power which the law had trusted in his hands. The persons named by him increased the offence which this gave, two of them being canonists, so that the common lawyers looked upon this as a precedent of very high and ill consequence. And being encouraged by those who had no good will to the Chancellor, they petitioned the council in this matter, and complained of the evil consequences of such a commission, and set forth the fears that all the students of the law were under, of a change that was intended to be made of the laws of England. The council remembered well they had given no warrant at all

to the Lord Chancellor for the issuing out any such commission; so they sent it to the judges, and required them to examine the commission with the petition grounded upon it; who delivered their opinions on the last of February, that the Lord Chancellor ought not, Feb. 28. without warrant from the council, to have set the seal to it; and that by his so doing he had by the common law forfeited his place to the King, and was liable to fine and imprisonment at the King's pleasure. This lay sleeping till the 6th of March, and then the judges' March 6. answer being brought to the council, signed with all their hands, they entered into a debate how far it ought to be punished. The Lord Chancellor carried it very high: and as he had used many menaces to those who had petitioned against him, and to the judges for giving their opinions as they did; so he carried himself insolently to the Protector, and told him, he held his place by a better authority than he held his; that the late King, being empowered to it by act of parliament, had made him not only chancellor, but one of the governors of the realm during his son's minority; and had by his will given none of them power over the rest, to throw them out at pleasure; and that, therefore, they might declare the commission void if they pleased, to which he should consent; but they could not for such an error turn him out of his office, nor out of his share of the government. To this it was answered, that, by the late King's will, they, or the major part of them, were to administer till the King was of age: that this subjected every one of them in particular to the rest: that otherwise, if any of them broke out into rebellion, he might pretend he could not be attainted, nor put from the government. Therefore it was agreed on, that every of them in particular was subject to the greater part. Then the Lord Chancellor was required to shew what warrant he had for that he had done. Being now driven from that which he chiefly relied on, he answered for himself, that he had no warrant; yet he thought by his office he had power to do it: that he had no ill intention in it, and therefore submitted himself to the King's mercy, and to the gracious considera-

PART II.

1547.

tion of the Protector and the council; and desired that, in respect of his past services, he might forego his office with as little slander as might be; and that as to his fine and imprisonment, they would use moderation: so he was made to withdraw. "The counsellors (as it is entered in the council book) considering in their consciences his abuses sundry ways in his office, to the great prejudice and utter decay of the common laws, and the prejudice that might follow by the seals continuing in the hands of so stout and arrogant a person, who would as he pleased put the seals to such commissions without warrant, did agree, that the seal should be taken from him, and he be deprived of his office, and be further fined, as should be afterwards thought fitting; only they excused him from imprisonment." So he being called in, and heard say all he could think of for his own justification, they did not judge it of such importance as might move them to change their mind. Sentence was therefore given, that he should stay in the council-chamber and closet till the sermon was ended; that then he should go home with the seal to Ely House, where he lived; but that after supper, the Lord Seymour, Sir Anthony Brown, and Sir Edward North, should be sent to him, and that he should deliver the seal into their hands; and be from that time deprived of his office, and confined to his house during pleasure, and pay what fine should be laid on him. To all which he submitted, and acknowledged the justice of their sentence. So the next day, the seal was put into the Lord St. John's hands,* till they should agree on a fit man to be lord chancellor; and it continued with him several months. On the day following, the late King's will being in his hands for the granting of exemplifications of it under the great seal, it was sent for, and ordered to be laid up in the treasury of the Exchequer: and the Earl of Southampton continued in his confinement till the 29th of June; but then he entered into a recognizance of 4000*l.* to pay what fine they should impose on him,

* "29 Junii sigillum magnum Will. Pawlet Militi Domino S. Jo. de Basing. liberatum fecit. Pat. 1. Edw. VI. P. 4." *Dugdal. Orig. Jurid.*

and upon that he was discharged of his imprisonment. But in all this sentence they made no mention of his forfeiting his being one of the late King's executors, and of the present King's governors; either judging, that, being put in these trusts as he was Lord Chancellor, the discharging him of his office did by consequence put an end to them; or, perhaps, they were not willing to do any thing that might seem to change the late King's will; and therefore, by keeping him under the fear of a severe fine, they chose rather to oblige him to be absent, and to carry himself quietly, than by any sentence to exclude him from his share in that trust; which I incline the rather to believe, because I find him afterwards brought to council without any order entered about it; so that he seems to have come thither rather on a former right than on a new choice made of him. Thus fell the Lord Chancellor, and in him the popish party lost their chief support, and the Protector his most emulous rival. The reader will find the commission, with the opinion of the judges about it, in the Collection, from which he will be better able to judge of these proceedings against him; which were summary, and severe, beyond the usage of the privy-council, and without the common forms of legal processes. But the council's authority had been raised so high, by the act mentioned in page 406 of the former Part, that they were empowered sufficiently for matters of that nature.

Collect. Numb. 5.

That which followed, a few days after, made this be the more censured, since the Lord Protector, who hitherto held his office but by the choice of the rest, and under great restrictions, was now resolved to hold it by patent, to which the late Chancellor had been unwilling to consent. The pretence for it was, that the foreign ministers, the French ambassador in particular, desired to be satisfied concerning his power, and how far they might treat with him, and depend on the assurances and promises he gave. So the Protector and council did, on the 13th of March, petition the King that they might act by a commission under the great seal, which might empower and justify them in what they were to do. And that was to be done in this man-

The Protector holds his office by patent.

March 13.

PART II.

1547.

ner: the King and the Lords were to sign the warrant for it, upon which the Lord St. John (who, though he had the keeping of the great seal, was never designed to be lord keeper, nor was empowered to hear causes) should set the seal to it. The original warrant was to be kept by the Protector, and exemplifications of it were to be given to foreign ministers. To this order Sir Thomas Cheyney set his hand, upon what authority I do not so clearly see, since he was none of the executors. By this commission (which will be found in the Collection) it is set forth, "That the King, being under age, was desired by divers of the nobles and prelates of the realm to name and authorize one above all others to have the charge of the kingdom, with the government of his person: whereupon he had formerly, by word of mouth, named his uncle to be protector and governor of his person; yet, for a more perfect declaration of that, he did now ratify and approve all he had done since that nomination, and constituted him his governor, and the protector of his kingdom, till he should attain the full age of eighteen years; giving him the full authority that belonged to that office, to do every thing as he by his wisdom should think for the honour, good, and prosperity of the King and kingdoms; and, that he might be furnished with a council for his aid and assistance, he did by the advice of his uncle and others, nobles, prelates, and wise men, accept of these persons for his counsellors, the Archbishop of Canterbury, the Lord St. John, president, the Lord Russell, lord privy-seal, the Marquis of Northampton, the Earls of Warwick and Arundel, the Lord Seymour, the Bishop of Duresme, the Lord Rich, Sir Thomas Cheyney, Sir John Gage, Sir Anthony Brown, Sir Anthony Wingfield, Sir William Paget, Sir William Petre, Sir Ralph Sadler, Sir John Baker, Doctor Wotton, Sir Anthony Denny, Sir William Herbert, Sir Edward North, Sir Edward Montague, Sir Edward Wotton, Sir Edmund Peckham, Sir Thomas Bromley, and Sir Richard Southwell: giving the Protector power to swear such other commissioners as he should think fit: and that he, with so many of the council as he should think

Collect. Numb. 6.

meet, might annul and change what they thought fitting; restraining the council to act only by his advice and consent." And thus was the Protector fully settled in his power, and no more under the curb of the co-executors, who were now mixed with the other counsellors, that, by the late King's will, were only to be consulted with as they saw cause. But as he depressed them to an equality with the rest of the counsellors, so he highly obliged the others, who had been formerly under them, by bringing these equally with them into a share of the government. He had also obtained to himself a high authority over them; since they could do nothing without his consent; but he was only bound to call for so many of them as he thought meet, and was not limited to act as they advised, but clothed with the full regal power; and had it in his hands to oblige whom he would, and to make his party greater by calling into the council such as he should nominate. How far this was legal I shall not inquire. It was certainly contrary to King Henry's will. And that being made upon an act of parliament, which empowered him to limit the crown and the government of it at his pleasure, this commission, that did change the whole government during the King's minority, seems capable of no other defence, but that, it being made by the consent of the major part of the executors, it was still warrantable even by the will, which devolved the government on them, or the major part of them.

All this I have opened the more largely, both because none of our historians have taken any notice of the first constitution of the government during this reign, and being ignorant of the true account of it, they have committed great errors: and because, having obtained, by the favour of that most industrious collector of the transactions of this age, Mr. Rushworth, the original council-book, for the two first years of this reign, I had a certain authority to follow in it; the exactness of that book being beyond any thing I ever met with in all our records. For every council-day the privy-counsellors that were present set their hands to all that was ordered, judging so great caution necessary

PART II.

1547.

when the King was under age. And therefore I thought this a book of too great consequence to lie in private hands: so the owner having made a present of it to me, I delivered it to that noble and virtuous gentleman, Sir John Nicolas, one of the clerks of the council, to be kept with the rest of their books.

The state of affairs in Germany.

And having now given the reader a clear prospect of the state of the court, I shall next turn to the affairs that were under their consideration. That which was first brought before them was concerning the state of Germany. Francis Burgartus, chancellor to the Duke of Saxe, with others from the other princes and cities of the empire, were sent over, upon the news of the former King's death, to solicit for aids from the new King toward the carrying on the war with the Emperor. In order to the clearing of this, and to give a just account of our councils in reference to foreign affairs, especially the cause being about religion, I shall give a short view of the state of Germany at this time. The Emperor, having formed a design of an universal monarchy, laid hold on the differences of religion in Germany, as a good mean to cover what he did, with the specious pretence of punishing heresy, and protecting the catholics. But before he had formed this design, he procured his brother to be chosen King of the Romans, and so declared his successor in the empire; which he was forced to do, being obliged to be much in Spain and his other hereditary dominions; and being then so young as not to enter into such deep counsels as he afterwards laid. But his wars in Italy put him oft in ill terms with the Pope; and being likewise watched over in all his motions by Francis I. and Henry VIII., and the Turk often breaking into Hungary and Germany, he was forced to great compliances with the princes of the empire; who, being animated by the two great crowns, did enter into a league for their mutual defence against all aggressors. And at last, in the year 1544, in the diet held at Spire, the Emperor, being engaged in war with France and the Turk, both to secure Germany, and to obtain money of the princes, was willing to agree to the edict made

Jan. 11, 1531. Ferdinand crowned King of the Romans.

Feb. 20, 1544. diet began at Spire.

there; which was, that till there was a free council in Germany, or such an assembly, in which matters of religion might be settled, there should be a general peace, and none was to be troubled for religion; the free exercise of both religions being allowed; and all things were to continue in the state they were then in. And the imperial chamber at Spire was to be reformed: for the judges of that court being all papists, there were many processes depending at the suit of the ecclesiastics against the protestant princes, who had driven them out of their lands: and the princes expecting no fair dealing from them, all these processes were now suspended, and the chamber was to be filled up with new judges, that should be more favourable to them. They, obtaining this decree, contributed very liberally to the wars the Emperor seemed to be engaged in; who, having his treasure thus filled, presently made peace both with France and the Grand Signior, and resolved to turn his wars upon the empire, and to make use of that treasure and force they had contributed, to invade their liberties, and to subdue them entirely to himself. Upon this, he entered into a treaty with the Pope, that a council should be opened in Trent; upon which he should require the princes to submit to it, which, if they refused to do, he should make war on them. The Pope was to assist him with ten thousand men, besides heavy taxes laid on his clergy; to which he willingly consented. But the Emperor, knowing that if religion were declared to be the ground of the war, all the protestants would unite against him, who were the much greater number of the empire; resolved to divide them among themselves, and to pretend somewhat else than religion as the cause of the war. There were then four of the electors of that religion; the Count Palatine, the Duke of Saxe, the Marquis of Brandenburg, and the Archbishop of Colen; besides the Landgrave of Hesse, the Duke of Wirtemberg, and many lesser princes; and almost all the cities of the empire. Bohemia, and the other hereditary dominions of the house of Austria, were also generally of the same religion. The northern kings and the

Sept. 24, 1544. Emperor has peace with France.

Oct. 1545. Peace with Turk.

PART II.

1547.

Swiss cantons were firmly united to them: the two crowns of England and France were likewise concerned in interest to support them against the Austrian family. But the Emperor got France and England engaged in a war between themselves: so that he was now at leisure to accomplish his designs on the empire; where some of the princes being extremely old, as the Count Palatine, and Herman, archbishop of Colen; others being of soft and inactive tempers, as the Marquis of Brandenburg; and others discontented and ambitious, as Maurice of Saxony, and the brothers of Brandenburg; he had indeed none of the first rank to deal with, but the Duke of Saxe and the Landgrave of Hesse, who were both great captains, but of such different tempers, that, where they were in equal command, there was no great probability of success. The former was a prince of the best composition of any in that age; he was sincerely religious, and one of the most equally tempered men that was then alive, neither lifted up with success, nor cast down with misfortunes: he had a great capacity, but was slow in his resolutions. The Landgrave, on the other hand, had much more heat, was a quicker man, and of an impatient temper, on which the accidents of life made deep impressions.

When the Emperor began to engage in this design, the Pope, being jealous of his greatness, and desirous to entangle him in a long and expenseful war, published the secret ends of the league; and opened the council in Trent in November, 1545, where a few bishops and abbots, with his legates presiding over them, usurped the most glorious title of *the most holy ecumenical council, representing the catholic church.* They entered, by such slow steps as were directed from Rome, into the discussion of articles of doctrine; which were, as they were pleased to call it, explained to them by some divines, for most part friars, who amused the more ignorant bishops with the nice speculations with which they had been exercised in the schools; where hard and barbarous words served in good stead to conceal some things not so fit to be proposed barefaced, and in plain terms. The Emperor, having done enough to-

wards his design, that a council was opened in Germany, endeavoured to keep them from determining points of doctrine, and pressed them to examine some abuses in the government of the church, which had, at least, given occasion to that great alienation of so many from the see of Rome and the clergy. There were also divers wise and learned prelates, chiefly of Spain, who came thither full of hopes of getting these abuses redressed. Some of them had observed, that, in all times, heresies and schisms did owe their chief growth to the scandals, the ignorance, and negligence of the clergy, which made the laity conceive an ill opinion of them, and so disposed them both in inclination and interest to cherish such as opposed them; and therefore they designed to have many great corruptions cast out: and observing that bishops' non-residence was a chief occasion of all those evils, they endeavoured to have residence declared to be of Divine right; intending thereby to lessen the power of the papacy, which was grown to that height, that they were slaves to that see, taxed by it at pleasure, and the care of their dioceses extorted out of their hands by the several ranks of exempted priests; and also to raise the episcopal authority to what it was anciently, and to cut off all those encroachments which the see of Rome had made on them, at first by craft, and which they still maintained by their power. But the court of Rome was to lose much by all reformations, and some cardinals openly declared, that every reformation gave the heretics great advantages, and was a confession that the church had erred, and that these very things so much complained of were the chief nerves of the popedom, which, being cut, the greatness of their court must needs fall: and therefore they did oppose all these motions, and were still for proceeding in establishing the doctrine. And though the opposing a decree to oblige all to residence was so grossly scandalous that they were ashamed of it, yet they intended to secure the greatness of the court by a *salvo* for the Pope's privilege and dignity in granting dispensations. These proceedings at Trent discovered what was to be expected from that council, and alarmed

PART II.

1547.

all the protestants to think what they were to look for, if the Emperor should force them to submit to the decrees of such an assembly; where those, whom they called heretics, could expect little, since the Emperor himself could not prevail so far as to obtain or hinder delays, or to give preference for matters of discipline to points of doctrine. So the protestants met at Frankfort, and entered into councils for their common safety, in case any of them should be disturbed about religion; chiefly for preserving the Elector of Colen, whom the Pope had cited to Rome for heresy. They wrote to the Emperor's ministers, that they heard from all hands that the Emperor was raising great forces, and designing a war against them; who thought themselves secured by the edict of Spire, and desired nothing but the confirmation of that, and the regulation of the imperial chamber, as was then agreed on. A meeting being proposed between the Emperor and the Landgrave, the Landgrave went to him to Spire, where the Emperor denied he had any design of a war, with which the other charged him: only he said he had, with great difficulty, obtained a council in Germany, and therefore he hoped they would submit to it. But after some expostulations on both hands, the Landgrave left him; and now the thing was generally understood, though the Emperor did still deny it, and said he would make no war about religion, but only against the disturbers of the peace of the empire. By this means he got the Elector Palatine to give little or no aid to the other princes. The Marquis of Brandenburg was become jealous of the greatness of Saxe, and so was at first neuter; but afterwards openly declared for the Emperor: but Maurice, the Duke of Saxe's near kinsman, who, by that Duke's means, was settled in a fair principality, which his uncle George had left him, only on condition that he turned papist, notwithstanding which he got him to be possessed of it, was made use of by the Emperor as the best instrument to work his ends. To him, therefore, he promised the electoral dignity, with the dominions belonging to the Duke of Saxe, if he would assist him in the

Jan. 1546. Princes meet at Frankfort.

war against his kinsman, the present Elector; and gave him assurance, under his hand and seal, that he would make no change in religion, but leave the princes of the Augsburg Confession the free exercise of their religion. And thus the Emperor singled out the Duke of Saxe and the Landgrave from the rest, reckoning wisely, that if he once mastered them, he should more easily overcome all the rest. He pretended some other quarrels against them, as that of the Duke of Brunswick, who, having begun a war with his neighbours, was taken prisoner, and his dominions possessed by the Landgrave. That, with some old quarrels, was pretended the ground of the war: upon which the princes published a writing, to shew that it was religion only, and a secret design to subdue Germany, that was the true cause of the war; and those alleged were sought pretences to excuse so infamous a breach of the faith, and of the public decrees: that the Pope, who designed the destruction of all of that confession, had set on the Emperor to this, who easily laid hold on it, that he might master the liberty of Germany: therefore they warned all the princes of their danger. The Emperor's forces being to be drawn together out of several places in Italy, Flanders, Burgundy, and Bohemia, they whose forces lay nearer had a great advantage, if they had known how to use it: for in June they brought into the field seventy thousand foot and fifteen thousand horse, and might have driven the Emperor out of Germany had they proceeded vigorously at first. But the divided command was fatal to them; for when one was for action, the other was against it. So they lost their opportunity, and gave the Emperor time to gather all his forces about him, which were far inferior to theirs in strength: but the Emperor gained by time, whereas they, who had no great treasure, lost much. All the summer, and a great deal of the winter, was spent without any considerable action, though the two armies were often in view one of another. But in the beginning of the winter, the Emperor having proscribed the Duke of Saxe, and promised to bestow the principality on Maurice, he fell into Saxony, and carried a great

June, 1546. The Elector and Landgrave arm.

July 20, 1546. Duke of Saxe and Landgrave proscribed.

PART II.

many of the cities, which were not prepared for any such impression. This made the Duke separate his army, and return to the defence of his own country, which he quickly recovered, and drove Maurice almost out of all his own principality. The states of Bohemia also declared for the Elector of Saxony.

1547. Nov. 23. The Elector returns into Saxony.

This was the state of affairs there. The princes thought they had a good prospect for the next year, having mediated a peace between the crowns of England and France, whose forces falling into Flanders, must needs have bred a great distraction in the Emperor's councils. But King Henry's death gave them great apprehensions, and not without cause: for when they sent hither for an aid in money to carry on the war, the Protector and council saw great dangers on both hands: if they left the Germans to perish, the Emperor would be then so lifted up, that they might expect to have an uneasy neighbour of him; on the other hand, it was a thing of great consequence to engage an infant King in such a war. Therefore their succours from hence were like to be weak and very slow. Howsoever, the council ordered Paget to assure them, that within three or four months they should send fifty thousand crowns to their assistance; which was to be covered thus:—the merchants of the Still-yard were to borrow so much of the King, and to engage to bring home stores to that value; they, having the money, should send it to Hamburgh, and so to the Duke of Saxe. But the princes received a second blow in the loss of Francis I. of France; who, having lived long in a familiarity and friendship with King Henry, not ordinary for crowned heads, was so much affected with the news of his death, that he was never seen cheerful after it. He made royal funeral rites to be performed to his memory in the church of Notre Dame; to which the clergy (who, one would have thought, should have been glad to have seen his funerals celebrated in any fashion) were very averse. But that King had emancipated himself to a good degree from a servile subjection to them, and would be obeyed. He outlived the other not long, for he died the last of March. He was the

Jan. 7, 1546. Peace concluded between England and France.

March 31, 1547. Francis I. died.

1547.

chief patron of learned men, and advancer of learning, that had been for many ages. He was generally unsuccessful in his wars, and yet a great commander. At his death he left his son an advice to beware of the brethren of Lorraine, and to depend much on the counsellors whom he had employed. But his son, upon his coming to the crown, did so deliver himself up to the charms of his mistress, Diana, that all things were ordered as men made their court to her; which the ministers that had served the former King scorning to do, and the brothers of the house of Lorraine doing very submissively, the one were discharged of their employments, and the other governed all the councils. Francis had been often fluctuating in the business of religion. Sometimes he had resolved to shake off the Pope's obedience, and set up a patriarch in France; and had agreed with Henry VIII. to go on in the same councils with him. But he was first diverted by his alliance with Clement VII.; and afterwards by the ascendant which the Cardinal of Tournon had over him, who engaged him at several times into severities against those that received the Reformation: yet he had such a close eye upon the Emperor's motions, that he kept a constant good understanding with the protestant princes, and had no doubt assisted them if he had lived. But upon his death new counsels were taken; the brothers of Lorraine were furiously addicted to the interests of the papacy, one of them being a cardinal, who persuaded the King rather to begin his reign with the recovery of Bulloigne out of the hands of the English; so that the state of Germany was almost desperate before he was aware of it. And, indeed, the Germans lost so much in the death of these two Kings, upon whose assistance they had depended, that it was no wonder they were easily overrun by the Emperor. Some of their allies, the cities of Ulm and Frankfort, and the Duke of Wirtemberg, submitting themselves to the Emperor's mercy, the rest were much disheartened; which is a constant forerunner of the ruin of a confederacy. Such was the state of religion abroad.

At home men's minds were much distracted. The

PART II.

1547. The design laid for a further reformation at home.

people, especially in market towns and places of trade, began generally to see into many of the corruptions of the doctrine and worship, and were weary of them. Some preached against some abuses: Glasier, at Paul's-cross, taught that the observance of Lent was only a positive law; others went further, and plainly condemned most of the former abuses: but the clergy were as much engaged to defend them. They were for the most part such as had been bred in monasteries and religious houses. For, there being pensions reserved for the monks, when their houses were surrendered and dissolved, till they should be otherwise provided, the court of Augmentations took care to ease the King of that charge, by recommending them to such small benefices as were at the King's disposal; and such as purchased those lands of the crown, with that charge, of paying the pensions to the monks, were also careful to ease themselves by procuring benefices for them. The benefices were generally very small, so that in many places three or four benefices could hardly afford enough for the maintenance of one man: and this gave some colour for that abuse of one man's having many benefices that have a care of souls annexed to them; and that not only where they are so contiguous, that the duty can be discharged by one, and so poor that the maintenance of both will scarce serve for the encouragement of one person, but even where they are very remote, and of considerable value. This corruption, that crept in, in the dark ages of the church, was now practised in England out of necessity. By an act made in King Henry the Eighth's time, none might hold two benefices without a dispensation; but no dispensation could enable one to hold three: yet that was not at this time much considered. The excuses made for this were, that, in some places, they could not find good men for the benefices; but in most places the livings were brought to nothing: for while the abbeys stood, the abbots allowed those whom they appointed to serve the cure in the churches that belonged to them (which were in value above the half of England), a small stipend, or some little part of the vicarage tithes; and they were

to raise their subsistence out of the fees they had by the sacraments, and other sacramentals; and chiefly by the singing masses for the poor that died; for the abbeys had the profit of it from the rich: and masses went generally for two-pence, a groat was thought a great bounty: so they all concluded themselves undone, if these things were withdrawn. This engaged them against any reformation, since every step that was made in it took their bread out of their mouths; but they, being generally very ignorant, could oppose nothing with the force of reason or learning. So, although they were resolved to comply with any thing rather than forfeit their benefices, yet in their hearts they abhorred all reformation, and murmured against it where they thought they might do it safely: some preached as much for the old abuses, as others did against them. Dr. Peru, at St. Andrew's Undershaft, justified the worship of images on the 23d of April: yet on the 19th of June he preached a recantation of that sermon. Besides these, there were great prelates, as Gardiner, Bonner, and Tonstall, whose long experience in affairs, they being often employed in foreign embassies, together with their high preferment, gave them great authority; and they were against all alterations in religion. But that was not so decent to profess; therefore they set upon this pretence, that, till the King, their supreme head, were of age, so as to consider things himself, all should continue in the state in which King Henry had left them: and these depended on the Lady Mary, the King's eldest sister, as their head, who now professed herself to be in all points for what her father had done; and was very earnest to have every thing enacted by him, but chiefly the six Articles, to continue in force.

On the other hand, Cranmer, being now delivered from that too awful subjection that he had been held under by King Henry, resolved to go on more vigorously in purging out abuses. He had the Protector firmly united to him in this design. Dr. Cox and Mr. Cheek, who were about the young King, were also very careful to infuse right principles of religion into

PART II.

1547.

him; and as he was very capable of understanding what was laid before him, so he had an early liking to all good and generous principles, and was of so excellent a temper of mind, that as he naturally loved truth, so the great probity of his manners made him very inclinable to love and cherish true religion. Cranmer had also several bishops of his side; Holgate, of York; Holbeck, of Lincoln; Goodrick, of Ely; and, above all, Ridley,* elect of Rochester, designed for that see by King Henry, but not consecrated till September this year. Old Latimer was now discharged of his imprisonment, but had no mind to return to a more public station, and did choose rather to live private, and employ himself in preaching. He was kept by Cranmer at Lambeth, where he spent the rest of his days, till he was imprisoned in Queen Mary's time, and attained the glorious end of his innocent and pious life. But the apprehensions of his being restored again to his old bishoprick, put Heath, then bishop of Worcester, into great anxieties; sometimes he thought, if he consented to the Reformation, then Latimer, who left his bishoprick on the account of the six Articles, must be restored, and this made him join with the popish party: at other times, when he saw the House of Commons moved to have Latimer put in again, then he joined in the councils for the Reformation, to secure friends to himself by that compliance. Others of the bishops were ignorant and weak men, who understood religion little, and valued it less; and so, although they liked the old superstition best, because it encouraged ignorance most, and that was the only sure support of their power and wealth, yet they resolved to swim with the stream. It was designed by Cranmer and his friends to carry on the Reformation but by slow and safe degrees, not hazarding too much at once. They trusted in the providence of God, that he would assist them in so good a work. They knew the corruptions they were to throw

Journal of the House of Commons.

* In the commission granted for the examination, whether the Marquis of Northampton could lawfully marry after the divorcement of his wife, Anne, for adultery, bearing date three months after the death of King Henry, even May 7, 1 Edward VI. Holbeck was bishop of Rochester, and not at that time translated to Lincoln.

out to be such that they should easily satisfy the people with what they did; and they had many learned men among them who had now, for divers years, been examining these matters. There were also many that declared they had heard the late King express his great regret for leaving the state of religion in so unsettled a condition; and that he had resolved to have changed the mass into a communion, besides many other things. And in the act of parliament which he had procured (see page 407, first Part), for giving force and authority to his proclamations, a proviso was added, that his son's counsellors, while he should be under age, might set out proclamations of the same authority with those which were made by the King himself. This gave them a full power to proceed in that work; in which they resolved to follow the method begun by the late King, of sending visitors over England, with injunctions and articles. They ordered them six several circuits, or precincts. The first was London, Westminster, Norwich, and Ely: the second, Rochester, Canterbury, Chichester, and Winchester: the third, Sarum, Exeter, Bath, Bristol, and Gloucester: the fourth, York, Durham, Carlisle, and Chester: the fifth, Peterborough, Lincoln, Oxford, Coventry, and Litchfield: and the sixth, Wales, Worcester, and Hereford. For every circuit there were two gentlemen, a civilian, a divine, and a register.* They were designed to be sent out in the beginning of May; as appears by a letter to be found in the Collection, written the 4th of May, to the Archbishop of York. (There is also in the registers of London another of the same strain.) Yet the visitation being put off for some months, this inhibition was suspended on the 16th of May, till it should be again renewed. The letter sets forth, that the King being speedily to order a visitation over his whole kingdom, therefore neither the Archbishop nor any other should exercise any jurisdiction while that visitation lasted. And since the minds of the people were held in great

1547.

A visitation is made over England.

Collect. Numb. 7.

* This rule was not observed; in some circuits there were four visitors; in others six; in some no civilians; in some two divines; in some one gentleman; and in some three.—See *Cranmer's Mem.* p. 146.

PART II.

1547.

suspense by the controversies they heard so variously tossed in the pulpits, that, for quieting these, the King did require all bishops to preach no where but in their cathedrals; and that all other clergymen should not preach but in their collegiate or parochial churches, unless they obtained a special licence from the King to that effect. The design of this was to make a distinction between such as preached for the reformation of abuses, and such as did it not. The one were to be encouraged by licences to preach wherever they desired to do it; but the others were restrained to the places where they were incumbents. But that which, of all other things, did most damp those who designed the Reformation, was the misery to which they saw the clergy reduced, and the great want of able men to propagate it over England: for the rents of the church were either so swallowed up by the suppression of religious houses, to whom the tithes were generally appropriated, or so basely alienated by some lewd or superstitious incumbents, who, to preserve themselves, being otherwise obnoxious, or to purchase friends, had given away the best part of their revenues and benefices; that there was very little encouragement left for those that should labour in the work of the gospel. And though many projects were thought on for remedying this great abuse, yet those were all so powerfully opposed, that there was no hope left of getting it remedied, till the King should come to be of age, and be able, by his authority, to procure the churchmen a more proportioned maintenance.

Some Homilies compiled.

Two things only remained to be done at present. The one was, to draw up some Homilies for the instruction of the people, which might supply the defects of their incumbents, together with the providing them with such books as might lead them into the understanding of the Scripture. The other was to select the most eminent preachers they could find, and send them over England with the visitors, who should, with more authority, instruct the nation in the principles of religion. Therefore some were appointed to compile those Homilies; and twelve were at first agreed on,

being about those arguments which were in themselves of the greatest importance. *The first was about the use of the Scriptures. The second, Of the misery of mankind by sin. Third, Of their salvation by Christ. Fourth, Of true and lively faith. Fifth, Of good works. Sixth, Of Christian love and charity. Seventh, Against swearing, and chiefly perjury. Eighth, Against apostacy, or declining from God. Ninth, Against the fear of death. Tenth, An exhortation to obedience. Eleventh, Against whoredom and adultery, setting forth the state of marriage, how necessary and honourable it was. And the twelfth, against contention, chiefly about matters of religion. They intended to set out more afterwards; but these were all that were at this time finished. The chief design in them was to acquaint the people with the method of salvation, according to the gospel; in which there were two dangerous extremes, at that time, that had divided the world. The greatest part of the ignorant commons seemed to consider their priests as a sort of people, who had such a secret trick of saving their souls, as mountebanks pretend in the curing of diseases; and that there was nothing to be done but to leave themselves in their hands, and the business could not miscarry. This was the chief basis and support of all that superstition which was so prevalent over the nation. The other extreme was of some corrupt gospellers, who thought, if they magnified Christ much, and depended on his merits and intercession, they could not perish, which way soever they led their lives. In these Homilies, therefore, special care was taken to rectify these errors. And the salvation of mankind was, on the one hand, wholly ascribed to the death and sufferings of Christ, to which sinners were taught to fly, and to trust to it only, and to no other devices, for the pardon of sin. They were, at the same time, taught that there was no salvation through Christ, but to such as truly repented, and lived according to the rules of the gospel. The whole matter was so ordered, to teach them, that, avoiding the hurtful

* These titles are not as they are in the original book; they are only abridged.

PART II.

1547.

errors on both hands, they might all know the true and certain way of attaining eternal happiness. For the understanding the New Testament, Erasmus's Paraphrase, which was translated into English, was thought the most profitable and easiest book. Therefore, it was resolved, that, together with the Bible, there should be one of these in every parish church over England. They next considered the articles and injunctions that should be given to the visitors. The greatest part of them were only the renewing what had been ordered by King Henry, during Cromwell's being vicegerent, which had been much neglected since his fall: for as there was no vicegerent, so there were few visitations appointed after his death by the King's authority; but the executing former injunctions was left to the several bishops, who were, for the most part, more careful about the six Articles than about the injunctions.

Articles and injunctions* for the visitation.

"So now, all the orders about renouncing the Pope's power, and asserting the King's supremacy, about preaching, teaching the elements of religion in the vulgar tongue, about the benefices of the clergy, and the taxes on them for the poor, for scholars, and their mansion-houses, with the other injunctions for the strictness of churchmen's lives, and against superstitions, pilgrimages, images, or other rites of that kind, and for register books, were renewed. And to these, many others were added: as, that curates should take down such images as they knew were abused by pilgrimages or offerings to them; but that private persons should not do it: that, in the confessions in Lent, they should examine all people, whether they could recite the elements of religion in the English tongue: that at high mass they should read the epistle and gospel in English; and every Sunday and holy-day they should read at matins one chapter out of the New Testament, and at even-song another out of the Old, in English: that the curates should often visit the sick, and have many places of the Scripture in English in readiness wherewith to comfort them: that there should be no more proces-

* The injunctions are abstracted only, not the articles.

sions about churches, for avoiding contention for precedence in them: and that the Litany, formerly said in the processions, should be said thereafter in the choir in English, as had been ordered by the late King: that the holy-day being instituted at first that men should give themselves wholly to God, yet God was generally more dishonoured upon it than on the other days, by idleness, drunkenness, and quarrelling, the people thinking that they sufficiently honoured God by hearing mass and matins, though they understood nothing of it to their edifying; therefore, thereafter the holy-day should be spent according to God's holy will, in hearing and reading his holy word, in public and private prayers, in amending their lives, receiving the communion, visiting the sick, and reconciling themselves to their neighbours; yet the curates were to declare to their people, that in harvest-time they might, upon the holy and festival days, labour in their harvest: that curates were to admit none to the communion who were not reconciled to their neighbours: that all dignified clergymen should preach personally twice a year: that the people should be taught not to despise any of the ceremonies not yet abrogated, but to beware of the superstition of sprinkling their beds with holy-water, or the ringing of bells, or using of blessed candles for driving away devils: that all monuments of idolatry should be removed out of the walls or windows of churches, and that there should be a pulpit in every church for preaching: that there should be a chest with a hole in it for the receiving the oblations of the people for the poor, and that the people should be exhorted to alms-giving, as much more profitable than what they formerly bestowed on superstitious pilgrimages, trentals, and decking of images: that all patrons, who disposed of their livings by simoniacal pactions, should forfeit their right for that vacancy to the King: that the Homilies should be read: that priests should be used charitably and reverently for their office sake: that no other primer should be used but that set out by King Henry: that the prime and the hours should be omitted where there was a sermon or homily: that they should, in bidding

PART II.

1547.

the prayers, remember the King their supreme head, the Queen Dowager, the King's two sisters, the Lord Protector, and the council, the lords, the clergy, and the commons of the realm; and to pray for souls departed this life, that, at the last day, we with them may rest both body and soul. All which injunctions were to be observed, under the pains of excommunication, sequestration, or deprivation, as the ordinaries should answer it to the King, the justices of peace being required to assist them."

Injunctions to the bishops.

Besides these, there were other injunctions given to the bishops, "that they should see the former put in execution, and should preach four times a year in their dioceses; once at their cathedral, and three times in other churches, unless they had a reasonable excuse for their omission. That their chaplains should be able to preach God's word, and should be made labour oft in it: that they should give orders to none but such as would do the same; and if any did otherwise, that they should punish him, and recal their licence." These are the chief heads of the injunctions, which being so often printed, I shall refer the reader that would consider them more carefully, to the collection of these and other such curious things made by the right reverend father in God, Anthony Sparrow,* now Lord Bishop of Norwich.

These were much censured.

These being published, gave occasion to those who censured all things of that nature to examine them.

The removing images that had been abused, gave great occasion of quarrel; and the thing being to be done by the clergy only, it was not like that they, who lived chiefly by such things, would be very zealous in the removing them. Yet, on the other hand, it was thought necessary to set some restraints to the heats of the people, who were otherwise apt to run too far, where bounds were not set to them.

The article about the strict observance of the holy-day seemed a little doubtful, whether by the holy-day was to be understood only the Lord's-day, or that and all other church festivals. The naming it singularly the

* These articles are not in Bishop Sparrow's collection, but were printed anno 1517.

holy-day, and in the end of that article adding festival days to the holy-day, seemed to favour their opinion that thought this strict observance of the holy-day was particularly intended for the Lord's-day, and not for the other festivals. And, indeed, the setting aside of large portions of time on that day for our spiritual edification, and for the service of God, both in public and private, is so necessary for the advancement of true piety, that great and good effects must needs follow on it. But some came afterwards, who, not content to press great strictness on that day, would needs make a controversy about the morality of it, and about the fourth commandment, and framed many rules for it, which were stricter than themselves or any other could keep, and so could only load men's consciences with many scruples. This drew an opposition from others who could not agree to these severities, and these contests were, by the subtilty of the enemies of the power and progress of religion, so improved, that instead of all men's observing that time devoutly as they ought, some took occasion from the strictness of their own way, to censure all as irreligious, who did not in every thing agree to their notion concerning it: others, by the heat of contradiction, did too much slacken this great bond and instrument of religion; which is since brought under so much neglect, that it is for most part a day only of rest from men's bodily labours, but perhaps worse employed than if they were at work: so hard a thing it is to keep the due mean, between the extremes of superstition on the one hand, and of irreligion on the other.

The corruption of lay patrons, in their simoniacal bargains, was then so notorious, that it was necessary to give a check to it, as we find there was by these injunctions. But whether either this, or the oath afterwards appointed to be taken, has effectually delivered this church of that great abuse, I shall not determine. If those who bestow benefices, did consider, that the charge of souls being annexed to them, they shall answer to God severely for putting so sacred a trust in mean or ill hands, upon any base or servile accounts, it would make them look a little more carefully to a thing of so

PART II.

1547.

high consequence; and neither expose so holy a thing to sale, nor gratify a friend or servant by granting them the next advowson, or be too easily overcome with the solicitations of impudent pretenders.

The form of bidding prayer was not begun by King Henry, as some have weakly imagined; but was used in the times of popery, as will appear by the form of bidding the beads in King Henry the Seventh's time, which will be found in the Collection; where the way was, first for the preacher to name and open his text, and then to call on the people to go to their prayers, and to tell them what they were to pray for; after which, all the people said their beads in a general silence, and the minister kneeled down likewise, and said his. All the change King Henry the Eighth made in this, was, that the pope and cardinals' names being left out, he was ordered to be mentioned with the addition of his title of Supreme Head, that the people hearing that oft repeated by their priests, might be better persuaded about it, but his other titles were not mentioned. And this order was now renewed. Only the prayer for departed souls was changed from what it had been. It was formerly in these words: "Ye shall pray for the souls that be departed, abiding the mercy of Almighty God, that it may please him, the rather at the contemplation of our prayers, to grant them the fruition of his presence;" which did imply their being in a state where they did not enjoy the presence of God; which was avoided by the more general words now prescribed.

Collect. Numb. 8.

The injunctions given the bishops directed them to that which, if followed carefully, would be the most effectual means of reforming, at least, the next age, if not that wherein they lived. For if holy orders were given to none, but to those who are well qualified, and seem to be internally called by a Divine vocation, the church must soon put on a new face: whereas, when orders are too easily given, upon the credit of emendicated recommendations, or titles, and after a slight trial of the knowledge of such candidates, without any exact scrutiny into their sense of things, or into the disposition of their minds; no wonder if, by the means of cler-

gymen so ordained, the church lose much in the esteem and love of the people, who, being possessed with prejudices against the whole society for the faults which they see in particular persons, become an easy prey to such as divide from it.

August. The Protector went into Scotland.

Thus were the visitors instructed, and sent out to make their circuits, in August, about the time that the Protector made his expedition into Scotland. For the occasion of it I shall refer the reader to what is already said in the former Part of this work. Before they engaged deeper in the war, Sir Francis Brian was sent over to France, to congratulate the new King, and to see if he would confirm those propositions that were agreed to during his father's life, and if he would pay the pension that was to be given yearly till Bulloigne was restored; and chiefly to obtain of him to be neutral in the war of Scotland; complaining of that nation, that had broken their faith with England in the matter of the marriage. To all which the French King answered, that for these articles they mentioned, he thought it dishonourable for him to confirm them; and said his father's agent, Poligny, had no warrant to yield to them; for by them the English were at liberty to fortify what they had about Bulloigne, which he would never consent to; that he was willing to pay what was agreed to by his father, but would have first the conditions of the delivery of Bulloigne made more clear: as for the Scots, they were his perpetual allies, whom he could not forsake if they were in any distress. And when it was pressed on him, and his ambassador at London, that Scotland was subject to the crown of England, they had no regard to it. When the council desired the French ambassador to look on the records which they should bring him for proving their title, he excused himself, and said, his master would not interpose in a question of that nature, nor would he look back to what was pretended to have been done two or three hundred years ago, but was to take things as he found them; and that the Scots had records likewise to prove their being a free kingdom. So the council saw they could not engage in the war with Scotland, without drawing on a war with France; which

Thuanus.

Questions made, whether Scotland was a free kingdom or subject to England.

PART II.

1547.

made them try their interest with their friends, this year, to see if the marriage could be obtained. But the castle of St. Andrew's was now lost by the assistance that Leo Strozi brought from France. And though they in England continued to send pensions to their party (for in May 1300*l.* was sent down by Henry Balnaves, and in June 125*l.* was sent to the Earl of Glencairn for a half year's payment of his pension), yet they could gain no ground there; for the Scots now thought themselves safer than formerly; the crown of England being in the hands of a child, and the court of France being much governed by their Queen Dowager's brothers. They gave way to the borderers to make inroads; of whom about two thousand fell into the western marches, and made great depredations. The Scots in Ireland were also very ill neighbours to the English there. There were many other complaints of piracies at sea, and of a ship royal that robbed many English ships; but how these came to be complained of, I do not see, for they were in open war, and I do not find any truce had been made. The French agent at London pressed much that there might be a treaty on the borders before the breach were made wider. But now the Protector had given orders for raising an army, so that he had no mind to lose that summer; yet to let the French King see how careful they were of preserving his friendship, they appointed the Bishop of Duresme, and Sir Robert Bowes, to give the Scotch commissioners a meeting on the borders the 4th of August; but with these secret instructions, that if the Scots would confirm the marriage, all other things should be presently forgiven, and peace be immediately made up; but if they were not empowered in that particular, and offered only to treat about restitutions, that then they should immediately break off the treaty. The Bishop of Duresme was also ordered to carry down with him the exemplifications of many records, to prove the subjection of the crown of Scotland to England; some of these are said to have been under the hands and seals of their kings, their nobles, their bishops, abbots, and towns. He was also ordered to search for all the records that were lying at Duresme,

where many of them were kept, to be ready to be shewed to the Scots upon any occasion that might require it. The meeting on the borders came to a quick issue, for the Scottish commissioners had no power to treat about the marriage. But Tonstall, searching the registers of his see, found many writings of great consequence to clear that subjection, of which the reader will see an account, in a letter he writ to the council, in the Collection of Papers. The most remarkable of these was, the homage King William of Scotland made to Henry the Second, by which he granted, that all the nobles of his realm should be his subjects, and do homage to him: and that all the bishops of Scotland should be under the archbishops of York; and that the King of England should give all the abbeys and honours in Scotland, at the least they should not be given without his consent, with many other things of the like nature. It was said, that the monks in those days, who generally kept the records, were so accustomed to the forging of stories and writings, that little credit was to be given to such records as lay in their keeping. But having so faithfully acknowledged what was alleged against the freedom of Scotland, I may be allowed to set down a proof on the other side, for my native country, copied from the original writing yet extant, under the hands and seals of many of the nobility and gentry of that kingdom. It is a letter to the Pope; and it was ordinary, that of such public letters there were duplicates signed; the one of which was sent, and the other laid up among the records, of which I have met with several instances: so that of this letter the copy which was reserved being now in noble hands, was communicated to me, and is in the Collection: it was upon the Pope's engaging with the King of England to assist him to subdue Scotland that they writ to him, and did assert most directly that their kingdom was at all times free and independent. But now, these questions being waved, the other difference about the marriage was brought to a sharper decision.

1547.

Collect. Numb. 9.

Collect. Numb. 10.

On the 21st of August the Protector took out a commission to be general, and to make war on Scot-

Aug. 21.

PART II.

land, and did devolve his power during his absence on the privy-council; and appointed his brother to be
1547. lord lieutenant for the south, and the Earl of Warwick (whom he carried with him) lord lieutenant for the north; and left a commission of array to the Marquis of Northampton for Essex, Suffolk, and Norfolk; to the Earl of Arundel, for Sussex, Surry, Hampshire, and Wiltshire; and to Sir Thomas Cheyney, for Kent: all this was in case of any invasion from France. Having thus settled affairs during his absence, he set out for Newcastle, having ordered his troops to march
Aug. 27,28. thither before; and coming thither on the 27th of that month, he saw his army mustered on the 28th, and marched forward to Scotland. The Lord Clinton commanded the ships, that sailed on as the army marched; which was done, that provisions and ammunition might be brought by them from Newcastle or Berwick, if the enemy should at any time fall
Sept. 2. 5. in behind their army. He entered into Scotch ground the 2d of September, and advanced to the Paths the 5th; where the passage being narrow and untoward, they looked for an enemy to have disputed it, but found none; the Scots having only broken the ways, which in that dry season signified not much, but to stop them some hours in their march. When they had passed these, some little castles, Dunglas, Thornton, and Innerwick, having but a few ill-provided men in them, sur-
Sept. 9. rendered to them. On the 9th they came to Falside, where there was a long fight in several parties, in which there were one thousand three hundred of the Scots slain. And now they were in sight of the Scotch army, which was for numbers of men one of the greatest that they had ever brought together, consisting of thirty thousand men; of which ten thousand were commanded by the Governor, eight thousand by the Earl of Angus, eight thousand by the Earl of Huntley, and four thousand by the Earl of Argyle, with a fair train of artillery, nine brass, and twenty-one iron guns. On the other side, the English army consisted of about fifteen thousand foot, and three thousand horse, but all well appointed. The Scots were now heated with the old na-

tional quarrel to England. It was given out that the Protector was come with his army to carry away their Queen, and to enslave the kingdom. And for the encouraging of the army it was also said, that twelve galleys and fifty ships were on the sea from France, and that they looked for them every day.

The Protector's offers to the Scots.

The Protector, finding an army brought together so soon, and so much greater than he expected, began to be in some apprehension, and therefore he writ to the Scots to this effect; that they should remember they were both Christians, and so should be tender of the effusion of so much blood; that this war was not made with any design, but for a perpetual peace, by the marriage of their two princes which they had already agreed, and given their public faith upon it; and that the Scots were to be much more gainers by it than the English: the island seemed made for one empire; it was pity it should be more distracted with such wars, when there was so fair and just a way offered for uniting it; and it was much better for them to marry their Queen to a prince of the same language, and on the same continent, than to a foreigner; but if they would not agree to that, he offered that their Queen should be bred up among them, and not at all contracted, neither to the French, nor to any other foreigner, till she came of age, that by the consent of the estates she might choose a husband for herself: if they would agree to this, he would immediately return with his army out of Scotland, and make satisfaction for the damages the country had suffered by the invasion. This proposition seems to justify what the Scotch writers say, though none of the English mention it, that the Protector, what for want of provisions, and what from the apprehensions he had of so numerous an army of the Scots, was in great straits, and intended to have returned back to England, without hazarding an engagement; but the Scots thought they were so much superior to the English, and that they had them now at such a disadvantage, that they resolved to fall upon them next day. And that the fair offers made by the Protector might not raise division among them, the Governor, having communicated these to a few whom

PART II.

1547. Rejected by them.

he trusted, was by their advice persuaded to suppress them: but he sent a trumpeter to the English army with an offer to suffer them to return without falling upon them; which the Protector had reason to reject, knowing that so mean an action, in the beginning of his administration, would have quite ruined his reputation: but to this, another that came with the trumpeter added a message from the Earl of Huntley, that the Protector and he, with ten or twenty of a side, or singly, should decide the quarrel by their personal valour. The Protector said, this was no private quarrel, and the trust he was in obliged him not to expose himself in such a way; and therefore he was to fight no other way but at the head of his army. But the Earl of Warwick offered to accept the challenge. The Earl of Huntley sent no such challenge, as he afterwards purged himself when he heard of it. For as it was unreasonable for him to expect the Protector should have answered it, so it had been an affronting the Governor of Scotland to have taken it off of his hands, since he was the only person that might have challenged the Protector on equal terms. The truth of the matter was, a gentleman, that went along with the trumpeter, made him do it without warrant, fancying the answer to it would have taken up some time, in which he might have viewed the enemy's camp.

Sept. 10. The battle of Pinkey near Musselburgh.

On the 10th of September the two armies drew out, and fought in the field of Pinkey near Musselburgh. The English had the advantage of the ground. And in the beginning of the action, a cannon ball from one of the English ships killed the Lord Grames' eldest son, and twenty-five men more, which put the Earl of Argyle's highlanders into such a fright, that they could not be held in order. But after a charge given by the Earl of Angus, in which the English lost some few men, the Scots gave ground, and the English observing that, and breaking in furiously upon them, the Scots threw down their arms and fled: the English pursued hard, and slew them without mercy. There were reckoned to be killed about fourteen thousand, and one thousand five hundred taken prisoners, among whom was the

A great defeat given the Scots.

1547.

Earl of Huntley, and five hundred gentlemen; and all the artillery was taken. This loss quite disheartened the Scots, so that they all retired to Strivling, and left the whole country to the Protector's mercy; who, the next day, went and took Leith; and the soldiers in the ships burnt some of the sea-towns of Fife, and retook some English ships that had been taken by the Scots, and burnt the rest. They also put a garrison in the Isle of St. Columba in the Frith, of about two hundred soldiers, and left two ships to wait on them. He also sent the Earl of Warwick's brother, Sir Ambrose Dudley, to take Broughty, a castle in the mouth of Tay; in which he put two hundred soldiers. He wasted Edinburgh, and uncovered the abbey of Holyrood-house, and carried away the lead and the bells belonging to it: but he neither took the castle of Edinburgh, nor did he go on to Strivling, where the Queen with the stragglers of the army lay. And it was thought, that, in the consternation wherein the late defeat had put them, every place would have yielded to him; but he had some private reasons that pressed his return, and made him let go the advantages that were now in his hands, and so gave the Scots time to bring succours out of France; whereas he might easily have made an end of the war now at once, if he had followed his success vigorously. The Earl of Warwick, who had a great share in the honour of the victory, but knew that the errors in conduct would much diminish the Protector's glory, which had been otherwise raised to an unmeasurable height, was not displeased at it. So on the 18th of September the Protector drew his army back into England; and having received a message from the Queen and the Governor of Scotland offering a treaty, he ordered them to send commissioners to Berwick to treat with those he should appoint. As he returned through the Merch and Teviotdale, all the chief men in those counties came in to him, and took an oath to King Edward, the form whereof will be found in the Collection, and delivered into his hands all the places of strength in their counties. He left a garrison of two hundred in Home Castle, under the command of Sir Edward Dudley; and fortified Roxburgh, where,

Sept. 18.

Collect. Numb. 11.

PART II.

1547.

for encouraging the rest, he wrought two hours with his own hands, and put three hundred soldiers and two hundred pioneers into it, giving Sir Ralph Bulmer the command. At the same time the Earl of Lenox and the Lord Wharton made an inroad by the west marches, but with little effect.

Sept. 29. The Protector returned to England.

On the 29th of September the Protector returned into England full of honour, having in all that expedition lost not above sixty men, as one that then writ the account of it says: the Scotch writers say he lost between two and three hundred. He had taken eighty pieces of cannon, and bridled the two chief rivers of the kingdom by the garrisons he left in them; and had left many garrisons in the strong places on the frontier. And now it may be easily imagined how much this raised his reputation in England; since men commonly make auguries of the fortune of their rulers, from the successes of the first designs they undertake. So now they remembered what he had done formerly in Scotland; and how he had in France, with seven thousand men, raised the French army of twenty thousand, that was set down before Bulloigne, and had forced them to leave their ordnance, baggage, and tents, with the loss of one man only, in the year 1544; and that next year he had fallen into Picardy, and built Newhaven, with two other forts there: so that they all expected great success under his government. And, indeed, if the breach between his brother and him, with some other errors, had not lost him the advantages he now had, this prosperous action had laid the foundation of great fortunes to him.

He left the Earl of Warwick to treat with those that should be sent from Scotland; but none came, for that proposition had been made only to gain time. The Queen-Mother there was not ill pleased to see the interest of the Governor so much impaired by that misfortune, and persuaded the chief men of that kingdom to cast themselves wholly into the arms of France, and to offer their young Queen to the Dauphin, and to think of no treaty with the English: so the Earl of Warwick returned to London, having no small share in the ho-

nour of this expedition. He was son to that Dudley, who was attainted and executed the first year of King Henry the Eighth's reign: but whether it was that the King afterwards repented of his severity to the father, or that he was taken with the qualities of the son, he raised him by many degrees to be Admiral and Viscount Lisle. He had defended Bulloigne, when it was in no good condition, against the Dauphin, whose army was believed fifty thousand strong; and when the French had carried the basse-town, he recovered it, and killed eight hundred of their men; the year after that, being in command at sea, he offered the French fleet battle; which they declining, he made a descent upon Normandy with five thousand men, and having burnt and spoiled a great deal, he returned to his ships with the loss only of one man. And he shewed he was as fit for a court as a camp; for being sent over to the French court upon the peace, he appeared there with much splendour, and came off with great honour. He was indeed a man of great parts, had not insatiable ambition with profound dissimulation stained his other noble qualities.

The Protector at his return was advised presently to meet the parliament (for which the writs had been sent out before he went into Scotland), now that he was so covered with glory, to get himself established in his authority, and to do those other things which required a session. He found the visitors had performed their visitation, and all had given obedience. And those who expounded the secret providences of God with an eye to their own opinions, took great notice of this; that on the same day in which the visitors removed, and destroyed most of the images in London, their armies were so successful in Scotland, in Pinkey Field. It is too common to all men to magnify such events much, when they make for them; but if they are against them, they turn it off by this, that God's ways are past finding out: so partially do men argue where they are once engaged. Bonner and Gardiner had shewed some dislike of the injunctions. Bonner received them with a protestation that he would observe them, if they were not contrary

The visitors execute the Injunctions.

Acts and Monuments.

PART II.

to God's law and the ordinances of the church. Upon which Sir Anthony Cook, and the other visitors, complained to the council; so Bonner was sent for, where he offered a submission, but full of vain quiddities, (so it is expresse din the council book.) But they not accepting of that, he made such a full one as they desired, which is in the Collection: yet, for giving terror to others, he was sent to lie for some time in the prison called the Fleet. Gardiner seeing the Homilies, was also resolved to protest against them. Sir John Godsave, who was one of the visitors, wrote to him not to ruin himself, nor lose his bishoprick by such an action: to whom he wrote a letter, that has more of a Christian and of a bishop in it, than any thing I ever saw of his. He expresses, in handsome terms, a great contempt of the world, and a resolution to suffer any thing rather than depart from his conscience: besides that (as he said), the things being against law, he would not deliver up the liberties of his country, but would petition against them: this letter will be found in the Collection; for I am resolved to suppress nothing of consequence on what side soever it may be. On the 25th of September it being informed to the council, that Gardiner had written to some of that board, and had spoken to others many things in prejudice and contempt of the King's visitation, and that he intended to refuse to set forth the Homilies and Injunctions, he was sent for to the council; where being examined, he said, he thought they were contrary to the word of God, and that his conscience would not suffer him to observe them. He excepted to one of the Homilies that it did exclude charity from justifying men, as well as faith; this he said was contrary to the book set out in the late King's time, which was afterwards confirmed in parliament in the year 1542: he said further, that he could never see one place of Scripture, nor any ancient doctor that favoured it: he also said, Erasmus's Paraphrase was bad enough in Latin, but much worse in English, for the translator had oft out of ignorance, and oft out of design, misrendered him palpably, and was one that neither understood Latin nor English well. He offered to go

1547. But they were not well received by Bonner. Collect. Numb. 12.

Nor by Gardiner.

Collect. Numb. 13.

Sept. 25.

1547.

to Oxford to dispute about justification with any they should send him to, or to enter in conference with any that would undertake his instruction in town. But this did not satisfy the council; so they pressed him to declare what he intended to do when the visitors should be with him: he said, he did not know; he should further study these points, for it would be three weeks before they could be with him; and he was sure he would say no worse, than that he should obey them as far as could consist with God's law and the King's. The council urged him to promise that he would, without any limitation, set forth the Homilies and the Injunctions; which he refusing to do, was sent to the Fleet. Some days after that, Cranmer went to see the Dean of St. Paul's, having the Bishops of Lincoln and Rochester with Dr. Cox and some others with him. He sent for Gardiner thither, and entered into discourse with him about that passage in the homily, excluding charity out of our justification; and urged those places of St. Paul, "that we are justified by faith without the works of the law:" he said his design in that passage was only to draw men from trusting in any thing they did; and to teach them to trust only to Christ. But Gardiner had a very different notion of justification: for, as he said, infants were justified by baptism, and penitents by the sacrament of penance; and that the conditions of the justifying of those of age were charity as well as faith, as the three estates make a law all joined together; for by this simile he set it out in the report he writ of that discourse to the Lord Protector, reckoning the King one of the three estates, (a way of speech very strange, especially in a bishop, and a lawyer.) For Erasmus it was said, that though there were faults in his Paraphrase, as no book besides the Scriptures is without faults, yet it was the best for that use they could find; and they did choose rather to set out what so learned a man had written, than to make a new one which might give occasion to more objections; and he was the most indifferent writer they knew. Afterwards Cranmer, knowing what was likely to work most on him, let fall some words (as Gardiner writ to the Protector) of bringing

PART II.

1547.

him into the privy-council, if he would concur in what they were carrying on: but that not having its ordinary effect on him, he was carried back to the Fleet.

There were also many complaints brought by some clergymen, of such as had used them ill for their obeying the King's Injunctions, and for removing images. Many were upon their submission sent away with a severe rebuke; others, that offended more heinously, were put in the Fleet for some time, and afterwards, giving bond for their good behaviour, were discharged. But upon the Protector's return, the Bishop of Winchester writ him a long letter in his own vindication. "He complained of the visitors proceeding in his absence in so great a matter. He said the Injunctions were contrary to themselves, for they appointed the Homilies to be read, and Erasmus's Paraphrase to be put in all churches: so he selected many passages out of these, that were contrary to one another. He also gathered many things out of Erasmus's Paraphrase that were contrary to the power of princes, and several other censurable things in that work, which Erasmus wrote when he was young, being of a far different strain from what he writ when he grew older, and better acquainted with the world. But he concluded his letter with a discourse of the extent of the King and council's power, which is all I transcribed of it, being very long, and full of things of no great consequence. He questions how far the King could command against common or statute laws; of which himself had many occasions to be well informed. Cardinal Wolsey had obtained his legantine power at the King's desire; but notwithstanding that, he was brought into a *præmunire;* and the lawyers, upon that argument, cited many precedents of judges that were fined when they transgressed the laws, though commanded by warrants from the King: and Earl Typteft, who was chancellor, lost his head for acting upon the King's warrant against law. In the late King's time, the judges would not set fines on the breakers of the King's proclamations, when they were contrary to law, till the act concerning them was passed, about which there were many hot words when

Collect. Numb. 14.

it was debated. He mentions a discourse that passed between him and the Lord Audley in the parliament, concerning the King's supremacy. Audley bid him look at the act of supremacy, and he would see the King's doings were restrained to spiritual jurisdiction: and by another act no spiritual law could take place against the common law, or an act of parliament: otherwise the bishops would strike in with the King, and, by means of the supremacy, would order the law as they pleased: but we will provide, said he, that the *præmunire* shall never go off of your backs. In some late cases he heard the judges declare what the King might do against an act of parliament, and what danger they were in that meddled in such matters. These things being so fresh in his memory, he thought he might write what he did to the lords of the council." But by this it appears, that no sort of men is so much for the King's prerogative, but, when it becomes in any instance uneasy to them, they will shelter themselves under the law. He continued afterwards, by many letters to the Protector, to complain of his ill usage: "That he had been then seven weeks in the Fleet without servants, a chaplain, or a physician: that, though he had his writ of summons, he was not suffered to come to the parliament, which might be a ground afterwards of questioning their proceedings. He advised the Protector not to make himself a party in these matters, and used all the insinuations of decent flattery that he could invent, with many sharp reflections on Cranmer, and stood much on the force of laws, that they could not be repealed by the King's will. Concerning which, he mentions a passage that fell out between Cromwell and himself before the late King. Cromwell said, that the King might make or repeal laws as the Roman emperors did, and asked his opinion about it, whether the King's will was not a law? To which he answered facetiously, that he thought it was much better for the King to make the law his will, than to make his will a law." But notwithstanding all his letters (which are printed in the second volume of Acts and Monum. Edit. 1641), yet he continued a pri-

PART II.

1547.

soner till the parliament was over, and then, by the act of pardon, he was set at liberty. This was much censured as an invasion of liberty; and it was said, those at court durst not suffer him to come to the House, lest he had confounded them in all they did: and the explaining justification with so much nicety, in homilies that were to be read to the people, was thought a needless subtlety. But the former abuses, of trusting to the acts of charity that men did, by which they fancied they bought heaven, made Cranmer judge it necessary to express the matter so nicely; though the expounding those places of St. Paul was, as many thought, rather according to the strain of the Germans, than to the meaning of those Epistles. And, upon the whole matter, they knew Gardiner's haughty temper, and that it was necessary to mortify him a little, though the pretence on which they did it seemed too slight for such severities. But it is ordinary, when a thing is once resolved on, to make use of the first occasion that offers for effecting it. The party that opposed the Reformation, finding these attempts so unsuccessful, engaged the Lady Mary to appear for them: she, therefore, wrote to the Protector, that she thought all changes in religion till the King came to be of age, were very much contrary to the respect they owed the memory of her father, if they went about to shake what he had settled; and against their duty to their young master, to hazard the peace of his kingdom, and engage his authority in such points before he was capable of judging them. I gather this to have been the substance of her letter, from the answer which the Protector wrote, which is in the Collection. In it he wrote, "That he believed her letter flowed not immediately from herself, but from the instigation of some malicious persons. He protests they had no other design, but the glory of God, and the honour and safety of the King; and that what they had done was so well considered, that all good subjects ought rather to rejoice at it, than find fault with it. And whereas she had said, that her father had brought religion to a godly order and quietness, to which both spirituality and temporality did, without compulsion,

The Lady Mary dissatisfied with the Reformation.

The Protector writ to her. Collect. Numb. 15.

give their assent; he remembers her what opposition the stiff-necked papists gave him, and what rebellions they raised against him, which he wonders how she came so soon to forget; adding, that death had prevented him before he had finished those godly orders which he had designed; and that no kind of religion was perfected at his death, but all was left so uncertain, that it must inevitably bring on great disorders, if God did not help them; and that himself and many others could witness what regret their late master had, when he saw he must die before he had finished what he intended. He wondered that she, who had been well bred, and was learned, should esteem true religion, and the knowledge of the Scriptures, newfangledness or phantasy. He desired she would turn the leaf, and look on the other side, and would, with an humble spirit, and by the assistance of the grace of God, consider the matter better."

The parliament meets.

Thus things went on till the parliament met, which was summoned to meet the 4th of November. The day before it met, the Protector gave too public an instance how much his prosperous success had lifted him up. For, by a patent under the great seal, he was warranted to sit in parliament on the right hand of the throne, and was to have all the honours and privileges that, at any time, any of the uncles of the kings of England, whether by the father's or mother's side, had enjoyed; with a *non obstante* to the statute of precedence. The Lord Rich had been made lord chancellor on the 24th of October.* On the 10th of November, a bill was brought in for the repealing several statutes. It was read the second time on the 12th, and the third time on the 16th day. On the 19th, some provisoes were added to it, and it was sent down to the Commons, who sent it up the 24th of December, to which the royal assent was given. The Commons had formed a new bill for repealing these statutes, which, upon some conferences, they were willing to let fall; only some provisoes were added to the old one; upon which

Nov. 3.

Rot. Pat. 1. Reg. 7. Part.

Nov. 10.

Nov. 19.

* "Rich. Rich Miles Dominus Rich constitutus Cancellarius Angliæ 30. Nov. Pat. 1. Edw. VI. P. 3. M. 14." *Dugdal. Orig. Jurid.*

PART II.

1547. An act repealing former severe laws.

the Bishops of London, Duresme, Ely, Hereford, and Chichester, dissented. The preamble of it sets forth, "That nothing made a government happier, than when the prince governed with much clemency, and the subjects obeyed out of love. Yet the late King, and some of his progenitors, being provoked by the unruliness of some of their people, had made severe laws; but they, judging it necessary now to recommend the King's government to the affections of the people, repealed all laws that made any thing to be treason, but what was in the Act of 25 Edward the Third; as also two of the statutes about Lollardies, together with the act of the six Articles, and the other acts that followed in explanation of that. All acts in King Henry the Eighth's time, declaring any thing to be felony that was not so declared before, were also repealed, together with the acts that made the King's proclamations of equal authority with acts of parliament. It was also enacted, that all who denied the King's supremacy, or asserted the Pope's, in words, should, for the first offence, forfeit their goods and chattels, and suffer imprisonment during pleasure; for the second offence should incur the pain of *præmunire;* and for the third offence, be attainted of treason. But, if any did in writing, printing, or by any overt act or deed, endeavour to deprive the King of his estate, or titles, particularly of his supremacy; or to confer them on any other, after the 1st of March next, he was to be adjudged guilty of high treason: and if any of the heirs of the crown should usurp upon another, or did endeavour to break the succession of the crown, it was declared high treason in them, their aiders and abettors; and all were to enjoy the benefit of clergy, and the privileges of sanctuary, as they had it before King Henry the Eighth's reign, excepting only such as were guilty of murder, poisoning, burglary, robbing on the highway, the stealing of cattle, or stealing out of churches or chapels. Poisoners were to suffer as other murderers. None were to be accused of words, but within a month after they were spoken. And those who called the French King by the title of King of France, were not to be esteemed guilty of the pains of

translating the King's authority or titles on any other." This act was occasioned by a speech that Archbishop Cranmer had in convocation, in which he exhorted the clergy to give themselves much to the study of the Scripture, and to consider seriously what things were in the church that needed reformation, that so they might throw out all the popish trash that was not yet cast out. Upon this, some intimated to him, that as long as the six Articles stood in force, it was not safe for them to deliver their opinions. This he reported to the council, upon which they ordered this act of repeal. By it, the subjects were delivered from many fears they were under, and had good hopes of a mild government; when, instead of procuring new severe laws, the old ones were let fall. The council did also free the nation of the jealousies they might have of them by such an abridgment of their own power: but others judged it had been more for the interest of the government to have kept up these laws still in force, but to have restrained the execution of them. This repeal drew on another, which was sent from the Commons on the 20th of December, and was agreed to by the Lords on the 21st. It was of an act in the twenty-eighth year of the last King, by which all laws made while his son was under twenty-four years of age, might be, by his letters-patents, after he attained that age, annulled, as if they had never been: which they altered thus—that the King, after that age, might, by his letters-patents, void any act of parliament for the future; but could not so void it from the beginning, as to annul all things done upon it between the making and annulling of it, which were still to be lawful deeds.

1547. In Cor. Ch. Coll. Camb. among Parker's papers.

The next bill of a public nature was concerning the sacrament, which was brought in, and read the first time, on the 12th of November; the second time on the 15th, and was twice read on the 17th. And on the 24th a bill was brought in for the communion to be received in both kinds; on the 3d of December it was read the second time, and given to the Protector; on the 5th read again, and given to two judges; on the 7th it was read again, and joined to the other bill about

Act about the communion.

PART II.

1547.

the sacrament: and on the 10th the whole bill was agreed to by all the peers, except the Bishops of London, Hereford, Norwich, Worcester, and Chichester, and sent down to the Commons. On the 17th, a proviso was sent after it, but was rejected by the Commons, since the Lords had not agreed to it. On the 20th it was sent up agreed to, and had afterwards the royal assent. "By it, first, the value of the holy sacrament, commonly called the sacrament of the altar, and in the Scripture the supper and table of the Lord, was set forth, together with its first institution; but it having been of late marvellously abused, some had been thereby brought to a contempt of it, which they had expressed in sermons, discourses, and songs (in words not fit to be repeated); therefore, whosoever should so offend after the 1st of May next, was to suffer fine and imprisonment at the King's pleasure; and the justices of the peace were to take information, and make presentments of persons so offending, within three months after the offences so committed, allowing them witnesses for their own purgation. And it being more agreeable to Christ's first institution, and the practice of the church for five hundred years after Christ, that the sacrament should be given in both the kinds of bread and wine, rather than in one kind only; therefore it was enacted, that it should be commonly given in both kinds, except necessity did otherwise require it. And it being also more agreeable to the first institution and the primitive practice, that the people should receive with the priest, than that the priest should receive it alone; therefore, the day before every sacrament, an exhortation was to be made to the people, to prepare themselves for it, in which the benefits and danger of worthy and unworthy receiving were to be expressed; and the priests were not without a lawful cause to deny it to any who humbly asked it."

Communion appointed in both kinds.

This was an act of great consequence, since it reformed two abuses that had crept into the church. The one was, the denying the cup to the laity; the other was, the priest's communicating alone. In the first institution it is plain, that, as Christ bade all drink

of the cup, and his disciples all drank of it, so St. Paul directed every one to examine himself, that he might "eat of that bread, and drink of that cup." From thence the church, for many ages, continued this practice; and the superstition of some, who received only in one kind, was severely censured; and such were appointed either to receive the whole sacrament, or to abstain wholly. It continued thus till the belief of the corporal presence of Christ was set up; and then the keeping and carrying about the cup in processions not being so easily done, some began to lay it aside. For a great while the bread was given dipped in the cup, to represent a bleeding Christ, as it is in the Greek church to this day. In other places the laity had the cup given them, but they were to suck it through pipes, that nothing of it should fall to the ground. But since they believed that Christ was in every crumb of bread, it was thought needless to give the sacrament in both kinds: so in the council of Constance, the cup was ordered to be denied the laity, though they acknowledged it to have been instituted and practised otherwise. To this the Bohemians would never submit; though to compel them to it much blood was shed in this quarrel. And now in the Reformation, this was every where one of the first things with which the people were possessed, the opposition of the Roman church herein to the institution of Christ being so manifest.

And all private masses put down.

At first this sacrament was also understood to be a communion of the body and blood of Christ, of which many were to be partakers: while the fervour of devotion lasted, it was thought a scandalous and censurable thing if any had come unto the Christian assemblies, and had not stayed to receive these holy mysteries; and the denying to give any one the sacrament was accounted a very great punishment; so sensible were the Christians of their ill condition when they were hindered to participate of it. But afterwards, the former devotion slackening, the good bishops in the fourth and fifth centuries complained often of it, that so few came to receive; yet the custom being to make oblations before the sacrament, out of which the clergy had been main-

PART II.

1547.

tained during the poverty of the church, the priests had a great mind to keep up the constant use of these oblations, and so persuaded the laity to continue them, and to come to the sacrament, though they did not receive it: and, in process of time, they were made to believe, that the priest received in behalf of the whole people. And whereas this sacrament was the commemoration of Christ's sacrifice on the cross, and so, by a phrase of speech, was called a sacrifice, they came afterwards to fancy, that the priest's consecrating and consuming the sacrament was an action of itself expiatory, and that both for the dead and the living. And there rose an infinite number of several sorts of masses; some were for commemorating the saints, and those were called the masses of such saints; others for a particular blessing, for rain, health, &c., and indeed for all the accidents of human life, where the addition or variation of a collect made the difference: so that all that trade of massing was now removed. An intimation was also made of exhortations to be read in it, which they intended next to set about. These abuses in the mass gave great advantages to those who intended to change it into a communion. But many, instead of managing them prudently, made unseemly jests about them, and were carried by a lightness of temper to make songs and plays of the mass; for now the press went quick, and many books were printed this year about matters of religion; the greatest number of them being concerning the mass, which were not written in so decent and grave a style as the matter required. Against this act only five bishops protested. Many of that order were absent from the parliament, so the opposition made to it was not considerable.

An act about the admission of bishops.

The next bill brought into the House of Lords was concerning the admission of bishops to their sees by the King's letters-patents; which, being read, was committed to the Archbishop of Canterbury's care on the 5th of November, and was read the second time on the 10th, and committed to some of the judges; and was read the third time on the 28th of November, and sent down to the Commons on the 5th of December.

There was also another bill brought in, concerning the ecclesiastical jurisdiction in the bishops' courts, on the 17th of November, and passed, and sent down on the 13th of December. But both these bills were put in one, and sent up by the Commons on the 20th of that month, and assented to by the King. By this act it was set forth, "that the way of choosing bishops, by *congé d'élire*, was tedious and expenseful; that there was only a shadow of election in it; and that therefore bishops should thereafter be made by the King's letters-patents, upon which they were to be consecrated: and whereas the bishops did exercise their authority, and carry on processes in their own names, as they were wont to do in the time of popery; and since all jurisdiction, both spiritual and temporal, was derived from the King; that therefore their courts and all processes should be from henceforth carried on in the King's name, and be sealed by the King's seal, as it was in the other courts of common law, after the 1st of July next; excepting only the Archbishop of Canterbury's * courts, and all collations, presentations, or letters of orders, which were to pass under the bishops' proper seals as formerly." Upon this act great advantages were taken to disparage the Reformation, as subjecting the bishops wholly to the pleasure of the court.

The ancient ways of electing bishops.

At first, bishops were chosen and ordained by the other bishops in the countries where they lived. The apostles, by that spirit of discerning, which was one of the extraordinary gifts they were endued with, did ordain the first fruits of their labours; and never left the election of pastors to the discretion of the people: indeed, when they were to ordain deacons, who were to be trusted with the distribution of the public alms, they appointed such as the people made choice of; but when St. Paul gave directions to Timothy and Titus, about the choice of pastors, all that depended on the people by them was, that they should be "blameless and of good report:" but afterwards, the poverty of the church

* The Archbishop might only use his own name and seal for faculties and dispensations, being, in all other cases, as much restrained as other bishops.

PART II.

1547.

being such, that churchmen lived only by the free bounty of the people, it was necessary to consider them much; so that, in many places, the choice began among the people; and, in all places, it was done by their approbation and good liking. But great disorders followed upon this, as soon as, by the emperors turning Christians, the wealth of church benefices made the pastoral charge more desirable; and the vast numbers of those who turned Christians with the tide, brought in great multitudes to have their votes in these elections. The inconvenience of this was felt early in Phrygia, where the council of Laodicea made a canon against these popular elections: yet, in other parts of Asia, and at Rome, there were great and often contests about it. In some of these many men were killed. In many places the inferior clergy chose their bishops; but in most places the bishops of the province made the choice, yet so as to obtain the consent of the clergy and people. The emperors, by their laws, made it necessary that it should be confirmed by the metropolitans: they reserved the elections of the great sees to themselves, or at least the confirmation of them. Thus it continued till Charles the Great's time: but then the nature of church employments came to be much altered: for though the church had predial lands, with the other rights that belonged to them, by the Roman law, yet he first gave bishops and abbots great territories, with some branches of royal jurisdiction in them, who held these lands of him, according to the feudal laws. This, as it carried churchmen off from the humility and abstraction from the world, which became their function, so it subjected them much to the humours and interests of those princes on whom they had their dependance. The popes, who had made themselves heads of the hierarchy, could not but be glad to see churchmen grow rich and powerful in the world; but they were not so well pleased to see them made so much the more dependent on their princes; and, no doubt, by some of those princes that were thus become patrons of churches, the bishopricks were either given for money, or charged with reserved pensions. Upon this, the popes filled the

world with the complaints of simony, and of enslaving churchmen to court interests; and so would not suffer them to accept of investitures from their princes, but set up for free elections, as they called them, which, they said, were to be confirmed by the see apostolic. So the canons, secular or regular, in cathedral churches, were to choose the bishops, and their election was to be confirmed at Rome: yet princes, in most places, got some hold of those elections, so that still they went as they had a mind they should; which was often complained of as a great slavery on the church, and would have been more universally condemned, if the world had not been convinced that the matter would not be much the better, if there should have been set up either the popular or synodical elections, in which faction was like to sway all. King Henry had continued the old way of the elections by the clergy, but so as that it seemed to be little more than a mockery; but now it was thought a more ingenuous way of proceeding, to have the thing done directly by the King, rather than under the thin covert of an involuntary election.

For the other branch, about ecclesiastical courts, the causes before them, concerning wills and marriages, being matters of a mixed nature, and which only belong to these by the laws of the land, and being no parts of the sacred functions, it was thought no invasion of the sacred offices to have these tried in the King's name. But the collation of benefices, and giving of orders, which are the chief parts of the episcopal function, were to be performed still by the bishops in their own names. Only excommunication, by a fatal neglect, continued to be the punishment for contempts of these courts; which, belonging only to the spiritual cognizance, ought to have been reserved for the bishop, with the assistance of his clergy: but the canonists had so confounded all the ancient rules about the government of the church, that the reformers being called away by considerations that were more obvious and pressing, there was not that care taken in this that the thing required. And these errors or oversights in the

PART II.

first concoction have, by a continuance, grown since into so formed a strength, that it is easier to see what is amiss, than to know how to rectify it.

1547. An act against vagabonds.

On the 29th of November the bill against vagabonds was brought in: by this it was enacted, "that all that should any where loiter without work, or without offering themselves to work, three days together, or that should run away from work, and resolve to live idly, should be seized on; and whosoever should present them to a justice of peace, was to have them adjudged to be his slaves for two years; and they were to be marked with the letter V. imprinted with a hot iron on their breast." A great many provisoes follow concerning clerks so convict, which shew that this act was chiefly levelled at the idle monks and friars, who went about the country, and would betake themselves to no employment; but finding the people apt to have compassion on them, they continued in that course of life; which was of very ill consequence to the state. For these vagrants did every where alienate the people's minds from the government, and persuaded them that things would never be well settled, till they were again restored to their houses. Some of these came often to London, on pretence of suing for their pensions; but really to practise up and down through the country: to prevent this, there was a proclamation set out on the 18th of September, requiring them to stay in the places where they lived, and to send up a certificate where they were to the court of Augmentations; who should thereupon give order for their constant payment. Some thought this law against vagabonds was too severe, and contrary to that common liberty, of which the English nation has been always very sensible, both in their own and their neighbours' particulars. Yet it could not be denied but extreme diseases required extreme remedies; and perhaps there is no punishment too severe for persons that are in health, and yet prefer a loitering course of life to an honest employment. There followed in the act many excellent rules for providing for the truly poor and indigent in the several places where they were born, and had their abode. Of

1547.

which this can only be said, that as no nation has laid down more effectual rules for the supplying the poor than England, so that indeed none can be in absolute want; so the neglect of these laws is a just and great reproach on those who are charged with the execution of them, when such numbers of poor vagabonds swarm every where, without the due restraints that the laws have appointed.

An act giving the chantries to the King.

On the 6th of December the bill for giving the chantries to the King was brought into the House of Lords: it was read the second time on the 12th, the third time on the 13th, and the fourth time on the 14th of that month. It was much opposed, both by Cranmer on the one hand, and the popish bishops on the other The late King's executors saw they could not pay his debts, nor satisfy themselves in their own pretensions, formerly mentioned, out of the King's revenue, and so intended to have these to be divided among them. Cranmer opposed it long: for the clergy being much impoverished by the sale of the impropriated tithes, that ought in all reason to have returned into the church, but, upon the dissolution of the abbeys, were all sold among the laity; he saw no probable way remaining for their supply, but to save these endowments till the King were of age, being confident he was so piously disposed, that they should easily persuade him to convert them all to the bettering of the condition of the poor clergy, that were now brought into extreme misery: and therefore he was for reforming and preserving these foundations till the King's full age. The popish bishops liked these endowments so well, that, upon far different motives, they were for continuing them in the state they were in. But those who were to gain by it were so many that the act passed; the Archbishop of Canterbury, the Bishops of London, Duresme, Ely, Norwich, Hereford, Worcester, and Chichester dissenting. So it being sent down to the House of Commons, was there much opposed by some burgesses; who represented that the boroughs, for which they served, could not maintain their churches, and other public works of the guilds and fraternities, if the rents belonging to them were given to the King;

PART II.

1547.

for these were likewise in the act. This was chiefly done by the burgesses of Lynn and Coventry; who were so active, that the whole House was much set against that part of the bill for the guild lands: therefore those who managed that House for the court, took these off by an assurance, that their guild lands should be restored to them: and so they desisted from their opposition, and the bill passed on the promise given to them, which was afterwards made good by the Protector. In the preamble of the act it is set forth, "That the great superstition of Christians, rising out of their ignorance of the true way of salvation by the death of Christ, instead of which they had set up the vain conceits of purgatory, and masses satisfactory, was much supported by trentals and chantries. And since the converting these to godly uses, such as the endowing of schools, provisions for the poor, and the augmenting of places in the universities, could not be done by parliament, they therefore committed it to the care of the King: and then, reciting the act made in the thirty-seventh year of his father's reign, they give the King all such chantries, colleges, and chapels, as were not possessed by the late King, and all that had been in being any time these five years last past; as also all revenues belonging to any church, for anniversaries, obits, and lights; together with all guild lands, which any fraternity of men enjoyed, for obits, or the like; and appoint these to be converted to the maintenance of grammar schools, or preachers, and for the increase of vicarages." After this followed the act giving the King the customs known by the name of tonnage and poundage, besides some other laws, of matters that are not needful to be remembered in this History. Last of all came the King's general pardon, with the common exceptions, among which, one was of those who were then prisoners in the Tower of London, in which the Duke of Norfolk was included. So, all business being ended, the parliament was prorogued from the 24th of December to the 20th of April following.

But, having given this account of these bills that were passed, I shall not esteem it an unfruitful piece of his-

tory to shew what other bills were designed. There were put into the House of Lords two bills that were stifled; the one was, for the use of the Scriptures, which came not to a second reading; the other was, a bill for erecting a new court of chancery for ecclesiastical and civil causes, which was committed to some bishops and temporal lords, but never more mentioned. The Commons sent up also some bills, which the Lords did not agree to: one was about benefices, with cure and residence; it was committed, but never reported. Another was, for the reformation of divers laws, and of the courts of common law; and a third was, that married men might be priests, and have benefices: to this the Commons did so readily agree, that it being put in on the 19th of December, and read then for the first time, it was read twice the next day, and sent up to the Lords on the 21st: but, being read there once, it was like to have raised such debates, that, it being resolved to end the session before Christmas, the Lords laid it aside.

1547. Acts that were proposed, but not carried.

But while the parliament was sitting, they were not idle in the convocation; though the popish party was yet so prevalent in both Houses, that Cranmer had no hopes of doing any thing, till they were freed of the trouble which some of the great bishops gave them. The most important thing they did, was the carrying up four petitions to the bishops, which will be found in the Collection:—First, that, according to the statute made in the reign of the late King there might be persons empowered for reforming the ecclesiastical laws. The second, that, according to the ancient custom of the nation, and the tenor of the bishops' writ to the parliament, the inferior clergy might be admitted again to sit in the House of Commons, or that no acts concerning matters of religion might pass without the sight and assent of the clergy. The third, that, since divers prelates, and other divines, had been in the late King's time appointed to alter the service of the church, and had made some progress in it, that this might be brought to its full perfection. The fourth, that some consideration might be had for the maintenance of the clergy, the first year they came into their livings, in which they

The convocation meets.

The lower House made some petitions. Numb. 16.

PART II.

1547.

were charged with the first fruits; to which they added, a desire to know whether they might safely speak their minds about religion, without the danger of any law. For the first of these four petitions, an account of it shall be given hereafter. As to the second, it was a thing of great consequence, and deserves to be farther considered in this place.

The inferior clergy desire to be admitted to have representatives in the House of Commons.

Anciently, all the freemen of England, or at least those that held of the crown in chief, came to parliament; and then the inferior clergy had writs as well as the superior, and the first of the three estates of the kingdom were the bishops, the other prelates, and the inferior clergy. But when the parliament was divided into two houses, then the clergy made likewise a body of their own, and sate in convocation, which was the third estate: but the bishops having a double capacity, the one of ecclesiastical prelature, the other of being the King's barons, they had a right to sit with the Lords as a part of their estate, as well as in the convocation. And though by parity of reason it might seem that the rest of the clergy, being freeholders as well as clerks, had an equal right to choose, or be chosen, into the House of Commons; yet, whether they were ever in possession of it, or whether, according to the clause *præmonentes* in the bishops' writ, they were ever a part of the House of Commons, is a just doubt; for, besides this assertion in the petition that was mentioned, and a more large one in the second petition which they presented to the same purpose, which is likewise in the Collection, I have never met with any good reason to satisfy me in it. There was a general tradition in Queen Elizabeth's reign, that the inferior clergy departed from their right of being in the House of Commons, when they were all brought into the *præmunire* upon Cardinal Wolsey's legantine power, and made their submission to the King: but that is not credible; for as there is no footstep of it, which in a time of so much writing and printing must have remained, if so great a change had been then made; so it cannot be thought, that those who made this address but seventeen years after that submission, (many being alive in this who were of that convocation, Polydore Virgil

Numb. 17.

in particular, a curious observer, since he was maintained here to write the history of England,) none of them should have remembered a thing that was so fresh, but have appealed to writs and ancient practices. But though this design of bringing the inferior clergy into the House of Commons did not take at this time, yet it was again set on foot in the end of Queen Elizabeth's reign, and reasons were offered to persuade her to set it forward; which not being then successful, the same reasons were again offered to King James, to induce him to endeavour it. The paper that discovers this was communicated to me by Dr. Borlace, the worthy author of the History of the Irish Rebellion: it is corrected in many places by the hand of Bishop Ravis, then bishop of London, a man of great worth. This, for the affinity of the matter, and the curiosity of the thing, I have put into the Collection, with a large marginal note, as it was designed to be transcribed for King James: but whether this matter was ever much considered, or lightly laid aside, as a thing unfit and unpracticable, does not appear; certain it is, that it came to nothing. Upon the whole matter, it is not certain what was the power or right of these proctors of the clergy in former times: some are of opinion, that they were only assistants to the bishops, but had no voice in either house of parliament; this is much confirmed by an act passed in the parliament of Ireland, in the twenty-eighth year of the former reign, which sets forth in the preamble, "That though the proctors of the clergy were always summoned to parliament, yet they were no part of it; nor had they any right to vote in it, but were only assistants in case matters of controversy or learning came before them, as the convocation was in England, which had been determined by the judges of England after much inquiry made about it: but the proctors were then pretending to so high an authority, that nothing could pass without their consents; and it was presumed they were set on to it by the bishops, whose chaplains they were for the most part: therefore they were by that act declared to have no right to vote."

1547.

Numb. 18.

Coke 4. Inst. 3, 4.

From this some infer, they were no other in England,

PART II.

1547.

and that they were only the bishops' assistants and council: but as the clause *præmonentes* in the writ seems to make them a part of the parliament, so these petitions suppose that they sate in the House of Commons anciently, where it cannot be imagined they could sit, if they came only to be assistants to the bishops; for then they must have sate in the House of Lords rather, as the judges, the masters of chancery, and the King's council do. Nor is it reasonable to think they had no voice, for then their sitting in parliament had been so insignificant a thing, that it is not likely they would have used such endeavours to be restored to it; since their coming to parliament upon such an account must have been only a charge to them.

There is against this opinion an objection of great force from the acts passed in the twenty-first year of Richard the Second's reign. In the second act of that parliament it is said, "That it was first prayed by the Commons, and that the lords spiritual, and the proctors of the clergy, did assent to it; upon which the King, by the assent of all the Lords and Commons, did enact it." The twelfth act of that parliament was a repeal of the whole parliament that was held in the eleventh year of that reign; and concerning it, it is expressed, "That the Lords spiritual and temporal, the proctors of the clergy, and the Commons, being severally examined, did all agree to it." From hence it appears, that these proctors were then not only a part of the parliament, but were a distinct body of men that did severally, from all the rest, deliver their opinions. It may seem strange, that, if they were then considered as a part of either house of parliament, this should be the only time in which they should be mentioned as bearing their share in the legislative power. In a matter that is so perplexed and dark, I shall presume to offer a conjecture, which will not appear perhaps improbable. In the 204th page of the former Part, I gave the reasons that made me think the Lower House of Convocation consisted at first only of the proctors of the clergy; so that, by the proctors of the clergy, both in the statute of Ireland, and in those made by Richard II. is, perhaps, to be

understood, the Lower House of Convocation; and it is not unreasonable to think, that upon so great an occasion as the annulling a whole parliament, to make it pass the better, in an age in which the people paid so blind a submission to the clergy, the concurrence of the whole representative of the church might have been thought necessary. It is generally believed, that the whole parliament sate together in one house before Edward the Third's time, and then the inferior clergy were a part of that body without question. But when the Lords and Commons sate apart, the clergy likewise sate in two houses, and granted subsidies as well as the temporality. It may pass for no unlikely conjecture, that the clause *præmonentes* was first put in the bishops' writ for the summoning of the Lower House of Convocation, consisting of these proctors; and afterwards, though there was a special writ for the convocation, yet this might at first have been continued in the bishops' writ by the neglect of a clerk, and from thence be still used; so that it seems to me most probable, that the proctors of the clergy were, both in England and Ireland, the Lower House of Convocation. Now before the submission which the clergy made to King Henry, as the convocation gave the King great subsidies, so the whole business of religion lay within their sphere. But after the submission, they were cut off from meddling with it, except as they were authorized by the King; so that, having now so little power left them, it is no wonder they desired to be put in the state they had been in before the convocation was separated from the parliament; or at least that matters of religion should not be determined till they had been consulted, and had reported their opinions and reasons. The extreme of raising the ecclesiastical power too high in the times of popery, had now produced another, of depressing it too much. For seldom is the counterpoise so justly balanced, that extremes are reduced to a well-tempered mediocrity.

For the third petition, it was resolved that many bishops and divines should be sent to Windsor to labour in the matter of the church service; but that required so much consideration, that they could not enter on it

PART II.

during a session of parliament. And for the fourth, what answer was given to it doth not appear.

1547.

On the 29th of November a declaration was sent down from the bishops concerning the sacraments being to be received in both kinds; to which Jo. Taylour, the prolocutor, and several others, set their hands; and being again brought before them, it was agreed to by all without a contradictory vote; sixty-four being present, among whom I find Polydore Virgil was one. And on the 17th of December the proposition concerning the marriage of the clergy was also sent to them, and subscribed by thirty-five affirmatively, and by fourteen negatively; so it was ordered, that a bill should be drawn concerning it. I shall not here digress to give an account of what was alleged for or against this, reserving that to its proper place, when the thing was finally settled.

And this is all the account I could recover of this convocation; I have chiefly gathered it from some notes, and other papers, of the then Dr. Parker (afterwards archbishop of Canterbury), which are carefully preserved with his other MSS. in Corpus Christi College library, at Cambridge. To which library I had free access by the favour of the most learned master, Dr. Spencer, with the other worthy fellows of that house: and from thence I collected many remarkable things in this History.

The parliament being brought to so good a conclusion, the Protector took out a new commission, in which all the addition that is made to that authority he formerly had, is, that in his absence he is empowered to substitute another, to whom he might delegate his power.

The state of affairs in Germany.

And thus this year ended in England: but as they were carrying on the Reformation here, it was declining apace in Germany. The Duke of Saxe and the Landgrave were this year to command their armies apart. The Duke of Saxe kept within his own country, but having there unfortunately divided his forces, the Emperor overtook him near the Alb at Mulberg; where the Emperor's soldiers crossing the river, and pursuing him with great fury, after some resistance, in which he

himself performed all that could be expected from so great a captain, was taken prisoner, and his country all possessed by Maurice, who was now to be invested with the electoral dignity. He bore his misfortunes with a greatness and equality of mind that is scarce to be paralleled in history. Neither could the insolence with which the Emperor treated him, nor the fears of death to which he adjudged him, nor that tedious imprisonment which he suffered so long, ever shake or disorder a mind that was raised so far above the inconstancies of human affairs. And though he was forced to submit to the hardest conditions possible, of renouncing his dignity and dominions, some few places being only reserved for his family; yet no entreaties nor fears could ever bring him to yield any thing in matters of religion. He made the Bible his chief companion and comfort in his sharp afflictions; which he bore so, as if he had been raised up to that end, to let the world see how much he was above it. It seemed unimitable; and therefore engaged Thuanus, with the other excellent writers of that age, to set it out with all the advantages that so unusual a temper of mind deserved: yet had those writers lived in our age, and seen a great King, not overpowered by a superior prince, but by the meanest of his own people, and treated with equal degrees of malice and scorn, and at last put to death openly, with the pageantry of justice; and yet bearing all this with such invincible patience, heroical courage, and most Christian submission to God, they had yet found a nobler subject for their eloquent pens: but he saved the world the labour of giving a just representation of his behaviour in his sufferings, having left his own portraiture drawn by himself in such lively and lasting colours.

1547. April 24, 1547. Duke of Saxe taken.

The Landgrave of Hesse saw he could not long withstand the Emperor's army, now so lifted up with success; and therefore was willing to submit to him on the best terms that his sons-in-law, the Elector of Brandenburg and Maurice of Saxe, could obtain for him; which were very hard, only he was to enjoy his liberty, without any imprisonment, and to preserve his dominions. But the Emperor's ministers dealt most unfaith-

PART II.

1547.

fully with him in this; for in the German language there was but one letter difference, and that only inverted, between perpetual imprisonment, and any imprisonment, (*ewig* for *emig*;) so, by this base artifice, he was, when he came and submitted to the Emperor, detained a prisoner. He had not the Duke of Saxe's temper, but was out of measure impatient, and did exclaim of his ill usage; but there was no remedy, for the Emperor was now absolute. All the towns of Germany, Magdeburg and Breme only excepted, submitted to him, and redeemed his favour by great sums of money, and many pieces of ordnance. And the Bohemians were also forced to implore his brother's mercy, who, before he would receive them into his hands, got his revenue to be raised vastly: and now the empire was wholly at the Emperor's mercy. Nothing could withstand him, who had in one year turned out two electors.

April 16, 1546. Herman excommunicated at Rome.

For Herman, bishop of Colen, as he was before condemned by the Pope, so was also degraded from that dignity by the Emperor; and Adolph, whom he had procured to be made his coadjutor, was declared elector. Many of his subjects and neighbour princes offered their service, if he would stand to his own defence; but he was very old, and of so meek a temper, that he would suffer no blood to be shed on his account; and

Nov. 4. Herman resigned.

therefore withdrew peaceably to a retirement, in which he lived four years, till his death. His brother, that was bishop of Munster and dean of Bonne, who had gone along with him in his reformation, was also turned out; and Gropper was made dean, who was esteemed one of the learnedest and best men of the clergy at this time. He is said to have expressed a generous contempt of the highest dignity the see of Rome could bestow on him, for he refused a cardinal's hat when it was offered him; yet in this matter he had not behaved himself as became so good a man, and so learned a divine: for he had consented to the changes which had been made, and was in a correspondence with Martin Bucer, whom Herman brought to Colen; (as will appear by an excellent letter

Numb. 19.

of Bucer's to him, which will be found in the Collection, concerning that matter;) by which it is plain he went

along with them from the beginning. But it seems he did it covertly and fearfully, and was afterwards drawn off, either by the love of the world, or the fears of the cross; of which it appears Bucer had then some apprehensions, though he expressed them very modestly. Gropper's memory being in such high esteem, and this letter being found among Bucer's papers, I thought the publishing of it would not be unacceptable, though it be of a foreign matter.

Germany being thus under the power and dread of the Emperor, a diet was summoned to Augsburg: where the chief church was taken from the protestants, and put into the Cardinal of Augsburg's hands, to have the mass set up again in it; though the town was so much protestant, that they could find none that would come to it, but some poor people who were hired. The Emperor, among other propositions he put into the diet, pressed this, that all differences in religion, which had so distracted Germany, might be removed. The ecclesiastical princes answered, that the only way to effect that, was to submit to the general council that was at Trent: those that were for the Augsburg Confession said, they could submit to no council where the Pope presided, and where the bishops were sworn to obey him; but would submit to it, if that oath was dispensed with, and their divines admitted to defend their opinions, and all the decrees that had been made were again considered. In this difference of opinion, the Emperor thought, that if the whole matter should be left to his discretion, to which all should be bound to submit, he would then be able to determine it as he pleased. So he dealt privately with the Electors Palatine and Saxe; and, as they published it afterwards, gave them secret assurances about the freedom of their religion, and that he only desired this to put him in a capacity of dealing on other terms with the Pope: upon which they consented to a decree, referring the matter of religion wholly to his care. But the deputies from the cities, who looked on this as a giving up of their religion, could not be wrought to do it, without conditions, which they put into another writing, as explanatory of the submission: but the Em-

PART II.

1547.

peror took no notice of that, and only thanked them for their confidence in him; and so the decree was published. All this was in some sort necessary for the Emperor, who was then in very ill terms with the Pope about the business of Placentia: for the Pope's natural son, Petrus Aloisius, being killed by a conspiracy, the Governor of Milan had seized on Placentia, which made the Pope believe the Emperor was accessary to it; for which the reader is referred to the Italian historians. The Pope saw the Emperor in one summer delivered of a war, which he had hoped would have entangled him his whole life; and though in decency he could not but seem to rejoice, and did so no doubt, at the ruin of those whom he called heretics, yet he was not a little grieved to see the Emperor so much exalted.

Sept. 10, 1547. Petrus Aloisius killed.

At Trent the legates had been oft threatened and affronted by the Emperor's ambassadors and bishops, who were set on reforming abuses, and lessening the power of the see of Rome: so they had a mind to break up the council; but that would have been so scandalous a thing, and so resented by the Emperor, that they resolved rather on a translation into some town of the Pope's, to which it was not likely the imperialists would follow them; and so at least the council would be suspended, if not dissolved. For this remove, they laid hold on the first colour they could find. One dying of a malignant fever, it was given out, and certified by physicians, that he died of the plague; so in all haste they translated the council to Bologna. The imperialists protested against it, but in vain; for thither they went. The Emperor was hereby quite disappointed of his chief design, which was to force the Germans to submit to a council held in Germany; and therefore, no plague appearing at Trent, he pressed the return of the council thither: but the Pope said, it was the council's act, and not his; and that their honour was to be kept up; that therefore such as stayed at Trent were to go first to Bologna, and acknowledge the council, and they should then consider what was to be done: so that now all the hope the Germans had, was, that this difference between the Pope and Emperor might give them some

The proceedings at Trent.

April 21. The first session of Bologna.

1547.

breathing; and time might bring them out of these extremities into which they were then driven. Upon these disorders the foreign reformers, who generally made Germany their sanctuary, were now forced to seek it elsewhere. So Peter Martyr, in the end of November this year, was brought over to England, by the invitation which the Archbishop of Canterbury sent him in the King's name. He was born in Florence, where he had been an Augustinian monk. He was learned in the Greek and the Hebrew, which drew on him the envy of the rest of his order, whose manners he inveighed oft against. So he left them, and went to Naples, where he gathered an assembly of those who loved to worship God more purely. This being made known, he was forced to leave that place, and went next to Lucca, where he lived in society with Tremellius and Zanchius: but being also in danger there, he went to Zurich with Bernardinus Ochinus, that had been one of the most celebrated preachers of Italy, and now forsook his former superstitions. From Zurich he went to Basil; and from thence, by Martin Bucer's means, he was brought to Strasburg, where Cranmer's letter found both him and Ochinus. The latter was made a canon of Canterbury, with a dispensation of residence; and by other letters-patents forty marks were given yearly to him, and as much to Peter Martyr.

The French quarrel about Bulloigne.

There had been this year some differences between the English and French concerning the fortifications about Bulloigne. The English were raising a great fort by the harbour there. This being signified to King Henry by Gaspar Coligny, afterwards the famous admiral of France, then governor of the neighbouring parts to Bulloigne, it was complained of at the court of England. It was answered, that this was only to make the harbour more secure; and so the works were ordered to be vigorously carried on: but this could not satisfy the French, who plainly saw it was of another sort than to be intended only for the sea. The King of France came and viewed the country himself, and ordered Coligny to raise a fort on a high ground near it, which was called the Chastilian fort, and com-

PART II.

1547.

manded both the English fort and the harbour. But the Protector had no mind to give the French a colour for breaking with the English; so there was a truce and further cessation agreed on, in the end of September. These are all the considerable foreign transactions of this year in which England was concerned. But there was a secret contrivance laid at home of a high nature, which, though it broke not out till the next year, yet the beginnings of it did now appear.

The breach between the Protector and the Admiral.

The Protector's brother, Thomas Seymour, was brought to such a share in his fortunes, that he was made a baron, and lord admiral: but this not satisfying his ambition, he endeavoured to have linked himself into a nearer relation with the crown, by marrying the King's sister, the Lady Elizabeth; but, finding he could not compass that, he made his addresses to the Queen Dowager; who, enjoying now the honour and wealth the late King had left her, resolved to satisfy herself in her next choice, and entertained him a little too early; for they were married so soon after the King's death, that it was charged afterwards on the Admiral, that, if she had brought a child as soon as might have been after the marriage, it had given cause to doubt whether it had not been by the late King; which might have raised great disturbance afterwards. But being thus married to the Queen, he concealed it for some time, till he procured a letter from the King, recommending him to her for a husband: upon which they declared their marriage, with which the Protector was much offended. Being thus possessed of great wealth, and being husband to the Queen Dowager, he studied to engage all that were about the King to be his friends; and he corrupted some of them by his presents, and forced one on Sir John Cheek. That which he designed was, that whereas in former times, the infant kings of England had had governors of their persons, distinct from the protectors of their realms; which trusts were divided between their uncles, it being judged too much to join both in one person, who was thereby too great; whereas a governor of the King's person might be a check on the Protector; he would,

therefore, himself be made governor of the King's person, alleging, that since he was the King's uncle, as well as his brother, he ought to have a proportioned share with him in the government. About Easter, this year, he first set about this design, and corrupted some about the King, who should bring him sometimes privately through the gallery to the Queen's lodgings; and he desired they would let him know when the King had occasion for money, and that they should not always trouble the treasury, for he would be ready to furnish him; and he thought a young King might be taken with this. So it happened, that the first time Latimer preached at court, the King sent to him to know what present he should make him: Seymour sent him 40*l.* but said, he thought 20*l.* enough to give Latimer, and the King might dispose of the rest as he pleased. Thus he gained ground with the King, whose sweet nature exposed him to be easily won by such artifices.

It is generally said, that all this difference between the brothers was begun by their wives; and that the Protector's lady, being offended that the younger brother's wife had the precedence of her, which she thought belonged to herself, did thereupon raise and inflame the differences. But in all the letters that I have seen concerning this breach, I could never find any such thing once mentioned: nor is it reasonable to imagine, that the Dutchess of Somerset should be so foolish as to think that she ought to have the precedence of the Queen Dowager.* Therefore I look upon this story as a mere fiction; though it is probable enough there might, upon some other accounts, have been some animosities between the two high-spirited ladies, which might have afterwards been thought to have occasioned their husbands' quarrel.

It is plain, in the whole thread of this affair, that the Protector was at first very easy to be reconciled to his brother, and was only assaulted by him; but bore the

*She is acknowledged to have been an insolent and ambitious woman, and to have had great power over her husband; and was the chief cause of procuring an act of parliament for the disinheriting, and excluding from his honours, his children by his former wife.

PART II.

1547.

trouble he gave him with much patience for a great while; though in the end, seeing his factious temper was incurable, he laid off nature too much when he consented to his execution: yet all along till then, he had rather too much encouraged his brother to go on, by his readiness to be, after every breach, reconciled to him. When the Protector was in Scotland, the Admiral then began to act more avowedly, and was making a party for himself; of which Paget took notice, and charged him with it in plain terms. He asked him, why he would go about to reverse that, which himself and others had consented to, under their hands? Their family was now so great, that nothing but their mutual quarrelling could do them any prejudice: but there would not be wanting officious men to inflame them, if they once divided among themselves; and the breaches among near friends commonly turn to the most irreconcilable quarrels. Yet all was ineffectual; for the Admiral was resolved to go on, and either get himself advanced higher, or to perish in the attempt. It was the knowledge of this which forced the Protector to return from Scotland so abruptly and disadvantageously, for the securing of his interest with the King, on whom his brother's artifices had made some impression. Whether there was any reconciliation made between them before the parliament met is not certain: but during the session, the Admiral got the King to write, with his own hand, a message to the House of Commons, for the making of him governor of his person; and he intended to have gone with it to the House, and had a party there, by whose means he was confident to have carried his business. He dealt also with many of the lords and counsellors to assist him in it. When this was known, before he had gone with it to the House, some were sent to him, in his brother's name, to see if they could prevail with him to proceed no further. He refused to hearken to them, and said, that if he were crossed in his attempt, he would make this the blackest parliament that ever was in England. Upon that he was sent for by order from the council, but refused to come. Then they threatened him severely,

and told him, the King's writing was nothing in law, but that he who had procured it was punishable for doing an act of such a nature, to the disturbance of the government, and for engaging the young King in it: so they resolved to have sent him to the Tower, and to have turned him out of all his offices. But he submitted himself to the Protector and council; and his brother and he seemed to be perfectly reconciled. Yet, as the Protector had reason to have a watchful eye over him, so it was too soon visible that he had not laid down, but only put off his high projects till a fitter conjuncture: for he began the next Christmas to deal money again among the King's servants, and was, on all occasions, infusing into the King a dislike of every thing that was done, and did often persuade him to assume the government himself. But the sequel of this quarrel proved fatal to him, as shall be told in its proper place. And thus ended the year 1547. 1547.

On the 8th of January, next year, Gardiner was brought before the council: where it was told him, that his former offences being included in the King's general pardon, he was thereupon discharged; a grave admonition was given him to carry himself reverently and obediently, and he was desired to declare whether he would receive the Injunctions and Homilies, and the doctrine to be set forth, from time to time, by the King and clergy of the realm. He answered, he would conform himself as the other bishops did, and only excepted to the Homily of Justification, and desired four or five days to consider of it. What he did at the end of that time does not appear from the council-book, no farther mention being made of this matter; for the clerks of council did not then enter every thing with that exactness that is since used. He went home to his diocess, where there still appeared in his whole behaviour great malignity to Cranmer, and to all motions for reformation; yet he gave such outward compliance, that it was not easy to find any advantage against him, especially now since the council's great power was so much abridged. 1548. Jan. 8.

In the end of January, the council made an order

PART II.

1548. The Marquis of Northampton sues a divorce for adultery.

concerning the Marquis of Northampton, which will oblige me to look back a little for the clear account of it. This lord, who was brother to the Queen Dowager, had married Anne Bouchier, daughter to the Earl of Essex, the last of that name; but she being convicted of adultery, he was divorced from her; which, according to the law of the ecclesiastical courts, was only a separation from bed and board. Upon which divorce, it was proposed, in King Henry's time, to consider what might be done in favour of the innocent person, when the other was convicted of adultery. So, in the beginning of King Edward's reign, on the 7th of May, a commission was granted to the Archbishop of Canterbury, the Bishops of Duresme and Rochester (this was Holbeck, who was not then translated to Lincoln), to Dr. Ridley, and six more, ten in all, of whom six were a quorum, to try whether the Lady Anne was not by the word of God so lawfully divorced, that she was no more his wife, and whether thereupon he might not marry another wife. This being a new case, and of great importance, Cranmer resolved to examine it with his ordinary diligence, and searched into the opinions of the fathers and doctors so copiously, that his collections about it grew into a large book (the original whereof I have perused); the greatest part of it being written, or marked and interlined with his own hand. This required a longer time than the Marquis of Northampton could stay; and, therefore, presuming on his great power, without waiting for judgment, he solemnly married Elizabeth, daughter to Brooke, Lord Cobham. On the 28th of January, information was brought to the council of this, which gave great scandal, since his first marriage stood yet firm in law. So he, being put to answer for himself, said, he thought that by the word of God he was discharged of his tie to his former wife; and the making marriages indissoluble was but a part of the popish law, by which it was reckoned a sacrament; and yet the popes, knowing that the world would not easily come under such a yoke, had, by the help of the canonists, invented such distinctions, that it was no uneasy thing to make a marriage void among

Ex MSS. D. Stillingfleet.

them: and that the condition of this church was very hard, if, upon adulteries, the innocent must either live with the guilty, or be exposed to temptations to the like sins, if a separation was only allowed, but the bond of the marriage continued undissolved. But since he had proceeded so far before the delegates had given sentence, it was ordered, that he and his new wife should be parted; and that she should be put into his sister the Queen Dowager's keeping, till the matter were tried, whether it was according to the word of God or not; and that then further order should be given in it. Upon this the delegates made haste, and gathered their arguments together: of which I shall give an abstract, both for the clearing of this matter (concerning which, not many years ago, there were great debates in parliament), and also to shew the exactness of the proceedings in that time.

The grounds on which he was suffered to marry again.

Christ condemned all marriages upon divorces, except in the case of adultery, which seemed manifestly to allow them in that case. And though this is not mentioned by St. Mark, and St. Luke, yet it is enough that St. Matthew has it. Christ also defined the state of marriage to be that in which "two are one flesh;" so that when either of the two hath broken that union, by becoming one with another person, then the marriage is dissolved. And it is oft repeated in the gospel, that married persons have power over one another's bodies, and that they are to give due benevolence to each other; which is plainly contrary to this way of separation without dissolving the bond. St. Paul, putting the case of an unbeliever departing from the partner in marriage, says, The believing party, whether brother or sister, is not under bondage in such a case; which seems a discharge of the bond in case of desertion: and certainly adultery is yet of a higher nature. But against this was alleged, on the other side, that our Saviour's allowing divorce in the case of adultery, was only for the Jews, to whom it was spoken, to mitigate the cruelty of their law, by which the adulteress was to be put to death; and therefore he yielded divorce in that case, to mitigate the severity of the other law. But the apostle,

PART II.

1548.

writing to the gentile Christians at Rome and Corinth, said, the wife was "tied by the law to the husband, as long as he lived." And that other general rule, "Whom God hath joined together, let no man put asunder," seems against the dissolving the bond. To this it was answered, that it is against separating as well as dissolving; that the wife is tied to her husband, but if he ceaseth to be her husband, that tie is at an end. That our Saviour left the wife at liberty to divorce her husband for adultery, though the law of Moses had only provided, that the adulterous wife, and he who defiled her, were to die; but the husband who committed adultery was not so punishable: therefore our Saviour had, by that provision, declared the marriage to be clearly dissolved by adultery.

From hence they went to examine the authorities of the fathers. Hermes was for putting away the adulteress, but so as to receive her again upon repentance. Origen thought the wife could not marry again after divorce. Tertullian allowed divorce, and thought it dissolved the marriage as much as death did. Epiphanius did also allow it. And Ambrose, in one place, allows the husband to marry after divorce for adultery, though he condemns it always in the wife. Basil allowed it on either side upon adultery. Jerome, who condemns the wife's marrying, though her husband were guilty of adultery, and who disliked the husband's marrying again, though he allowed him to divorce upon adultery, or the suspicion of it; yet, when his friend Fabiola had married after a divorce, he excuses it, saying, it was better for her to marry than to burn. Chromatius allowed of second marriages after divorce: and so did Chrysostome, though he condemned them in women so divorcing. St. Austin was sometimes for a divorce, but against marriage upon it; yet in his Retractations, he writ doubtfully of his former opinion. In the civil law the Christian emperors allowed the power of divorcing both to husband and wife, with the right of marrying afterwards. Nor did they restrain the grounds of divorce only to adultery, but permitted it in many other cases; as, if the wife were guilty of treason, had treated

for another husband, had procured an abortion, had been whole nights abroad, or had gone to see the public plays without leave from her husband, besides many other particulars; against which, none of the fathers had writ, nor endeavoured to get them repealed. All these laws were confirmed by Justinian, when he gathered the laws into a body, and added to it where they were defective. In the canon law, it is provided, that he whose wife is defiled, must not be denied lawful marriage. Pope Gregory denied a second marriage to the guilty person, but allowed it to the innocent after divorce. Pope Zachary allowed the wife of an incestuous adulterer to be married, if she could not contain. In the canon law, the council of Tribury is cited, for allowing the like privilege to the husbands. By the council of Elvira, a man that finds that his wife intends to kill him may put her away, and marry another; but she must never marry. The council of Arles recommended it to husbands, whose wives were found in adultery, not to marry during their lives. And that at Elvira denied the sacrament to a wife who left an adulterous husband, and married another; but she might have the communion when her first husband died: so the second marriage was accounted good, but only indecent. But the council of Milevi forbids both man and wife to marry after divorce. All these were collected by Cranmer, with several very important reflections on most of the quotations out of the fathers. With these there is another paper, given in by one who was against the dissolving the bond, in which there are many quotations brought, both from the canon law and the fathers, for the contrary opinion. But most of the fathers there cited are of the latter ages; in which the state of celibate had been so exalted by the monks, that, in all doubtful cases, they were resolved still to prefer that opinion which denied liberty for further marriages. In conclusion, this whole question was divided into eight queries, which were put to some learned men (who these were does not appear); and they returned their answer in favour of the second marriage, which will be found in the Collection. In the end,

Collect. Numb. 20.

PART II.

1548.

sentence was given, allowing the second marriage in that case; and by consequence confirming the Marquis of Northampton's marriage to his second wife, who, upon that, was suffered to cohabit with him. Yet, four years after, he was advised to have a special act of parliament for confirming this sentence; of which mention shall be made in its due time and place.

Some further advance in the Reformation.

The next thing that came under consideration, was the great contradiction that was in most of the sermons over England. Some were very earnest to justify and maintain all the old rites that yet remained; and others were no less hot to have them laid aside. So that in London, especially, the people were wonderfully distracted by this variety among their teachers. The ceremonies of Candlemas, and their observance of Lent, with the rites used on Palm-Sunday, Good-Friday, and Easter, were now approaching. Those that were against them, condemned them as superstitious additions to the worship of God, invented in the dark ages, when an outward pageantry had been the chief thing that was looked after. But others set out the good use that might be made of these things, and taught that, till they were abolished by the King's authority, they ought to be still observed. In a visitation that had been made, (when I cannot learn, only it seems to have been about the end of King Henry's reign,) it had been declared that fasting in Lent was only a positive law. Several directions were also given about the use of the ceremonies, and some hints, as if they were not to be long continued: and all wakes and Plough-Mondays were suppressed, since they drew great assemblies of people together, which ended in drinking and quarrelling. These I have also inserted in the Collection, having had a copy of the articles, left at the visitation of the deanery of Doncaster, communicated to me by the favour of a most learned physician, and curious antiquary, Dr. Nathaniel Johnston, who sent me this with several other papers, out of his generous zeal for contributing every thing in his power to the perfecting of this work.

Collect. Numb. 21.

The country people generally loved all these shows,

processions, and assemblies, as things of diversion; and judged it a dull business only to come to church for Divine worship, and the hearing of sermons; therefore they were much delighted with the gaiety and cheerfulness of those rites. But others, observing that they kept up all these things, just as the heathens did their plays and festivities for their gods, judged them contrary to the gravity and simplicity of the Christian religion, and therefore were earnest to have them removed. This was so effectually represented to the council by Cranmer, that an order was sent to him about it. He sent it to Bonner, who, being dean of the College of Bishops, in the province of Canterbury, was to transmit all such orders over the whole province. By it, the carrying of candles on Candlemas-day, of ashes on Ash-Wednesday, and palms on Palm-Sunday, were forbid to be used any longer. And this was signified by Bonner to Thirleby, bishop of Westminster, on the 28th of June, as appears by the register.

A proclamation against those who innovated without authority.

After this, on the 6th of February, a proclamation was issued out against such as should, on the other hand, rashly innovate, or persuade the people from the old accustomed rites, under the pains of imprisonment and other punishments, at the King's pleasure; excepting only the formerly-mentioned rites; to which are added, the creeping to the cross on Good-Friday, taking holy bread and water, and any other, that should be afterwards, at any time, certified by the Archbishop of Canterbury to the other bishops, in the King's name, to be laid aside. And for preventing the mischiefs occasioned by rash preachers, none were to preach without licence from the King or his visitors, the Archbishop of Canterbury, or the bishop of the diocess, where they lived; excepting only incumbents preaching in their own parishes. Those who preached otherwise were to be imprisoned till order was given for their punishment: and the inferior magistrates were required to see to the execution of these orders. This proclamation, which is in the Collection, was necessary for giving authority to the Archbishop of Canterbury's letters, which were censured as a great presumption for him, without

Collect. Numb. 22

PART II.

1548.

any public order, to appoint changes in sacred rites. Some observed, that the council went on making proclamations with arbitrary punishments, though the act was repealed that had formerly given so great authority to them. To this it was answered, that the King, by his supremacy, might still, in matters of religion, make new orders, and add punishments upon the transgressors; yet this was much questioned, though universally submitted to.

The general taking away of all images. Numb. 23.

On the 11th of February, there was a letter sent from the council to the Archbishop, for a more considerable change. There were every where great heats about the removing of images, which had been abused to superstition: some affirming, and others denying, that their images had been so abused. There were, in the churches, some images of so strange a nature, that it could not be denied that they had been abused. Such was the image of the blessed Trinity, which was to be censed, on the day of the Innocents, by him that was made the bishop of the children: this shews it was used on other days, in which it is like it was censed by the bishop where he was present. How this image was made, can only be gathered from the prints that were of it at that time: in which the Father is represented sitting, on the one hand, as an old man with a triple crown and rays about him; the Son, on the other hand, as a young man with a crown and rays; and the blessed Virgin between them, and the emblem of the Holy Ghost, a dove, spread over her head: so it is represented in a fair book of the Hours according to the use of Sarum, printed anno 1526. The impiety of this did raise horror in most men's minds, when that inconceivable mystery was so grossly expressed. Besides, the taking the Virgin into it, was done in pursuance to what had been said by some blasphemous friars, of her being assumed into the Trinity. In another edition of these, it is represented by three faces formed in one head. These things had not been set up by any public warrant; but having been so long in practice, they stood upon the general plea, that was for keeping the traditions of the church: for it was said, that the promises

Processionale in festo Innocentium.

made to the church were the same in all ages; and that therefore every age of the church had an equal right to them. But for the other images, it was urged against them, that they had been all consecrated with such rites and prayers, that it was certain they were every one of them superstitious; since it was prayed, that they might be so blessed and consecrated, that whosoever worshipped them might, by the saints' prayers and aid, whom they represented, obtain every thing that he desired. So they resolved on an entire removal of all images. And the Protector, with the council, wrote to Cranmer, that for putting an end to all these contests, and that the living images of Christ might not quarrel about the dead ones, it was concluded they should all of them be taken down: and he was to give order to see this executed in his own diocess, and to transmit it to the other bishops, to be in like manner executed by them. There were also orders given, that all rich shrines, with all the plate belonging to them, should be brought into the King's use; and that the clothes that covered them should be converted to the use of the poor. This gave Gardiner, and those of his party, a new affliction: for in his diocess he had been always on their side that were for keeping up the images. But they all submitted; and so the churches were emptied of all those pictures and statues which had been for divers ages the chief objects of the people's worship.

Some restraints put on preachers, May 4. Numb. 24.

And now the greatest care of the reformers was, to find the best men they could, who should be licensed by the King's authority to preach. To whom the council sent a letter, in the beginning of May, intimating, that, by the restraint put on preaching, they only intended to put an end to the rash contentions of indiscreet men, and not to extinguish the lively preaching of the pure word of God, made after such sort as the Holy Ghost should, for the time, put in the preacher's mind. They are therefore charged to preach sincerely; and with that caution and moderation, that the time and place shall require: and, particularly, that they should not set on the people to make innovations, or to run

PART II.

1548.

before those whom they should obey; but should persuade them to amend their lives, and keep the commandments of God, and to forsake all their old superstitions. And for the things not yet changed, they ought to wait patiently, and to conclude that the prince did either allow or suffer them: and in delivering things to the people, they were ordered to have a special regard to what they could bear.

But this temper was not observed. Some plainly condemned it as a political patching, and said, why should not all these superstitions be swept away at once? To this it was answered by others, that, as Christ forbade the pulling up of the tares, lest with them they should pull up good wheat; so, if they went too forwardly to the changing of things, they might in that haste change much for the worse. And great care was to be had not to provoke the people too much, lest, in the infancy of the King, or in some ill conjuncture of affairs, they might be disposed to make commotions. And the compliances that both Christ and his apostles gave to the Jews, when they were to abrogate the Mosaical law, were often insisted on. It was said, if they who were clothed with a power of miracles, for the more effectual conviction of the world, condescended so far, it was much more reasonable for them who had not that authority over men's consciences, and had no immediate signs to shew from heaven, to persuade the people rather by degrees to forsake their old mistakes, and not to precipitate things by an over haste.

Bishops and divines examine the offices of the church.

This winter there was a committee of selected bishops and divines appointed for examining all the offices of the church, and for reforming them. Some had been, in King Henry's time, employed in the same business, in which they had made a good progress, which was now to be brought to a full perfection. Therefore the Archbishops of Canterbury and York, the Bishops of London, Duresme, Worcester, Norwich, St. Asaph, Salisbury, Coventry and Litchfield, Carlisle, Bristol, St. David's, Ely, Lincoln, Chichester, Hereford, Westminster, and Rochester; with Doctors Cox, May, Tailor,

Heins, Robertson, and Redmayn; were appointed to examine all the offices of the church, and to consider how far any of them needed amendment.

The thing they first examined was the sacrament of the eucharist; which, being the chief symbol of Christian communion, was thought to deserve their chief care. And here they managed their inquiries in the same manner that was used in the former reign; in which, when any thing was considered in order to a change, it was put into several queries, to which every one in commission was to give his answer in writing. It is no wonder if the confusions that followed, in Queen Mary's reign, have deprived us of most of these papers; yet there is one set of them preserved, relating to some questions about the priest's single communicating; Whether one man's receiving it can be useful to another? what was the oblation or sacrifice that was made of Christ in the mass? wherein the mass consisted? when the priest's receiving alone began? whether it was convenient to retain that, and continue masses satisfactory for departed souls? whether the gospel ought to be taught at the time of the mass? whether it were convenient to have it all in a known tongue, or not? and when the reserving or hanging up of the sacrament first began? To these the bishops made their several answers. Some answered them all: others answered only a few of them; it is like suspending their opinions about those which they answered not. The Bishops of London, Worcester, Chichester, and Hereford, gave in their answers once in one paper together; but afterwards they joined with the Bishops of Norwich and St. Asaph, and all those six gave a joint answer in one paper. Those are not all subscribed, as those which I inserted in the former volume were: or at least the papers I have are not the originals. But Cranmer's hand is over every one of them, marking the name of the bishop to whom they belonged; and Dr. Cox hath set his hand and seal to his answer. By these, which are in the Collection, the reader will perceive how generally the bishops were addicted to the old superstition, and how few did agree in all things with Cranmer. It may be thought, that

Collect. Numb. 35.

PART II.

1548.

these questions were given out before the act of parliament passed, in which the priests' single communicating is turned into a communion of more. Yet by that act it was only provided, that all who came to receive should be admitted; but priests were not forbid to consecrate, if none were to communicate, which was the thing now inquired into.

The corruptions in the office of the communion examined.

It is certain there was no part of worship more corrupted than this sacrament was. The first institution was so plain and simple, that, except in the words, "This is my body," there is nothing which could give a colour to the corruptions that were afterwards brought in. The heathens had their mysteries, which the priests concealed with hard and dark words, and dressed up with much pomp; and thereby supported their own esteem with the people; since they looked on these to be of so high a nature, that all those who had the ordering of them were accounted sacred persons. The primitive Christians retained the first simplicity of Divine institutions for some ages: but afterwards, as their number increased, they made use of some things not unlike those the heathens had practised, to draw the gentiles more easily into their belief; since external shows made deep impressions in the vulgar. And those that were thus brought over, might afterwards come to like these things for their own sakes, which were at first made use of only to gain the world. Others, finding some advantage in such services, that were easy, and yet appeared very pompous, that they might cover great faults by countenancing and complying with the follies that were in vogue, contributed liberally to the improvement of them. And after the Roman emperors turned Christian, much of that vast wealth, of which they and their people were masters, was brought into the church, and applied to these superstitions. Yet it became not so universally corrupted till, by the invasion of the Goths, Vandals, and other barbarous nations, the Roman empire was broken and divided into many kingdoms. These new conquerors were rude and ignorant, wholly given to sensible things; and learning being universally extinguished, gross su-

perstition took place; for more refined superstitions would not serve the turn of darker ages. But as they grew in ignorance, they continued in the belief and practice of more absurd things.

The high opinion they justly had of this sacrament being much raised by the belief of the corporal presence of Christ in it, which came in afterwards, then the dull wits of the priests, and the wealth of the people, were employed to magnify it with all the pomp possible. All the vessels and garments belonging to it were consecrated and anointed with much devotion; the whole office was in an unknown tongue: a great part of it was to be secretly whispered, to make it appear the more wonderful charm: but chiefly the words of consecration were by no means to be heard by the people; it being fabled, that when the words were spoken aloud, some shepherds had repeated them over their bread, which was thereupon presently turned into flesh. Besides that, it was but suitable that a change which was not to be seen, should be made by words not to be heard. The priest was not to approach it, but after so many bowings, crossings, and kissings of the altar; and all the while he went through with the office, the people were only now and then blessed by a short blessing, "The Lord be with you," and even that in Latin. Then, after consecration, the bread was lifted up, and all the people worshipped it, as if Christ had appeared in the clouds. It was oft exposed on the altar, and carried about in processions, with the ceremonies of carrying flambeaux before it, which the greatest persons accounted it an honour to do; the priest that carried it all the while going pompously under a rich canopy.

This was also thought most effectual for all the accidents of life. And whereas it was first only intended to be a commemoration and communion of the death of Christ; that seemed almost forgotten, but it was applied to all other ends imaginable. That which brought in most custom was trentals, which was a method of delivering souls out of purgatory, by saying thirty masses a year for them. And whereas it was observed, that

PART II.

1548.

men, on the anniversaries of their birth-days, wedding, or other happy accidents of their lives, were commonly in better humour, so that favours were more easily obtained; they seemed to have had the same opinion of God and Christ. So they ordered it, that three of these should be said on Christmas-day, three on Epiphany, three on the Purification of the blessed Virgin, three on the Annunciation, three on the Resurrection, three on the Ascension, three on Whit-Sunday, three on Trinity-Sunday, three on the Assumption of the blessed Virgin, and three on her birth-day; hoping that these days would be the *mollia tempora*, when God and Christ, or the blessed Virgin, would be of easier access, and more ready to grant their desires. Yet the most unaccountable part of all, was the masses on the saints' days, praying that the intercession of the saint might make the sacrifice acceptable; that the saint, for whose honour these oblations were solemnly offered, would by his merits procure them to be accepted, and that the sacrifice might bring to them a greater indulgence, being offered up by the suffrages of the saint. If the sacrifice was of Jesus Christ, and was of its own nature expiatory, how this should be done in honour to a saint, and become of greater virtue by his intercession, was a thing very hard to be understood. There were many pieces of ridiculous pageantry also used in it, as the laying the host the in sepulchre they made for Christ on Good-Friday; and that, not only the candles that were to burn at the Easter celebration, but the very fire that was to kindle them, was particularly consecrated on Easter-eve. Some masses were believed to have a peculiar virtue in them: for, in the mass-book printed at London, anno 1500, there is a mass for avoiding sudden death, which Pope Clement made in the college with all his cardinals, and granted to all who heard it two hundred and seventy days of indulgence, charging them that they should hold in their hand a burning candle all the while it was saying, and for five days after should likewise hold a candle, kneeling during the whole mass; and to those that did so, sudden death should do no harm. And it is added, that this

was certain and approved in Avignon, and all the neighbouring places. All this I have opened the more largely, to let the reader plainly understand, what things were then in this sacrament that required reformation: and I have gathered these things out of the mass-book then most used in England, and best known by the name of the "Missal after the use of Sarum."

A new office for the communion set out.

The first step these deputed bishops and divines made, was to reform this. But they did not at once mend every thing that required it, but left the office of the mass as it was, only adding to it that which made it a communion. It began first with an exhortation, to be used the day before, which differs not much from that now used; only, after the advice given concerning confession, it is added, that such as desired to make auricular confession, should not censure those who were satisfied with a general confession to God; and that those who used only confession to God and to the church, should not be offended with those who used auricular confession to a priest; but that all should keep the rule of charity, every man being satisfied to follow his own conscience, and not judging another man's in things not appointed by God. After the priest had received the sacrament, he was to turn to the people and read an exhortation to them; the same we now use, only a little varied in words. After that followed a denunciation against sinners, requiring them who were such, and had not repented, to withdraw, lest the devil should enter into them as he did into Judas: then, after a little pause, to see if any would withdraw, there was to follow a short exhortation, with a confession of sins, and absolution, the very same which we do yet retain. Then those texts of Scripture were read which we yet read; followed with the prayer, "We do not presume," &c. After this, the sacrament was to be given in both kinds: first, to the ministers then present, and then to all the people, with these words, "The body of our Lord Jesus Christ, which was given for thee, preserve thy body unto everlasting life;" and "The blood of our Lord Jesus Christ, which was shed for thee, preserve thy soul unto everlasting life."

PART II.

1548.

When all was done, the congregation was to be dismissed with a blessing. The bread was to be such as had been formerly used, and every one of the breads so consecrated was to be broken in two or more pieces; and the people were to be taught that there was no difference in the quantity they received, whether it were small or great; but that in each of them they received the whole body of Christ. If the wine that was at first consecrated did not serve, the priest was to consecrate more; but all to be without any elevation. This office, being thus finished, was set forth with a proclamation, reciting, that whereas the parliament had enacted that the communion should be given in both kinds to all the King's subjects, it was now ordered to be given in the form here set forth, and all were required to receive it with due reverence, and Christian behaviour, and with such uniformity as might encourage the King to go on in the setting forth godly orders for reformation, which he intended most earnestly to bring to effect by the help of God: willing his subjects, not to run before his direction, and so by their rashness to hinder such things; assuring them of the earnest zeal he had to set them forth, hoping they would quietly and reverently tarry for it.

This was published on the 8th of March; and on the 13th, books were sent to all the bishops of England, requiring them to send them to every parish in their diocess, that the curates might have time, both to instruct themselves about it, and to acquaint their people with it; so that by the next Easter it might be universally received in all the churches of the nation. This was variously censured. Those that were for the old superstition were much troubled to have confession thus left indifferent, and a general confession of sins to be used, with which they apprehended the people would, for the most part, content themselves. In the Scripture there was a power of binding and loosing sins given to the apostles. And St. James exhorted those to whom he wrote, to confess their faults to one another. Afterwards penitents came to be reconciled to the church, when they had given public scandal either

It is variously censured.

Chiefly that auricular confession was laid down.

by their apostacy or ill life, by an open confession of their sins; and after some time of separation from the other pure Christians in worship, and an abstention from the sacrament, they were admitted again to their share of all the privileges that were given in common to Christians. But, according to the nature of their sins, they were, besides the public confession, put under such rules as might be most proper for curing these ill inclinations in them; and according to the several ranks of sins, the time and degrees of this penitence was proportioned. And the councils that met in the fourth and fifth centuries, made the regulating these penitentiary canons the chief subject of their consultations. In many churches there were penitentiary priests, who were more expert in the knowledge of these rules, and gave directions about them, which were taken away in Constantinople upon the indiscretion of which one of them had been guilty. For secret sins, there was no obligation to confess, since all the canons were about public scandals; yet for these, the devout people generally went to their priests for their counsel, but were not obliged to it; and so went to them for the distempers of their minds, as they did to physicians for the diseases of their bodies.

About the end of the fifth century, they began, in some places, to have secret penances, either within monasteries, or other places which the priests had appointed; and upon a secret confession, and performing the penance imposed, absolution was also given secretly: whereas, in former times, confession and absolution had been performed openly in the church. In the seventh century it was every where practised, that there should be secret penance for secret sins; which Theodore, archbishop of Canterbury, did first bring into a method, and under rules. But about the end of the eighth century, the commutation of penance, and exchanging it for money, or other services to the church, came to be practised; and then began pilgrimages to holy places, and afterwards the going to the holy war; and all the severities of penance were dispensed with to such as undertook these. This brought on a great relaxation of all eccle-

PART II.

1548.

siastical discipline. Afterwards croisades came in use, against such princes as were deposed by popes; and to these was likewise added, to encourage all to enter into them, that all rules of penitence were dispensed with to such as put on that cross. But penitence being now no more public, but only private, the priests managed it as they pleased, and so by confession entered into all men's secrets, and by absolution had their consciences so entirely in their power, that the people were generally governed by them. Yet, because the secular priests were commonly very ignorant, and were not put under such an association as was needful to manage those designs, for which this was thought an excellent engine; therefore the friars were employed every where to hear confessions, and to give absolutions. And to bring in customers to them, two new things were invented: the one was, a reserving of certain cases, in which such as were guilty of them could not be absolved but by the popes, or those deputed by them; and the friars had faculties in the Pope's name to absolve in these cases: the other was, on some occasion the use of certain new secrets, by which men were to obtain great indulgences; either by saying such prayers, or performing such impositions; and these were all trusted to the friars, who were to trade with them, and bring all the money they could gather, by that means, to Rome. They being bred up to a voluntary poverty, and expecting great rewards for their industry, sold those secrets with as much cunning as mountebanks use in selling their tricks; only here was the difference, that the ineffectualness of the mountebanks' medicines was soon discovered, so their trade must be but short in one place; whereas the other could not be so easily found out; the chief piece of the religion of those ages being to believe all that their priests taught them. Of this sort the reader will find in the Collection an essay of indulgences as they were printed in the Hours after the use of Sarum, which were set down in English, though the prayers be all Latin, that so all the people might know the value of such ware. Those had been all, by degrees, brought from Rome, and put into people's hands, and afterwards laid

Collect. Numb. 26.

together in their offices. By them, indulgences of many years, hundreds, thousands, and millions of years, and of all sins whatsoever, were granted to such as devoutly said such collects; but it was always understood, that they must confess and be absolved, which is the meaning of those expressions concerning their being in a state of grace. And so the whole business was a cheat.

And now all this trade was laid aside, and confession of secret sins was left to all men's free choice; since it was certain that the confession to a priest was no where enjoined in the Scriptures. It was a reasonable objection, that, as secret confession and private penance had worn out the primitive practice of the public censuring of scandalous persons, so it had been well if the reviving of that discipline had driven out these later abuses; but to let that lie unrestored, and yet to let confession wear out, was to discharge the world of all outward restraints, and to leave them to their full liberty, and so to throw up that power of binding and loosing, which ought to take place, chiefly in admitting them to the sacrament. This was confessed to be a great defect, and effectual endeavours were used to retrieve it, though without success; and it was openly declared to be a thing which they would study to repair; but the total disuse of all public censure had made the nation so unacquainted with it, that, without the effectual concurrence of the civil authority, they could not compass it. And though it was acknowledged to be a great disorder in the church, yet, as they could not keep up the necessity of private confession, since it was not commanded in the gospel; so the generality of the clergy being superstitious men, whose chief influence on the people was by those secret practices in confession, they judged it necessary to leave that free to all people, and to represent it as a thing to which they were not obliged, and in the place of that ordered the general confession to be made in the church, with the absolution added to it. For the power of binding and loosing, it was by many thought to be only declarative; and so to be exercised, when the gospel was preached, and a general absolution granted, according to the ancient forms. In which forms

PART II.

1548.

the absolution was a prayer that God would absolve; and so it had been still used in the absolution which was given on Maunday-Thursday; but the formal absolution given by the priest in his own name, "I absolve thee," was a late invention to raise their authority higher, and signified nothing distinct from those other forms that were anciently used in the church.

Others censured the words in distributing the two kinds in the Lord's supper: the body being given for the preserving the body, and the blood of Christ for preserving the soul. This was thought done on design to possess the people with a high value of the chalice, as that which preserved their souls; whereas the bread was only for the preservation of their bodies. But Cranmer, being ready to change any thing for which he saw good reason, did afterwards so alter it, that in both it was said, "Preserve thy body and soul:" and yet it stands so in the prayer, "We do not presume," &c. On all this I have digressed so long, because of the importance of the matter, and for satisfying the scruples that many still have upon the laying aside of confession in our reformation.

Commissions were next given to examine the state of the chantries and guildable lands: the instruction about them will be found in the Collection, of which I need give no abstract here; for they were only about the methods of inquiring into their value, and how they were possessed, or what alienations had been made of them.

Collect. Numb. 27.

The Protector and council were now in much trouble. The war with Scotland they found was like to grow chargeable, since they saw it was supported from France. There was a rebellion also broke out in Ireland; and the King was much indebted: nor could they expect any subsidies from the parliament; in which it had been said that they gave the chantry lands, that they might be delivered from all subsidies: therefore the parliament was prorogued till winter. Upon this the whole council did, on the 17th of April, unanimously resolve, that it was necessary to sell 5000*l.* a year of chantry lands for raising such a sum as the King's occasions re-

quired; and Sir Henry Mildmay was appointed to treat about the sale of them.

1548. Gardiner falls into new troubles.

The new communion book was received over England without any opposition. Only complaints were brought of Gardiner, that he did secretly detract from the King's proceedings: upon which the council took occasion to reflect on all his former behaviour: and here it was remembered, how, at first, upon his refusing to receive the King's injunctions, he had been put in the Fleet; where he had been as well used, as if it had been his own house (which is far contrary to his letters to the Protector, of which mention has been already made); and that he, upon promise of conformity, had been discharged. But when he was come home, being forgetful of his promises, he had raised much strife and contention, and had caused all his servants to be secretly armed and harnessed, and had put public affronts on those whom the council sent down to preach in his diocess; for in some places, to disgrace them, he went into the pulpit before them, and warned the people to beware of such teachers, and to receive no other doctrine but what he had taught them. Upon this he had been sent for a second time, but again, upon his promise of conformity, was discharged, and ordered to stay at his own house in London. That there he had continued still to meddle in public matters; of which, being again admonished, he desired that he might be suffered to clear himself of all misrepresentations that had been made of him, in a sermon which he should preach before the King, in which he should openly declare how well he was satisfied with his proceedings: yet it is added, that in his sermon, where there was a wonderful audience, he did most arrogantly meddle with some matters that were contrary to an express command given him both by word of mouth and by letters; and, in other matters, used such words as had almost raised a great tumult in the very time, and had spoken very seditiously concerning the policy of the kingdom. So they saw that clemency wrought no good effect on him; and it seeming necessary to terrify others by their proceedings with him, he was sent to the Tower, and the

PART II.

1548.

door of his closet was sealed up: thus it is entered in the council book, signed E. Somerset, T. Cantuarien, W. St. Johns, J. Russel, and T. Cheyney. Yet, it seems, this order was not signed when it was made, but some years after: for the Lord Russel signed first Bedford, but remembering that, at the time when this order was made, he had not that title, therefore he dashed it out, (but so as it still appears) and signed, J. Russel.

Fox's Acts and Monuments.

The account that Gardiner himself gives of this business, is, that being discharged upon the act of pardon, he was desired to promise that he would set forth the Homilies; and a form was given him to which he should set his hand; but he, considering of it a fortnight, returned, and said he could not subscribe it: so he was confined to his house. Then Ridley and Mr. Cecil (afterwards the great Lord Burleigh, lord treasurer to Queen Elizabeth, at that time secretary to the Protector) were sent to him, and so prevailed, that he did set his hand to it. But, upon some complaints that were made of him, he was sent for after Whit-Sunday, and accused, that he had carried palms, had crept to the cross, and had a sepulchre on Good-Friday, which was contrary to the King's proclamations; all which he denied, and said, he had and would still give obedience to what the King should command. That of affronting the King's preachers was objected to him; to which he answered, telling matter of fact how it was done, but he does not in his writing set it down. Then it was complained, that, in a sermon, he had said, The apostles came away rejoicing from the council, the council, the council; repeating it thus, to make it seem applicable to himself: this he denied. Then it was objected, that he preached the real presence in the sacrament, the word *real* not being in Scripture; and so it was not the setting forth the pure word of God: he said, he had not used the word *real*, only he had asserted the presence of Christ, in such words as he had heard the Archbishop of Canterbury dispute for it against Lambert, that had been burnt. He was commanded to tarry in London; but he desired, that, since he was not an offender, he might be at his liberty. He complained much of the songs

made of him, and of the books written against him, and particularly of one Philpot, in Westminster, whom he accounted a madman.

Then he relates, that Cecil came to him, and proposed to him to preach before the King, and that he should write his sermon; and also brought him some notes which he wished him to put in his sermon; he said, he was willing to preach, but would not write it, for that was to preach as an offender; nor would he make use of notes prepared by other men. Then he was privately brought to the Protector, none but the Lord St. John being present, who shewed him a paper containing the opinion of some lawyers, of the King's power, and of a bishop's authority, and of the punishment of disobeying the King; but he desired to speak with those lawyers, and said, no subscription of theirs should oblige him to preach otherwise than as he was convinced. The Protector said, he should either do that, or do worse. Secretary Smith came to him to press him further in some points, but what they were is not mentioned. Yet, by the other papers in that business, it appears, they related to the King's authority when under age, and for justifying the King's proceedings in what had been done about the ceremonies, and that auricular confession was indifferent. So the contest between him and the Protector ended; and there was no writing required of him, but he left the whole matter to him, so that he should treat plainly of those things mentioned to him by Cecil. He chose St. Peter's day, because the gospel agreed to his purpose. Cecil shewed him some notes, written with the King's hand, of the sermons preached before him; especially what was said of the duty of a king; and warned him, that, whenever he named the King, he should add, "and his council." To this he made no answer; for though he thought it wisely done of a king to use his council, yet being to speak of the King's power according to Scripture, he did not think it necessary to add any thing of his council; and hearing by a confused report some secret matter, he resolved not to meddle with it. Two days before he preached, the Protector sent him a message, not to meddle with those

PART II.

1548.

questions about the sacrament, that were yet in controversy among learned men; and that therefore he was resolved there should be no public determination made of them beforehand in the pulpit. He said, he could not forbear to speak of the mass, for he looked on it as the chief foundation of Christian religion; but he doubted not that he should so speak of it, as to give them all content: so, the day following, the Protector writ to him (as will be found in the Collection), requiring him, in the King's name, not to meddle with those points, but to preach concerning the articles given him, and about obedience, and good life, which would afford him matter enough for a long sermon; since the other points were to be reserved to a public consultation: the Protector added, that he held it a great part of his duty, under the King, not to suffer wilful persons to dissuade the people from receiving such truths as should be set forth by others: but Gardiner pretended that there was no controversy about the presence of Christ. And so, the next day, he took his text out of the gospel for the day, "Thou art Christ," &c. In his sermon (of which I have seen large notes) he expressed himself very fully concerning the Pope's supremacy as justly abolished, and the suppression of monasteries and chantries; he approved of the King's proceedings; he thought images might have been well used, but yet they might be well taken away. He approved of the sacrament in both kinds, and the taking away that great number of masses satisfactory, and liked well the new order for the communion: but he asserted largely the presence of Christ's flesh and blood in the sacrament: upon which many of the assembly, that were indiscreetly hot on both sides, cried out, some approving, and others disliking it. Of the King's authority under age, and of the power of the council in that case, he said not a word; and upon that he was imprisoned.

Collect. Numb. 28.

Parker's MSS. Ex C. Ch. Col. Cant. He preached before the King.

The occasion of this was, the popish clergy began generally to have it spread among them, that, though they had acknowledged the King's supremacy, yet they had never owned the council's supremacy. That the council could only see to the execution of the laws and

orders that had been made, but could not make new ones; and that, therefore, the supremacy could not be exercised till the King, in whose person it was vested, came to be of age to consider of matters himself. Upon this the lawyers were consulted; who did unanimously resolve, that the supremacy being annexed to the regal dignity, was the same in a king under age, when it was executed by the council, that it was in a king at full age; and therefore, things ordered by the council now, had the same authority in law that they could have when the King did act himself. But this did not satisfy the greater part of the clergy; some of whom, by the high flatteries that had been given to kings in King Henry's time, seemed to fancy that there were degrees of Divine illumination derived unto princes by the anointing them at the coronation; and these not exerting themselves till a king attained to a ripeness of understanding, they thought the supremacy was to lie dormant while he was so young. The Protector and council endeavoured to have got Gardiner to declare against this, but he would not meddle in it: how far he might set forward the other opinion, I do not know. These proceedings against him were thought too severe, and without law; but he being generally hated, they were not so much censured, as they had been, if they had fallen on a more acceptable man.

And thus were the orders made by the council generally obeyed; many being terrified with the usage Gardiner met with, from which others inferred what they might look for, if they were refractory, when so great a bishop was so treated.

Cranmer sets out a Catechism.

The next thing Cranmer set about was the compiling a Catechism,* or large instruction of young persons in the grounds of the Christian religion. In it, he reckons the two first commandments but one; though he says, many of the ancients divided them in two: but the division was of no great consequence, so no part of the decalogue were suppressed by the church. He shewed, that the excuses the papists had for images

* This Catechism was first made in Latin by another, but translated by Cranmer's order, and it was reviewed by him.

PART II.

1548.

were no other than what the heathens brought for their idolatry; who also said, they did not worship the image, but that only which was represented by it. He particularly takes notice of the image of the Trinity. He shews how St. Peter would not suffer Cornelius, and the angel would not suffer St. John, to worship them. The believing that there is a virtue in one image more than in another, he accounts plain idolatry. Ezekias broke the brazen serpent, when abused, though it was a type or image of Christ, made by God's command, to which a miraculous virtue had been once given. So now there was good reason to break images, when they had been so abused to superstition and idolatry; and when they gave such scandal to Jews and Mahometans, who generally accounted the Christians idolaters on that account. He asserts, besides the two sacraments of baptism and the Lord's supper, the power of reconciling sinners to God, as a third; and fully owns the Divine institution of bishops and priests; and wishes that the canons and rights of public penitence were again restored; and exhorts much to confession, and the people's dealing with their pastors about their consciences, that so they might, upon knowledge, bind and loose according to the gospel. Having finished this easy, but most useful work, he dedicated it to the King: and in his epistle to him complains of the great neglect that had been, in former times, of catechising; and that confirmation had not been rightly administered, since it ought to be given only to those of age, who understood the principles of the Christian doctrine, and did upon knowledge, and with sincere minds, renew their baptismal vow. From this it will appear, that, from the beginning of this reformation, the practice of the Roman church in the matter of images was held idolatrous. Cranmer's zeal for restoring the penitentiary canons is also clear; and it is plain, that he had now quite laid aside those singular opinions which he formerly held of the ecclesiastical functions; for now, in a work which was wholly his own, without the concurrence of any others, he fully sets forth their Divine institution.

All these things made way for a greater work, which

1548.

A general reformation of all the offices of the church is set about.

these selected bishops and divines, who had laboured in the setting forth of the office of the communion, were now preparing; which was, the entire reformation of the whole service of the church. In order to this, they brought together all the offices used in England. In the southern parts, those after the use of Sarum, were universally received, which were believed to have been compiled by Osmund, bishop of Sarum. In the north of England, they had other offices, after the use of York: in South Wales, they had them after the use of Hereford: in North Wales, after the use of Bangor: and in Lincoln, another sort of an office proper to that see.

In the primitive church, when the extraordinary gifts ceased, the bishops of the several churches put their offices and prayers into such a method, as was nearest to what they had heard or remembered from the apostles. And these liturgies were called by the apostles' names, from whose forms they had been composed; as that at Jerusalem carried the name of St. James, and that of Alexandria, the name of St. Mark; though those books that we have now under these names are certainly so interpolated, that they are of no great authority; but in the fourth century we have these liturgies first mentioned. The council of Laodicea appointed the same office of prayers to be used in the mornings and evenings. The bishops continued to draw up new additions, and to put old forms into other methods; but this was left to every bishop's care, nor was it made the subject of any public consultation, till St. Austin's time; when, in their dealings with heretics, they found they took advantages from some of the prayers that were in some churches: upon this, he tells us, it was ordered, that there should be no prayers used in the church, but upon common advice; after that the liturgies came to be more carefully considered. Formerly, the worship of God was a pure and simple thing: and so it continued till superstition had so infected the church, that those forms were thought too naked, unless they were put under more artificial rules, and dressed up with much ceremony. Gregory the Great was the first that took much care to make the church music very regular; and

PART II.

1548.

he did also put the liturgies in another method than had been formerly used: yet he had no such fondness of his own composures, but left it to Austin the monk, whom he sent over into England, when he consulted him in it, either to use the Roman or French rituals, or any other, as he should find they were most likely to edify the people. After this, in most sees, there were great variations; for, as any prelate came to be canonized, or held in high esteem by the people, some private collects, or particular forms that he had used, were practised in his, or perhaps, as his fame spread, in the neighbouring dioceses. In every age there were notable additions made; and all the writers almost, in the eighth and ninth centuries, employed their fancies to find out mystical significations for every rite that was then used; and so, as a new rite was added, it was no hard matter to add some mystery to it. This had made the offices swell out of measure, and there was a great variety of them; missals, breviaries, rituals, pontificals, portoises, pies, graduals, antiphonals, psalteries, hours, and a great many more. Every religious order had likewise their peculiar rites, with the saints' days that belonged to their order, and services for them; and the understanding how to officiate was become so hard a piece of the trade, that it was not easy to learn it exactly, without a long practice in it. So now it was resolved to correct and examine these.

It was resolved there should be a new liturgy.

I do not find it was ever brought under consideration, whether they should compose a form for all the parts of Divine worship, or leave it to the sudden and extemporary heats of those who were to officiate, which some have called, since that time, the worshipping by the Spirit: of this way of serving God they did not then dream; much less that the appointing of forms of prayer was an encroaching on the kingly office of Christ; but thought, whatever praying in the Spirit might have been in the apostles' time, (where yet every man brought his psalms, which are a sort of prayers as well as praises, and these look like some written composures, as St. Paul expresses it,) that now, to pray with warm affection and sincere devotion was spiritual worship; and that where it was the

same thing that was to be daily asked of God, the using the same expressions was the sign of a steady devotion, that was fixed on the thing prayed for; whereas the heat that new words raised, looked rather like a warmth in the fancy. Nor could it agree with the principles of a reformation, that was to divest the churchmen of that unlimited authority which they had formerly exercised over men's consciences, to leave them at liberty to make the people pray after them, as they pleased; this being as great a resignation of the people, when their devotion depended on the sudden heats of their pastors, as the former superstition had made of their faith and conscience to them. So it being resolved to bring the whole worship of God under set forms, they set one general rule to themselves (which they afterwards declared) of changing nothing for novelty's sake, or merely because it had been formerly used. They resolved to retain such things as the primitive church had practised, cutting off such abuses as the later ages had grafted on them; and to continue the use of such other things, which, though they had been brought in not so early, yet were of good use to beget devotion; and were so much recommended to the people, by the practice of them, that the laying these aside would, perhaps, have alienated them from the other changes they made. And therefore they resolved to make no change without very good and weighty reasons; in which they considered the practice of our Saviour, who did not only comply with the rites of Judaism himself, but even the prayer he gave to his disciples was framed according to their forms; and his two great institutions of baptism, and the eucharist, did consist of rites that had been used among the Jews. And since he, who was delivering a new religion, and was authorized in the highest manner that ever any was, did yet so far comply with received practices, as from them to take those which he sanctified for the use of his church; it seemed much fitter for those who had no such extraordinary warrant to give them authority in what they did, when they were reforming abuses, to let the world see they did it not from the wanton desire of change, or any affectation of

PART II.

novelty: and with those resolutions they entered on their work.

1548.

In the search of the former offices, they found an infinite deal of superstition in the consecrations of water, salt, bread, incense, candles, fire, bells, churches, images, altars, crosses, vessels, garments, palms, flowers; all looked like the rites of heathenism, and seemed to spring from the same fountain. When the water or salt were blessed, it was expressed to be to this end, that they might be health both to soul and body, and devils (who might well laugh at these tricks which they had taught them) were adjured not to come to any place where they were sprinkled; and the holy bread was blessed, to be a defence against all diseases and snares of the devil; and the holy incense, that devils might not come near the smoke of it, but that all who smelled at it might perceive the virtue of the Holy Ghost; and the ashes were blessed so, that all who were covered with them might deserve to obtain the remission of their sins. All those things had drawn the people to such confidence in them, that they generally thought that without those harder terms of true holiness, they might, upon such superstitious observances, be sure of heaven. So all these they resolved to cast out as things which had no warrant in Scripture, and were vain devices to draw men away from a lively application to God through Christ, according to the method of the gospel. Then the many rites in sacramental actions were considered, all which had swelled up to an infinite heap: and as some of these, which had no foundation in Scripture, were thrown out, so the others were brought back to a greater simplicity. In no part of religion was the corruption of the former offices more remarkable, than in the priests' granting absolution to the living and the dead. To such as confessed, the absolution was thus granted; "I absolve thee in the name of the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost:" to which this was added, "And I grant to thee that all the indulgences given, or to be given thee, by any prelate, with the blessings of them, all the sprinklings of holy water, all the devout beatings of thy breast, the contri-

tions of thy heart, this confession, and all thy other devout confessions, all thy fastings, abstinences, almsgivings, watchings, disciplines, prayers, and pilgrimages, and all the good thou hast done, or shall do, and all the evils thou hast suffered, or shalt suffer, for God; the passions of our Lord Jesus Christ, the merits of the glorious and blessed Virgin Mary, and of all other saints, and the suffrages of all the holy catholic church, turn to thee for the remission of these, and all other thy sins, the increase of thy merits, and the attainment of everlasting rewards." When extreme unction was given to dying persons, they applied it to the ears, lips, nose, and other parts, with this prayer; "By this holy unction, and his own most tender mercy, and by the intercession of the blessed Virgin, and all the saints, may God pardon thee whatever thou hast sinned, by thy hearing, speaking, or smelling;" and so in the other parts. And when the dead body was laid in the grave, this absolution was said over it; "The Lord Jesus Christ, who gave to St. Peter, and his other disciples, power to bind and loose, absolve thee from all the guilt of thy sins; and in so far as is committed to my weakness, be thou absolved before the tribunal of our Lord, and may thou have eternal life, and live for evermore." This was thought the highest abuse possible; when, in giving the hopes of heaven, and the pardon of sins, which were of all the other parts of religion the most important, there were such mixtures: and that which the Scriptures had taught could be only attained by Jesus Christ, and that upon the sincere belief and obedience of his gospel, was now ascribed to so many other procuring causes. These things had possessed the world with that conceit that there was a trick for saving souls, besides that plain method which Christ had taught; and that the priests had the secret of it in their hands; so that those who would not come under the yoke of Christ, and be saved that way, needed only to apply themselves to priests, and purchase their favour, and the business would be done.

There were two other changes, which run through the whole offices; the one was, the translating them

PART II.

1548.

into a vulgar tongue. The Jewish worship was either in Hebrew, or after the captivity, in the Syriac, the vulgar tongues of Palestine. The apostles always officiated in the tongues that were best understood: so that St. Paul did copiously censure those who, in prayers or psalms, used any language that was not understood. And Origen, Basil, with all the fathers that had occasion to mention this, took notice, that every one in their own tongue worshipped God. After the renting of the Roman empire by the Goths, and other barbarous nations, the Roman tongue did slowly mix with their tongues, till it was much changed, and altered from itself by degrees; yet it was so long a doing that, that it was not thought necessary to translate the liturgy into their languages. But in the ninth century, when the Slavons were converted, it being desired that they might have Divine offices in their own language, while some opposed it, a voice was said to be heard, "Let every tongue praise God;" upon which, Pope John the Eighth writ to Methodius, their bishop, that it might be granted; and founded it on St. Paul's Epistle to the Corinthians, and on these words of David, "Let every tongue praise the Lord." And in the fourth council of Lateran it was decreed, that bishops, who lived in places where they were mixed with Greeks, should provide fit priests for performing Divine offices, according to the rites and languages of those to whom they ministered: but the Roman church, though so merciful to the Greeks and Slavons, was more cruel to the rest of Europe; and since only Hebrew, Greek, and Latin, had been written on the cross of Christ by Pilate, they argued that these languages were thereby consecrated; though it is not easy to apprehend what holiness could be derived into these tongues by Pilate, who ordered these inscriptions. It was also pretended, that it was a part of the communion of saints, that every where the worship should be in the same tongue. But the truth was, they had a mind to raise the value of the priestly function, by keeping all Divine offices in a tongue not understood; which in people otherwise well seasoned with superstition, might have that effect; but it did very much alien-

ate the rest of the world from them. There was also a vast number of holy-days formerly observed, with so many prayers and hymns belonging to them, and so many lessons that were to be read; which were many of them such impudent forgeries, that the whole breviary and missal being full of these, a great deal was to be left out. There is in the whole breviary scarce one saint, but the lessons concerning him contain some ridiculous legend, such as indeed could not be well read in a vulgar tongue without the scorn and laughter of the hearers; and for most part the prayers and hymns do relate to these lying stories. Many of the prayers and hymns were also in such a style, that the pardon of sin, grace, and heaven, were immediately desired from the saints, as if these things had come from their bounty, or by their merits, or were given by them only; of which the reader shall have a little taste in the Collection, in some of the addresses made to them.

Collect. Numb. 29.

The reformers having thus considered the corruptions of the former offices, were thereby better prepared to frame new ones. But the priests had officiated in some garments, which were appropriated to that use, as surplices, copes, and other vestments; and it was long under consideration whether these should continue. It was objected, that these garments had been parts of the train of the mass, and had been superstitiously abused, only to set it off with the more pomp. On the other hand it was argued, that as white was anciently the colour of the priests' garments in the Mosaical dispensation, so it was used in the African churches in the fourth century: and it was thought a natural expression of the purity and decency that became priests: besides, the clergy were then generally extreme poor, so that they could scarce afford themselves decent clothes; the people also, running from the other extreme of submitting too much to the clergy, were now as much inclined to despise them, and to make light of the holy function; so that if they should officiate in their own mean garments, it might make the Divine offices grow also into contempt. And therefore it was resolved to continue the use of them; and it was said, that their being blessed, and used superstitiously, gave as strong an ar-

PART II.

1548.

gument against the use of churches and bells; but that St. Paul had said, "That every creature of God was good;" and even the meat of the sacrifice offered to an idol, than which there could be no greater abuse, might lawfully be eaten; therefore they saw no necessity because of a former abuse to throw away habits that had so much decency in them, and had been formerly in use.

In the compiling the offices, they began with morning and evening prayer: these were put in the same form they are now, only there was no confession nor absolution; the office beginning with the Lord's Prayer. In the Communion Service, the Ten Commandments were not said, as they are now; but in other things it was very near what it is now. All that had been in the order of the communion formerly mentioned was put into it: the offertory was to be made of bread, and wine mixed with water. Then was said the prayer for the state of Christ's church, in which they gave thanks to God for his wonderful grace, declared in his saints, in the blessed Virgin, the patriarchs, apostles, prophets, and martyrs; and they commended the saints departed to God's mercy and peace, that at the day of the resurrection we with them might be set on Christ's right hand. To this, the consecratory prayer which we now use was joined as a part of it; only with these words, that are since left out, "With thy Holy Spirit vouchsafe to bless, and sanctify these thy gifts and creatures of bread and wine, that they may be unto us the body and blood of thy most dearly-beloved Son," &c. To the consecration was also joined the prayer of thanksgiving now used. After the consecration, all elevation was forbidden, which had been first used as a rite expressing how Christ was lifted up on the cross; but was, after the belief of the corporal presence, made use of to shew the sacrament, that the people might all fall down and worship it. And it was ordered that the whole office of the communion, except the consecratory prayer, should be used on all holy-days, when there was no communion, to put people in mind of it, and of the sufferings of Christ. The bread was to be unleavened, round, but no print on it, and somewhat thicker than it was formerly: and though it was

anciently put in the people's hands, yet, because some might carry it away and apply it to superstitious uses, it was ordered to be put by the priest into their mouths. It is clear that Christ delivered it into the hands of the apostles, and it so continued for many ages, as appears by several remarkable stories of holy men carrying it with them in their journeys. In the Greek church, where the bread and wine were mingled together, some began to think it more decent to receive it in little spoons of gold, than in their hands; but that was condemned by the council in Trullo: yet soon after they began in the Latin church to appoint men to receive it with their hands, but women to take it in a linen cloth, which was called their dominical. But when the belief of the corporal presence was received, then a new way of receiving was invented among other things to support it: the people were now no more to touch that which was conceived to be the flesh of their Saviour, and therefore the priest's thumb and fingers were particularly anointed, as a necessary disposition for so holy a contact; and so it was by them put into the mouths of the people. A litany was also gathered, consisting of many short petitions, interrupted by suffrages between them: and was the same that we still use, only they had one suffrage that we have not, to be delivered from the tyranny of the Bishop of Rome, and all his detestable enormities.

In baptism there was, besides the forms which we still retain, a cross at first made on the child's forehead and breast, with an adjuration of the devil to go out of him, and come at him no more. Then the priest was to take the child by the right hand, and to place him within the font; there he was to be dipped thrice, once on the right side, once on the left, and once on the breast, which was to be discreetly done; but if the child were weak, it was sufficient to sprinkle water on his face. Then was the priest to put a white vestment or chrysome on him, for a token of innocence, and to anoint him on the head, with a prayer for the unction of the Holy Ghost. In confirmation, those that came were to be catechised, which, having in it a formal engagement to make good the baptismal vow, was all that

PART II.

1548.

was asked: (the Catechism then was the same that is now, only there is since added an explanation of the sacraments;) this being said, the bishop was to sign them with the cross, and to lay his hands on them, and say, "I sign thee with the sign of the cross, and lay my hands on thee, in the name of the Father," &c. The sick, who desired to be anointed, might have the unction on their forehead, or their breast only; with a prayer, that as their body was outwardly anointed with oil, so they might receive the Holy Ghost, with health, and victory over sin and death. At funerals, they recommended the soul departed to God's mercy, and prayed that his sins might be pardoned, that he might be delivered from hell and carried to heaven, and that his body might be raised at the last day.

They also took care that those who could not come, or be brought to church, should not therefore be deprived of the use of the sacraments. The church of Rome had raised the belief of the indispensable necessity of the sacraments so high, that they taught they did *ex opere operato*, by the very action itself, without inward acts, justify and confer grace, unless there were a bar put to it by the receiver; and the first rise of the questions about justification seems to have come from this: for that church teaching that men were justified by sacramental actions, the reformers opposed this, and thought men were justified by the internal acts of the mind; if they had held at this, the controversy might have been managed with much greater advantages; which they lost, in a great measure, by descending to some minuter subtleties. In the church of Rome, pursuant to their belief concerning the necessity of the sacraments, women were allowed in extreme cases to baptize; and the midwives commonly did it; which might be the beginning of their being licensed by bishops to exercise that calling. And they also believed that a simple attrition with the sacraments was sufficient for salvation in those who were grown up; and upon these grounds the sacraments were administered to the sick.

In the primitive church they sent portions of the sacrament to those who were sick, or in prison; and did it not only without pomp or processions, but sent it often

by the hands of boys and other laics, as appears from the famed story of Serapion; which, as it shews they did not then believe it was the very flesh and blood of Christ; so, when that doctrine was received, it was a natural effect of that belief to have the sacrament carried by the priest himself with some pomp and adoration. The ancients thought it more decent and suitable to the communion of saints to consecrate the elements only in the church, and to send portions to the sick, thereby expressing their communion with the rest. The reformers considering these things steered a middle course: they judged the sacraments necessary, where they could be had, as appointments instituted by Christ; and though they thought it more expedient to have all baptisms done in the church at the fonts, than in private houses, thereby signifying that the baptized were admitted to the fellowship of that church; yet, since our Saviour had said, that "where two or three are gathered together he will be in the midst of them;" they thought it savoured too much of a superstition to the walls or fonts of churches, to tie this action so to these, that where children, either through infirmity or the sharpness of weather, could not be, without danger, carried to church, they should be denied baptism. But still they thought public baptism more expressive of the communion of the saints, so that they recommended it much, and only permitted the other in cases of necessity. This has since grown to a great abuse; many thinking it a piece of state to have their children baptized in their houses; and so bringing their pride with them even into the most sacred performances. There may be also a fault in the ministers, who are too easily brought to do it: but it is now become so universal, that all the endeavours of some of our bishops have not been able to bring it back to the first design of not baptizing in private houses, excepting only where there was some visible danger in carrying the children to church.

As for the other sacrament, it was thought by our reformers, that, according to the mind of the primitive church, none should be denied it in their extremities: it never being more necessary, than at that time to use

PART II.

1548.

all means that might strengthen the faith, and quicken the devotion of dying persons; it being also most expedient that they should then profess their dying in the faith, and with a good conscience, and in charity with all men: therefore they ordered the communion to be given to the sick, and that, before it were so given, the priest should examine their consciences; and upon the sincere profession of their faith, and the confession of such sins as oppressed their consciences, with the doing of all that was then in their power for the completing of their repentance, as the forgiving injuries, and dealing justly with all people, he should give them the peace of the church in a formal absolution, and the holy eucharist. But that they might avoid the pomp of vain processions on the one hand, and the indecencies of sending the sacrament by common hands on the other, they thought it better to gather a congregation about the sick person, and there to consecrate and give the sacrament to that small assembly; where, as Christ's promise, of being in the midst of two or three that were gathered together in his name, should have put an end to the weak exceptions some have made to these private communions; so, on the other hand, it is to be feared that the greater part retain still too much of the superstition of popery; as if the priest's absolution with the sacrament, and some slight sorrow for sin, would be a sure passport for their admittance to heaven; which it is certain can only be had upon so true a faith, as carries a sincere repentance with a change of heart and life along with it: for to such only the mercies of God through the merits of Jesus Christ are applied in all ordinary cases.

The preface to the Book of Common Prayer.

To all this they prefixed a preface concerning ceremonies, the same that is still before the Common Prayer Book; in which preface they make a difference between those ceremonies that were brought in with a good intent, and were afterwards abused; and others that had been brought in out of vanity and superstition at first, and grew to be more abused; the one they had quite rejected, the other they had reformed, and retained for decency and edification. Some were so set on their

old forms, that they thought it a great matter to depart from any of them; others were desirous to innovate in every thing; between both which they had kept a mean. The burden of ceremonies in St. Austin's days was such, that he complained of them then as intolerable, by which the state of Christians was worse than that of the Jews; but these were swelled to a far greater number since his days, which did indeed darken religion, and had brought Christians under a heavy yoke: therefore, they had only reserved such as were decent, and apt to stir up men's minds with some good signification. Many ceremonies had been so abused by superstition and avarice, that it was necessary to take them quite away; but since it was fit to retain some for decency and order, it seemed better to keep those which were old, than to seek new ones. But those that were kept were not thought equal with God's law, and so were, upon just causes, to be altered; they were also plain, and easy to be understood, and not very subject to be abused. Nor did they in retaining these condemn other nations, or prescribe to any but their own people. And thus was this book made ready against the next meeting of parliament.

Reflections made on the new liturgy.

In it, the use of the cross was retained, since it had been used by the ancient Christians, as a public declaration that they were not ashamed of the cross of Christ. Though they acknowledged this had been strangely abused in the latter ages, in which the bare use of the cross was thought to have some magical virtue in it: and this had gone so far, that in the Roman Pontifical it was declared, that the crosier-staff was to be worshipped with that supreme degree of adoration, called *Latria:* but it was thought fit to retain it in some parts of worship; and the rather, because it was made use of among the people to defame the reformers, that they had no veneration for the cross of Christ: and therefore, as an outward expression of that in the sacrament of baptism, and in the office of confirmation, and in the consecration of the sacramental elements, it was ordered to be retained; but with this difference, that the sign of the cross was not made with the opinion of any

PART II.

1548.

virtue or efficacy in it to drive away evil spirits, or to preserve one out of dangers, which were thought virtues that followed the use of it in the Roman church; for in baptism, as they used the sign of the cross, they added an adjuration to the evil spirit not to violate it; and in the making it said, "Receive the sign of the cross both in thy forehead and in thy heart, and take the faith of the heavenly precepts." Thus a sacramental virtue was pretended to be affixed to it; which the reformers thought could not be done without a warrant from a Divine institution, of which it is plain there was none in Scripture: but they thought the use of it only as an expression of the belief of the church, and as a badge of Christianity, with such words added to it as could import no more, was liable to no exception. This seems more necessary to be well explained, by reason of the scruples that many have since raised against significant ceremonies, as if it were too great a presumption in any church to appoint such, since these seem to be of the nature of sacraments. Ceremonies that signify the conveyance of a Divine grace and virtue are indeed sacraments, and ought not to be used without an express institution in Scripture; but ceremonies that only signify the sense we have, which is sometimes expressed as significantly in dumb shows as in words, are of another kind; and it is as much within the power of the church to appoint such to be used, as it is to order collects or prayers, words and signs being but different ways of expressing our thoughts. The belief of Christ's corporal presence was yet under consideration: and they, observing wisely how the Germans had broken by their running too soon into contests about that, resolved to keep up still the old general expressions, of the sacraments being the whole and true body of Christ, without coming to a more particular explanation of it. The use of oil, on so many occasions, was taken from the ancient Christians, who, as Theophilus says, began early to be anointed; and understood those words of St. Paul, of God's anointing and sealing, literally. It was also anciently applied to the receiving of penitents: but it was not used about the sick, from the apostles' times till,

about the tenth century; and then, from what St. James writ to those in the dispersion, of sending for the elders to come to such as were sick, who should anoint them with oil, and their sins should be forgiven them, and they should recover; they came to give it to those that were dying, but not while there was any hope of life left in them. Though it is clear, that what St. James writ related to that extraordinary gift of healing, by imposition of hands, and anointing with oil, which yet continued in the church when he writ that Epistle. And it is plain, that this passage in St. James was not so understood by the ancients, as it is now in the Roman church; since the ancients, though they used oil on many other occasions, yet applied it not at all to the sick till after so many ages, that gross superstition had so disposed the world to new rites, that there could be no discovery or invention more acceptable than the addition of a new ceremony, though they were then much oppressed with the old ones.

The changes that were made, and those that were designed to be made, occasioned great heats every where. And the pulpits generally contending with one another; to restrain that clashing, the power of granting licences to preach was taken from the bishops of each diocess, so that none might give them but the King and the Archbishop of Canterbury: yet that not proving an effectual restraint, on the 23d of September a proclamation is said to have come out, setting forth, that whereas according to former proclamations none was to preach but such as had obtained licences from the King or the Archbishop; yet some of those that were so licensed, had abused that permission, and had carried themselves irreverently, contrary to the instructions that were sent them: therefore the King, intending to have shortly an uniform order over all the kingdom, and to put an end to all controversies in religion; about which some bishops and other learned men were then assembled; and though many of the preachers so licensed had carried themselves wisely, to the honour of God, and the King's great contentation; yet, till the order now preparing should be set forth, he did inhibit all manner of

All preaching was for a time restrained.

PART II.

1548.

persons to preach in any public audience; to the intent that the clergy might apply themselves to prayer, for a blessing on what the King was then about to do; not doubting but the people would be employed likewise in prayer, and hearing the Homilies read in their churches, and be ready to receive that uniform order that was to be set forth; and the inferior magistrates were required to see to the execution of this. I never met with any footstep of this proclamation, neither in records, nor in letters, nor in any book written at that time: but Mr. Fuller has printed it, and Dr. Heylin has given an abstract of it from him. If Fuller had told how he came by it, it might have been further examined. But we know not whether he saw the printed proclamation, or only a copy of it: and if he saw but a copy, we have reason to doubt of it; for that might have been only the essay of some projecting man's pen. But because I found it in those authors, I thought best to set it down as it is, and leave the reader to judge of it.

The affairs in Scotland this year.

Having thus given an account of the progress of the Reformation this summer, I shall now turn to transactions of state, and shall first look towards Scotland. The Scots gaining time the last winter, and being in daily expectation of succours from France, were resolved to carry on the war. The Governor began the year with the siege of Broughty Castle, a little below Dundee: but the English that were in it defended themselves so well, that after they had been besieged three months, the siege was raised, and only so many were left about it as might cover the country from their excursions. The English, on the other side, had taken and fortified Hadingtoun; and were at work also at Lauder to make it strong: the former of these lying in a plain, and in one of the most fruitful counties of Scotland, within twelve miles of Edinburgh, was a very fit place to be kept as a curb upon the country. About the end of May, six thousand men were sent from France under the command of Dessie; three thousand of these were Germans, commanded by the Rhinegrave; two thousand of them were French, and a thousand were of other nations: they landed at Leith; and the Governor hav-

ing gathered eight thousand Scots to join with them, they sate down before Hadingtoun; and here the Scottish nobility entered into a long consultation about their affairs.

The Protector had sent a proposition to them, that there might be a truce for ten years: (but whether he offered to remove the garrisons does not appear.) This he was forced to upon many accounts. He saw the war was like to last long, and to draw on great expense, and would certainly end in another war with France; he durst not any more go from court, and march himself at the head of the army, and leave the King to the practices of his brother: there were also great discontents in England; many were offended with the changes made in religion; the Commons complained generally of oppression, and of the enclosing of grounds, of which the sad effects broke out next year: he began to labour under the envy of the nobility; the clergy were almost all displeased with him; and the state of affairs in Germany made it necessary to join with the King of France against the Emperor. All this made him very desirous of such a peace with Scotland, as might at least preserve the Queen from being disposed of for ten years. In that time, by treaty and pensions, they might hope to gain their ends more certainly than by a war, which only inflamed the Scots against them; according to the witty saying of one of the Scots, who, being asked what he thought of the match with England, said, he knew not how he should like the marriage, but he was sure he did not like the way of wooing. On the other hand, the French pressed the Scots to send their young Queen into France, in the ships that had brought over their forces; who should be married to the Dauphin, and then they might depend on the protection of France. Many were for accepting the proposition from England (particularly all those who secretly favoured the Reformation); they thought it would give them present quiet, and free them from all the distractions which they either felt, or might apprehend, from a lasting war with so powerful an enemy; whereas the sending away of their Queen would put them out of a capacity of ob-

PART II.

1548.

taining a peace, if the war this year proved as unsuccessful as it was the last; and the defence they had from France was almost as bad as the invasions of the English, for the French were very insolent, and committed great disorders. But all the clergy were so apprehensive of their ruin by the marriage with England, that they never judged themselves safe till the thing was out of their power, by the sending their Queen into France: and it was said, that when once the English saw the hopes of the marriage irrecoverably lost, they would soon grow weary of the war; for then the King of France would engage in the defence of Scotland with his whole force, so that nothing would keep up the war so much as having their Queen still among them. To this many of the nobility yielded, being corrupted by money from France; and the Governor consented to it, for which he was to be made Duke of Chastelherault in France, and to have an estate of twelve thousand livres a year: and so it was agreed to send their Queen away. This being gained, the French ships set sail to sea, as if they had been to return to France; but sailed round Scotland by the Isles of Orkney, and came into Dunbriton Frith, near to which the Queen was kept, in Dunbriton Castle; and receiving her from thence, with an honourable convoy that was sent to attend on her, they carried her over to Britaigne in France, and so by easy journeys she was brought to court, where her uncles received her with great joy, hoping by her means to raise and establish their fortunes in France.

The Scottish Queen is sent to France.

The siege of Hadingtoun.

In the mean time the siege of Hadingtoun was carried on with great valour on both sides. The French were astonished at the courage, the nimbleness, and labours, of the Scotch Highlanders, who were half naked; but capable of great hardships, and used to run on with marvellous swiftness. In one sally which the besieged made, one of those got an Englishman on his shoulders, and carried him away with that quickness, that nothing could stop him; and though the Englishman bit him so in the neck, that as soon as he had brought him into the camp, he himself fell down as dead, yet he carried him off; for which he was nobly rewarded by Dessie.

Thuanus.

The English defended themselves no less courageously; and though a recruit of about one thousand foot, and three hundred horse, that was sent from Berwick, led by Sir Robert Bowes and Sir Thomas Palmer, was so fatally intercepted, that they were almost all to a man killed, yet they lost no heart. Another party of about three hundred escaped the ambush laid for them, and got into the town, with a great deal of ammunition and provisions, of which the besieged were come to be in want: but at the same time both Home Castle and Fascastle were lost: the former was taken by treachery; for some coming in as deserters, seeming to be very zealous for the English quarrel, and being too much trusted by the Governor, and going often out to bring intelligence, gave the Lord Home notice, that, on that side where the rock was, the English kept no good watches, trusting to the steepness of the place; so they agreed that some should come and climb the rock, to whom they should give assistance; which was accordingly done, and so it was surprised in the night. The Governor of Fascastle had summoned the country people to bring him in provisions; upon which (by a common stratagem) soldiers coming as countrymen, threw down their carriages at the gates, and fell on the sentinels; and so, the signal being given, some that lay concealed near at hand, came in time to assist them, and took the castle.

A fleet sent against Scotland.

The Protector, till the army was gathered together, sent a fleet of ships to disturb the Scots, by the descents they should make in divers places; and his brother being admiral, he commanded him to go to his charge. He landed first in Fife, at St. Minins; but there the Queen's natural brother, James, afterwards Earl of Murray, and Regent of Scotland, gathered the country people together, and made head against them. The English were twelve hundred, and had brought their cannon to land; but the Scots charged them so home, that they forced them to their ships: many were drowned, and many killed; the Scots reckoned the number of the slain to be six hundred, and a hundred prisoners taken. The next descent they made was no

PART II.

1548. But was not successful.

more prosperous to them: for, landing in the night at Montrose, Erskine, of Dun, gathered the country together, and divided them in three bodies, ordering one to appear soon after the former had engaged: the enemy, seeing a second and a third body come against them, apprehending greater numbers, run back to their ships; but with so much loss, that, of eight hundred who had landed, the third man got not safe to the ships again. So the Admiral returned, having got nothing but loss and disgrace by the expedition.

But now the English army came into Scotland, commanded by the Earl of Shrewsbury: though both the Scotch writers and Thuanus say, the Earl of Lennox had the chief command; but he only came with the Earl of Shrewsbury, as knowing the country and people best, and so being the fitter both to get intelligence, and to negociate, if there was room for it. The Scots were by this time gone home for the most part; and the nobility, with Dessie, agreed that it was not fit to put all to hazard, and therefore raised the siege of Hadingtoun, and marched back to Edinburgh. The Lord Gray, with a great part of the English army, followed him in the rear, but did not engage him into any great action; by which a good opportunity was lost, for the French were in great disorder. The English army came into Hadingtoun: they consisted of about seventeen thousand men; of which number seven thousand were horse, and three thousand of the foot were German Landsknights, whom the Protector had entertained in his service. These Germans were some of the broken troops of the protestant army, who, seeing the state of their own country desperate, offered their service to the Protector. He too easily entertained them; reckoning, that, being protestants, they would be sure to him, and would depend wholly on himself: but this proved a fatal counsel to him, the English having been always jealous of a standing, but much more of a foreign, force about their Prince: so there was great occasion given by this to those who traded in sowing jealousies among the people. The English, having victualled Hadingtoun and repaired

Aug. 20. The siege of Hadingtoun raised.

the fortifications, returned back into their own country; but had they gone on to Edinburgh, they had found things there in great confusion: for Dessie, when he got thither, having lost five hundred of his men in the retreat, went to quarter his soldiers in the town; but the Provost (so is the chief magistrate there called) opposed it. The French broke in with force, and killed him and his son, with all they found in the streets, men, women, and children: and, as a spy, whom the English had in Edinburgh, gave them notice, the Scots were now more alienated from the French than from the English. The French had carried it very gently till the Queen was sent away; but reckoned Scotland now a conquered country, and a province to France: so the Scots began, though too late, to repent the sending away of the Queen. But it seems the English had orders not to venture too far; for the hopes of the marriage were now gone, and the Protector had no mind to engage in a war with France. These things happened in the beginning of October. Dessie, apprehending that at Hadingtoun they were now secure, the siege being so lately raised, resolved to try if he could carry the place by surprise. The English from thence had made excursions as far as Edinburgh; in one of which the French fell on them, pursued them, and killed about two hundred, and took sixscore prisoners, almost within their works. Soon after, Dessie marched in the night, and surprised one of their outworks, and was come to the gates; where the place had been certainly lost, if it had not been for a French deserter, who knew, if he were taken, what he was to expect: he therefore fired one of the great cannon, which, being discharged amongst the thickest of the French, killed so many, and put the rest in such disorder, that Dessie was forced to quit the attempt. From thence he went and fortified Leith, which was then but a mean village; but the situation of the place being recommended by the security it now had, it soon came to be one of the best-peopled towns in Scotland. From thence he intended to have gone on, to take Broughty Castle, and to recover Dundee, which were then in the hands of

PART II.

1548.

the English: but he was ordered by the Queen Regent to make an inroad into England. There, after some slight engagements, in which the English had the worst, the Scotch and French came in as far as Newcastle, and returned loaded with spoil; which the French divided among themselves, allowing the Scots no share of it. An English priest was taken, who bore that disgrace of his country so heavily, that he threw himself on the ground, and would not eat, nor so much as open his eyes, but lay thus prostrate till he died. This the French, who seldom let their misfortunes afflict them, looked on with much astonishment. But at that time the English had fortified Inch-keith, an island in the Frith, and put eight hundred men in it. Seventeen days after that, Dessie brought his forces from Leith, and recovered it; having killed four hundred English, and forced the rest to surrender.

Discontents in Scotland.

Thus ended this year, and with it Dessie's power in Scotland: for the Queen-Mother and the Governor had made great complaints of him at the court of France, that he put the nation to vast charge to little purpose; so that he was more uneasy to his friends than his enemies: and his last disorder at Edinburgh had, on the one hand, so raised the insolence of the French soldiers, and, on the other hand, so alienated and inflamed the people, that, unless another were sent to command, who should govern more mildly, there might be great danger of a defection of a whole kingdom: for now the seeds of their distaste of the French government were so sown, that men came generally to condemn their sending the Queen away, and to hate the Governor for consenting to it, but chiefly to abhor the clergy, who had wrought it for their own ends.

Monluc sent thither to be lord chancellor.

Monsieur de Thormes was sent over to command; and Monluc, bishop of Valence, came with him to govern the counsels, and be chancellor of the kingdom: he had lately returned from his embassy at Constantinople. He was one of the wisest men of that time, and was always for moderate counsels in matters of religion; which made him be some time suspected of heresy: and, indeed, the whole sequel of his life declared him to

1548.

be one of the greatest men of that age; only his being so long, and so firmly united to Queen Katharine Medici's interest, takes off a great deal of the high character which the rest of his life has given of him: but he was at this time unknown, and ill represented in Scotland; where they, that looked for advantages from their alliance with France, took it ill to see a Frenchman sent over to enjoy the best office in the kingdom. The Queen Mother herself was afraid of him: so to avoid new grounds of discontent, he left the kingdom, and returned into France.

But was not well received.

Thus ended the war between Scotland and England this year, in almost an equal mixture of good and bad success. The English had preserved Hadingtoun, which was the chief matter of this year's action: but they had been at great charge in the war, in which they were only on the defensive; they had lost other places, and been unsuccessful at sea; and, which was worst of all, they had now lost all hopes of the marriage, and were almost engaged in a war with France, which was like to fall on the King, when his affairs were in an ill condition, his people being divided and discontented at home, and his treasure much exhausted by this war.

The affairs of Germany.

The state of Germany was at this time most deplorable: the Pope and Emperor continued their quarrelling about the translation of the council. Mendoza at Rome, and Velasco at Bologna, declared, in the Emperor's name, that a council being called by his great and long endeavours for the quieting of Germany, and he being engaged in a war to get it to be received; and having procured a submission of the empire to the council, it was, upon frivolous and feigned causes, removed out of Germany, to one of the Pope's towns; by which the Germans thought themselves disengaged of their promise, which was to submit to a council in Germany; and therefore that he protested against it, as an unlawful meeting, to whose decrees he would not submit; and that if they did not return to Trent, he would take care of settling religion some other way. But the Pope, being encouraged by the French King, was not ill pleased to see the Emperor anew embroil himself with the Ger-

PART II.

mans, and therefore intended the council should be continued at Bologna. Upon this the Emperor ordered three divines, Julius Flugius, bishop of Naumburg, Michael Sidonius, and Islebius Agricola, to draw a form of religion. The two former had been always papists, and the latter was formerly a protestant, but was believed to be now corrupted by the Emperor, that the name of one of the Augsburg Confession might make what they were to set out pass the more easily. They drew up all the points of religion in a book, which was best known by the name of the Interim, because it was to last during that interval, till a general council should meet in Germany. In it, all the points of the Romish doctrine were set forth in the smoothest terms possible; only married men might officiate as priests, and the communion was to be given in both kinds. The book being thus prepared, a diet was summoned to Augsburg in February, where the first thing done was the solemn investiture of Maurice in the electorate of Saxony. He had been declared Elector last year by the Emperor, before Wirtemberg; but now it was performed with great ceremony on the 24th of February, which was the Emperor's birth-day: John Frederick looking on with his usual constancy of mind. All he said was, "Now they triumph in that dignity, of which they have against justice and equity spoiled me; God grant they may enjoy it peaceably and happily, and may never need any assistance from me or my posterity." And, without expressing any further concern about it, he went to his studies, which were almost wholly employed in the Scriptures.

1548. The Emperor being displeased with the translation of the council, orders the Interim to be drawn.

The book of the Interim being prepared, the Elector of Brandenburg sent for Martin Bucer, who was both a learned and moderate divine, and shewed it him. Bucer having read it, plainly told him, that it was nothing but downright popery, only a little disguised; at which the Elector was much offended, for he was pleased with it; and Bucer, not without great danger, returned back to Strasburg. On the 15th of March, the book was proposed to the diet; and the Elector of Mentz, without any order, did, in all the princes' names, give the Emperor thanks for it; which he interpreted as the assent of the

March 15. The Interim received in the diet.

whole diet; and after that would not hear any that came to him to stop it, but published it as agreed to by the diet.

1548. The papists offended at it as well as the protestants.

At Rome and Bologna it was much condemned, as a high attempt in the Emperor to meddle with points of religion; such as dispensing with the marriage of priests, and the communion in both kinds: wherefore some of that church writ against it: and matters went so high, that wise men of that side began to fear the breach between the Emperor and them might, before they were aware, be past reconciling; for they had not forgot that the last Pope's stiffness had lost England, and they were not a little afraid they might now lose the Emperor. But if the Pope were offended for the concessions in these two particulars, the protestants thought they had much greater cause to dislike it, since in all other controverted points it was against them. So that several of that side writ likewise against it; but the Emperor was now so much exalted with his success, that he resolved to go through with it, little regarding the opposition of either hand. The new Elector of Saxony went home, and offered it to his subjects; but they refused to receive it, and said, (as Sir Philip Hobbey, then ambassador from England at the Emperor's court, writ over,) that they had it under the Emperor's hand and seal, that he should not meddle with matters of religion, but only with reforming the commonwealth, and that if their Prince would not protect them in this matter, they should find another who would defend them from such oppression. An exhortation for the receiving of it was read at Augsburg; but they also refused it. Many towns sent their addresses to the Emperor, desiring him not to oppress their consciences. But none was of such a nature as that from Linda a little town near Constance, which had declared for the Emperor in the former war: they returned answer, that they could not agree to the Interim, without incurring eternal damnation; but to shew their submission to him in all other things, they should not shut their gates, nor make resistance, against any he should send, though it were to spoil and destroy their town. This let the Emperor and his council see how difficult a work it would be to

Cotton Library, Titus B. 2.

PART II.

1548.

subdue the consciences of the Germans. But his chancellor Grandvil pressed him to extreme counsels, and to make an example of that town, who had so peremptorily refused to obey his commands: yet he had little reason to hope he should prevail on those who were at liberty, when he could work so little on his prisoner, the Duke of Saxe. For he had endeavoured, by great offers, to persuade him to agree to it, but all was in vain; for he always told them that kept him, that his person was in their power, but his conscience was in his own, and that he would not on any terms depart from the Augsburg Confession: upon this he was severely used, his chaplain was put from him, with most of his servants; but he continued still unmoved, and as cheerful as in his greatest prosperity. The Lutheran divines entered into great disputes how far they might comply. Melancthon thought that the ceremonies of popery might be used, since they were of their own nature indifferent. Others, as Amstorfius, Illiricus, with the greatest part of the Lutherans, thought the receiving the ceremonies would make way for all the errors of popery; and though they were of their own nature indifferent, yet they ceased to be so, when they were enjoined as things necessary to salvation. But the Emperor going on resolutely, many divines were driven away; some concealed themselves in Germany, others fled into Switzerland, and some came over into England.

When the news of the changes that were made here in England were carried beyond sea, and, after Peter Martyr's being with Cranmer, were more copiously written by him to his friends; Calvin and Mr. Bucer, who began to think the Reformation almost oppressed in Germany, now turned their eyes more upon England. Calvin writ to the Protector on the 29th of October, encouraging him to go on notwithstanding the wars; as Hezekias had done in his reformation. He lamented the heats of some that professed the gospel, but complained that he heard there were few lively sermons preached in England; and that the preachers recited their discourses coldly. He much approves a set-form of prayers, whereby the consent of all the churches did

Calvin writ to the Protector.

more manifestly appear: but he advises a more complete reformation: he taxed the prayers for the dead, the use of chrism and extreme unction, since they were no where recommended in Scripture. He had heard that the reason why they went no further was, because the times could not bear it; but this was to do the work of God by political maxims; which though they ought to take place in other things, yet should not be followed in matters in which the salvation of souls was concerned. But, above all things, he complained of the great impieties and vices that were so common in England, as swearing, drinking, and uncleanness; and prayed him earnestly that these things might be looked after.

Bucer writ against Gardiner.

Martin Bucer writ also a discourse, congratulating the changes then made in England, which was translated into English by Sir Philip Hobbey's brother. In it he answered the book that Gardiner had written against him; which he had formerly delayed to do because King Henry had desired he would let it alone, till the English and Germans had conferred about religion. That book did chiefly relate to the marriage of the clergy: Bucer shewed from many fathers, that they thought every man had not the gift of charity, which Gardiner thought every one might have that pleased. He taxed the open lewdness of the Romish clergy, who being much set against marriage, which was God's ordinance, did gently pass over the impurities which the forbidding it had occasioned among themselves. He particularly taxed Gardiner himself, that he had his rents payed him out of stews: he taxed him also for his state and pompous way of living, and shewed how indecent it was for a churchman to be sent in embassies: and that St. Ambrose, though sent to make peace, was ashamed of it, and thought it unbecoming the priesthood. Both Fagius and he being forced to leave Germany, upon the business of the Interim, Cranmer invited them over to England; and sent them to Cambridge, as he had done Peter Martyr to Oxford. But Fagius, not agreeing with this air, died soon after; a man greatly learned in the oriental tongues, and a good expounder of the Scripture.

PART II.

1548. Nov. 24. Parliament sits.

This being the state of affairs both abroad and at home, a session of parliament was held in England on the 24th of November, to which day it had been prorogued from the 15th of October, by reason of the plague then in London. The first bill that was finished, was that about the marriage of the priests. It was brought into the House of Commons the 3d of December, read the second time on the 5th, and the third time the 6th. But this bill being only that married men might be made priests, a new bill was framed, that, besides the former provision, priests might marry: this was read the first time the 7th, the second time the 10th, and was fully argued on the 11th, and agreed to on the 12th, and sent up to the Lords on the 13th of December. In that House it stuck as long, as it had been soon dispatched by the Commons. It lay on the table till the 9th of February, then it was read the first time, and the 11th the second time; on the 16th it was committed to the Bishops of Ely and Westminster, the Lord Chief Justice, and the Attorney General: and on the 19th of February it was agreed to; the Bishops of London, Duresme, Norwich, Carlisle, Hereford, Worcester, Bristol, Chichester, and Landaff, and the Lords Morley, Dacres, Windsor, and Wharton, dissenting. It had the royal assent, and so became a law. The preamble sets forth, "That it were better for priests and other ministers of the church to live chaste and without marriage; whereby they might better attend to the ministry of the gospel, and be less distracted with secular cares: so that it were much to be wished, that they would of themselves abstain. But great filthiness of living, with other inconveniencies, had followed on the laws that compelled chastity, and prohibited marriage; so that it was better they should be suffered to marry, than be so restrained: therefore all laws and canons that had been made against it, being only made by human authority, are repealed. So that all spiritual persons of what degree soever might lawfully marry, providing they married according to the order of the church: but a proviso was added, that, because many divorces of priests had been made after the six Articles

An act about the marriage of the clergy.

were enacted, and that the women might have thereupon married again, all these divorces, with every thing that had followed on them, should be confirmed." There was no law that passed in this reign with more contradiction and censure than this, and therefore the reader may expect the larger account of this matter.

Which was much inquired into.

The unmarried state of the clergy had so much to be said for it, as being a course of life that was more disengaged from secular cares and pleasures, that it was cast on the reformers every where as a foul reproach, that they could not restrain their appetites, but engaged in a life that drew after it domestic cares, with many other distractions: this was an objection so easy to be apprehended, that the people had been more prejudiced against the marriage of the clergy, if they had not felt greater inconveniences by the debaucheries of priests, who, being restrained from marriage, had defiled the beds, and deflowered the daughters, of their neighbours, into whose houses they had free and unsuspected access; and whom, under the cloak of receiving confessions, they could more easily entice. This made them that they were not so much wrought on by the noise of chastity, (when they saw so much and so plainly to the contrary,) as otherwise they would have been by a thing that sounded so well: but, on the other hand, there was no argument which the reformers had more considered. There were two things upon which the question turned: the one was, the obligation that priesthood brought with it to live unmarried; the other was, the tie they might be under by any vow they had made. For the former, they considered, that God, having ordained a race of men to be priests under Moses's law, who should offer up expiatory sacrifices for the sins of the Jews, did not only not forbid marriage, but made it necessary, for that office was to descend by inheritance; so that priesthood was not inconsistent with that state. In the New Testament, some of the qualifications of a bishop and deacon are, their being the husband of one wife, and their having well ordered their house, and brought up their children: St. Peter and other apostles were married; it was thought St. Paul was so likewise; Aquila was cer-

Arguments for it from Scripture.

PART II.

1548.

tainly married to Priscilla, and carried her about with him. Our Saviour, speaking of the help that an unmarried state was to the kingdom of God, recommended it equally to all ranks of men as they could bear it. St. Paul said, "Let every man have his own wife; it is better to marry than to burn;" and, "marriage is honourable in all;" and the forbidding to marry is reckoned by him a mark of the apostacy of the latter times; so that the matter seemed clear from the Scriptures.

And from the fathers.

In the first ages, Saturninus, Basilides, Montanus, Novatus, and the Eucratites, condemned marriage as a state of liberty more than was fit for Christians. Against those was asserted, by the primitive fathers, the lawfulness of marriage to all Christians without discrimination; and they who entering into holy orders forsook their wives, were severely condemned by the apostolical canons, and by the council of Gangra, in the beginning of the fourth, and the council of Trullo in the latter end of the seventh, or rather in the beginning of the eighth age. Many great bishops in these times lived still with their wives, and had children by them; as namely, both Nazianzen's and Basil's fathers: and Hilary of Poictiers, when banished to Phrygia, and very old, writing to his own daughter Abra, bid her ask her mother the meaning of those things which she by reason of her age understood not; by which it appears that his daughter was then very young, and by consequence born to him after he was a bishop. In the council of Nice, it being proposed that clergymen should depart from their wives, Paphnutius, though himself unmarried, opposed it as an unreasonable yoke. And Heliodorus, bishop of Trica, the author of the first of those love fables now known by the name of romances, being suspected of too much lasciviousness, and concerned to clear himself of that charge, did first move that clergymen should be obliged to live single, which, the historian says, they were not tied to before, but bishops, as they pleased, lived still with their wives. The fathers in those times extolled a single life very high, and yet they all thought a man once married might be a bishop, though his wife were yet living; they did not allow it, indeed, to

him that had married twice; but for this they had a distinction, that if a man had been once married before his baptism, and again after his baptism, he was to be understood to be in the state of a single marriage: so that Jerome, who writ warmly enough against second marriages, yet says, *ad Oceanum*, that the bishops in his age, who were but once married in that sense, were not to be numbered; and that more of these could be reckoned than were at the council of Ariminum, who are said to have been eight hundred bishops. It is true, that in that age they began to make canons against the marriage of those who were in orders, especially in the Roman and African churches; but those were only positive laws of the church, and the frequent repeating of those canons shews that even there they were not generally obeyed. Of Synesius we read, that when he was ordained priest, he declared that he would not live secretly with his wife as some did, but that he would dwell publicly with her, and wished that he might have many children by her. In the eastern church all their clergy below the order of bishops are usually married before they be ordained; and afterward live with their wives, and have children by them, without any kind of prohibition. In the western church the married clergy are taken notice of in many of the Spanish and Gallican synods, and the bishops' and priests' wives are called *episcopæ* and *presbyteræ*. In most of the cathedrals of England, the clergy were married in the Saxon times, but, as was shewn, page 34. of the first Part, because they would not quit their wives, they were put out, not of sacred orders, but only out of the seats they were then in, and those were given to the monks. When Pope Nicholas had pressed the celibate of the clergy in the ninth century, there was great opposition made to it, chiefly by Huldericus bishop of Augsburg, who was held a saint notwithstanding this opposition. Restitutus, bishop of London, lived openly with his wife; nor was the celibate of the clergy generally imposed till Pope Gregory the Seventh's time, in the eleventh century; who, projecting to have the clergy depend wholly on himself, and so to separate them from the interests of those

PART II.

1548.

princes in whose dominions they lived, considered that, by having wives and children, they gave pledges to the state where they lived, and reckoned that, if they were free from this incumbrance, then their persons being sacred, there would be nothing to hinder, but that they might do as they pleased in obedience to the Pope's, and opposition to their own Prince's orders. The writers near Gregory the Seventh's time called this a new thing, against the mind of the holy fathers, and full of rashness in him, thus to turn out married priests. Lanfranc, archbishop of Canterbury, did not impose celibate on the clergy in the villages, but only on those that lived in towns, and on prebendaries. But Anselm carried it further, and simply imposed it on all the clergy; yet himself laments, that sodomy was become then very common, and even public; which was also the complaint of Petrus Damiani, in Pope Gregory's time. Bernard said, that that sin was frequent among the bishops in his time, and that this, with many other abominations, was the natural effect of prohibiting marriage. This made Abbot Panormitan wish that it were left to men's liberty to marry if they pleased. And Pius the Second said, there might have been good reasons for imposing celibate on the clergy, but he believed there were far better reasons for taking away those laws that imposed it. Yet, even since those laws have been made, Petrarch had a licence to marry, and keep his preferments still. Boniface, archbishop of Canterbury, Richard, bishop of Chichester, and Geofrey, bishop of Ely, are said to have had wives; and though there were not so many instances of priests marrying after orders, yet if there were any thing in the nature of priesthood, inconsistent by the law of God with marriage, then it was as unlawful for them to continue in their former marriages, as to contract a new one. Some few instances were also gathered out of church history, of bishops and priests marrying after orders; but as these were few, so there was just reason to controvert them.

The vows and other reasons against it examined.

Upon the whole matter, it was clear that the celibate of the clergy flowed from no law of God, nor from any general law of the church; but the contrary, of clergy-

men's living with their wives, was universally received for many ages. As for vows, it was much questioned how far they did bind in such cases. It seemed a great sin to impose such on any, when they were yet young, and did not well know their own dispositions. Nor was it in a man's power to keep them. For continence being none of those graces that are promised by God to all that ask it, as it was not in a man's power, without extreme severities on himself, to govern his own constitution of body, so he had no reason to expect God should interpose, when he had provided another remedy for such cases. Besides, the promise made by clergymen, according to the rites of the Roman Pontifical, did not oblige them to celibate. The words were, "Wilt thou follow chastity and sobriety?" to which the subdeacon answered, "I will." By chastity, was not to be understood a total abstinence from all, but only from unlawful embraces; since a man might live chaste in a state of marriage, as well as out of it. But whatever might be in this, the English clergy were not concerned in it; for there was no such question nor answer made in the forms of their ordination: so they were not by any vow precluded from marriage. And for the expediency of it, nothing was more evident, than that these laws had brought in much uncleanness into the church, and those who pressed them most had been signally noted for these vices. No prince in the English history lewder than Edgar, that had so promoted it. The legate that in King Henry the Second's time got that severe decree made, that put all the married clergy from their livings, was found the very night after (for the credit of the celibate) in bed with a whore. On this subject many indecent stories were gathered, especially by Bale, who was a learned man, but did not write with that temper and discretion that became a divine. He gathered all the lewd stories that could be raked together to this purpose; and the many abominable things found in the monasteries were then fresh in all men's memories. It was also observed, that the unmarried clergy had been, as much as the married could be, intent upon raising the families, and the enriching of their nephews and kindred (and sometimes

PART II.

1548.

of their bastards; witness the present Pope Paul III. and not long before him Alexander VI.); so that the married clergy could not be tempted to more covetousness, than had appeared in the unmarried. And for the distraction of domestic affairs, the clergy had formerly given themselves up to such a secular course of life, that it was thought nothing could increase it; but if the married clergy should set themselves to raise more than a decent maintenance for their children, such as might fit them for letters or callings, and should neglect hospitality, become covetous, and accumulate livings and preferments, to make estates for their children; this might be justly curbed by new laws, or rather the renewing of the ancient canons, by which clergymen were declared to be only entrusted with the goods of the church for public ends, and were not to apply them to their own private uses, nor to leave them to their children and friends.

Thus had this matter been argued, in many books that were written on this subject, by Poinet and Parker, the one afterwards bishop of Winchester, and the other archbishop of Canterbury; also by Bale, bishop of Ossory, with many more. Dr. Ridley, Dr. Taylor (afterwards bishop of Lincoln), Dr. Benson, and Dr. Redmayn, appeared more confidently in it, than many others; being men that were resolved never to marry themselves, who yet thought it necessary, and therefore pleaded (according to the pattern that Paphnutius had set them), that all should be left to their liberty in this matter.

The debate about it was brought into the convocation, where Dr. Redmayn's authority went a great way. He was a man of great learning and probity, and of so much greater weight, because he did not in all points agree with the reformers: but, being at this time sick, his opinion was brought under his hand, which will be found in the Collection, copied from the original. It was to this purpose, "That though the Scriptures exhorted priests to live chaste, and out of the cares of the world, yet the laws forbidding them marriage, were only canons and constitutions of the church; not founded on the word of God: and therefore he thought, that a man once

Collect. Numb. 30.

married might be a priest: and he did not find the priests in the church of England had made any vow against marriage; and therefore he thought, that the King and the higher powers of the church, might take away the clog of perpetual continence from the priests, and grant that such as could not, or would not contain, might marry once, and not be put from their holy ministration." It was opposed by many in both Houses, but carried at last by the major vote. All this I gather from what is printed concerning it; for I have seen no remains of this, or of any of the other convocations that came afterwards in this reign; the registers of them being destroyed in the fire of London. This act seemed rather a connivance, and permission of the clergy to marry, than any direct allowance of it; so the enemies of that state of life continued to reproach the married clergy still; and this was much heightened by many indecent marriages, and other light behaviour of some priests. But these things made way for a more full act concerning this matter, about three years after.

An act confirming the liturgy.

The next act that passed in this parliament was about the public service; which was put into the House of Commons on the 9th of December, and the next day was also put into the House of Lords: it lay long before them, and was not agreed to till the 15th of January. The Earl of Derby, the Bishops of London, Duresme, Norwich, Carlisle, Hereford, Worcester, Westminster, and Chichester, and the Lords Dacres and Windsor, protesting. The preamble of the act sets forth, "That there had been several forms of service, and that of late there had been great difference in the administration of the sacraments, and other parts of Divine worship: and that the most effectual endeavours could not stop the inclinations of many to depart from the former customs: which the King had not punished, believing they flowed from a good zeal. But, that there might be an uniform way over all the kingdom, the King, by the advice of the Lord Protector and his council, had appointed the Archbishop of Canterbury, with other learned and discreet bishops and divines, to draw an order of Divine worship, having respect to the pure

PART II.

1548.

religion of Christ taught in the Scripture, and to the practice of the primitive church, which they, by the aid of the Holy Ghost, had with one uniform agreement concluded on; wherefore the parliament having considered the book, and the things that were altered or retained in it, they gave their most humble thanks to the King for his care about it: and did pray, that all who had formerly offended in these matters, except such as were in the Tower of London, or the prison of the Fleet, should be pardoned; and did enact, that from the feast of Whit-Sunday next, all Divine offices should be performed according to it, and that such of the clergy as should refuse to do it, or continue to officiate in any other manner, should upon the first conviction be imprisoned six months, and forfeit a year's profit of their benefice: for the second offence forfeit all their church preferments, and suffer a year's imprisonment: and for the third offence should be imprisoned during life. And all that should write, or put out things in print against it, or threaten any clergymen for using it, were to be fined in 10*l.* for the first offence, 20*l.* for the second, and to forfeit all their goods, and be imprisoned for life, upon a third offence. Only at the Universities they might use it in Latin and Greek, excepting the office of the communion. It was also lawful to use other psalms or prayers taken out of the Bible, so those in the book were not omitted." This act was variously censured by those who disliked it. Some thought it too much, that it was said the book was drawn by the aid of the Holy Ghost: but others said this was not to be so understood, as if they had been inspired by extraordinary assistance; for then there had been no room for any correction of what was now done: and therefore it was only to be understood in that sense, as all good motions and consultations are directed or assisted by the secret influences of God's Holy Spirit; which do oft help good men, even in their imperfect actions, where the good that is done is justly ascribed to the grace of God. Others censured it, because it was said to be done by uniform agreement; and the three Bishops that were employed in the drawing of it, protested against it.

The censures passed upon it.

These were the Bishops of Hereford, Chichester, and Westminster; but these had agreed in the main parts of the work, though in some few particulars they were not satisfied, which made them dissent from the whole.

Singing of psalms brought in.

The proviso for the psalms and prayers taken out of the Bible, was for the singing psalms, which were translated into verse, and much sung by all who loved the Reformation, and were in many places used in churches. In the ancient church the Christians were much exercised in repeating the Psalms of David: many had them all by heart, and used to be reciting them when they went about their work; and those who retired into a monastical course of life, spent many of their hours in repeating the Psalter. Apollinaris put them in verse, as being easier for the memory. Other devout hymns came to be also in use. Nazianzen among the Greeks, and Prudentius among the Latins, laboured on that argument with the greatest success. There were other hymns that were not put in verse; the chief of which were, that most ancient hymn which we use now after the sacrament, and the celebrated Ambrosian hymn that begins *Te Deum laudamus*. But as, when the worship of the departed saints came to be dressed up with much pomp, hymns were also made for their honour; and the Latin tongue, as well as prosody, being then much decayed; these came to be cast into rhymes, and were written generally in a fantastical affected style: so now at the Reformation, some poets, such as the times afforded, translated David's Psalms into verse; and it was a sign by which men's affections to that work were every where measured, whether they used to sing these, or not. But as the poetry then was low, and not raised to that justness to which it is since brought, so this work, which then might pass for a tolerable composure, has not been since that time so reviewed or changed as perhaps the thing required: hence it is, that this piece of Divine worship, by the meanness of the verse, has not maintained its due esteem. Another thing, that some thought deserved to be considered in such a work, was, that many of the Psalms, being such as related more specially to David's victories, and contained passages in

PART II.

1548. them not easily understood, it seemed better to leave out these, which it was not so easy to sing with devotion, because the meaning of them either lay hid, or did not at all concern Christians.

1549. The parliament was adjourned from the 22d of December to the 2d of January. On the 7th of January the Commons sent an address to the Protector, to restore Latimer to the bishoprick of Worcester: but this took no effect, for that good old man did choose rather to go about and preach, than to engage in a matter of government, being now very ancient. A bill was put in by the Lords for appointing of parks, and agreed to, the Earl of Arundel only dissenting; but being sent down to the Commons, it was upon the second reading thrown out, yet not so unanimously but that the House was divided about it.

Jour. Proc.

On the 4th of February a bill was put in against eating flesh in Lent, and on fasting days; it was committed to the Archbishop of Canterbury, the Bishops of Ely, Worcester, and Chichester; and sent to the Commons on the 16th, who sent it up on the 7th of March, with a proviso to which the Lords agreed. In the preamble it is said, "That though it is clear by the word of God, that there is no day, nor kind of meat, purer than another, but that all are in themselves alike; yet many out of sensuality had contemned such abstinence, as had been formerly used; and since due abstinence was a mean to virtue, and to subdue men's bodies to their soul and spirit, and was also necessary to encourage the trade of fishing, and for saving of flesh; therefore, all former laws about fasting and abstinence were to be after the 1st of May repealed: and it was enacted, that from the 1st of May none should eat flesh on Fridays, Saturdays, Ember-days, in Lent, or any other days that should be declared fish-days, under several penalties. A proviso was added, for excepting such as should obtain the King's licence, or were sick, or weak, and that none should be indicted but within three months after the offence."

An act about fasts.

Christ had told his disciples, that when he should be taken from them, then they should fast. Accordingly,

the primitive Christians used to fast oft, more particularly before the anniversary of the passion of Christ, which ended in a high festivity at Easter. Yet this was differently observed, as to the number of days. Some abstained forty days, in imitation of Christ's fast; others only that week; and others had only an entire fast from the time of Christ's death till his resurrection. On these fasts they eat nothing till the evening, and then they eat most commonly herbs and roots. Afterwards the Fridays were kept as fasts, because on that day Christ suffered. Saturdays were also added in the Roman church, but not without contradiction. Ember-weeks came in afterwards, being some days before those Sundays in which orders were given. And a general rule being laid down, that every Christian festival should be preceded by a fast,* thereupon the vigils of holy-days came, though not so soon, into the number. But this, with the other good institutions of the primitive times, became degenerate; even in St. Austin's time, religion came to be placed in these observances, and anxious rules were made about them. Afterwards in the church of Rome they were turned into a mockery; for as on fast-days they dined, which the ancients did not, so the use of the most delicious fish, dressed in the most exquisite manner, with the richest wines that could be had, was allowed; which made it ridiculous. So now they resolved to take off the severities of the former laws, and yet to keep up such laws about fasting and abstinence, as might be agreeable to its true end: which is, to subdue the flesh to the spirit, and not to gratify it by a change of one sort of diet into another, which may be both more delicate and more inflaming. So fond a thing is superstition, that it will help men to deceive themselves by the slightest pretences that can be imagined.

It was much lamented then, and there is as much cause for it still, that carnal men have taken advantages from the abuses that were formerly practised, to throw

* The festivals between Easter and the Ascension-day were not so, on the pretended reason that the bridegroom was with them; as also Michaelmas.

PART II.

1549.

off good and profitable institutions: since the frequent use of fasting, with prayer and true devotion joined to it, is perhaps one of the greatest helps that can be devised, to advance one to a spiritual temper of mind, and to promote a holy course of life: and the mockery that is discernible in the way of some men's fasting, is a very slight excuse for any to lay aside the use of that which the Scriptures have so much recommended.

Some bills were rejected.

There were other bills put into both Houses, but did not pass. One was, for declaring it treason to marry the King's sisters, without consent of the King and his council: but it was thought that King Henry's will, disabling them from the succession in that case, would be a stronger restraint; and so it was laid aside. Another bill was put in for ecclesiastical jurisdiction. Great complaints were made of the abounding of vices and immoralities, which the clergy could neither restrain nor punish; and so they had nothing left but to preach against them, which was done by many with great freedom. In some of these sermons, the preachers expressed their apprehensions of signal and speedy judgments from heaven, if the people did not repent; but their sermons had no great effect, for the nation grew very corrupt, and this brought on them severe punishments. The temporal lords were so jealous of putting power in churchmen's hands, especially to correct those vices of which themselves perhaps were most guilty, that the bill was laid aside. The pretence of opposing it was, that the greatest part of the bishops and clergy were still papists in their hearts; so that if power were put into such men's hands, it was reasonable to expect, they would employ it chiefly against those who favoured the Reformation, and would vex them on that score, though with pretences fetched from other things.

A design for digesting the common law into a body.

There was also put into the House of Commons a bill for reforming of processes at common law, which was sent up by the Commons to the Lords; but it fell in that House. I have seen a large discourse written then upon that argument; in which it is set forth, that the law of England was a barbarous kind of study, and did not lead men into a finer sort of learning, which made the com-

mon lawyers to be generally so ignorant of foreign matters, and so unable to negotiate in them; therefore it was proposed, that the common and statute laws should be, in imitation of the Roman law, digested into a body under titles and heads, and put in good Latin. But this was too great a design to be set on, or finished, under an infant King. If it was then necessary, it will be readily acknowledged to be much more so now, the volume of our statutes being so much swelled since that time: besides the vast number of reports, and cases, and the pleadings growing much longer than formerly: yet whether this is a thing to be much expected or desired, I refer it to the learned and wise men of that robe.

The Admiral's attainder.

The only act that remains of this session of parliament, about which I shall inform the reader, is the attainder of the Admiral. The Queen Dowager, that had married him, died in September last, not without suspicion of poison. She was a good and virtuous lady, and in her whole life had done nothing unseemly, but the marrying him so indecently, and so soon after the King's death. There was found among her papers a discourse written by her, concerning herself, entitled, "The Lamentation of a Sinner," which was published by Cecil, who writ a preface to it. In it she, with great sincerity, acknowledges the sinful course of her life for many years, in which she, relying on external performances, such as fasts and pilgrimages, was all that while a stranger to the internal and true power of religion, which she came afterwards to feel by the study of the Scripture, and the calling upon God for his Holy Spirit. She explains clearly the notion she had of justification by faith, so that holiness necessarily followed upon it, but lamented the great scandal given by many gospellers: so were all those called, who were given to the reading of the Scriptures.

The Queen Dowager dying, he courted the Lady Elizabeth.

She being thus dead, the Admiral renewed his addresses to the Lady Elizabeth, but in vain; for as he could not expect that his brother and the council would consent to it, so if he had married her without that, the possibility of succeeding to the crown was cut off by King Henry's will. And this attempt of his occasioned

PART II.

1549.

that act to be put in, which was formerly mentioned, for declaring the marrying the King's sisters, without consent of council, to be treason. Seeing he could not compass that design, he resolved to carry away the King to his house of Holt, in the country; and so to displace his brother, and to take the government into his own hands. For this end, he had laid in magazines of arms, and listed about ten thousand men in several places, and openly complained that his brother intended to enslave the nation, and make himself master of all; and had therefore brought over those German soldiers. He had also entered into treaty with several of the nobility, that envied his brother's greatness, and were not ill pleased to see a breach between them, and that grown to be irreconcileable. To these he promised, that they should be of the council, and that he would dispose of the King in marriage to one of their daughters: the person is not named. The Protector had often told him of these things, and warned him of the danger into which he would throw himself by such ways; but he persisted still in his designs, though he denied and excused them as long as was possible. Now his restless ambition seeming incurable, he was on the 19th of January sent to the Tower. The original warrant, signed by all the privy-council, is in the council-book formerly mentioned; where the Earl of Southampton signs with the rest; who was now, in outward appearance, reconciled to the Protector. On the day following the Admiral's seal of his office was sent for, and put into Secretary Smith's hands. And now many things broke out against him; and particularly a conspiracy of his with Sir W. Sharington, vice-treasurer of the Mint at Bristol, who was to have furnished him with 10,000*l.* and had already coined about 10,000*l.* false money, and had clipped a great deal more, to the value of 40,000*l.* in all; for which he was attainted by a process at common law, and that was confirmed in parliament. Fowler, also, that waited in the privy-chamber, with some few others, were sent to the Tower. Many complaints being usually brought against a sinking man, the Lord Russell, the Earl of Southampton, and Secretary Petre,

Jan. 19. The Admiral sent to the Tower.

were ordered to receive their examinations. And thus the business was let alone till the 28th of February, in which time his brother did again try if it were possible to bring him to a better temper: and as he had, since their first breach, granted him 800*l.* a year in land, to gain his friendship; so means were now used to persuade him to submit himself, and to withdraw from court, and from all employment. But it appeared that nothing could be done to him, that could cure his ambition, or the hatred he carried to his brother. And therefore, on the 22d of February, a full report was made to the council of all the things that were informed against him; consisting not only of the particulars formerly mentioned, but of many foul misdemeanours in the discharge of the admiralty: several pirates being entertained by him, who gave him a share of their robberies, and whom he had protected, notwithstanding the complaints made by other princes; by which the King was in danger of a war from the princes so complaining. The whole charge consists of thirty-three articles, which will be found in the Collection. The particulars, as it is entered in the council-book, were so manifestly proved, not only by witnesses, but by letters under his own hand, that it did not seem possible to deny them. Yet he had been sent to, and examined, by some of the council, but refused to make a direct answer to them, or to sign those answers that he had made. So it was ordered, that the next day all the privy-council, except the Archbishop of Canterbury, and Sir John Baker, Speaker to the House of Commons, who was engaged to attend in the House, should go to the Tower, and examine him. On the 23d the Lord Chancellor, with the other counsellors, went to him, and read the articles of his charge, and earnestly desired him to make plain answers to them, excusing himself where he could, and submitting himself in other things; and that he would shew no obstinacy of mind. He answered them, that he expected an open trial, and his accusers to be brought face to face. All the counsellors endeavoured to persuade him to be more tractable, but to no purpose. At last the Lord Chancellor required him, on his allegi-

Collect. Numb. 31.

PART II.

1549.

ance, to make his answer. He desired they would leave the articles with him, and he would consider of them, otherwise he would make no answer to them. But the counsellors resolved not to leave them with him, on those terms. On the 24th of February, it was resolved in council, that the whole board should, after dinner, acquaint the King with the state of that affair, and desire to know of him whether he would have the law to take place; and since the thing had been before the parliament, whether he would leave it to their determination: so tender they were of their young King, in a case that concerned his Uncle's life. But the King had begun to discern his seditious temper, and was now much alienated from him.

The council desired the King to refer the matter to the parliament.

When the counsellors waited on him, the Lord Chancellor opened the matter to the King, and delivered his opinion for leaving it to the parliament. Then every counsellor by himself spake his mind, all to the same purpose. Last of all the Protector spake: he protested this was a most sorrowful business to him; that he had used all the means in his power to keep it from coming to this extremity; but were it son or brother he must prefer his Majesty's safety to them, for he weighed his allegiance more than his blood: and that therefore he was not against the request that the other lords had made; and said, if he himself were guilty of such offences, he should not think he were worthy of life; and the rather, because he was of all men the most bound to his Majesty, and therefore he could not refuse justice. The

Who consented to it.

King answered them in these words: "We perceive that there are great things objected and laid to my Lord Admiral my uncle, and they tend to treason; and we perceive that you require but justice to be done: we think it reasonable, and we will, that you proceed according to your request." Which words (as it is marked in the council-book) coming so suddenly from his Grace's mouth, of his own motion, as the lords might well perceive, they were marvellously rejoiced, and gave the King most hearty praise and thanks: yet resolved, that some of both Houses should be sent to the Admiral, before the bill should be put in against him, to see what

he could or would say. All this was done to try if he could be brought to a submission. So the Lord Chancellor, the Earls of Shrewsbury, Warwick, and Southampton, and Sir John Baker, Sir Thomas Cheyney, and Sir Anthony Denny, were sent to him. He was long obstinate, but after much persuasion was brought to give an answer to the first three articles, which will be found in the Collection at the end of the articles: and then on a sudden he stopped, and bade them be content, for he would go no further; and no entreaties would work on him, either to answer the rest, or to set his hand to the answers he had made.

The bill passed in both Houses.

On the 25th of February the bill was put in for attainting him, and the peers had been so accustomed to agree to such bills in King Henry's time, that they did easily pass it. All the judges, and the King's council, delivered their opinions, that the articles were treason. Then the evidence was brought: many lords gave it so fully, that all the rest with one voice consented to the bill; only the Protector, for natural pity's sake, as is in the council-book, desired leave to withdraw. On the 27th the bill was sent down to the Commons, with a message, that if they desired to proceed as the Lords had done, those lords that had given their evidence in their own House, should come down and declare it to the Commons. But there was more opposition made in the House of Commons. Many argued against attainders in absence, and thought it an odd way that some peers should rise up in their places in their own House, and relate somewhat to the slander of another, and that he should be thereupon attainted: therefore it was pressed, that it might be done by a trial, and that the Admiral should be brought to the bar, and be heard plead for himself. But on the 4th of March a message was sent from the King, that he thought it was not necessary to send for the Admiral: and that the Lords should come down and renew before them the evidence they had given in their own House. This was done: and so the bill was agreed to by the Commons in a full house, judged about four hundred, and there were not above ten or

PART II.

1549.

twelve that voted in the negative. The royal assent was given on the 5th of March. On the 10th of March, the council resolved to press the King that justice might be done on the Admiral: and since the case was so heavy and lamentable to the Protector (so it is in the council-book), though it was also sorrowful to them all, they resolved to proceed in it so that neither the King, nor he, should be further troubled with it. After dinner they went to the King, the Protector being with them. The King said, he had well observed their proceedings, and thanked them for their great care of his safety, and commanded them to proceed in it without further molesting him or the Protector: and ended, "I pray you, my lords, do so." Upon this they ordered the Bishop of Ely to go to the Admiral, and to instruct him in the things that related to another life; and to prepare him to take patiently his deserved execution. And on the 17th of March, he having made report to them of his attendance on the Admiral, the council signed a warrant for his execution, which will be found in the Collection, to which both the Lord Protector and the Archbishop of Canterbury set their hands. And on the 20th his head was cut off. What his behaviour was on the scaffold I do not find.*

Collect. Numb. 32.

March 20. The Admiral beheaded.

Thus fell Thomas Lord Seymour, lord high admiral of England, a man of high thoughts, of great violence of temper, and ambitious out of measure. The Protector was much censured for giving way to his execution, by those who looked only at that relation between them, which they thought should have made him still preserve him. But others, who knew the whole series of the affair, saw it was scarce possible for him to do more for the gaining his brother than he had done. Yet the other being a popular notion, that it was against nature for one brother to destroy another, was more easily entertained by the multitude, who could not penetrate into the mysteries of state. But the way

Censures passed upon it;

* There is a very remarkable account of his death and behaviour, in Bishop Latimer's fourth sermon, edit. 1. p. 56. (left out of the following editions) where, amongst other things, he says, "He [the Admiral] dyed very dangerously, yrksomelye, horryblye."

of proceeding was much condemned; since to attaint a man without bringing him to make his own defence, or to object what he could say to the witnesses that were brought against him, was so illegal and unjust, that it could not be defended. Only this was to be said for it, that it was a little more regular than parliamentary attainders had been formerly; for here the evidence upon which it was founded was given before both Houses.

And on Cranmer's signing the warrant for his execution.

One particular seemed a little odd, that Cranmer signed the warrant for his execution; which being in a cause of blood, was contrary to the canon law. In the primitive times, churchmen had only the cure of souls lying on them, together with the reconciling of such differences as might otherwise end in suits of law before the civil courts, which were made up of infidels. When the empire became Christian, these judgments, which they gave originally on so charitable an account, were by the imperial laws made to have great authority; but further than these, or the care of widows and orphans, they were forbid, both by the council of Chalcedon, and other lesser councils, to meddle in secular matters. Among the endowments made to some churches, there were lands given, where the slaves, according to the Roman law, came within the patrimony of these churches, and by that law masters had power of life and death over their slaves.

Laws against churchmen's meddling in matters of blood.

In some churches this power had been severely exercised, even to maiming and death, which seemed very indecent in a churchman. Besides, there was an apprehension that some severe churchmen, who were but masters for life, might be more profuse of the lives of such slaves, than those that were to transmit them to their families. Therefore, to prevent the waste that would be made in the church's patrimony, it was agreed on, that churchmen should not proceed capitally against any of their vassals or slaves. And in the confusions that were in Spain, the princes that prevailed had appointed priests to be judges, to give the greater reputation to their courts. This being found

PART II.

1549.

much to the prejudice of the church, it was decreed in the fourth council of Toledo, that priests, who were chosen by Christ to the ministry of salvation, should not judge in capital matters, unless the Prince should swear to them, that he would remit the punishment: and such as did otherwise, were held guilty of bloodshedding, and were to lose their degree in the church. This was soon received over all the western church; and arguments were found out afterwards by the canonists to prove the necessity of continuing it; from David's not being suffered to build the temple, since he was a man of blood; and from the qualification required by St. Paul, in a bishop, that he should be no striker; since he seemed to strike, that did it either in person, or by one whom he deputed to do it. But when afterwards Charles the Great, and all the Christian princes in the west, gave their bishops great lands and dominions; they obliged them to be in all their councils, and to do them such services as they required of them by virtue of their tenures. The popes, designing to set up a spiritual empire, and to bring all church lands within it, required the bishops to separate themselves from a dependance on their princes, as much as it was possible: and these laws formerly made about cases of blood, were judged a colour good enough why they should not meddle in such trials; so they procured these cases to be excepted. But it seems Cranmer thought his conscience was under no tie from those canons, and so judged it not contrary to his functions to sign that order.

Subsidies granted by the clergy and laity.

The parliament was on the 14th of March prorogued to the 4th of November, the clergy having granted the King a subsidy of six shillings in the pound, to be paid in three years. In the preamble of the bill of subsidy they acknowledged the great quietness they enjoyed under him, having no let nor impediment in the service of God. But the laity set out their subsidy with a much fuller preamble, of the great happiness they had by the true religion of Christ; declaring that they were ready to forsake all things rather than Christ;

as also to assist the King in the conquest of Scotland, which they call a part of his dominion: therefore they give twelvepence in the pound of all men's personal estates, to be paid in three years.

A new visitation.

But now to look into matters of religion: there was, immediately after the act of uniformity passed, a new visitation, which, it is probable, went in the same method that was observed in the former. There were two things much complained of; the one was, that the priests read the prayers generally with the same tone of voice that they had used formerly in the Latin service; so that it was said, the people did not understand it much better than they had done the Latin formerly. This I have seen represented in many letters; and it was very seriously laid before Cranmer by Martin Bucer. The course taken in it was, that in all parish churches the service should be read in a plain audible voice; but that the former way should remain in cathedrals, where there were great choirs, who were well acquainted with that tone, and where it agreed better with the music that was used in the anthems. Yet even there, many thought it no proper way in the Litany, where the greatest gravity was more agreeable to such humble addresses, than such a modulation of the voice, which to those unacquainted with it seemed light, and for others that were more accustomed to it, it seemed to be rather use that had reconciled them to it, than the natural decency of the thing, or any fitness in it to advance the devotion of their prayers. But this was a thing judged of less importance: it was said, that those who had been accustomed to read in that voice, could not easily alter it: but as those dropped off and died, others would be put in their places, who would officiate in a plainer voice.

Some of the old abuses continued in the new service.

Other abuses were more important. Some used in the communion service many of the old rites, such as kissing the altar, crossing themselves, lifting the book from one place to another, breathing on the bread, shewing it openly before the distribution, with some other of the old ceremonies. The people did also continue the use of their praying by beads, which was called an

PART II.

1549.

innovation of Peter the Hermit, in the twelfth century. By it, ten Aves went for one Paternoster, and the reciting these so oft in Latin, had come to be almost all the devotion of the vulgar; and, therefore, the people were ordered to leave that unreasonable way of praying, it seeming a most unaccountable thing, that the reciting the angel's salutation to the blessed Virgin, should be such a high piece of Divine worship; and that this should be done ten times, for one prayer to God, looked so like preferring the creature to the Creator, that it was not easy to defend it from an appearance of idolatry. The priests were also ordered to exhort the people to give to the poor. The curates were required to preach and declare the catechism, at least every sixth week: and some priests continuing secretly the use of soul masses, in which, for avoiding the censure of the law, they had one to communicate with them, but had many of these in one day; it was ordered, that there should be no selling of the communion, in trentals, and that there should be but one communion in one church, except on Easter-day and Christmas; in which the people coming to the sacrament in greater numbers, there should be one sacrament in the morning, and another near noon. And there being great abuses in churches, and church-yards, in which, in the times of popery, markets had been held, and bargains made, that was forbid, chiefly in the time of Divine service or sermon.

Collect. Numb. 33.

These instructions, which the reader will find in the Collection, were given in charge to the visitors. Cranmer had also a visitation about the same time, in which the articles he gave out are all drawn according to the King's injunctions. By some questions in them, they seem to have been sent out before the parliament, because the book of service is not mentioned: but the last question save one being of such as contemned married priests, and refused to receive the sacrament at their hands, I conceive that these were compiled after the act concerning their marriage was passed, but before the feast of Whit-Sunday following, for till then the Common-Prayer-Book was not to be received. There were also orders sent by the council to the Bishop of

London, to see that there should be no special masses in St. Paul's church; which, being the mother church, in the chief city of the kingdom, would be an example to all the rest; and that, therefore, there should be only one communion at the great altar, and that at the time when the high mass was wont to be celebrated, unless some desired a sacrament in the morning, and then it was to be celebrated at the high altar. Bonner, who resolved to comply in every thing, sent the council's letter to the Dean and Residentiaries of St. Paul's, to see it obeyed: and, indeed, all England over the book was so universally received, that the visitors did return no complaint from any corner of the whole kingdom. Only the Lady Mary continued to have mass said in her house; of which the council being advertised, writ to her to conform herself to the laws, and not to cast a reproach on the King's government; for the nearer she was to him in blood, she was to give the better example to others; and her disobedience might encourage others to follow her in that contempt of the King's authority. So they desired her to send to them her comptroller, and Dr. Hopton, her chaplain, by whom she should be more fully advertised of the King and council's pleasure. Upon this she sent one to the Emperor to interpose for her, that she might not be forced to any thing against her conscience.

All received the new service except the Lady Mary.

At this time there was a complaint made at the Emperor's court, of the English ambassador Sir Philip Hobby, for using the new Common-Prayer-Book there: to which he answered, he was to be obedient to the laws of his own Prince and country; and as the Emperor's Ambassador had mass at his chapel at London, without disturbance, though it was contrary to the law of England, so he had the same reason to expect the like liberty. But the Emperor espousing the interest of the Lady Mary, both Paget (who was sent over ambassador-extraordinary to him upon his coming into Flanders) and Hobby promised in the King's name, that he should dispense with her for some time, as they afterwards declared upon their honours, when the thing was

The Ambassador at the Emperor's court not suffered to use it.

PART II.

1549.

further questioned: though the Emperor and his ministers pretended, that without any qualification it was promised that she should enjoy the free exercise of her religion. The Emperor was now grown so high with his success in Germany, and that at a time when a war was coming on with France, that it was not thought advisable to give him any offence. There was likewise a proposition sent over by him to the Protector and council, for the Lady Mary to be married to Alphonso, brother to the King of Portugal. The council entertained it: and though the late King had left his daughters but 10,000*l.* a-piece, yet they offered to give with her 100,000 crowns in money, and 20,000 crowns worth of jewels. The Infant of Portugal was about her own age, and offered 20,000 crowns jointure. But this proposition fell; on what hand I do not know. The Lady Mary writ on the 22d of June to the council, that she could not obey their late laws; and that she did not esteem them laws, as made when the King was not of age, and contrary to those made by her father, which they were all bound by oath to maintain. She excused the not sending her comptroller (Mr. Arundel), and her priest: the one did all her business, so that she could not well be without him; the other was them so ill that he could not travel. Upon this the council sent a peremptory command to these, requiring then to come up, and receive their orders. The Lady Mary wrote a second letter to them on the 27th of June, in which she expostulated the matter with the council. She said she was subject to none of them, and would obey none of the laws they made; but protested great obedience and subjection to the King. When her officers came to court, they were commanded to declare to the Lady Mary, that though the King was young in person, yet his authority was now as great as ever: that those who have his authority and act in his name are to be obeyed; and though they as single persons were her humble servants, yet when they met in council, they acted in the King's name, and so were to be considered by all the King's subjects as if they were the King himself: they had indeed sworn to obey the late King's laws, but that

A treaty of marriage for the Lady Mary. Cotton Lib. Galba B. 12.

She writ to the council concerning the new service.

Who required her to obey as other subjects did.

could bind them no longer than they were in force; and being now repealed, they were no more laws; other laws being made in their room: there was no exception in the laws, all the King's subjects were included in them; and for a reformation of religion made when a King was under age, one of the most perfect that was recorded in Scripture was so carried on, when Josiah was much younger than their King was: therefore they gave them in charge to persuade her Grace (for that was her title), to be a good example of obedience, and not to encourage peevish and obstinate persons by her stiffness. But this business was for some time laid aside.

And now the Reformation was to be carried on to the establishing of a form of doctrine, which should contain the chief points of religion. In order to which, there was this year great inquiry made into many particular opinions, and chiefly concerning the presence of Christ in the sacrament. There was no opinion for which the priests contended more ignorantly and eagerly, and that the people generally believed more blindly and firmly, as if a strong belief were nothing else but winking very hard. The priests, because they accounted it the chief support now left of their falling dominion, which being kept up, might in time retrieve all the rest. For while it was believed, that their character qualified them for so strange and mighty a performance, they must needs be held in great reverence. The people, because they thought they received the very flesh of Christ, and so (notwithstanding our Saviour's express declaration to the contrary, that "the flesh profiteth nothing") looked on those who went about to persuade them otherwise, as men that intended to rob them of the greatest privilege they had. And therefore it was thought necessary to open this fully, before there should be any change made in the doctrine of the church.

The manner of Christ's presence in the sacrament examined.

The Lutherans seemed to agree with that which had been the doctrine of the Greek church, that in the sacrament there was both the substance of bread and wine, and Christ's body likewise. Only many of them defended it by an opinion that was thought akin to the Eutychian heresy, that his human nature, by virtue of the

PART II.

1549.

union of the Godhead, was every where: though even in this way it did not appear that there was any special presence in the sacrament, more than in other things. Those of Switzerland had, on the other hand, taught that the sacrament was only an institution to commemorate the sufferings of Christ. This, because it was intelligible, was thought by many too low and mean a thing, and not equal to the high expressions that are in the Scripture, of its being the communion of the body and blood of Christ. The princes of Germany saw what mischief was like to follow on the diversity of opinions in explaining the sacrament: and as Luther, being impatient in his temper, and too much given to dictate, took it very ill to see his doctrine so rejected; so, by the indecent way of writing in matters of controversy, to which the Germans are too much inclined, this difference turned to a direct breach among them. The Landgrave of Hesse had laboured much to have these diversities of opinion laid asleep, since nothing gave their common enemies such advantage as their quarrelling among themselves. Martin Bucer was of a moderate temper, and had found a middle opinion in this matter, though not so easy to be understood. He thought there was more than a remembrance, to wit, a communication, of the body and blood of Christ in the sacrament; that in general a real presence ought to be asserted, and that the way of explaining it ought not to be anxiously inquired into: and with him Calvin agreed, that it was truly the body and blood of Christ, not figuratively, but really present. The advantage of these general expressions was, that thereby they hoped to have silenced the debates between the German and Helvetian divines, whose doctrine came likewise to be received by many of the cities of the empire, and by the Elector Palatine. And among Martin Bucer's papers, I met with an original paper of Luther's (which will be found in the Collection), in which he was willing to have that difference thus settled: "Those of the Augsburg Confession should declare, that in the sacrament there was truly bread and wine; and those of the Helvetian Confession should declare, that Christ's body was truly pre-

Collect. Numb. 34.

sent: and so, without any further curiosities in the way of explaining it, in which divines might use their liberty, the difference should end." But how this came to take no effect, I do not understand. It was also thought that this way of expressing the doctrine would give least offence; for the people were scarce able to bear the opinion of the sacrament's being only a figure: but wherein this real presence consisted, was not so easy to be made out. Some explained it more intelligibly in a sense of law, that in the sacrament there was a real application of the merit of Christ's death, to those who received it worthily; so that Christ as crucified was really present: and these had this to say for themselves, that the words of the institution do not call the elements simply Christ's body and blood, but his body broken, and his blood shed, and that therefore Christ was really present as he was crucified, so that the importance of *really* was *effectually*. Others thought all ways of explaining the manner of the presence were needless curiosities, and apt to beget differences: that therefore the doctrine was to be established in general words; and, to save the labour both of explaining and understanding it, it was to be esteemed a mystery. This seems to have been Bucer's opinion, but Peter Martyr inclined more to the Helvetians.

Public disputations about it.

There were public disputations held this year, both at Oxford and Cambridge, upon this matter. At Oxford the popish party did so encourage themselves by the indulgence of the government, and the gentleness of Cranmer's temper, that they became upon this head insolent out of measure. Peter Martyr had read in the chair concerning the presence of Christ in the sacrament, which he explained according to the doctrine of the Helvetian churches; Dr. Smith did upon this resolve to contradict him openly in the schools, and challenge him to dispute on these points; and had brought many thither, who should by their clamours and applauses run him down: yet this was not so secretly laid, but a friend of P. Martyr's brought him word of it before he had come from his house, and persuaded him not to go to the schools that day, and so disappoint

Antiq. Oxon.

PART II.

1549.

Smith. But he looked on that as so mean a thing, that he would by no means comply with it. So he went to the divinity schools: on his way one brought him a challenge from Smith to dispute with him, concerning the Eucharist. He went on and took his place in the chair, where he behaved himself with an equal measure of courage and discretion: he gravely checked Smith's presumption, and said, he did not decline a dispute, but was resolved to have his reading that day, nor would he engage in a public dispute without leave from the King's council: upon this a tumult was like to rise; so the Vice-Chancellor sent for them before him: P. Martyr said, he was ready to defend every thing that he had read in the chair in a dispute; but he would manage it only in Scripture-terms, and not in the terms of the schools.

This was the beating the popish doctors out of that which was their chief strength; for they had little other learning but a sleight of tossing some arguments from hand to hand, with a gibberish kind of language, that sounded like somewhat that was sublime; but had really nothing under it. By constant practice they were very nimble at this sort of legerdemain, of which both Erasmus and Sir Thomas More, with the other learned men of that age, had made such sport, that it was become sufficiently ridiculous: and the protestants laid hold on that advantage which such great authorities gave them to disparage it. They set up another way of disputing from the original text of the Scripture in Greek and Hebrew, which seemed a more proper thing in matters of divinity, than the metaphysical language of the schoolmen.

This whole matter being referred to the privy-council, they appointed some delegates to hear and preside in the disputation: but Dr. Smith being brought into some trouble, either for this tumult, or upon some other account, was forced to put in sureties for his good behaviour: he, desiring that he might be discharged of any further prosecution, made the most humble submission to Cranmer that was possible; and being thereupon set at liberty, he fled out of the kingdom: it is said he went first to Scotland, and from thence to Flan-

ders. But not long after this Peter Martyr had a disputation before the commissioners sent by the King, who were the Bishop of Lincoln, Dr. Cox, then chancellor of the University, and some others; in which Tresham, Chadsey, and Morgan, disputed against those three propositions:—1. In the sacrament of thanksgiving there is no transubstantiation of bread and wine in the body and blood of Christ. 2. The body or blood of Christ is not carnally or corporally in the bread and wine; nor, as others use to say, under the bread and wine. 3. The body and blood of Christ are united to the bread and wine sacramentally.—Ridley was sent also to Cambridge, with some others of the King's commissioners, where, on the 20th, 24th, and 27th of June, there were public disputations on these two positions:

"Transubstantiation cannot be proved by the plain and manifest words of Scripture; nor can it be necessarily collected from it, nor yet confirmed by the consent of the ancient fathers.

"In the Lord's supper there is none other oblation and sacrifice, than of a remembrance of Christ's death, and of thanksgiving."

Dr. Madew defended these; and Glyn, Langdale, Sedgwick, and Young, disputed against them the first day; and the second day Glyn defended the contrary propositions, and Peru, Grindal, Gest, and Pilkington, disputed against them. On the third day the dispute went on, and was summed up in a learned determination by Ridley against the corporal presence. There had been also a long disputation in the parliament on the same subject; but of this we have nothing remaining, but what King Edward writ in his Journal. Ridley had, by reading Bertram's book of the body and blood of Christ, been first set on to examine well the old opinion concerning the presence of Christ's very flesh and blood in the sacrament: and, wondering to find that in the ninth century that opinion was so much controverted, and so learnedly writ against by one of the most esteemed men of that age, began to conclude, that it was none of the ancient doctrines of the church, but lately brought in, and not fully received till after Bertram's

PART II.

1549.

age. He communicated the matter with Cranmer, and they set themselves to examine it with more than ordinary care. Cranmer afterwards gathered all the arguments about it into the book which he writ on that subject, to which Gardiner set out an answer, under the disguised name of Marcus Constantius; and Cranmer replied to it. I shall offer the reader, in short, the substance of what was in these books, and of the arguments used in the disputations, and in many other books which were at that time written on this subject.

The manner of the presence explained according to the Scripture.

Christ in the institution took bread, and gave it. So that his words, "This is my body," could only be meant of the bread: now the bread could not be his body literally. He himself also calls the cup, "The fruit of the vine." St. Paul calls it, "The bread that we break," and "the cup that we bless;" and speaking of it after it was blessed, calls it, "that bread and that cup." For the reason of that expression, "This is my body;" it was considered, that the disciples, to whom Christ spoke thus, were Jews; and that they, being accustomed to the Mosaical rites, must needs have understood his words in the same sense they did Moses's words, concerning the Paschal Lamb, which is called the Lord's Passover. It was not that literally, for the Lord's Passover was the angel's passing by the Israelites when he smote the first-born of the Egyptians; so the Lamb was only the Lord's Passover as it was the memorial of it: and thus Christ, substituting the Eucharist to the Paschal Lamb, used such an expression, calling it his body, in the same manner of speaking as the Lamb was called the Lord's Passover. This was plain enough, for his disciples could not well understand him in any other sense than that to which they had been formerly accustomed. In the Scripture many such figurative expressions occur frequently. In baptism, the other sacrament instituted by Christ, he is said to baptize with the Holy Ghost and with fire: and such as are baptized are said to put on Christ: which were figurative expressions. As also, in the sacrament of the Lord's supper, the cup is called "the new testament in Christ's blood," which is an expression full of figure. Farther, it was observed, that that sacrament was insti-

tuted for a remembrance of Christ, and of his death: which implied that he was to be absent at the time when he was to be remembered. Nor was it simply said, that the elements were his body and blood; but that they were his body broken, and his blood shed; that is, they were these, as suffering on the cross: which as they could not be understood literally, for Christ did institute this sacrament before he had suffered on the cross; so now Christ must be present in the sacrament, not as glorified in heaven, but as suffering on his cross. From those places where it is said, that Christ is in heaven, and that he is to continue there; they argued, that he was not to be any more upon earth. And those words in the 6th of St. John, of eating Christ's flesh, and drinking his blood, they said were to be understood not of the sacrament; since many receive the sacrament unworthily, and of them it cannot be said that they have "eternal life in them;" but Christ there said of them that received him in the sense that was meant in that chapter, that "all that did so eat his flesh had eternal life in them;" therefore these words can only be understood figuratively of receiving him by faith, as himself there explains it: and so, in the end of that discourse, finding some were startled at that way of expressing himself, he gave a key to the whole, when he said "his words were spirit and life," and that "the flesh profited nothing, it was the spirit that quickened." It was ordinary for him to teach in parables; and the receiving of any doctrine, being oft expressed by the prophets by the figure of "eating and drinking," he, upon the occasion of the people's coming to him after he had fed them with a few loaves, did discourse of their believing, in these dark expressions; which did not seem to relate to the sacrament, since it was not then instituted. They also argued, from Christ's appealing to the senses of his hearers, in his miracles, and especially in his discourses upon his resurrection, that the testimony of sense was to be received, where the object was duly applied, and the sense not vitiated. They also alleged natural reasons against a body's being in more places than one, or being in a place in the manner of a spirit, so that the substance of

PART II.

1549.

a complete body could be in a crumb of bread or drop of wine; and argued, that since the elements after consecration would nourish, might putrefy, or could be poisoned, these things clearly evinced, that the substance of bread and wine remained in the sacrament.

And from the fathers.

From this they went to examine the ancient fathers. Some of them called it bread and wine; others said, it nourished the body, as Justin Martyr; others, that it was digested in the stomach, and went into the draught, as Origen. Some called it a figure of Christ's body; so Tertullian, and St. Austin; others called the elements types and signs; so almost all the ancient liturgies, and the Greek fathers generally. In the creeds of the church it was professed, that Christ still sat on the right hand of God; the fathers argued from thence, that he was in heaven and not on earth. And the Marcionites, and other heretics, denying that Christ had a true body, or did really suffer; the fathers appealed in that to the testimony of sense, as infallible. And St. Austin giving rules concerning figurative speeches in Scripture; one is this, that they must be taken figuratively, where in the literal sense the thing were a crime; which he applies to these words of "eating Christ's flesh, and drinking his blood." But that on which they put the stress of the whole cause, as to the doctrine of the fathers, was the reasoning that they used against the Eutychians, who said that Christ's body and human nature was swallowed up by his divinity. The Eutychians, arguing from the Eucharist's being called Christ's body and blood, in which they said Christ's presence did convert the substance of the bread and wine into his own flesh and blood; so, in like manner, said they, his Godhead had converted the manhood into itself: against this, Gelasius, bishop of Rome, and Theodoret, one of the learnedest fathers of his age, argue in plain words, that the substance of the bread and wine remained, as it was formerly, in its own nature and form; and from their opinion of the presence of Christ's body in it, without converting the elements, they turned the argument to shew how the Divine and human nature can be together in Christ, without the one's being changed by the other.

Peter Martyr had brought over with him the copy of a letter of St. Chrysostom's, which he found in a MS. at Florence, written to the same purpose, and on the same argument: which was the more remarkable, because that Chrysostom had said higher things in his sermons and commentaries, concerning Christ's being present in the sacrament, than any of all the fathers; but it appeared by this letter, that those high expressions were no other than rhetorical figures of speech to beget a great reverence to this institution: and from hence it was reasonable to judge, that such were the like expressions in other fathers, and that they were nevertheless of Chrysostom's mind touching the presence of Christ in this sacrament. That epistle of his does lie still unpublished, though a very learned man now in France has procured a copy of it: but those of that church know the consequence that the printing of it would have, and so it seems are resolved to suppress it if they can. From all these things it was plain, that though the fathers believed there was an extraordinary virtue in the sacrament, and an unaccountable presence of Christ in it, yet they thought not of transubstantiation, nor any thing like it. But when darkness and ignorance crept into the church, the people were apt to believe any thing that was incredible: and were willing enough to support such opinions as turned religion into external pageantry. The priests also, knowing little of the Scriptures, and being only or chiefly conversant in those writings of the ancients that had highly extolled the sacrament, came generally to take up the opinion of the corporal presence; and, being soon apprehensive of the great esteem it would bring to them, cherished it much. In the ninth century, Bertram, Rabanus, Maurus, Amalarius, Alcuinus, and Joannes Scotus, all writ against it: nor were any of them censured or condemned for these opinions. It was plainly and strongly contradicted by some homilies that were in the Saxon tongue, in which not a few of Bertram's words occur: particularly in that which was to be read in the churches on Easter-day. But in the eleventh or twelth century it came to be universally received; as indeed any thing would have been

PART II.

1549.

that much advanced the dignity of priesthood. And it was farther advanced by Pope Innocent the Third, and so established in the fourth council of Lateran; that same council, in which the rooting out of heretics, and the Pope's power of deposing heretical princes, and giving their dominions to others, were also decreed.

But there was another curious remark made of the progress of this opinion. When the doctrine of the corporal presence was first received in the western church, they believed that the whole loaf was turned into one entire body of Jesus Christ: so that in the distribution one had an eye, a nose, or an ear; another a tooth, a finger, or a toe; a third a collop, or a piece of tripe; and this was supported by pretended miracles suited to that opinion, for sometimes the host was said to bleed, parts of it were also said to be turned to pieces of flesh. This continued to be the doctrine of the church of Rome for near three hundred years. It appears clearly in the renunciation which they made Berengarius swear. But when the schoolmen began to form the tenets of that church by more artificial and subtle rules; as they thought it an ungentle way of treating Christ to be thus mangling his body, and eating it up in gobbets, so the maxims they set up about the extension of matter, and of the manner of spirits filling a space, made them think of a more decent way of explaining this prodigious mystery. They taught, that Christ was so in the host and chalice, that there was one entire body in every crumb and drop: so that the body was no more broken; but, upon every breaking of the host, a new whole body flew off from the other parts, which yet remained an entire body, notwithstanding that diminution. And then the former miracles, being contrary to this conceit, were laid aside, and new ones invented, fitted for this explanation, by which Christ's body was believed present after the manner of a spirit. It was given out, that he sometimes appeared as a child all in rays upon the host, sometimes with angels about him, or sometimes in his mother's arms. And that the senses might give as little contradiction as was possible, instead of a loaf they blessed then only

wafers, which are such a shadow of bread as might more easily agree with their doctrine of the accidents of bread being only present: and, lest a larger measure of wine might have encouraged the people to have thought it was wine still, by the sensible effects of it, that came also to be denied them.

This was the substance of the arguments that were in those writings. But an opinion that had been so generally received was not of a sudden to be altered: therefore they went on slowly in discussing it, and thereby did the better dispose the people to receive what they intended afterwards to establish concerning it. And this was the state of religion for this year.

Proceedings against anabaptists.

At this time there were many anabaptists in several parts of England. They were generally Germans, whom the revolutions there had forced to change their seats. Upon Luther's first preaching in Germany, there arose many, who, building on some of his principles, carried things much further than he did. The chief foundation he laid down was, that the Scripture was to be the only rule of Christians. Upon this many argued, that the mysteries of the Trinity, and Christ's incarnation and sufferings, of the fall of man, and the aids of grace, were indeed philosophical subtilties, and only pretended to be deduced from Scripture, as almost all opinions of religion were; and therefore they rejected them. Among these, the baptism of infants was one. They held that to be no baptism, and so were re-baptized: but from this, which was most taken notice of, as being a visible thing, they carried all the general name of anabaptists. Of these there were two sorts most remarkable. The one was, of those who only thought that baptism ought not to be given but to those who were of an age capable of instruction, and who did earnestly desire it. This opinion they grounded on the silence of the New Testament about the baptism of children: they observed, that our Saviour, commanding the apostles to baptize, did join teaching with it; and they said, the great decay of Christianity flowed from this way of making children Christians before they understood what they did. These were called the gentle, or moderate ana-

Of whom there were two sorts.

PART II.

1549.

baptists. But others, who carried that name, denied almost all the principles of the Christian doctrine, and were men of fierce and barbarous tempers. They had broke out into a general revolt over Germany, and raised the war called the rustic war: and possessing themselves of Munster, made one of their teachers, John of Leyden, their king, under the title of the King of the New Jerusalem. Some of them set up a fantastical, unintelligible way of talking of religion, which they turned all into allegories: these being joined in the common name of anabaptists with the other, brought them also under an ill character.

On the 12th of April there was a complaint brought to the council, that, with the strangers that were come into England, some of that persuasion had come over, and were disseminating their errors, and making proselytes: so a commission was ordered for the Archbishop of Canterbury, the Bishops of Ely, Worcester, Westminster, Chichester, Lincoln, and Rochester, Sir William Petre, Sir Thomas Smith, Dr. Cox, Dr. May, and some others, three of them being a *quorum*, to examine and search after all anabaptists, heretics, or contemners of the Common Prayer. They were to endeavour to reclaim them, to enjoin them penance, and give them absolution: or, if they were obstinate, to excommunicate and imprison them, and to deliver them over to the secular power to be farther proceeded against. Some tradesmen in London were brought before these commissioners in May, and were persuaded to abjure their former opinions; which were, "That a man regenerate could not sin; that though the outward man sinned, the inward man sinned not; that there was no Trinity of persons; that Christ was only a holy prophet, and not at all God; that all we had by Christ was, that he taught us the way to heaven; that he took no flesh of the Virgin; and that the baptism of infants was not profitable." One of those who thus abjured was commanded to carry a faggot next Sunday at St. Paul's, where there should be a sermon setting forth his heresy. But there was another of these extreme obstinate; Joan Bocher, commonly called Joan of Kent. "She denied that Christ

Rot. Pat. Par. 6. 3. Reg.

was truly incarnate of the Virgin, whose flesh being sinful, he could take none of it: but the Word, by the consent of the inward man in the Virgin, took flesh of her:" these were her words. They took much pains about her, and had many conferences with her; but she was so extravagantly conceited of her own notions, that she rejected all they said with scorn: whereupon she was adjudged an obstinate heretic, and so left to the secular power: the sentence against her will be found in the Collection. This being returned to the council, the good King was moved to sign a warrant for burning her, but could not be prevailed on to do it: he thought it a piece of cruelty, too like that which they had condemned in papists, to burn any for their consciences. And in a long discourse he had with Sir J. Cheek, he seemed much confirmed in that opinion. Cranmer was employed to persuade him to sign the warrant. He argued from the law of Moses, by which blasphemers were to be stoned: he told the King, he made a great difference between errors in other points of divinity, and those which were directly against the Apostles' Creed: that these were impieties against God, which a Prince, as being God's deputy, ought to punish; as the King's deputies were obliged to punish offences against the King's person. These reasons did rather silence than satisfy the young King, who still thought it a hard thing (as in truth it was) to proceed so severely in such cases: so he set his hand to the warrant, with tears in his eyes, saying to Cranmer, That if he did wrong, since it was in submission to his authority, he should answer for it to God. This struck the Archbishop with much horror, so that he was very unwilling to have the sentence executed. And both he and Ridley took the woman then in custody to their houses, to see if they could persuade her: but she continued, by jeers and other insolences, to carry herself so contemptuously, that at last the sentence was executed on her, the 2d of May the next year, Bishop Scory preaching at her burning: she carried herself then, as she had done in the former parts of her process, very indecently, and in the end was burnt.

Collect. Numb. 35.

An anabaptist burnt.

This action was much censured, as being contrary to

PART II.

1549.

the clemency of the gospel; and was made oft use of by the papists, who said, it was plain, that the reformers were only against burning, when they were in fear of it themselves. The woman's carriage made her be looked on as a frantic person, fitter for Bedlam than a stake. People had generally believed that all the statutes for burning heretics had been repealed: but now, when the thing was better considered, it was found that the burning of heretics was done by the common law, so that the statutes made about it were only for making the conviction more easy, and the repealing the statutes did not take away that which was grounded on a writ at common law. To end all this matter at once: two years after this, one George Van Pare, a Dutchman, being accused for saying that God the Father was only God, and that Christ was not very God, he was dealt with long to abjure, but would not: so on the 6th of April, 1551, he was condemned in the same manner that Joan of Kent was, and on the 25th of April was burnt in Smithfield. He suffered with great constancy of mind, and kissed the stake and faggots that were to burn him. Of this Pare I find a popish writer saying, That he was a man of most wonderful strict life; that he used not to eat above once in two days; and before he did eat would lie some time in his devotion prostrate on the ground. All this they made use of to lessen the credit of those who had suffered formerly; for it was said, they saw now that men of harmless lives might be put to death for heresy by the confession of the reformers themselves: and in all the books published in Queen Mary's days, justifying her severity against the protestants, these instances were always made use of: and no part of Cranmer's life exposed him more than this did. It was said, he had consented both to Lambert's and Anne Askew's death, in the former reign, who both suffered for opinions which he himself held now: and he had now procured the death of these two persons; and when he was brought to suffer himself afterwards, it was called a just retaliation on him. One thing was certain, that what he did in this matter flowed from no cruelty of temper in him, no man being further from

Another burnt.

This was much censured.

that black disposition of mind; but it was truly the effect of those principles by which he governed himself.

1549. Disputes concerning the baptism of infants.

For the other sort of anabaptists, who only denied infant baptism, I find no severities used to them: but several books were written against them, to which they wrote some answers. It was said, that Christ allowed little children to be brought to him, and said, "of such was the kingdom of heaven," and blessed them: now if they were capable of the "kingdom of heaven," they must be regenerated; for Christ said none but such as were "born of water and of the Spirit" could enter into it. St. Paul had also called the children of believing parents *holy*; which seemed to relate to such a consecration of them as was made in baptism. And baptism being the seal of Christians, in the room of circumcision among the Jews, it was thought the one was as applicable to children as the other. And one thing was observed, that the whole world in that age having been baptized in their infancy, if that baptism was nothing, then there were none truly baptized in being; but all were in the state of mere nature: now it did not seem reasonable that men who were not baptized themselves should go and baptize others: and therefore the first heads of that sect, not being rightly baptized themselves, seemed not to act with any authority when they went to baptize others. The practice of the church, so early begun, and continued without dispute for so many ages, was, at least, a certain confirmation of a thing which had (to speak moderately) so good foundations in Scripture for the lawfulness, though not any peremptory, but only probable proof for the practice of it.

The doctrine of predestination much abused.

These are all the errors in opinion that I find were taken notice of at this time. There was another sort of people, of whom all the good men in that age made great complaints. Some there were called gospellers, or readers of the gospel, who were a scandal to the doctrine they professed. In many sermons I have oft met with severe expostulations with these, and heavy denunciations of judgments against them. But I do not find any thing objected to them, as to their belief, save only that the doctrine of predestination having been generally

PART II.

1549.

taught by the reformers, many of this sect began to make strange inferences from it; reckoning, that since every thing was decreed, and the decrees of God could not be frustrated, therefore men were to leave themselves to be carried by these decrees. This drew some into great impiety of life, and others into desperation. The Germans soon saw the ill effects of this doctrine. Luther changed his mind about it, and Melancthon openly writ against it: and since that time the whole stream of the Lutheran churches has run the other way. But both Calvin and Bucer were still for maintaining the doctrine of these decrees; only they warned the people not to think much of them, since they were secrets which men could not penetrate into; but they did not so clearly shew how these consequences did not flow from such opinions. Hooper, and many other good writers, did often dehort people from entering into these curiosities; and a caveat to that same purpose was put afterwards into the article of the church about predestination.

Tumults in England.

One ill effect of the dissoluteness of people's manners broke out violently this summer, occasioned by the inclosing of lands. While the monasteries stood, there were great numbers of people maintained about these houses; their lands were easily let out, and many were relieved by them. But now, the numbers of the people increased much, marriage being universally allowed; they also had more time than formerly, by the abrogation of many holidays, and the putting down of processions and pilgrimages; so that, as the numbers increased, they had more time than they knew how to bestow. Those who bought in the church-lands, as they every where raised their rents, of which old Latimer made great complaints in one of his court sermons, so they resolved to inclose their grounds, and turn them to pasture: for trade was then rising fast, and corn brought not in so much money as wool did. Their flocks also being kept by few persons in grounds so inclosed, the landlords themselves enjoyed the profit which formerly the tenants made out of their estates: and so they intended to force them to serve about them at any such rates as they would allow. By this means the commons

of England saw they were like to be reduced to great misery. This was much complained of, and several little books were written about it. Some proposed a sort of Agrarian law, that none might have farms above a set value, or flocks above a set number of two thousand sheep; which proposal I find the young King was much taken with, as will appear in one of the discourses he wrote with his own hand. It was also represented, that there was no care taken of the educating of youth, except of those who were bred for learning; and many things were proposed to correct this: but in the mean time the commons saw the gentry were like to reduce them to a very low condition.

The Protecter seemed much concerned for the commons, and oft spoke against the oppression of landlords. He was naturally just and compassionate, and so did heartily espouse the cause of the poor people, which made the nobility and gentry hate him much. The former year, the commons about Hampton-Court petitioned the Protector and council, complaining, that whereas the late King in his sickness had inclosed a park there, to divert himself with private easy game, the deer of that park did overlay the country, and it was a great burden to them; and therefore they desired that it might be disparked. The council, considering that it was so near Windsor, and was not useful to the King, but a charge rather, ordered it to be disparked, and the deer to be carried to Windsor; but with this proviso, that if the King when he came of age desired to have a park there, what they did should be no prejudice to him. There was also a commission issued out to inquire about inclosures and farms, and whether those who had purchased the abbey-lands kept hospitality, to which they were bound by the grants they had of them; and whether they encouraged husbandry. But I find no effect of this. And indeed there seemed to have been a general design among the nobility and gentry to bring the inferior sort to that low and servile state to which the peasants in many other kingdoms are reduced. In the parliament an act was carried in the House of Lords for imparking grounds, but was cast out by the Com-

PART II.

mons: yet gentlemen went on every where taking their lands into their own hands, and inclosing them.

1549. Many are easily quieted.

In May the commons did rise first in Wiltshire; where Sir William Herbert gathered some resolute men about him, and dispersed them, and slew some of them. Soon after that, they rose in Sussex, Hampshire, Kent, Gloucestershire, Suffolk, Warwickshire, Essex, Hertfordshire, Leicestershire, Worcestershire, and Rutlandshire; but by fair persuasions the fury of the people was a little stopped, till the matter should be represented to the council. The Protector said, he did not wonder the commons were in such distempers, they being so oppressed, that it was easier to die once than to perish for want: and therefore he set out a proclamation, contrary to the mind of the whole council, against all new inclosures; with another, indemnifying the people for what was past, so they carried themselves obediently for the future. Commissions were also sent every where, with an unlimited power to the commissioners, to hear and determine all causes about inclosures, highways, and cottages. The vast power these commissioners assumed was much complained of; the landlords said it was an invasion of their property, to subject them thus to the pleasure of those who were sent to examine the matters without proceeding in the ordinary courts according to law. The commons being encouraged by the favour they heard the Protector bore them, and not able to govern their heat, or stay for a more peaceable issue, did rise again, but were anew quieted. Yet the Protector being opposed much by the council, he was not able to redress this grievance so fully as the people hoped. So in Oxfordshire and Devonshire they rose again, and also in Norfolk and Yorkshire. Those in Oxfordshire were dissipated by a force of fifteen hundred men, led against them by the Lord Gray. Some of them were taken and hanged by martial law, as being in a state of war; the greatest part ran home to their dwellings.

But those of Devonshire grew formidable.

In Devonshire the insurrection grew to be better formed; for that county was not only far from the court, but it was generally inclined to the former su-

perstition, and many of the old priests run in among them. They came together on the 10th of June, being Whit-Monday; and in a short time they grew to be ten thousand strong. At court it was hoped this might be as easily dispersed as the other risings were; but the Protector was against running into extremities, and so did not move so speedily as the thing required. He, after some days, at last sent the Lord Russel with a small force to stop their proceedings. And that Lord, remembering well how the Duke of Norfolk had, with a very small army, broken a formidable rebellion in the former reign, hoped that time would likewise weaken and disunite these; and, therefore, he kept at some distance, and offered to receive their complaints, and to send them to the council. But these delays gave advantage and strength to the rebels, who were now led on by some gentlemen; Arundel, of Cornwall, being in chief command among them; and in answer to the Lord Russel, they agreed on fifteen articles (before this they drew up their demands in seven articles), the substance of which was as follows:

Their demands.

"1. That all the general councils, and the decrees of their forefathers, should be observed.

"2. That the act of the six Articles should be again in force.

"3. That the mass should be in Latin, and that the priests alone should receive.

"4. That the sacrament should be hanged up, and worshipped; and those who refused to do it should suffer as heretics.

"5. That the sacrament should only be given to the people at Easter, in one kind.

"6. That baptism should be done at all times.

"7. That holy bread, holy water, and palms be again used; and that images be set up, with all the other ancient ceremonies.

"8. That the new service should be laid aside, since it was like a Christmas game; and the old service again should be used, with the procession in Latin.

PART II.

1549.

" 9. That all preachers in their sermons, and priests in the mass, should pray for the souls in purgatory.

" 10. That the Bible should be called in, since otherwise the clergy could not easily confound the heretics.

" 11. That Dr. Moreman, and Crispin, should be sent to them, and put in their livings.

" 12. That Cardinal Pole should be restored, and made of the King's council.

" 13. That every gentleman might have only one servant for every hundred marks of yearly rent that belonged to him.

" 14. That the half of the abbey and church lands should be taken back, and restored to two of the chief abbeys in every county; and all the church-boxes for seven years should be given to such houses, that so devout persons might live in them, who should pray for the King and the commonwealth.

" 15. And that for their particular grievances, they should be redressed, as Humphrey Arundel and the Mayor of Bodmyn should inform the King, for whom they desired a safe conduct."

Cranmer drew an answer to them. Ex MS. Col. C. C. Cantab.

These articles being sent to the council, the Archbishop of Canterbury was ordered to draw an answer to them, which I have seen, corrected with his own hand. The substance of it was, that their demands were insolent, such as were dictated to them by some seditious priests: they did not know what general councils had decreed, nor was there any thing in the church of England contrary to them, though many things had been formerly received which were so; and for the decrees, they were framed by the popes to enslave the world, of which he gave several instances.

For the six Articles, he says, they had not been carried in parliament, if the late King had not gone thither in person, and procured that act; and yet, of his own accord, he slackened the execution of it.

To the third, it was strange that they did not desire to know in what terms they worshipped God; and for the mass, the ancient canons required the people to communicate in it, and the prayers in the office of the mass did still imply that they were to do it.

For the hanging up and adoring the host, it was but lately set up by Popes Innocent and Honorius, and in some places it had never been received.

For the fifth, the ancient church received that sacrament frequently, and in both kinds.

To the sixth, baptism in cases of necessity was to be administered at any time; but out of these cases, it was fit to do it solemnly; and in the ancient church it was chiefly done on the eves of Easter and Whit-Sunday, of which usage some footsteps remained still in the old offices.

To the seventh, these were late superstitious devices: images were contrary to the Scriptures, first set up for remembrance, but soon after made objects of worship.

To the eighth, the old service had many ludicrous things in it; the new was simple and grave; if it appeared ridiculous to them, it was as the gospel was long ago, foolishness to the Greeks.

To the ninth, the Scriptures say nothing of it: it was a superstitious invention, derogatory to Christ's death.

To the tenth, the Scriptures are the word of God, and the readiest way to confound that which is heresy indeed.

To the eleventh, these were ignorant, superstitious, and deceitful persons.

To the twelfth, Pole had been attainted in parliament for his spiteful writings and doings against the late King.

To the thirteenth, it was foolish and unreasonable; one servant could not do a man's business, and by this many servants would want employment.

To the fourteenth, this was to rob the King, and those who had these lands of him; and would be a means to make so foul a rebellion be remembered in their prayers.

To the fifteenth, these were notorious traitors, to whom the King's council was not to submit themselves.

They make new demands.

After this, they grew more moderate, and sent eight articles:—1. Concerning baptism. 2. About confirm-

PART II.

1549.

ation. 3. Of the mass. 4. For reserving the host. 5. For holy bread and water. 6. For the old service.* 7. For the single lives of priests. 8. For the six Articles: and concluded, God save the King, for they were his, both body and goods. To this there was an answer sent in the King's name, on the 8th of July (so long did the treaty with them hold), in which, after expressions of the King's affection to his people, he taxes their rising in arms against him their King as contrary to the laws of God: he tells them, that they are abused by their priests, as in the instance of baptism, which, according to the book, might, necessity requiring it, be done at all times: that the changes that had been set out, were made after long and great consultation; and the worship of this church, by the advice of many bishops and learned men, was reformed, as near to what Christ and his apostles had taught and done, as could be; and all things had been settled in parliament. But the most specious thing that misled them being that of the King's age, it was shewed them that his blood, and not his years, gave him the crown; and the state of government requires, that at all times there should be the same authority in princes, and the same obedience in the people. It was all penned in a high threatening style, and concluded with an earnest invitation of them to submit to the King's mercy, as others that had risen had also done, to whom he had not only shewed mercy, but granted redress of their just grievances; otherwise they might expect the utmost severity that traitors deserved.

Which were also rejected.

But nothing prevailed on this enraged multitude, whom the priests inflamed with all the artifices they could imagine; and among whom the host was carried about by a priest on a cart, that all might see it. But when this commotion was thus grown to a head, the men of Norfolk rose the 6th of July, being led by one Ket, a tanner. These pretended nothing of religion, but only to suppress and destroy the gentry, and to raise the commons, and to put new counsellors

The rebellion in Norfolk headed by Ket, a tanner.

* That the service might be sung, or said, in the choir.

1549.

about the King. They increased mightily, and became twenty thousand strong, but had no order nor discipline, and committed many horrid outrages. The Sheriff of the county came boldly to them, and required them, in the King's name, to disperse and go home; but had he not been well mounted, they had put him cruelly to death. They came to Moushold-hill, above Norwich, and were much favoured by many in that city. Parker, afterwards archbishop of Canterbury, came among them, and preached very freely to them, of their ill lives, their rebellion against the King, and the robberies they daily committed; by which he was in great danger of his life. Ket assumed to himself the power of judicature; and under an old oak, called from thence the Oak of Reformation, did such justice as might be expected from such a judge, and in such a camp. The Marquis of Northampton was sent against them, but with orders to keep at a distance from them, and to cut off their provisions; for so it was hoped, that without the shedding much blood they might come to themselves again. When the news of this rising came into Yorkshire, the commons there rose also; being further encouraged by a prophecy, that there should be no king nor nobility in England; that the kingdom should be ruled by four governors, chosen by the commons, who should hold a parliament, in commotion, to begin at the south and north seas. This they applied to the Devonshire men on the south Seas, and themselves on the north seas. They, at their first rising, fired beacons, and so gathered the country, as if it had been for the defence of the coast; and meeting two gentlemen, with two others with them, they, without any provocation, murdered them, and left their naked bodies unburied. At the same time that England was in this commotion, the news came that the French King had sent a great army into the territory of Bulloigne; so that the government was put to the most extraordinary straits.

A rising in Yorkshire.

The French fall into the Bulloignese.

There was a fast proclaimed in and about London: Cranmer preached on the fast day at court. I have seen the greatest part of his sermon, under his own

A fast at court, where Cranmer preached.

PART II.

1549. Ex MS. Col. C. C. Cantab.

hand; and it is the only sermon of his I ever saw. It is a very plain unartificial discourse; no shows of learning or conceits of wit in it: but he severely expostulated in the name of God with his hearers, for their ill lives, their blasphemies, adulteries, mutual hatred, oppression, and contempt of the gospel; and complained of the slackness in punishing these sins, by which the government became in some sort guilty of them. He set many passages of the Jewish story before them, of the judgments such sins drew on, and of God's mercy in the unexpected deliverances they met with upon their true repentance. But he chiefly lamented the scandal given by many who pretended a zeal for religion, but used that for a cloak to disguise their other vices: he set before them the fresh example of Germany, where people generally loved to hear the gospel, but had not amended their lives upon it; for which God had now, after many years' forbearance, brought them under a severe scourge: and intimated his apprehensions of some signal stroke from Heaven upon the nation, if they did not repent.

Exeter besieged.

The rebels in Devonshire went and besieged Exeter, where the citizens resisted them with great courage: they set fire to the gates of the city, which those within fed with much fuel, for hindering their entry, till they had raised a rampart within the gates; and when the rebels came to enter, the fire being spent, they killed many of them. The rebels also wrought a mine, but the citizens countermined, and poured in so much water as spoiled their powder. So, finding they could do nothing by force, they resolved to lie about the town, reckoning that the want of provision would make it soon yield. The Lord Russel, having but a small force with him, stayed a while for some supplies, which Sir William Herbert was to bring him from Bristol. But, being afraid that the rebels should inclose him, he marched back from Honnington, where he lay; and finding they had taken a bridge behind him, he beat them from it, killing six hundred of them without any loss on his side. By this he understood their strength, and saw they could not stand a brisk

charge, nor rally when once in disorder. So the Lord Gray, and Spinola, that commanded some Germans, joining him, he returned to raise the siege of Exeter, which was much straitened for want of victuals. The rebels had now shut up the city twelve days: they within had eat their horses, and endured extreme famine, but resolved to perish rather than fall into the hands of those savages; for the rebels were, indeed, no better. They had blocked up the ways, and left two thousand men to keep a bridge which the King's forces were to pass. But the Lord Russel broke through them, and killed about one thousand of them; upon that, the rebels raised the siege, and retired to Lanceston. The Lord Russel gave the citizens of Exeter great thanks, in the King's name, for their fidelity and courage, and pursued the rebels, who were now going off in parties, and were killed in great numbers. Some of their heads, as Arundel, and the Mayor of Bodmyn, Temson and Barret, two priests, with six or seven more, were taken and hanged: and so this rebellion was happily subdued in the west, about the beginning of August, to the great honour of the Lord Russel, who, with a very small force, had saved Exeter, and dispersed the rebels' army, with little or no loss at all.

But is relieved, and the rebels defeated by the Lord Russel.

But the Marquis of Northampton was not so successful in Norfolk; he carried about eleven hundred men with him, but did not observe the orders given him, and so marched on to Norwich. The rebels were glad of an occasion to engage with him, and fell in upon him the next day with great fury; and the town not being strong, he was forced to quit it, but lost one hundred of his men in that action, among whom was the Lord Sheffield, who was much lamented. The rebels took about thirty prisoners, with which they were much lifted up. This being understood at court, the Earl of Warwick was sent against them with six thousand foot and fifteen hundred horse, that were prepared for an expedition to Scotland: he came to Norwich, but was scarce able to defend it; for the rebels fell often in upon him, neither was he well assured of the town: but he cut off their provisions; so that the rebels, hav-

Warwick disperses the rebels at Norfolk.

PART II.

1549.

ing wasted all the country about them, were forced to remove; and then he followed them with his horse: they turned upon him, but he quickly routed them, and killed two thousand of them, and took Ket, their captain, with his brother, and a great many more. Ket was hanged in chains at Norwich the next January.

The rebels in Yorkshire had not become very numerous, not being above three thousand in all; but hearing of the defeating of those in other parts, they accepted of the offer of pardon that was sent them; only some few of the chief ringleaders continued to make new stirs, and were taken, and hanged in York the September following.

When these commotions were thus over, the Protector pressed that there might be a general and free pardon speedily proclaimed for quieting the country, and giving their affairs a reputation abroad. This was much opposed by many of the council, who thought it better to accomplish their several ends, by keeping the people under the lash, than by so profuse a mercy; but the Protector was resolved on it, judging the state of affairs required it. So he gave out a general pardon of all that had been done before the 21st of August, excepting only those few whom they had in their hands, and resolved to make public examples. Thus was England delivered from one of the most threatening storms that at any time had broke out in it; in which deliverance the great prudence and temper of the Protector seems to have had no small share. Of this whole matter, advertisement was given to the foreign ministers, in a letter which will be found in the Collection.

A general pardon.

Collect. Numb. 36.

There was this year a visitation of the university of Cambridge. Ridley was appointed to be one of the visitors, and to preach at the opening of it; he thereupon writ to May, dean of St. Paul's, to let him know what was to be done at it, that so his sermon might be adjusted to their business. He received answer, that it was only to remove some superstitious practices and rites, and to make such statutes as should be found needful. But when he went to Cambridge, he saw the instructions went further; they were required to pro-

A visitation at Cambridge.

cure a resignation of some colleges, and to unite them with others, and to convert some fellowships appointed for encouraging the study of divinity, to the study of the civil law: in particular, Clare-hall was to be suppressed; but the master and fellows would not resign, and after two days' labouring to persuade them to it, they absolutely refused to do it. Upon this, Ridley said, he could not with a good conscience go on any further in that matter; the church was already so robbed and stripped, that it seemed there was a design laid down by some, to drive out all civility, learning, and religion out of the nation; therefore, he declared he would not concur in such things, and desired leave to be gone. The other visitors complained of him to the Protector, that he had so troubled them with his barking (so indecently did they express that strictness of conscience in him), that they could not go on in the King's service: and because Clare-hall* was then full of northern people, they imputed his unwillingness to suppress that house to his partial affection to his countrymen; for he was born in the bishopric of Duresme. Upon this the Protector wrote a chiding letter to him: to it he wrote an answer, so suitable to what became a bishop, who would put all things to hazard rather than do any thing against his conscience, that I thought it might do no small right to his memory, to put it, with the answer which the Protector wrote to him, in the Collection. These, with many more, I found among his Majesty's papers of state, in that repository of them commonly called the Paper-Office; to which I had a free access, by a warrant which was procured to me from the King, by the Right Honourable the Earl of Sunderland, one of the principal secretaries of state, who very cheerfully and generously expressed his readiness to assist me in any thing that might complete the History of our Reformation. That office was first set up by the care of the Earl of Salisbury, when he

Collect. Numb. 59, 60.

* The two colleges of Clare-hall and Trinity-hall could not be brought to surrender, in order to the uniting them: some were for doing it by the King's absolute power: to this, Ridley would not agree, and for this he was complained of.

PART II.

1549.

was secretary of state, in King James's time; which, though it is a copious and certain repertory for those that are to write our history, ever since the papers of state were laid up there; yet, for the former times, it contains only such papers as that great minister could then gather together; so that it is not so complete in the transactions that fall within the time of which I wrote.

A contest about pronouncing the Greek.

There was also a settlement made of the controversy concerning the Greek tongue. There had been in King Henry's time a great contest raised concerning the pronunciation of the Greek vowels. That tongue was but lately come to any perfection in England, and so no wonder the Greek was pronounced like English, with the same sound and apertures of the mouth: to this, Mr. Cheek, then reader of that tongue in Cambridge, opposed himself, and taught other rules of pronunciation. Gardiner was, it seems, so afraid of every innovation, though ever so much in the right, that he contended stiffly to have the old pronunciation retained: and Cheek, persisting in his opinion, was either put from the chair, or willingly left it, to avoid the indignation of so great and so spiteful a man as Gardiner was, who was then chancellor of the university.* Cheek wrote a book in vindication of his way of pronouncing Greek; of which this must be said, that it is very strange to see how he could write with so much learning and judgment on so bare a subject. Redmayn, Poinet, and other learned men, were of his side, yet more covertly: but Sir Thomas Smith, now secretary of state, writ three books on the same argument, and did so evidently confirm Cheek's opinion, that the dispute was now laid aside, and the true way of pronouncing the Greek took place; the rather, because Gardiner was in disgrace, and Cheek and Smith were in such power and authority: so great an influence had the interests of men in supporting the most speculative and indifferent things.

* Cheek was not put from the chair, nor did he part with it, till after he was sent for by the King to instruct the Prince.—*See the Life of Nicholas Carr*, p. 59.

1549. Bonner falls into trouble.

Soon after this, Bonner fell into new troubles; he continued to oppose every thing as long as it was safe for him to do it, while it was under debate, and so kept his interest with the papists; but he complied so obediently with all the laws and orders of council, that it was not easy to find any matter against him. He executed every order that was sent him so readily, that there was not so much as ground for any complaint; yet it was known he was, in his heart, against every thing they did, and that he cherished all that were of a contrary mind. The council being informed, that, upon the commotions that were in England, many in London withdrew from the service and communion, and frequented masses, which was laid to his charge, as being negligent in the execution of the King's laws and injunctions; they writ to him on the 23d of July, to see to the correcting of these things, and that he should give good example himself. Upon which, on the 26th following, he sent about a charge to execute the order in this letter, which he said he was most willing and desirous to do. Yet it was still observed, that whatsoever obedience he gave, it was against his heart. And therefore, he was called before the council the 11th of August. There a writing was delivered to him, complaining of his remissness; and particularly, that whereas he was wont formerly on all high festivals to officiate himself, yet he had seldom or never done it since the new service was set out: as also, that adultery was openly practised in his diocess, which he took no care, according to his pastoral office, to restrain or punish: therefore, he was strictly charged to see these things reformed. He was also ordered to preach on Sunday come three weeks at St. Paul's Cross: and that he should preach there once a quarter for the future, and be present at every sermon made there, except he were sick; that he should officiate at St. Paul's at every high festival, such as were formerly called *majus duplex*, and give the communion; that he should proceed against all who did not frequent the common-prayer, nor receive the sacrament once a year, or did go to mass; that he should search out and punish adulterers;

Injunctions are given him.

PART II.

1549.

that he should take care of the reparation of churches, and paying tithes, in his diocess, and should keep his residence in his house in London. As to his sermon, he was required to preach against rebellion, setting out the heinousness of it; he was also to shew what was true religion, and that external ceremonies were nothing in themselves, but that in the use of them men ought to obey the magistrate, and join true devotion to them; and that the King was no less king, and the people no less bound to obey, when he was in minority, than when he was of full age.

In his sermon he did not set forth the King's power under age, as he had been required to do.

On the 1st of September, being the day appointed for him to preach, there was a great assembly gathered to hear him. He touched upon the points that were enjoined him, excepting that about the King's age, of which he said not one word. But since the manner of Christ's presence in the sacrament was a thing which he might yet safely speak of, he spent most of his sermon on the asserting the corporal presence; which he did with many sharp reflections on those who were of another mind. There were present, among others, William Latimer, and John Hooper, soon after bishop of Gloucester, who came and informed against him; that, as he had wholly omitted that about the King's age, so he had touched the other points but slightly, and did say many other things which tended to stir up disorder and dissension. Upon this, there was a commission issued out to Cranmer and Ridley, with the two secretaries of state, and Dr. May, dean of St. Paul's, to examine that matter. They, or any two of them, had full power by this commission to suspend, imprison, or deprive him, as they should see cause. They were to proceed in the summary way, called in their coutrts *de plano*.

Rot. Pat. 11. Par. 3. Reg.

He is proceeded against.

On the 10th of September, Bonner was summoned to appear before them at Lambeth. As he came into the place where they sate, he carried himself as if he had not seen them, till one pulled him by the sleeve to put off his cap to the King's commissioners; upon which he protested he had not seen them, which none of them could believe. He spake slightingly to them of

1549. Regist. Bonner.

the whole matter, and turned the discourse off to the mass, which he wished were had in more reverence. When the witnesses were brought against him, he jeered them very undecently, and said the one talked like a goose, and the other like a woodcock, and denied all they said. The Archbishop asked him, whether he would refer the matter in proof to the people that heard him? and so asked, whether any there present had heard him speak of the King's authority when under age? Many answered, "No, no." Bonner looked about and laughed, saying, "Will you believe this fond people?" Some he called dunces, and others fools, and behaved himself more like a madman than a bishop. The next day he was again brought before them. Then the commission was read. The Archbishop opened the matter, and desired Bonner to answer for himself: he read a protestation which he had prepared, setting forth, that since he had not seen the commission, he reserved to himself power to except either to his judges or to any other branch of the commission, as he should afterwards see cause. In this he called it a pretended commission, and them pretended judges, which was taxed as irreverent; but he excused it, alleging, that these were terms of law which he must use, and so not be precluded from any objections he might afterwards make use of. The bill of complaint was next read, and the two informers appeared with their witnesses to make it good. But Bonner objected against them, that they were notorious heretics, and that the ill will they bore him was, because he had asserted the true presence of Christ in the sacrament of the altar; that Hooper in particular, had, in his sermon, that very day on which he had preached, denied it; and had refuted and mis-recited his sayings, like an ass, as he was an ass indeed; so ill did he govern his tongue. Upon this, Cranmer asked him, whether he thought Christ was in the sacrament with face, mouth, eyes, nose, and the other lineaments of his body? and there passed some words between them on that head: but Cranmer told him, that was not a time and place to dispute; they were come to execute the King's commission. So Bon-

His insolent behaviour.

PART II.

1549.

ner desired to see both it and the denunciation, which were given him: and the court adjourned till the 13th.

Secretary Smith sate with them at their next meeting, which he had not done the former day, though his name was in the commission: upon this Bonner protested, that, according to the canon law, none could act in a commission but those who were present the first day in which it was read. But to this it was alleged, that the constant practice of the kingdom had been to the contrary; that all whose names were in any commission, might sit and judge, though they had not been present at the first opening of it. This protestation being rejected, he read his answer in writing to the accusation. He first objected to his accusers, that they were heretics in the matter of the sacrament; and so were, according to the laws of the catholic church, under excommunication, and therefore ought not to be admitted into any Christian company. Then he denied that the injunctions given to him had been signed, either with the King's hand or signet, or by any of his council. But, upon the whole matter, he said, he had in his sermon condemned the late rebellion in Cornwall, Devonshire, and Norfolk, and had set forth the sin of rebellion according to several texts of Scripture; he had also preached for obedience to the King's commands, and that no ceremonies that were contrary to them ought to be used; in particular, he had exhorted the people to come to prayers, and to the communion, as it was appointed by the King, and wondered to see them so slack in coming to it, which he believed flowed from a false opinion they had of it. And therefore, he taught, according to that which he conceived to be the duty of a faithful pastor, the true presence of Christ's body and blood in the sacrament; which was the true motive of his accusers in their prosecuting him thus. But though he had forgot to speak of the King's power under age, yet he had said that which necessarily inferred it; for he had condemned the late rebels for rising against their lawful King, and had applied many texts of Scripture to them, which clearly implied, that

His defence.

the King's power was then entire, otherwise they could not be rebels.

1549. These are rejected.

But to all this it was answered, that it was of no great consequence who were the informers, if the witnesses were such that he could not except against them; besides, they were empowered by their commission to proceed *ex officio*; so that it was not necessary for them to have any to accuse. He was told, that the injunctions were read to him in council by one of the secretaries, and then were given to him by the Protector himself; that afterwards they were called for, and that article concerning the King's power before he came to be of age being added, they were given him again by Secretary Smith, and he promised to execute them. He was also told, that it was no just excuse for him to say he had forgot that about the King's power, since it was the chief thing pretended by the late rebels, and was mainly intended by the council in their injunctions; so that it was a poor shift for him to pretend he had forgot it, or had spoken of it by a consequence.

The court adjourned to the 16th day; and then Latimer and Hooper offered to purge themselves of the charge of heresy, since they had never spoken nor written of the sacrament but according to the Scripture: and whereas, Bonner had charged them, that on the 1st of September they had entered into consultation and confederacy against him, they protested they had not seen each other that day, nor been known to one another till some days after. Bonner, upon this, read some passages of the sacrament out of a book of Hooper's, whom he called "that varlet." But Cranmer cut off the discourse, and said, it was not their business to determine that point; and said to the people, that the Bishop of London was not accused for any thing he had said about the sacrament. Then Bonner, turning to speak to the people, was interrupted by one of the delegates, who told him he was to speak to them, and not to the people; at which some laughing, he turned about in great fury, and said, "Ah woodcocks! woodcocks!" But to the chief point, he said he had prepared notes of what he intended to say about the King's power in his

PART II.

1549.

minority, from the instances in Scripture of Achaz, and Osias, who were kings at ten; of Solomon and Manasses, who reigned at twelve; and of Josias, Joachim, and Joas, who began to reign when they were but eight years old. He had also gathered out of the English history, that Henry the Third, Edward the Third, Richard the Second, Henry the Sixth, and Edward the Fifth, were all under age; and even their late King was but eighteen when he came to the crown; and yet all these were obeyed as much before as after they were of full age. But these things had escaped his memory, he not having being much used to preach. There had been also a long bill sent him from the council to be read, of the defeat of the rebels, which, he said, had disordered him; and the book in which he had laid his notes fell out of his hands when he was in the pulpit: for this he appealed to his two chaplains, Bourn and Harpsfield, whom he had desired to gather for him the names of those kings who reigned before they were of age. For the other injunctions, he had taken care to execute them, and had sent orders to his archdeacons to see to them: and, as far as he understood, there were no masses, nor service in Latin, within his diocess, except at the Lady Mary's, or in the chapels of ambassadors. But the delegates required him positively to answer, whether he had obeyed that injunction about the King's authority or not; otherwise they would hold him as guilty; and if he denied it, they would proceed to the examination of the witnesses. He refusing to answer otherwise than he had done, they called the witnesses, who were Sir John Cheek and four more, who had their oaths given them; and Bonner desiring a time to prepare his interrogatories, it was granted. So he drew a long paper of twenty interrogatories, every one of them containing many branches in it, full of all the niceties of the canon law; a taste of which may be had from the third in number, which is, indeed, the most material of all. The interrogatory was, "Whether they, or any of them, were present at his sermon; where they stood, and near whom; when they came to it, and at what part of his sermon; how long they tar-

ried; at what part they were offended; what were the formal words, or substance of it; who with them did hear it; where the other witnesses stood, and how long they tarried, or when they departed?"

The court adjourned to the 18th of September: and then there was read a declaration from the King, explaining their former commission, chiefly in the point of the denunciation, that they might proceed either that way, or *ex officio*, as they saw cause: giving them, also, power finally to determine the matter, cutting off all superfluous delays. Bonner gave in also some other reasons, why he should not be obliged to make a more direct answer to the articles objected against him: the chief of which was, that the article about the King's age was not in the paper given him by the Protector, but afterwards added by Secretary Smith, of his own head. Cranmer admonished him of his irreverence, since he called them always his pretended judges. Smith added, that though proctors did so in common matters, for their clients, yet it was not to be endured in such a case, when he saw they acted by a special commission from the King. New articles were given him, more explicit and plain than the former, but to the same purpose. And five witnesses were sworn upon these, who were all the clerks of the council, to prove that the article about the King's age was ordered by the whole council, and only put in writing by Secretary Smith, at their command. He was appointed to come next day, and make his answer. But on the 19th, two of his servants came, and told the delegates, that he was sick, and could not attend. It was therefore ordered, that the knight-marshal should go to him, and if he were sick, let him alone; but if it were not so, should bring him before them next day. On the 20th, Bonner appearing, answered as he had done formerly; only he protested, that it was his opinion, that the King was as much a king, and the people as much bound to obey him, before he was of age, as after it. And after that, Secretary Smith having taken him up more sharply than the other delegates, he protested against him as no competent judge, since he had expressed

He protests against Secretary Smith.

PART II.

1549.

much passion against him, and had not heard him patiently, but had compared him to thieves and traitors, and had threatened to send him to the Tower to sit with Ket and Arundel; and that he had added some things to the injunctions given him by the Protector, for which he was now accused, and did also proceed to judge him, notwithstanding his protestation, grounded on his not being present when the commission was first opened and received by the court. But this protestation also was rejected by the delegates; and Smith told him, that whereas he took exception at his saying that he acted as thieves and traitors do, it was plainly visible in his doings: upon which, Bonner, being much inflamed, said to him, That, as he was secretary of state and a privy-counsellor, he honoured him; but as he was Sir Thomas Smith, he told him he lied, and that he defied him. At this the Archbishop chid him, and said, he deserved to be sent to prison for such irreverent carriage. He answered, he did not care whither they sent him, so they sent him not to the devil, for thither he would not go; he had a few goods, a poor carcass, and a soul; the two former were in their power, but the last was in his own. After this, being made to withdraw, he, when called in again, put in an appeal from them to the King, and read an instrument of it, which he had prepared at his own house that morning; and so would make no other answer, unless the Secretary should remove. For this contempt he was sent to the prison of the Marshalsea; and as he was led away, he broke out in great passion, both against Smith and also at Cranmer, for suffering heretics to infect the people, which he required him to abstain from, as he would answer for it to God and the King.

On the 23d he was again brought before them, where, by a second instrument, he adhered to his former appeal. But the delegates said, they would go on and judge him, unless there came a *supersedeas* from the King; and so required him to answer those articles which he had not yet answered, otherwise they would proceed against him as *contumax*, and hold him as confessing. But he adhered to his appeal, and so

would answer no more. New matter was also brought, of his going out of St. Paul's in the midst of the sermon on the 15th of the month, and so giving a public disturbance and scandal; and of his writing next day to the Lord Mayor, not to suffer such preachers to sow their ill doctrine. This was occasioned by the preacher's speaking against the corporal presence of Christ in the sacrament. But he would give the court no account of that matter; so they adjourned to the 27th, and from that to the 1st of October. In that time great endeavours were used to persuade him to submit, and to behave himself better for the future; and upon that condition he was assured he should be gently used. But he would yield to nothing. So, on the 1st of October, when he was brought before them, the Archbishop told him, they had delayed so long, being unwilling to proceed to extremities with him, and therefore wished him to submit. But he read another writing, by which he protested, that he was brought before them by force, and that otherwise he would not have come, since, that having appealed from them, he looked on them as his judges no more. He said, that he had also written a petition to the Lord Chancellor, complaining of the delegates, and desiring that his appeal might be admitted; and said, by that appeal it was plain that he esteemed the King to be clothed with his full royal power, now that he was under age, since he thus appealed to him. Upon which, the Archbishop, the Bishop of Rochester, Secretary Smith, and the Dean of St. Paul's, gave sentence against him; that since he had not declared the King's power while under age in his sermon, as he was commanded by the Protector and council, therefore the Archbishop, with the consent and assent of his colleagues, did deprive him of the bishoprick of London. Sentence being thus given, he appealed again by word of mouth. The court did also order him to be carried to prison, till the King should consider further of it. This account of his trial is drawn from the register of London, where all these particulars are inserted. From thence it was that Fox printed them. For Bonner, though he was afterward commissioned by

He is deprived from his bishoprick.

PART II.

1549.

the Queen to deface any records that made against the catholic cause, yet did not care to alter any thing in this register after his re-admission in Mary's time. It seems he was not displeased with what he found recorded of himself in this matter.

Censures passed upon it.

Thus was Bonner deprived of his bishoprick of London. This judgment, as all such things are, was much censured: it was said, it was not canonical, since it was by a commission from the King, and since secular men were mixed with clergymen in the censure of a bishop. To this it was answered, that the sentence being only of deprivation from the see of London, it was not so entirely an ecclesiastical censure, but was of a mixed nature, so that laymen might join in it; and since he had taken a commission from the King for his bishoprick, by which he held it only during the King's pleasure, he could not complain of this deprivation, which was done by the King's authority. Others, who looked further back, remembered that Constantine the emperor had appointed secular men to inquire into some things objected to bishops, who were called *cognitores*, or *triers*; and such had examined the business of Cecilian, bishop of Carthage, even upon an appeal, after it had been tried in several synods, and given judgment against Donatus and his party. The same Constantine had also by his authority put Eustathius out of Antioch, Athanasius out of Alexandria, and Paul out of Constantinople: and though the orthodox bishops complained of these particulars, as done unjustly at the false suggestion of the Arians, yet they did not deny the Emperor's authority in such cases. Afterwards, the emperors used to have some bishops attending on them in their *comitatus*, or court, to whose judgment they left most causes, who acted only by commission from the Emperor. So Epiphanius was brought to condemn Chrysostom at Constantinople, who had no authority to judge him by the canons. Others objected, that it was too severe to deprive Bonner for a defect in his memory; and that therefore they should have given him a new trial in that point, and not have proceeded to censure him on such an omission, since he protested it

was not on design, but a pure forgetfulness; and all people perceived clearly it had been beforehand resolved to lay him aside, and that therefore they now took him on this disadvantage, and so deprived him. But it was also well known, that all the papists infused this notion into the people, of the King's having no power till he came to be of age; and he being certainly one of them, there was reason to conclude, that what he said for his defence was only a pretence, and that it was of design that he had omitted the mentioning the King's power when under age. The adding of imprisonment to his deprivation was thought by some to be an extreme accumulation of punishments. But that was no more than what he drew upon himself by his rude and contemptuous behaviour. However, it seems that some of these objections wrought on Secretary Petre, for he never sate with the delegates after the first day, and he was now turning about to another party.

On the other hand, Bonner was little pitied by most that knew him. He was a cruel and fierce man; he understood little of divinity, his learning being chiefly in the canon law. Besides, he was looked on generally as a man of no principles. All the obedience he gave, either to the laws or the King's injunctions, was thought a compliance against his conscience, extorted by fear. And his indecent carriage during his process had much exposed him to the people: so that it was not thought to be hard dealing, though the proceedings against him were summary and severe. Nor did his carriage afterward during his imprisonment discover much of a bishop or a Christian: for he was more concerned to have puddings and pears sent him, than for any thing else. This I gather from some original letters of his to Richard Leechmere, Esq. in Worcestershire (which were communicated to me by his heir lineally descended from him, the worshipful Mr. Leechmere, now the senior bencher of the Middle-Temple), of which I transcribed the latter part of one, that will be found in the Collection. In it he desires a large quantity of pears and puddings to be sent him; otherwise, he gives those to whom he writes an odd sort of

Collect. Numb. 37

PART II.

1549.

benediction, very unlike what became a man of his character; he gives them "to the devil, to the devil, and to all the devils," if they did not furnish him well with pears and puddings. It may, perhaps, be thought indecent to print such letters, being the privacies of friendship, which ought not to be made public; but I confess, Bonner was so brutish and so bloody a man, that I was not ill pleased to meet with any thing that might set him forth in his natural colours to the world.

Foreign affairs.

Thus did the affairs of England go on this summer, within the kingdom; but it will be now necessary to consider the state of our affairs in foreign parts. The King of France, finding it was very chargeable to carry on the war wholly in Scotland, resolved this year to lessen that expense, and to make war directly with England, both at sea and land. So he came in person with a great army, and fell into the country of Bulloigne, where he took many little castles about the town; as Sellaque, Blackness, Hambletue, Newhaven, and some lesser ones. The English writers say, those were ill provided, which made them be so easily lost: but Thuanus says, they were all very well stored. In the night they assaulted Bullingberg, but were beat off; then they designed to burn the ships that were in the harbour, and had prepared wild-fire, with other combustible matter, but were driven away by the English. At the same time, the French fleet met the English fleet at Jersey; but, as King Edward writes in his diary, they were beat off with the loss of one thousand men; though Thuanus puts the loss wholly on the English side. The French King sate down before Bulloigne in September, hoping that the disorders then in England would make that place be ill supplied, and easily yielded. The English finding Bullingberg was not tenable, razed it, and retired into the town: but the plague broke into the French camp, so the King left it under the command of Chastilion. He endeavoured chiefly to take the pier, and so to cut off the town from the sea, and from all communication with England; and after a long battery he gave the assault upon it, but was beat off. There followed many skirmishes between him and the garri-

The French take many places about Bulloigne.

son, and he made many attempts to close up the channel, and thought to have sunk a galley full of stones and gravel in it; but in all these he was still unsuccessful: and therefore, winter coming on, the siege was raised; only the forts about the town, which the French had taken, were strongly garrisoned; so that Bulloigne was in danger of being lost the next year.

The English unsuccessful in Scotland.

In Scotland, also, the English affairs declined much this year. Thermes, before the winter was ended, had taken Broughty Castle, and destroyed almost the whole garrison. In the southern parts, there was a change made of the lords-wardens of the English marches: Sir Robert Bowes was complained of, as negligent in relieving Hadingtoun, the former year; so the Lord Dacres was put in his room; and the Lord Gray, who lost the great advantage he had when the French raised the siege of Hadingtoun, was removed, and the Earl of Rutland was sent to command. The Earl made an inroad into Scotland, and supplied Hadingtoun plentifully with all sorts of provisions necessary for a siege. He had some Germans and Spaniards with him; but a party of Scotch horse surprised the Germans' baggage; and Romero, with the Spanish troop, was also fallen on, and taken, and almost all his men were cut off. The Earl of Warwick was to have marched with a more considerable army this summer into Scotland, had not the disorders in England diverted him, as it has been already shewn. Thermes did not much more this year; he intended once to have renewed the siege of Hadingtoun; but when he understood how well they were furnished, he gave it over. But the English council, finding how great a charge the keeping of it was, and the country all about it being destroyed, so that no provisions could be had, but what were brought from England, from which it was twenty-eight miles distant, resolved to withdraw their garrison, and quit it, which was done on the 1st of October; so that the English having now no garrison within Scotland but Lauder, Thermes sate down before that, and pressed it so, that, had not the peace been made up with France, it had fallen into his hands.

PART II.

1549.

Things being in this disorder both at home and abroad, the Protector had nothing to depend on, but the Emperor's aid; and he was so ill satisfied with the changes that had been made in religion, that much was not to be expected from him. The confusions this year occasioned that change to be made in the office of the daily prayers; where the answer to the petition, "Give peace in our time, O Lord," which was formerly, and is still continued, was now made, "Because there is none other that fighteth for us, but only thou, O God." For now, the Emperor, having reduced all the princes, and most of the cities of Germany, to his obedience, none but Magdeburg and Breame standing out, did, by a mistake incident to great conquerors, neglect those advantages which were then in his hands, and did not prosecute his victories; but leaving Germany, came this summer into the Netherlands, whither he had ordered his son, Prince Philip, to come from Spain to him, through Italy and Germany, that he might put him into possession of these provinces, and make them swear homage to him. Whether, at this time, the Emperor was beginning to form the design of retiring, or whether he did this only to prevent the mutinies and revolts that might fall out upon his death, if his son were not in actual possession of them, is not so certain. One thing is memorable in that transaction, that was called the *lætus introitus*, or the terms upon which he was received Prince of Brabant, to which the other provinces had been formerly united into one principality: after many rules and limitations of government, in the matter of taxes, and public assemblies, the not keeping up of forces, and governing them not by strangers, but by natives, it was added, "that if he broke these conditions, it should be free for them not to obey him, or acknowledge him any longer, till he returned to govern according to their laws." This was afterwards the chief ground on which they justified their shaking off the Spanish yoke, all these conditions being publicly violated.

The state of Germany.

Cott. Lib. GalbaB.12.

Jealousies arise in the Emperor's family.

At this time there were great jealousies in the Emperor's family; for as he intended to have had his bro-

ther resign his election to be king of the Romans, that it might be transferred on his own son; so there were designs in Flanders, which the French cherished much, to have Maximilian, Ferdinand's son, the most accomplished and virtuous prince that had been for many ages, to be made their prince. The Flemings were much disgusted with the Queen Regent's government, who, when there was need of money, sent to Bruges and Antwerp, ordering deputies to be sent her from Flanders and Brabant; and when they were come, she told them what money must be raised; and if they made any objections, she used to bid them give over merchandizing with the Emperor, for he must and would have the money he asked; so that nothing remained to them, but to see how to raise what was thus demanded of them, rather than desired from them. This, as the English Ambassador wrote from Bruges, seemed to be the reason that moved the Emperor to make his son swear to such rules of government; which the sequel of his life shewed he meant to observe in the same manner that his father had done before him. At the same time, in May this year, I find a secret advertisement was sent over from France to the English court, that there was a private treaty set on foot between that King and the Princes of Germany, for restoring the liberty of the empire; but that the King of France was resolved to have Bulloigne in his hands before he entered on new projects: therefore, it was proposed to the Protector, to consider whether it were not best to deliver it up by a treaty, and so to leave the King of France free to the defence of their friends in the empire; for I find the consideration of the protestant religion was the chief measure of our counsels all this reign.

A great faction against the Protector.

Upon this there was great distraction in the counsels at home: the Protector was inclined to deliver up Bulloigne for a sum of money, and to make peace both with the French and Scots. The King's treasure was exhausted, affairs at home were in great confusion, the defence of Bulloigne was a great charge, and a war with France was a thing of that consequence, that, in

PART II.

1549.

that state of affairs, it was not to be adventured on. But, on the other hand, those who hated the Protector, and measured counsels more by the bravery than the solidity of them, said, it would be a reproach to the nation to deliver up a place of that consequence, which their late King, in the declining of his days, had gained with so much loss of men and treasure; and to sell this for a little money, was accounted so sordid, that the Protector durst not adventure on it. Upon this occasion I find Sir William Paget (being made comptroller of the King's household, which was then thought an advancement from the office of a secretary of state) made a long discourse, and put it in writing: the substance of it was, to balance the dangers in which England was at that time. The business of Scotland and Bulloigne drew France into a quarrel against it: on the account of religion, it had no reason to expect much from the Emperor. The interest of England was then to preserve the protestants of Germany, and, therefore, to unite with France; which would be easily engaged in that quarrel against the Emperor. He proposed a firm alliance with the Venetians, who were then jealous of the Emperor's progress in Italy, and would be ready to join against him, if he were thoroughly engaged in Germany; and by their means, England was to make up an agreement with France. On the other hand, William Thomas, then a clerk of the council, wrote a long discourse of other expedients; he agreed with Paget as to the ill state of England, having many enemies, and no friends. The north of England was wasted by the incursion of the Scots; Ireland was also in an ill condition, for the natives there did generally join with the Scots, being addicted to the old superstition. The Emperor was so set on reducing all to one religion, that they could expect no great aid from him, unless they gave him some hope of returning to the Roman religion. But the continuance of the war would undo the nation: for if the war went on, the people would take advantage from it to break out into new disorders; it would be also very dishonourable to deliver up, or rather to sell, the late conquests in France.

Paget's advice about foreign affairs.

Cott. Lib. Titus, B. 2.

Thomas's advice differs from his.

Cott. Lib. Vespasian D. 18.

Therefore he proposed, that, to gain time, they should treat with the Emperor, and even give him hopes of re-examining what had been done in religion; though there was danger even in that of disheartening those of Magdeburg, and the few remaining protestants in Germany; as also, they might expect the Emperor would be highly enraged when he should come to find that he had been deluded: but the gaining of time was then so necessary, that the preservation of the nation depended on it. For Scotland, he proposed, that the Governor of that kingdom should be pressed to pretend to the crown, since their Queen was gone into a strange country: by this means Scotland would be for that whole age separated from the interests of France, and obliged to depend on England; and the French were now so hated in Scotland, that any who would set up against them, would have an easy work, especially being assisted by the nearness of England: and for Ireland, he proposed, that the chief heads of families should be drawn over, and kept at court: and that England thus being respited from foreign war, the nation should be armed and exercised, the coin reformed, treasure laid up, and things in the government at home that were uneasy should be corrected.

Thus I have opened the counsels at that time, as I found them laid before me in these authentic papers, from which I drew them. The result of their consultation, was to send over Sir William Paget to join with Sir Philip Hobbey, then resident at the Emperor's court. His instructions will be found in the Collection: the substance of them was, that the treaty between the Emperor and the late King should be renewed with this King, and confirmed by the Prince and the states of Flanders; that some ambiguous passages in it should be cleared; that the Emperor would comprehend Bulloigne within the league defensive, and so protect it, England being ready to offer any thing reciprocal in the room of it. He was also to shew their readiness to agree to the Emperor concerning the Lady Mary's marriage; to adjust some differences occasioned by the complaints made of the Admiralty, and about

Paget sent over to treat with the Emperor.

Collect. Numb. 38.

PART II.

1549.

trade; to shew the reason of the messages that passed between them and France; and to engage, that, if the Emperor would heartily assist them, they would never agree with France. Paget was also to propose, as of himself, that Bulloigne should be put into the Emperor's hands upon a reasonable recompence. Thus was Paget instructed, and sent over in June, this year: but the Emperor put him off with many delays, and said, the carrying of his son about the towns in Flanders and Brabant, with the many ceremonies and entertainments that followed it, made it not easy for him to consider of matters that required such deep consultation. He put him off from Brussels to Gaunt, and from Gaunt to Bruges: but, Paget growing impatient of such delays, since the French were marched into the Bulloignese, the Bishop of Arras, (son to Grandvil, that had been long the Emperor's chief minister) who was now like to succeed in his father's room, that was old and infirm, and the two presidents of the Emperor's councils, St. Maurice and Viglius, came to Sir William Paget, and had a long communication with him and Hobbey; an account whereof will be found in the Collection, in a dispatch from them to the Protector.

Collect. Numb. 39.

He meets with the Emperor's ministers.

They first treated of an explanation of some ambiguous words in the treaty, to which the Emperor's ministers promised to bring them an answer: then they talked long of the matters of the Admiralty; the Emperor's ministers said, no justice was done in England upon the merchants' complaints. Paget said, every mariner came to the Protector, and if he would not solicit their business, they run away with a complaint that there was no justice; whereas, he thought, that as they meddled with no private matters, so the Protector ought to turn all these over upon the courts that were the competent judges. But the Bishop of Arras said, there was no justice to be had in the Admiralty courts, who were, indeed, parties in all these matters: Paget said, there was as much justice in the English Admiralty courts as was in theirs; and the Bishop confessed, there were great corruptions in all these courts. So Paget proposed, that the Emperor should appoint two

of his council to hear and determine all such complaints in a summary way, and the King should do the like in England. For the confirmation of the treaty, the Bishop said, the Emperor was willing his son should confirm it; but, that he would never sue to his subjects to confirm his treaties: and he said, when it was objected that the treaty with France was confirmed by the three estates, that the prerogative of the French crown was so restrained that the King could alienate nothing of his patrimony, without the parliament of Paris, and his three estates. He believed the King of England had a greater prerogative; he was sure the Emperor was not so bound up; he had fifteen or sixteen several parliaments, and what work must he be at, if all these must descant on his transactions? When this general discourse was over, the two presidents went away, but the Bishop of Arras stayed with him in private. Paget proposed the business of Bulloigne; but the Bishop, having given him many good words in the general, excepted much to it, as dishonourable to the Emperor, since Bulloigne was not taken when the league was concluded between the Emperor and England; so that, if he should now include it in the league, it would be a breach of faith and treaties with France; and he stood much on the honour and conscience of observing these treaties inviolably. So this conversation ended; in which the most remarkable passage is that concerning the limitations on the French crown, and the freedoms of the English; for at that time the King's prerogative in England was judged of that extent, that I find in a letter written from Scotland, one of the main objections made to the marrying their Queen to the King of England was, that an union with England would much alter the constitution of their government, the prerogatives of the Kings of England being of a far larger extent than those in Scotland.

Two or three days after the former conversation, the Emperor's ministers returned to Paget's lodging, with answer to the propositions which the English Ambassadors had made; of which a full account will be found in the Collection, in the letter which the Ambassadors

Collect. Numb. 40.

PART II.

1549.

wrote upon it into England. The Emperor gave a good answer to some of the particulars, which were ambiguous in former treaties. For the confirmation of the treaty, he offered, that the Prince should join in it; but since the King of England was under age, he thought it more necessary that the parliament of England should confirm it. To which Paget answered, that their kings, as to the regal power, were the same in all the conditions of life; and therefore, when the great seal was put to any agreement, the King was absolutely bound by it. If his ministers engaged him in ill treaties, they were to answer for it at their perils; but howsoever, the King was tied by it. They discoursed long about the administration of justice, but ended in nothing; and as for the main business about Bulloigne, the Emperor stood on his treaties with the French, which he could not break: upon which, Paget said to the Bishop, that his father had told him they had so many grounds to quarrel with France, that he had his sleeve full of them, to produce when there should be occasion to make use of them. But finding the Bishop's answers were cold, and that he only gave good words, he told him, that England would then see to their own security; and so he took that for the Emperor's final answer, and thereupon resolved to take his leave, which he did soon after, and came back into England. But at home the counsels were much divided, of which the sad effects broke out soon afterward.

Debates in council concerning peace.

It was proposed in council, that the war with Scotland should be ended; for it having been begun and carried on only on design to obtain the marriage, since the hopes of that were now so far gone, that it was not in the power of the Scots themselves to retrieve them, it was a vain and needless expense, both of blood and money, to keep it up: and since Bulloigne was, by the treaty, after a few more years, to be delivered up to the French, it seemed a very unreasonable thing, in the low state to which the King's affairs were driven, to enter on a war, in which they had little reason to doubt but they should lose Bulloigne, after the new expense of a siege and another year's war. The Protector had now

many enemies, who laid hold on this conjuncture to throw him out of the government. The Earl of Southampton was brought into the council, but had not laid down his secret hatred of the Protector; and did all he could to make a party against him. The Earl of Warwick was the fittest man to work on; him, therefore, he gained over to his side, and having formed a confidence in him, he shewed him that he had really got all those victories for which the Protector triumphed: he had won the field of Pinkey, near Musselburgh, and had subdued the rebels of Norfolk; and, as he had before defeated the French, so, if he were sent over thither, new triumphs would follow him; but it was below him to be second to any: so he engaged him to quarrel in every thing with the Protector, all whose wary motions were ascribed to fear or dulness. To others, he said, what friendship could any expect from a man who had no pity on his own brother? But that which provoked the nobility most, was the partiality the Protector had for the commons in the insurrections that had been this summer: he had also given great grounds of jealousy, by entertaining foreign troops in the King's wars; which, though it was not objected to him, because the council had consented to it, yet it was whispered about, that he had extorted that consent. But the noble palace he was raising in the Strand (which yet carries his name), out of the ruins of some bishops' houses and churches, drew as public an envy on him as any thing he had done. It was said, that when the King was engaged in such wars, and when London was much disordered by the plague, that had been in it for some months, he was then bringing architects from Italy, and designing such a palace as had not been seen in England. It was also said, that many bishops and cathedrals had resigned many manors to him, for obtaining his favour. Though this was not done without leave obtained from the King; for in a grant of some lands made to him by the King on the 11th of July, in the second year of his reign, it is said, that these lands were given him as a reward of his services in Scotland, for which he was offered greater

Complaints against the Protector.

Rot. Pat. 4. Par. 2. Reg.

PART II.

1549.

rewards; but that he, refusing to accept of such grants as might too much impoverish the crown, had taken a licence to the Bishop of Bath and Wells for his alienating some of the lands of that bishoprick to him: he is in that patent called, "by the grace of God" Duke of Somerset, which had not of late years been ascribed to any but sovereign princes. It was also said, that many of the chantry lands had been sold to his friends at easy rates, for which they concluded he had great presents; and a course of unusual greatness had raised him up too high, so that he did not carry himself towards the nobility with that equality that they expected from him.

All these things concurred to beget him many enemies; and he had very few friends, for none stuck firmly to him, but Paget, and Secretary Smith, and especially Cranmer, who never forsook his friend. All that favoured the old superstition were his enemies; and seeing the Earl of Southampton heading the party against him, they all run into it. And of the bishops that were for the Reformation, Goodrich, of Ely, likewise joined to them: he had attended on the Admiral in his preparations for death, from whom, it seems, he drank in ill impressions of the Protector: all his enemies saw, and he likewise saw it himself, that the continuance of the war must needs destroy him; and that a peace would confirm him in his power, and give him time and leisure to break through the faction that was now so strong against him, that it was not probable he could master it without the help of some time. So in the council, his adversaries delivered their opinions against all motions for peace; and though, upon Paget's return from Flanders, it appeared to be very unreasonable to carry on the war; yet, they said, Paget had secret instructions to procure such an answer, that it might give a colour to so base a project. The officers, that came over from those places that the French had taken, pretended, as is common for all men in such circumstances, that they wanted things necessary for a siege; and though in truth it was quite contrary (as we read in Thuanus), yet their complaints

were cherished and spread about among the people. The Protector had also, against the mind of the council, ordered the garrison to be drawn out of Hadingtoun; and was going, notwithstanding all their opposition, to make peace with France; and did in many things act by his own authority, without asking their advice, and often against it. This was the assuming a regal power, and seemed not to be endured by those who thought they were in all points his equals. It was also said, that when, contrary to the late King's will, he was chosen Protector, it was with that special condition, that he should do nothing without their consent; and though, by the patent he had for his office, his power was more enlarged (which was of greater force in law than a private agreement at the council-table), yet even that was objected to him, as a high presumption in him to pretend to such a vast power. Thus, all the month of September, there were great heats among them: several persons interposed to mediate, but to no effect: for the faction against him was now so strong, that they resolved to strip him of his exorbitant power, and reduce him to an equality with themselves. The King was then at Hampton-Court, where also the Protector was, with some of his own retainers and servants about him, which increased the jealousies; for it was given out, that he intended to carry away the King. So on the 6th of October, some of the council met at Ely-house; the Lord St. John, president, the Earls of Warwick, Arundel, and Southampton, Sir Edward North, Sir Richard Southwell, Sir Edmund Pecham, Sir Edward Wotton, and Dr. Wotton; and Secretary Petre being sent to them in the King's name, to ask what they met for, joined himself likewise to them. They sate as the King's council, and entered their proceedings in the council-book, from whence I draw the account of this transaction.

Most of the council separate from him.

These being met together, and considering the disorders that had been lately in England, the losses in Scotland and France, laid the blame of all on the Protector, who, they said, was given up to other counsels so obstinately, that he would not hearken to the advices

PART II.

1549.

they had given him, both at the board and in private; and they declared, that, having intended that day to have gone to Hampton-Court for a friendly communication with him, he had raised many of the commons to have destroyed them, and had made the King set his hand to the letters he had sent for raising men; and had also dispersed seditious bills against them; therefore they intended to see to the safety of the King and the kingdom. So they sent for the Lord Mayor and Aldermen of London, and required them to obey no letters sent them by the Protector, but only such as came from themselves. They also writ many letters to the nobility and gentry over England, giving them an account of their designs and motives, and requiring their assistance. They also sent for the Lieutenant of the Tower, and he submitted to their orders. Next day, the Lord Chancellor, the Marquis of Northampton, the Earl of Shrewsbury, Sir Thomas Cheyney, Sir John Gage, Sir Ralph Sadler, and the Lord Chief-Justice Montague, joined with them. Then they wrote to the King a letter (which is in the Collection), full of expressions of their duty and care of his person, complaining of the Duke of Somerset's not listening to their counsels, and of his gathering a force about him for maintaining his wilful doings: they owned that they had caused Secretary Petre to stay with them, and in it they endeavoured to persuade the King, that they were careful of nothing so much as of his preservation. They also wrote to the Archbishop of Canterbury, and to Sir William Paget, to see to the King's person, and that his own servants should attend on him, and not those that belonged to the Duke of Somerset. But the Protector, hearing of this disorder, had removed the King to Windsor in all haste; and had taken down all the armour that was either there or at Hampton-Court, and had armed such as he could gather about him for his preservation.

Collect. Numb. 41.

The council at London complained much of this, that the King should be carried to a place where there were no provisions fit for him. So they ordered all things that he might need to be sent to him from Lon-

don. And on the 8th of October they went to Guildhall, where they gave an account of their proceedings to the common-council of the city: and assured them, they had no thoughts of altering the religion, as was given out by their enemies, but intended only the safety of the King, and the peace of the kingdom; and for these ends desired their assistance. The whole common-council, with one voice, declared, they thanked God for the good intentions they had expressed, and assured them they would stand by them with their lives and goods. At Windsor, when the Protector understood that not only the city but the Lieutenant of the Tower, of whom he had held himself assured, had forsaken him, he resolved to struggle no longer: and though it is not improbable, that he, who was chiefly accused for his protecting the commons, might have easily gathered a great body of men for his own preservation; yet he resolved rather to give way to the tide that was now against him. So he protested before the King and the few counsellors then about him, that he had no design against any of the lords; and that the force he had gathered was only to preserve himself from any violent attempt that might be made on his person: he declared, that he was willing to submit himself; and therefore proposed, that two of those lords should be sent from London, and they, with two of those that were yet about the King, should consider what might be done, in whose determination he would acquiesce: and desired, that whatsoever was agreed on should be confirmed in parliament. Hereupon there was sent to London a warrant under the King's hand, for any two of the Lords of the council that were there to come to Windsor with twenty servants a-piece, who had the King's faith for their safety in coming and going: and Cranmer, Paget, and Smith, wrote to them to dispose them to end the matter peaceably, and not follow cruel counsels, nor to be misled by them who meant otherwise than they professed, of which they knew more than they would then mention. This seemed to point at the Earl of Southampton.

The city of London joins with them.

The Protector offers to treat and submit. Collect. Numb. 42.

On the 9th of October the council at London in-

PART II.

1549.

creased by the accession of the Lord Russel, the Lord Wentworth, Sir Anthony Brown, Sir Anthony Wingfield, and Sir John Baker, the speaker of the House of Commons. For now those who had stood off awhile, seeing the Protector was resolved to yield, came and united themselves with the prevailing party: so that they were in all two-and-twenty. They were informed, that the Protector had said, that if they intended to put him to death, the King should die first; and if they would famish him, they should famish the King first: and that he had armed his own men, and set them next to the King's person, and was designing to carry him out of Windsor, and, as some reported, out of the kingdom: upon which they concluded, that he was no more fit to be Protector. But of those words no proofs being mentioned in the council books, they look like the forgeries of his enemies to make him odious to the people. The council ordered a proclamation of their proceedings to be printed, and writ to the Lady Mary and the Lady Elizabeth, acquainting them with what they had done. They also wrote to the King (as will be found in the Collection), acknowledging the many bonds that lay on them, in gratitude both for his father's goodness to them and his own, to take care of him. They desired he would consider they were his whole council, except one or two; and were those whom his father had trusted with the government; that the Protector was not raised to that power by his father's will, but by their choice, with that condition that he should do all things by their advice; which he, had not observed, so that they now judged him most unworthy of these honours: therefore they earnestly desired they might be admitted to the King's presence, to do their duties about him, and that the forces gathered about his person might be sent away, and the Duke of Somerset might submit himself to the order of council. They also wrote to the Archbishop and Sir William Paget (which is in the Collection), charging them, as they would answer it, that the King's person might be well looked to; that he should not be removed from Windsor; and that he should be no longer guarded by the Duke of Somerset's men (as

Collect. Numb. 43.

Collect. Numb. 44.

they said he had been, of which they complained severely), but by his own sworn servants; and they required them to concur in advancing the desire they had signified by their letter to the King, protesting that they would do with the Duke of Somerset, as they would desire to be done by, and with as much moderation and favour as in honour they could: so that there was no reason to apprehend from them such cruelty as they had mentioned in their letters. These were sent by Sir Philip Hobbey, who was returned from Flanders, and had been sent by the King to London on the day before. Upon this, Cranmer and Paget (as is entered in the council book) persuaded both the King and the Protector to grant their desire. The Protector's servants were dismissed, and the King's were set about his person. And Cranmer, Paget, and Smith, wrote to the council at London, that all they had proposed should be granted: they desired to know whether the King should be brought to London, or stay at Windsor; and that three of the lords might be sent thither, who should see all things done according to their minds; and for other things they referred them to Hobbey, that carried the letter (which is in the Collection). Upon this the council sent Sir Anthony Wingfield, Sir Anthony St. Leiger, and Sir J. Williams, to Windsor, with a charge to see that the Duke of Somerset should not withdraw before they arrived, and that Sir Thomas Smith the secretary, Sir Michael Stanhop, Sir John Thynn, Edward Wolfe, and William Cecil, should be restrained to their chambers till they examined them. On the 12th of October the whole council went to Windsor, and coming to the King, they protested that all they had done was out of the zeal and affection they had to his person and service. The King received them kindly, and thanked them for their care of him, and assured them that he took all they had done in good part. On the 13th day they sate in council, and sent for those who were ordered to be kept in their chambers; only Cecil was let go. They charged them, that they had been the chief instruments about the Duke of Somerset in all his wilful proceedings; therefore they turned Smith out of his place

Collect. Numb. 45.

PART II.

1549.

He is accused and sent to the Tower. Collect. Numb. 46.

of secretary, and sent him with the rest to the Tower of London. On the day following the Protector was called before them, and articles of misdemeanours and high treason were laid to his charge (which will be found in the Collection). The substance of them was, that, being made Protector on condition that he should do nothing without the consent of the other executors, he had not observed that condition, but had treated with ambassadors, made bishops and lord-lieutenants, by his own authority; and that he had held a court of requests in his own house, and had done many things contrary to law; had embased the coin; had in the matter of inclosures set out proclamations, and given commissions, against the mind of the whole council: that he had not taken care to suppress the late insurrections, but had justified and encouraged them: that he had neglected the places the King had in France, by which means they were lost: that he had persuaded the King that the lords who met at London intended to destroy him, and had desired him never to forget it, but to revenge it, and had required some young lords to keep it in his remembrance; and had caused those lords to be proclaimed traitors: that he had said, if he should die, the King should die too: that he had carried the King so suddenly to Windsor, that he was not only put in great fear, but cast into a dangerous disease: that he had gathered the people, and armed them for war; and had armed his friends and servants, and left the King's servants unarmed: and that he intended to fly to Jersey, or Guernsey. So he was sent to the Tower, being conducted thither by the Earls of Sussex and Huntington. That day the King was carried back again to Hampton-Court; and an order was made, that six lords should be the governors of his person; who were, the Marquis of Northampton, the Earls of Warwick and Arundel, the Lords St. John, Russel, and Wentworth. Two of those were in their course to attend constantly on the King.

Censures passed upon him.

And thus fell the Duke of Somerset from his high offices and great trust. The articles objected to him seem to say as much for his justification as the answers could do, if they were in my power. He is not accused

of rapine, cruelty, or bribery; but only of such things as are incident to all men that are of a sudden exalted to a high and disproportioned greatness. What he did about the coin was not for his own advantage, but was done by a common mistake of many governors, who, in the necessity of their affairs, fly to this as their last shift, to draw out their business as long as is possible; but it ever rebounds on the government to its great prejudice and loss. He bore his fall more equally than he had done his prosperity: and set himself in his imprisonment to study and reading: and falling on a book that treated of patience, both from the principles of moral philosophy and of Christianity, he was so much taken with it, that he ordered it to be translated into English, and writ a preface to it himself, mentioning the great comfort he had found in reading it, which had induced him to take care that others might reap the like benefit from it. Peter Martyr writ him also a long consolatory letter, which was printed, both in Latin and in an English translation: and all the reformed, both in England and abroad, looked on his fall as a public loss to that whole interest, which he had so steadily set forward.

The papists much lifted up.

But, on the other hand, the popish party were much lifted up at his fall; and the rather, because they knew the Earl of Southampton, who they hoped should have directed all affairs, was entirely theirs. It was also believed, that the Earl of Warwick had given them secret assurances; so it was understood at the court of France, as Thuanus writes. They had also, among the first things they did, gone about to discharge the Duke of Norfolk of his long imprisonment, in consideration of his great age, his former services, and the extremity of the proceedings against him, which were said to have flowed chiefly from the ill offices the Duke of Somerset had done him. But this was soon laid aside. So now the papists made their addresses to the Earl of Warwick. The Bishop of Winchester wrote to him a hearty congratulation, rejoicing that the late tyranny (so he called the Duke of Somerset's administration), was now at an end: he wished him all prosperity, and de-

PART II.

1549.

sired that, when he had leisure from the great affairs that were in so unsettled a condition, some regard might be had of him. The Bishop of London, being also in good hopes, since the Protector and Smith, whom he esteemed his chief enemies, were now in disgrace, and Cranmer was in cold if not in ill terms with the Earl of Warwick, sent a petition that his appeal might be received, and his process reviewed. Many also began to fall off from going to the English service, or the communion; hoping that all would be quickly undone that had been settled by the Duke of Somerset. But the Earl of Warwick, finding the King so zealously addicted to the carrying on of the Reformation, that nothing could recommend any one so much to him, as the promoting it further would do, soon forsook the popish party, and was seemingly the most earnest on a further reformation that was possible. I do not find that he did write any answer to the Bishop of Winchester. He continued still a prisoner. And for Bonner's matter, there was a new court of delegates appointed to review his appeal, consisting of four civilians and four common lawyers; who, having examined it, reported, that the process had been legally carried on, and the sentence justly given, and that there was no good reason why the appeal should be received; and therefore they rejected it. This being reported to the council, they sent for Bonner in the beginning of February, and declared to him that his appeal was rejected, and that the sentence against him was in full force still.

But their hopes soon vanish.

Ambassadors sent to the Emperor.

But the business of Bulloigne was that which pressed them most. They misdoubting, as was formerly shewn, that Paget had not managed that matter dexterously and earnestly with the Emperor, sent, on the 18th of October, Sir Thomas Cheyney and Sir Philip Hobbey to him, to entreat him to take Bulloigne into his protection; they also sent over the Earl of Huntington to command it, with the addition of a thousand men for the garrison. When the ambassadors came to the Emperor, they desired leave to raise two thousand horse and three thousand foot in his dominions for the pre-

servation of Bulloigne. The Emperor gave them very good words, but insisted much on his league with France, and referred them to the Bishop of Arras, who told them plainly the thing could not be done. So Sir Thomas Cheyney took his leave of the Emperor, who, at parting, desired him to represent to the King's council how necessary it was to consider matters of religion again, that so they might be all of one mind; for, to deal plainly with them, till that were done, he could not assist them so effectually as otherwise he desired to do. And now the council saw clearly, they had not been deceived by Paget in that particular, and therefore resolved to apply themselves to France for a peace. But now the Earl of Warwick falling off wholly from the popish party, the Earl of Southampton left the court in great discontent. He was neither restored to his office of chancellor, nor made lord treasurer; (that place, which was vacant by the Duke of Somerset's fall, being now given to the Lord St. John, who soon after was made Earl of Wiltshire;) nor was he made one of those who had charge of the King's person. So he began to lay a train against the Earl of Warwick; but he was too quick for him, and discovered it: upon which he left the court in the night, and it was said he poisoned himself, or pined away with discontent, for he died in July after.

1549. Cotton Libr. Galba B. 12.

The Earl of Southampton leaves the court.

So now the Reformation was ordered to be carried on: and there being one part of the Divine offices not yet reformed, that is, concerning the giving orders, some bishops and divines, brought now together by a session of parliament, were appointed to prepare a book of ordination,

A new office for ordinations.

But now I turn to the parliament, which sate down on the 4th of November. In it a severe law was made against unlawful assemblies: that if any, to the number of twelve, should meet together unlawfully for any matter of state, and, being required by any lawful magistrate, should not disperse themselves, it should be treason: and if any broke hedges, or violently pulled up pales, about inclosures, without lawful authority, it should be felony. It was also made felony to gather the people together without warrant, by ringing of bells,

A session of parliament.

An act against tumultuary assemblies.

PART II.

1549.

or sound of drums and trumpets, or the firing of beacons. There was also a law made against prophecies concerning the King or his council, since by these the people were disposed to sedition: for the first offence, it was to be punished by imprisonment for a year, and 10*l.* fine: for the second, it was imprisonment during life, with the forfeiture of goods and chattels. All this was on the account of the tumults the former year, and not with any regard to the Duke of Somerset's security, as some have without any reason fancied: for he had now no interest in the parliament, nor was he in a condition any more to apprehend tumults against himself, being stripped of his so much envied greatness. Another law was made against vagabonds, relating, that the former statute made in this reign being too severe, was by that means not executed: so it was repealed, and the law made in King Henry the Eighth's reign put in force: provisions were laid down for relieving the sick and impotent, and setting the poor, that were able, to work: that once a month there should be every where a visitation of the poor by those in office, who should send away such as did not belong to that place, and those were to be carried from constable to constable, till they were brought to such places as were bound to see to them. There was a bill brought in for the repealing of a branch of the act of uniformity, but it went no further than one reading.

And against vagabonds.

On the 14th of November the bishops made a heavy complaint to the Lords, of the abounding of vice and disorder, and that their power was so abridged, that they could punish no sin, nor oblige any to appear before them, or to observe the orders of the church. This was heard by all the Lords with great regret, and they ordered a bill to be drawn about it. On the 18th of November a bill was brought in, but rejected at first reading, because it seemed to give the bishops too much power. So a second bill was appointed to be drawn by a committee of the House. It was agreed to, and sent down to the Commons, who laid it aside after the second reading. They thought it better to renew the design that was in the former reign, of two-and-thirty

The bishops move for a reviving of ecclesiastical censures.

persons being authorized to compile the body of ecclesiastical laws; and when that was prepared, it seemed more proper, by confirming it, to establish ecclesiastical jurisdiction, than to give the bishops any power, while the rules of their courts were so little determined or regulated: so an act passed, empowering the King to name sixteen persons of the spiritualty, of whom four should be bishops, and sixteen of the temporalty, of whom four should be common lawyers, who within three years should compile a body of ecclesiastical laws; and those, being nothing contrary to the common and statute laws of the land, should be published by the King's warrant, under the great seal, and have the force of laws in the ecclesiastical courts. Thus they took care that this should not be turned over to an uncertain period, as it had been done in the former reign, but designed that it should be quickly finished. The bishops of that time were generally so backward in every step to a reformation, that a small number of them was made necessary to be of this commission. The effect that it had shall be afterwards opened. 1549.

There was a bill brought into the House of Commons, that the preaching and holding of some opinions should be declared felony: it passed with them, but was laid aside by the Lords. A bill for the form of ordaining ministers was brought into the House of Lords, and was agreed to, the Bishops of Duresme, Carlisle, Worcester, Chichester, and Westminster, protesting against it. The substance of it was, that such forms of ordaining ministers as should be set forth by the advice of six prelates and six divines, to be named by the King, and authorized by a warrant under the great seal, should be used after April next, and no other. On the 2d of January a bill was put in against the Duke of Somerset, of the articles formerly mentioned, with a confession of them signed by his hand. This he was prevailed with to do, upon assurances given that he should be gently dealt with, if he would freely confess, and submit himself to the King's mercy. But it was said by some of the lords, that they did not know whether that confession was not drawn from him by 1550.

An act about the forms of giving orders.

An act about the Duke of Somerset.

PART II.

1550.

force: and that it might be an ill precedent to pass acts upon such papers, without examining the party, whether he had subscribed them freely and uncompelled: so they sent four temporal lords and four bishops to examine him concerning it. And the day following the Bishop of Coventry and Litchfield made the report, that he thanked them for that kind message, but that he had freely subscribed the confession that lay before them. He had made it on his knees before the King and council, and had signed it on the 13th of December. He protested his offences had flowed from rashness and indiscretion, rather than malice, and that he had no treasonable design against the King or his realms. So he was fined by act of parliament in 2,000*l.* a year of land, and he lost all his goods and offices. Upon this he wrote to the council, acknowledging their favour in bringing off his matter by a fine: he confessed, that he had fallen into the frailties that often attend on great places, but what he had done amiss was rather for want of true judgment, than from any malicious meaning: he humbly desired they would interpose with the King for a moderation of his fine, and that he might be pardoned and restored to favour; assuring them, that for the future he should carry himself so humbly and obediently, that he should thereby make amends for his former follies. This was much censured by many, as a sign of an abject spirit: others thought it was wisely done in him, once to get out of prison on any terms, since the greatness of his former condition gave such jealousy to his enemies, that unless he had his pardon, he would be in continual danger, as long as he was in their hands. So on the 6th of February he was set at liberty, giving bond of 10,000*l.* for his good behaviour; and being limited that he should stay at the King's house of Sheen, or his own of Sion, and should not go four miles from them, nor come to the King or the council, unless he were called: he had his pardon on the 16th of February, and carried himself after that so humbly, that his behaviour, with the King's great kindness to him, did so far prevail, that on the 10th of April after he was restored into favour, and sworn of the

privy-council. And so this storm went over him much more gently than was expected; but his carriage in it was thought to have so little of the hero, that he was not much considered after this.

The Reformation is set on vigorously.

But to go on with the business of the parliament. Reports had been spread that the old service would be again set up: and these were much cherished by those who still loved the former superstition; who gave out, that a change was to be expected, since the new service had been only the act of the Duke of Somerset. Upon this the council wrote on Christmas-day a letter to all the bishops of England, to this effect; "That whereas the English service had been devised by learned men, according to the Scripture, and the use of the primitive church; therefore, for putting away those vain expectations, all clergymen were required to deliver to such as should be appointed by the King to receive them, all antiphonales, missals, grayles, processionals, manuals, legends, pies, portuasses, journals, and ordinals, after the use of Sarum, Lincoln, York, or any other private use: requiring them also to see to the observing one uniform order in the service set forth by the common consent of the realm: and particularly to take care, that there should be every where provision made of bread and wine for the communion on Sunday." This will be found in the Collection. But to give a more public declaration of their zeal, an act was brought into parliament about it, and was agreed to by all the lords; except the Earl of Darby, the Bishops of Duresme, Coventry and Litchfield, Carlisle, Worcester, Westminster, and Chichester, and the Lords Morley, Stourton, Windsor, and Wharton. By it, not only all the books formerly mentioned were to be destroyed, but all that had any image that had belonged to any church or chapel were required to deface it before the last of June: and in all the Primers set out by the late King, the prayers to the saints were to be dashed out. There was also an act for a subsidy to be paid in one year, for which there was a release granted of a branch of the subsidy formerly given. Last of all came the King's general pardon, out of which those in the Tower, or

Collect. Numb. 47.

PART II.

other prisons, on the account of the state, as also all anabaptists, were excepted.

1550.

Thus were all matters ended, and on the 1st of February the parliament was prorogued. Only in the House of Commons there was a debate that deserves to be remembered. It seems, that before this time the eldest sons of peers were not members of the House of Commons: and Sir Francis Russel becoming, by the death of his elder brother, heir-apparent to the Lord Russel; it was on the 21st of January carried, upon a debate, that he should abide in the House as he was before. So it is entered in the original journal of the House of Commons, which was communicated to me by Mr. Surle and Mr. Clark, in whose hands it is now, and is the first journal that ever was taken in that House.

But it may be expected that I should next give an account of the forms of ordination now agreed on. Twelve were appointed by the council to prepare the book; among whom Heath, bishop of Worcester, was one, but he would not consent to the reformations that were proposed in it: so on the 8th of February he was called before the council, and required to agree to that which all the rest had consented to. But he could not be prevailed with to do it. Wherefore on the 4th of March he was committed to the Fleet, because (as it is entered in the council books) that he obstinately denied to subscribe the book for the making of bishops and priests. He had hitherto opposed every thing done towards reformation in parliament, though he had given an entire obedience to it when it was enacted. He was a man of a gentle temper and great prudence, that understood affairs of state better than matters of religion. But now it was resolved to rid the church of those compliers, who submitted out of fear, or interest, to save their benefices; but were still ready upon any favourable conjuncture, to return back to the old superstition.

Heath, bishop of Worcester, put in prison for not agreeing with the others appointed to draw the book for ordinations.

As for the forms of ordination, they found, that the Scripture mentioned only the imposition of hands and prayer. In the Apostolical Constitutions, in the fourth council of Carthage, and in the pretended works of De-

nis the Areopagite, there was no more used. Therefore all those additions of anointing, and giving them consecrated vestments, were later inventions: but most of all, the conceit, which from the time of the council of Florence was generally received, that the rites by which a priest was ordained, were the delivering him the vessels for consecrating the Eucharist, with a power to offer sacrifice to God for the dead and the living. This was a vain novelty, only set up to support the belief of transubstantiation: and had no ground in the Scriptures, nor the primitive practice. So they agreed on a form of ordaining deacons, priests, and bishops, which is the same we yet use, except in some few words that have been added since in the ordination of a priest, or bishop. For there was then no express mention made in the words of ordaining them, that it was for the one or the other office: in both it was said, "Receive thou the Holy Ghost, in the name of the Father," &c. But that having been since made use of to prove both functions the same, it was of late years altered, as it is now. Nor were these words, being the same in giving both orders, any ground to infer that the church esteemed them one order; the rest of the office shewing the contrary very plainly. Another difference between the ordination book set out at that time, and that we now use, was, that the bishop was to lay his one hand on the priest's head, and with his other to give him a Bible, with a chalice and bread in it, saying the words now said at the delivery of the Bible. In the consecration of a bishop there was nothing more than what is yet in use, save that a staff was put into his hand, with this blessing, "Be to the flock of Christ a shepherd." By the rule of this ordinal, a deacon was not to be ordained before he was twenty-one, a priest before he was twenty-four, nor a bishop before he was thirty years of age.

The additions brought into the church of Rome in giving orders.

In this ritual all those superadded rites were cut off, which the later ages had brought in to dress up these performances with the more pomp: whereof we have since a more perfect account than it was possible for them then to have. For in our age, Morinus, a learned priest of the Oratorian order, has published the most

PART II.

1550.

ancient rituals he could find; by which it appears, how these offices swelled in every age by some new addition. About the middle of the sixth century, they anointed and blessed the priest's hands in some parts of France: though the Greek church never used anointing, nor was it in the Roman church two ages after that: for Pope Nicolaus the First plainly says, it was never used in the church of Rome. In the eighth century, the priest's garments were given with a special benediction for the priest's offering expiatory sacrifices: it was no ancienter that that phrase was used in ordinations: and in that same age there was a special benediction of the priest's hands used before they were anointed; and then his head was anointed. This was taken partly from the Levitical law, and partly because the people believed that their kings derived the sacredness of their persons from their being anointed: so the priests having a mind to have their persons secured and exempted from all secular power, were willing enough to use this rite in their ordinations: and in the tenth century, when the belief of transubstantiation was received, the delivering of the vessels for the Eucharist, with the power of offering sacrifices, was brought in, besides a great many other rites. So that the church did never tie itself to one certain form of ordinations; nor did it always make them with the same prayers; for what was accounted anciently the form of ordination, was in the later ages but a preparatory prayer to it.

Interrogations and sponsionsin the new book.

The most considerable addition that was made in the book of ordinations, was the putting questions to the persons to be ordained; who, by answering these, make solemn declarations of sponsions and vows to God. The first question when one is presented to orders, is, "Do you trust that you are inwardly moved by the Holy Ghost to take upon you this office and ministration, to serve God, for the promoting his glory, and for the edifying of his people?" To which he is to answer, He trusts he is. It has been oft lamented, that many come to receive orders before ever they have seriously read over these questions, and examined themselves whether they could, with a good conscience, make the answers

there prescribed: since it is scarce credible that men of common honesty would lie in the presence of God, on so great an occasion: and yet it is too visible, that many have not any such inward vocation, nor have ever considered seriously what it is. If it were well apprehended, that heat that many have to get into orders would soon abate; who perhaps have nothing in their eye but some place of profit, or benefice, to which way must be made by that preceding ceremony: and so enter into orders, as others are associated into fraternities and corporations, with little previous sense of that holy character they are to receive, when they thus dedicate their lives and labours to the service of God in the gospel. In the primitive church the apprehension of this made even good and holy men afraid to enter under such bonds; and therefore they were often to be dragged almost by force, or catched at unawares, and be so initiated: as appears in the lives of those two Greek fathers, Nazianzen and Chrysostom. If men make their first step to the holy altar by such a lie, (as is their pretending to a motion of the Holy Ghost, concerning which they know little, but that they have nothing at all of it,) they have no reason to expect that blessing which otherwise attends on such dedications. And it had been happy for the church, if all those that are authorized to confer orders had stood on this more critically, and not been contented with a bare putting these questions to those who come to be ordained; but had used a due strictness beforehand, suitable to that grave admonition of St. Paul's to Timothy, "Lay hands suddenly on no man, and be not partaker of other men's sins."

In the sponsions made by the priests, they bind themselves to "teach the people committed to their charge, to banish away all erroneous doctrines, and to use both public and private monitions, and exhortations, as well to the sick as the whole, within their cures, as need shall require, and as occasion shall be given." Such as remember that they have plighted their faith for this to God, will feel the pastoral care to be a load indeed, and so be far enough from relinquishing it, or hiring it out perhaps to a loose or ignorant mercenary. These are

PART II.

1550.

the blemishes and scandals that lie on our church, brought on it partly by the corruption of some simoniacal patrons, but chiefly by the negligence of some, and the faultiness of other clergymen; which could never have lost so much ground in the nation, upon such trifling accounts as are the contests since raised about ceremonies, if it were not that the people, by such palpable faults in the persons and behaviour of some churchmen, have been possessed with prejudices, first against them, and then, upon their account, against the whole church: so that these corrupt churchmen are not only to answer to God for all those souls, within their charge, that have perished through their neglect, but, in a great degree, for all the mischief of the schism among us; to the nourishing whereof they have given so great and palpable occasion. The importance of those things made me judge they deserved this digression, from which I now turn to other affairs.

The business of Bulloigne lay heavy on the council. The French had stopped all communication between Calais and it; so that it was not easy to supply it from thence. The council, to rid the nation of the foreigners, sent them all to Calais, with three thousand English, and resolved to force a way through, if it came to extremities: but at this time both the French and English were well disposed to a peace. The King of France knew the Emperor intended to go into Germany next summer, so he longed to be at liberty to wait on his motions. The English council, that opposed the delivery of Bulloigne chiefly to throw off the Duke of Somerset, that being done, were all convinced that it was not worth the cost and danger of a war: only they stood on the indecency of yielding it; especially, they having raised such clamours against the Protector, when he went about the delivering it up. So they made great shows of preparations to defend it, but, at the same time, were not unwilling to listen to propositions of peace. One Guidotti, a Florentine, that lived in England, was employed by the Constable of France, Montmorency, to set on a treaty; yet he was to do it without owning he had any orders from that King. He

It is resolved to deliver Bulloigne to the French.

went often to and again between Paris and London, and at last it was resolved, on both sides, that there should be a treaty. But at this time there was a great change of affairs in Italy. Pope Paul the Third having held that see fifteen years, died the 10th of November, in the eighty-second year of his age, much broken in mind at the calamity of his family, the killing of his son, the loss of Placentia, and the ingratitude of his grandchild. Upon his death, all the cardinals, being gathered from Bologna, Trent, and other neighbouring places, entered the conclave; where one that is to have such a share in the following part of this work was so much concerned, that it will be no impertinent digression to give an account of it. There were great animosities between the Imperialists and the French: Cardinal Farnese had also many votes that followed him; so that these three factions were either of them strong enough to exclude any that was unacceptable to them. Cardinal Pole was set up by Farnese, as a moderate Imperialist, who had carried it so well at Trent, that they saw he would not blindly follow the Emperor. He had lived many years at Viterbo, where he was made legate, after he had given over his practices against England. There he gave himself wholly to the study of divinity, not without some imputations of favouring heresy. For one Antonino Flaminio, that was also suspected of Lutheranism, lived with him. Tremellius, that learned Jew who had been baptized in his house, was also known to incline that way; and many, who left their monasteries and went to Germany, used to stay some time with him on their way, and were well received by him; nor would he proceed against any suspected of heresy. There was cause enough to raise suspicion in a less jealous people than Italians. Yet the vast zeal that he had shewn for the exaltation of the papacy made all those things be overlooked. He was sent one of the Pope's legates to Trent, where he asserted the German doctrine of justification by faith: but upon the Emperor's setting out the Interim, he wrote freely against it. He was, indeed, a man of an easy and generous temper, but much in the power of

1550.

Pope Paul the Third dies.

Cardinal Pole was elected pope.

PART II.

1550.

those whom he loved and trusted. Farnese, therefore, looking on him as one that would be governed by him, and that was acceptable to the Imperialists, and not much hated by the French, the Cardinal of Guise being his friend, resolved to promote him: and, by the scrutiny they made, it was found that they were within two of the number that was requisite. But he seemed so little concerned at it himself, that he desired them not to make too much haste in a thing of that nature, for that dignity was rather to be undertaken with fear, than to be ambitiously desired. The cardinals, who had heard of such things among the ancient Romans, but had seen few such modern instances, and who valued men by nothing more than their ambitious aspiring, imputed this either to dulness or hypocrisy. He himself seemed nothing affected with it, and did not change his behaviour, and carried it with an equality of mind that became one who had divided his time between philosophy and divinity. Caraffa, that hated him, did all he could to alienate the conclave from him; he objected to him, not only heresy, but also the suspicion of incontinence, since he bred up a nun who was believed to be his daughter. Of these things he coldly purged himself; he shewed, that he had suffered so much on the account of religion in his own country, that he was beyond the suspicion of heresy, and he proved that the girl, whom he maintained among the nuns, was an Englishman's daughter, to whom he had assigned an allowance. Caraffa prevailed little, and the next night the number was complete: so that the cardinals came to adore him, and make him Pope; but he, receiving that with his usual coldness, said, it was night, and God loved light better than darkness, therefore he desired to delay it till day came. The Italians, who, whatever judges they may be about the qualifications of such a pope as is necessary for their affairs, understood not this temper of mind, which in better times would have recommended one with the highest advantages, shrunk all from him: and, after some intrigues usual on such occasions, chose the Cardinal de Monte, afterwards Pope Julius the Third; who gave a strange omen of what ad-

vancements he intended to make, when he gave his own hat, according to the custom of the popes, who bestow their hats before they go out of the conclave, on a mean servant of his, who had the charge of a monkey that he kept; and being asked what he observed in him to make him a cardinal, he answered, as much as the cardinals had seen in him to make him Pope. But it was commonly said, that the secret of this promotion was an unnatural affection to him. Upon this occasion I shall refer the reader to a letter which I have put in the Collection, written by Cardinal Wolsey, upon the death of Pope Adrian the Sixth, to get himself chosen pope; it sets out so naturally the intrigues of that court on such occasions, that though it belongs to the former volume, yet, having fallen upon it since I published it, I thought it would be no unacceptable thing to insert in this volume, though it does not belong to it. It will demonstrate how likely it is, that a bishop chosen by such arts should be the infallible judge of controversies and the head of the church.

Collect. Numb. 47.

A treaty between the English and French.

And now to return to England. It was resolved to send ambassadors to France; who were, the Lord Russel, Paget, now made a lord, Secretary Petre, and Sir John Mason. Their instructions will be found in the Collection. The substance of them was, they were not to stick about the place of treaty, but to have it at Calais, or Bulloigne, if it might be: they were to agree to the delivery up of Bulloigne, but to demand, that the Scotch Queen should be sent back, for perfecting the marriage formerly agreed on; that the fortifications of Newhaven and Blackness should be ruinated; that the perpetual pension agreed to King Henry should still be paid, together with all arrears that were due before the wars; they were only to insist on the last, if they saw the former could not be obtained; they were to agree the time and manner of the delivery of Bulloigne to be as honourable as might be. For Scotland, they being also in war with the Emperor, the King of England could not make peace with them, unless the Emperor, his ally, who had made war on them upon his account, were also satisfied: all places there were to be offered

Collect. Numb. 48. Instructions given to the English ambassadors.

PART II.

1550.

up, except Roxburgh and Aymouth. If the French spoke any thing of the King's marrying their King's daughter Elizabeth, they were to put it off; since the King was yet so young. They were also, at first, to agree to no more but a cessation. So they went over on the 21st of January. The French commissioners appointed to treat with them were, Rochpot, Chastilion, Mortier, and De Sany; who desired the meeting might be near Bulloigne, though the English endeavoured to have it brought to Guisnes. Upon the English laying out their demands, the French answered them roundly, that, for delivering up the Queen of Scots, they would not treat about it, nor about a perpetual pension; since, as the King was resolved to marry the Scotch Queen to the Dauphin, so he would give no perpetual pension, which was in effect to become a tributary prince; but for a sum of money, they were ready to treat about it. As to Scotland, they demanded that all the places that had been taken should be restored, as well Roxburgh and Aymouth, as Lauder and Dunglasse. The latter two were soon yielded to, but the commissioners were limited as to the former. There was also some discourse of razing the fortifications of Alderney and Sark, two small islands in the Channel, that belonged to England; the latter was in the hands of the French, who were willing to yield it up, so the fortifications both in it and Alderney were razed. Upon this, there were second instructions sent over from the council (which are in the Collection), that they should so far insist on the keeping of Roxburgh and Aymouth, as to break up their conference upon it; but if that did not work on the French, they should yield it rather than give over the treaty. They were also instructed to require hostages from the French till the money was all paid, and to offer hostages on the part of England till Bulloigne was delivered; and to struggle in the matter of the isles all they could, but not to break about it. Between the giving the first and second instructions, the Lord St. John was created Earl of Wiltshire, as appears by his subscriptions. The commissioners finished their treaty about the end of February, on these articles: on

Collect. Numb. 49.

Articles of the treaty.

condition that all claims of either side should be reserved as they were at the beginning of the war. This was a temper between the English demand of all the arrears of King Henry's pension, and the French denial of it: for thus the King reserved all the right he had before the war. Bulloigne was to be delivered within six months, with all the places about it, and the ordnance, except what the English had cast since they had it: for which surrender the French were to pay four hundred thousand crowns, (then of equal value with the English noble) the one half three days after the town was in their hands, and the other in the August after. There was to be a peace with Scotland; and Roxburgh and Aymouth, Lauder and Dunglasse, were to be razed; and there was to be a free trade between England, France, and Scotland. Six hostages were to be given on either side; all the English were to be sent back upon the delivery of the town; and three of the French on the first, and the rest on the second payment. The French hostages were, the Duke of Enghein, the Marquis de Mean, son to the Duke of Guise, Montmorency, son to the Constable, the Duke of Tremoville, the Vicedam of Chartres, and Henandy, son to Annebault, the admiral. On the English side were, the Duke of Suffolk, the Earl of Hartford, the Earl of Shrewsbury, the Earl of Arundel's son the Lord Strange, and the Lord Matravers. So was the peace concluded; all the articles in it were duly performed, and the hostages delivered back. It was proclaimed in London on the 29th of March, being confirmed by both the Kings. Only it was much observed, that when it was to be confirmed in England, the Earl of Warwick, on pretence of sickness, was absent: those who began to conceive great jealousies of him, thought this was to make a show to the people that he abhorred so dishonourable a thing, as himself had oft called it during the Duke of Somerset's administration, and that therefore he would not by his presence seem to consent to it, though he had signed all the orders for it.

The Earl of Warwick governs the councils.

And now was the King entering in the fourth year of his reign, free from all wars, which had hitherto

PART II.

1550.

much distracted his government. So the council was more at leisure to settle the affairs at home. But the Earl of Warwick, beginning to form great designs, resolved first to make himself popular, by calling all that had meddled in the King's affairs to a strict account; and either to make them compound for great sums, by which the King's debts should be paid, or to keep them under the lash till he made them subservient to his ends. He began with the Earl of Arundel, to whose charge many things being laid, he submitted himself to a fine of 12,000*l.* to be paid in twelve years. This was the more taken notice of, because Southampton, Arundel, and he, with Sir Richard Southwell, master of the rolls, had been the chief contrivers of the Duke of Somerset's fall: Southampton was driven away, Arundel fined, and Southwell was soon after put in the Fleet for dispersing some seditious bills. This wrought much on the vulgar, who imputed it to a secret curse on those who had conspired against the Duke of Somerset; and the delivery of Bulloigne made it yet more plain that the charge against him was chiefly grounded on malice. After Arundel's disgrace, all the Duke of Somerset's friends made their compositions, and were discharged. Sir Thomas Smith, Sir Michael Stanhop, Thomas Fisher, and William Gray, each of them acknowledged they owed the King 3000*l.* and Sir Jo. Thynn submitted to 6000*l.* fine.

Ridley made bishop of London.

But I shall next prosecute the narration of what concerned the church. It was now resolved to fill the see of London: Ridley, being esteemed both the most learned, and most thoroughly zealous for the Reformation, was pitched on to be the man. So on the 21st of February he was writ for, and on the 24th he was declared bishop of London and Westminster, and was to have 1000*l.* a year of the rents of the bishoprick; and for his further supply was dispensed with to hold a prebendary of Canterbury and Westminster. It was thought needless to have two bishopricks so near one another; and some, gaping after the lands of both, procured this union. But I do not see any reason to think, that, at any time in this reign, the suppression of the deaneries



Nicholas Ridley.

and prebends in cathedrals was designed. For neither in the suppression of the bishopricks of Westminster, Gloucester, or Duresme, was there any attempt made to put down the deaneries or prebendaries in these places: so that I look on this as a groundless conceit, among many others that pass concerning this reign. For Thirleby of Westminster, there was no cause given to throw him out; for he obeyed all the laws and injunctions when they came out, though he generally opposed them when they were making. So, to make way for him, William Reps, the bishop of Norwich, was prevailed with to resign, and he was promoted to that see, vacant (as his patent has it) by the free resignation of William, the former bishop. And the same day, being the 1st of April, Ridley was made bishop of London and Westminster. Both were, according to the common form, to be bishops *durante vita naturali*, during life.

Proceedings against Gardiner.

The see of Winchester had been two years as good as vacant, by the long imprisonment of Gardiner, who had been now above two years in the Tower. When the book of Common-Prayer was set out, the Lord St. John, and Secretary Petre, were sent with it to him, to know of him whether he would conform himself to it or not; and they gave him great hopes, that, if he would submit, the Protector would sue to the King for mercy to him. He answered, that he did not know himself guilty of any thing that needed mercy; so he desired to be tried for what had been objected to him, according to law. For the book, he did not think that while he was a prisoner he was bound to give his opinion about such things; it might be thought he did it against his conscience, to obtain his liberty; but if he were out of prison, he should either obey it, or be liable to punishment according to law. Upon the Duke of Somerset's fall, the Lord Treasurer, the Earl of Warwick, Sir William Herbert, and Secretary Petre, were sent to him: (Fox says, this was on the 9th of July, as likewise King Edward in his Journal: but they must be in an error; for Gardiner in his answer says, that, upon the Duke of Somerset's coming to the Tower, he looked

PART II.

1550.

to have been let out within two days, and had made his farewell feast; but when these were with him, a month or thereabout had passed; so it must have been in November the former year.) They brought him a paper, to which they desired he would set his hand. It contained, first, a preface, which was an acknowledgment of former faults, for which he had been justly punished: there were also divers articles contained in it, which were touching the King's supremacy; his power of appointing or dispensing with holy-days and fasts; that the book of Common-Prayer set out by the King and parliament was a most Christian and godly book, to be allowed of by all bishops and pastors in England, and that he should both in sermons and discourses commend it to be observed; that the King's power was complete now when under age, and that all owed obedience to him now, as much as if he were thirty or forty years old; that the six Articles were justly abrogated, and that the King had full authority to correct and reform what was amiss in the church, both in England and Ireland. He only excepted to the preface, and offered to sign all the articles, but would have had the preface left out. They bid him rather write on the margin his exceptions to it; so he writ, that he could not with a good conscience agree to the preface, and with that exception he set his hand to the whole paper. The lords used him with great kindness, and gave him hope that his troubles should be quickly ended. Herbert and Petre came to him some time after that, but how soon is not so clear, and pressed him to make the acknowledgment without exception; he refused it, and said, he would never defame himself, for when he had done it, he was not sure but it might be made use of against him as a confession. Two or three days after that, Ridley was sent to him, together with the other two, and they brought him new articles. In this paper the acknowledgment was more general than in the former: it was said here in the preface, that he had been suspected of not approving the King's proceedings; and being appointed to preach, had not done it as he ought to have done, and so deserved the King's dis-

Some articles are sent to him.

Which he signed with some exceptions.

pleasure, for which he was sorry: the articles related to the Pope's supremacy, the suppression of abbeys and chantries, pilgrimages, masses, images, the adoring the sacrament, the communion in both kinds, the abolishing the old books, and bringing in the new book of service, and that for ordaining of priests and bishops, the completeness of the Scripture, and the use of it in the vulgar tongue, the lawfulness of clergymen's marriage, and to Erasmus's Paraphrase, that it had been on good considerations ordered to be set up in churches. He read all these, and said, he desired first to be discharged of his imprisonment, and then he would freely answer them all, so as to stand by it, and suffer if he did amiss; but he would trouble himself with no more articles while he remained in prison, since he desired not to be delivered out of his troubles in the way of mercy, but of justice. After that, he was brought before the council, and the lords told him they sate by a special commission to judge him, and so required him to subscribe the articles that had been sent to him. He prayed them earnestly to put him to a trial for the grounds of his imprisonment, and when that was over he would clearly answer them in all other things; but he did not think he could subscribe all the articles after one sort, some of them being about laws already made, which he could not qualify, others of them being matters of learning, in which he might use more freedom: in conclusion, he desired leave to take them with him, and he would consider how to answer them But they required him to subscribe them all, without any qualification, which he refused to do. Upon this the fruits of his bishoprick were sequestered, and he was required to conform himself to their orders within three months, upon pain of deprivation; and the liberty he had of walking in some open galleries, when the Duke of Norfolk was not in them, was taken from him, and he was again shut up in his chamber.

1550. New articles sent to him.

But he refusing to sign them, was hardly used.

All this was much censured, as being contrary to the liberties of Englishmen, and the forms of all legal proceedings. It was thought very hard to put a man into prison upon a complaint against him; and, without any

PART II.

1550.

further inquiry into it, after two years' durance, to put articles to him. And they which spoke freely, said it savoured too much of the Inquisition. But the canon law not being rectified, and the King being in the Pope's room, there were some things gathered from the canon law, and the way of proceeding *ex officio*, which rather excused than justified this hard measure he met with. The sequel of this business shall be related in its proper place.

Latimer's advice to the King concerning his marriage.

This Lent, old Latimer preached before the King. The discourse of the King's marrying a daughter of France had alarmed all the reformers, who rather inclined to a daughter of Ferdinand, king of the Romans. (To a marriage with her it is no wonder they all wished well, for both Ferdinand and his son Maximilian were looked upon as princes that in their hearts loved the Reformation, and the son was not only the best prince, but accounted one of the best men of the age.) But Latimer, in his sermon, advised the King to marry in the Lord; and to take care that marriages might not be made only as bargains, which was a thing too frequently done, and occasioned so much whoredom and divorcing in the nation. He run out in a sad lamentation of the vices of the time, the vanity of women, the luxury and irregularity of men: he complained that many were gospellers for love of the abbey and chantry lands: he pressed, that the discipline of the church, and the excommunicating of scandalous persons, might be again set up: he advised the King to beware of seeking his pleasure too much, and to keep none about him who would serve him in it: he said, he was so old, that he believed he would never appear there more, and therefore he discharged his conscience freely: he complained the King's debts were not paid, and yet his officers lived high, made great purchases, and built palaces: he prayed them all to be good to the King, and not to defraud the poor tradesmen that wrought for his stores, who were ill paid. This I set down, not so much to give an account of that sermon, as of the state of the court and nation, which he so freely discoursed of.

Wakeman, that had been abbot of Tewksbury, and



Hugh Latimer.

1550. Hooper is made bishop of Gloucester.

was after made bishop of Gloucester, died in December last year; and on the 3d of July this year, Hooper was, by letters-patents, appointed to be his successor. Upon which there followed a contest that has since had such fatal consequences, that of it we may say with St. James, "How great a matter hath a little fire kindled!" It has been already shewn, that the vestments used in Divine service were appointed to be retained in this church: but Hooper refused to be consecrated in the episcopal vestments. The grounds he went on were, that they were human inventions, brought in by tradition or custom, not suitable to the simplicity of the Christian religion: that all such ceremonies were condemned by St. Paul as beggarly elements: that these vestments had been invented chiefly for celebrating the mass with much pomp, and had been consecrated for that effect; therefore he desired to be excused from the use of them. Cranmer, and Ridley on the other hand, alleged that traditions in matters of faith were justly rejected, but in matters of rites and ceremonies custom was oft a good argument for the continuance of that which had been long used. Those places of St. Paul did only relate to the observance of the Jewish ceremonies, which some in the apostles' times pleaded were still to be retained, upon the authority of their first institution by Moses: so this implying that the Messias was not yet come, in whom all these had their accomplishment, the apostles did condemn the use of them on any such account; though when the bare observing them, without the opinion of any such necessity in them, was likely to gain the Jews, they both used circumcision, and purified themselves in the temple: if then they, who had such absolute authority in those matters, did condescend so far to the weakness of the Jews; it was much more becoming subjects to give obedience to laws in things indifferent. And the abuse that had been formerly was no better reason to take away the use of these vestments, than it was to throw down churches, and take away the bells, because the one had been consecrated, and the other baptized, with many superstitious ceremonies. Therefore, they re-

But refuses to wear the episcopal vestments.

Upon this a great dispute rises.

PART II.

1550.

quired Hooper to conform himself to the law. Cranmer, who, to his other excellent qualities, had joined a singular modesty and distrust of himself, writ about this difference to Bucer, reducing it to these two plain questions: "Whether it was lawful, and free from any sin against God, for the ministers of the church of England to use those garments in which they did then officiate; since they were required to do it by the magistrate's command? And whether he that affirmed that it was unlawful, or on that account refused, to use those vestments, did not sin against God, calling that unclean which God had sanctified, and the magistrate required; since he thereby disturbed the public order of the kingdom?" To this Bucer writ a large answer on the 8th of December this year. He thought, that those who used these garments ought to declare they did not retain them as parts of Moses's law, but as things commanded by the law of the land: he thought every creature of God was good, and no former abuse could make it so ill that it might not be retained; and since these garments had been used by the ancient fathers before popery, and might still be of good use to the weak when well understood, and help to maintain the ministerial dignity, and to shew that the church did not of any lightness change old customs, he thought the retaining them was expedient; that so the people might, by seeing these vestments, consider of the candour and purity that became them: and in this sense, he thought to the pure all things were pure; and so the apostles complied in many things with the Jews. Upon the whole matter, he thought they sinned who refused to obey the laws in that particular. But he added, that since these garments were abused by some to superstition, and by others to be matter of contention, he wished they were taken away, and a more complete reformation established. He also prayed that a stop might be put to the spoiling of churches, and that ecclesiastical discipline against offenders might be set up: For (said he) unless these manifest and horrid sacrileges be put down, and the complete kingdom of Christ be received, so that we all submit to his yoke, how intolerably shall

Bucer's opinion concerning them.

the wrath of God break out on this kingdom! The Scripture sets many such examples before our eyes, and Germany offers a most dreadful prospect of what England might look for.

He writ also to Hooper upon the same argument. He wished the garments were removed by law, but argued fully for the use of them till then: he lamented the great corruptions that were among the clergy, and wished that all good men would unite their strength against these, and then lesser abuses would be more easily redressed. He also answered Hooper's objections on the principles formerly laid down. Peter Martyr was also writ to; and, as he writ to Bucer, he was fully of his mind, and approved of all he had writ about it. And he added these words, which I shall set down in his own terms, copied from the original letter: *Quæ de Hopero ad me scribis, non potuerunt non videri mira; certe illis auditis obstupui. Sed bene habet, quod episcopi literas meas viderunt; unde invidia ego quidem sum liberatus. Ecce illius causa sic jacet, ut melioribus et piis nequaquam probetur. Dolet, dolet, idq; mihi gravissime, talia inter evangelii professores contingere. Ille toto hoc tempore, cum illi sit interdicta concio, non videtur posse quiescere: suæ fidei confessionem edidit, qua rursus multorum animos exacerbavit: deinde queritur de consiliariis, et fortasse, quod mihi non refert, de nobis: Deus felicem catastrophen non lætis actibus imponat.* In English: "What you wrote to me about Hooper could not but seem wonderful to me; when I heard it I was struck with it. It was well that the bishops saw my letters, by which I am freed from their displeasure. His business is now at that pass, that the best and most pious disapprove of it. I am grieved, and sadly grieved, that such things should fall out among the professors of the gospel. All this while in which he is suspended from preaching, he cannot be at rest; he has set out a profession of his faith, by which he has provoked many; he complains of the privy-counsellors, and perhaps of us too, of which he said nothing to me. God give a happy issue to these uncomfortable beginnings." This I set down more fully, that it may appear how far

And P. Martyr's.

PART II.

1550.

either of these divines were from cherishing such stiffness in Hooper. He had been chaplain to the Duke of Somerset, as appeared by his defence of himself in Bonner's process; yet he obtained so much favour of the Earl of Warwick, that he writ earnestly in his behalf to the Archbishop to dispense with the use of the garments, and the oath of canonical obedience at his consecration.* Cranmer wrote back, that he could not do it without incurring a *præmunire*. So the King was moved to write to him, warranting him to do it, without any danger which the law could bring on him for such an omission. But though this was done on the 4th of August, yet he was not consecrated till March next year; and in the mean while it appears by Peter Martyr's letters, that he was suspended from preaching.

A congregation of Germans in London.

This summer, John Alasco, with a congregation of Germans † that fled from their country upon the persecution raised there, for not receiving the Interim, was allowed to hold his assembly at St. Austin's in London. The congregation was erected into a corporation. John Alasco was to be superintendant, and there were four other ministers associated with him. For the curiosity of the thing, I have put the patents in the Collection. There were also three hundred and eighty of the congregation made denizens of England, as appears by the records of their patents. But Alasco did not carry himself with that decency that became a

Collect. Numb. 51.

* The oath of canonical obedience (as printed in the Form of Consecration, anno 1549.) is so unexceptionable, that there seems to be no ground for scruple, it being only a promise of all due reverence and obedience to the Archbishop, &c. It seems to have been the oath of supremacy, which at that time contained expressions more liable to exception, being a kind of *etcetera*-oath, requiring obedience "to acts and statutes, made or to be made;" and concluding with "So helpe me God, all saintes," &c.

Fuller, who was once of opinion that it was the oath of canonical obedience that Hooper scrupled, yet altered his opinion (*Worthies in Somersetshire*, p. 22.) upon these, or such like reasons. Parsons expressly says it was the oath of supremacy. *De tribus Convers.* par. 3. c. 6. s. 68.

† They were most of them Netherlanders, or French, (only a few Germans) and consequently, not concerned with the Interim; and the language they officiated in was the Low German and French, &c.—*Utenhov. Narrat. de Institut. et Dissipat. Belgarium*, &c. p. 12. 28. &c. Those that went off with Alasco, were Low Germans, French, English, or Scots. *Ib.* p. 22.

stranger who was so kindly received; for he wrote against the orders of this church, both in the matter of the habits, and about the posture in the sacrament, being for sitting rather than kneeling.

Polydore Virgil leaves England.

This year, Polydore Virgil, who had been now almost forty years in England, growing old, desired leave to go nearer the sun, which was granted; and in consideration of the public service he was thought to have done the nation by his History, he was permitted to hold his archdeaconry of Wells and his prebend of Nonnington, notwithstanding his absence out of the kingdom. On the 26th of June, Poinet was declared bishop of Rochester, and Coverdale was made coadjutor to Veysy, bishop of Exeter.

Rot. Pat. 4, Ed. 6. 2. Part,

A review of the Common-Prayer-Book.

About the end of this year, or the beginning of the next, there was a review made of the Common-Prayer-Book; several things had been continued in it, either to draw in some of the bishops, who, by such yielding, might be prevailed on to concur in it; or in compliance with the people, who were fond of their old superstitions. So now a review of it was set about: Martin Bucer was consulted in it, and Alesse, the Scotch divine, mentioned in the former Part, translated it into Latin for his use. Upon which, Bucer wrote his opinion, which he finished the 5th of January, in the year following. The substance of it was, that he found all things in the common service and daily prayers were clearly according to the Scriptures. He advised, that in cathedrals the choir might not be too far separated from the congregation, since in some places the people could not hear them read prayers. He wished there were a strict discipline to exclude scandalous livers from the sacrament: he wished the old habits might be laid aside, since some used them superstitiously, and others contended much about them: he did not like the half office of communion, or second service, to be said at the altar when there was no sacrament. He was offended with the requiring the people to receive at least once a year, and would have them pressed to it much more frequently: he disliked that the priests generally read prayers with no devotion, and in such a voice that

Bucer's advice concerning it,

PART II.

1550.

the people understood not what they said: he would have the sacrament delivered into the hands, and not put into the mouths, of the people: he censured praying for the dead, of which no mention is made in the Scripture, nor by Justin Martyr, an age after: he thought that the prayer, that the elements might be to us the body and blood of Christ, favoured transubstantiation too much; a small variation might bring it nearer to a Scripture form. He complained that baptism was generally in houses, which being the receiving infants into the church, ought to be done more publicly. The hallowing of the water, the chrism, and the white garment, he censured, as being too scenical. He excepted to the exorcising the devil, and would have it turned to a prayer to God; that authoritative way of saying, "I adjure," not being so decent. He thought the godfathers answering in the child's name, not so well as to answer in their own, that they should take care in these things all they could: he would not have confirmation given upon a bare recital of the catechism, but would have it delayed till the persons did really desire to renew the baptismal vow: he would have catechising every holy-day, and not every sixth Sunday; and that people should be still catechised, after they were confirmed, to preserve them from ignorance: he would have all marriages to be made in the full congregation: he would have the giving unction to the sick, and praying for the dead, to be quite laid aside; as also the offering the chrisoms at the churching of women: he advised, that the communion should be celebrated four times a year: he sadly lamented the want of faithful teachers, and intreated the Archbishop to see to the mending of this, and to think on some stricter ways of examining those who were to be ordained, than barely the putting of some questions to them. All this I have gathered out the more largely, that it may appear how carefully things were then considered; and that almost in every particular, the most material things which Bucer excepted to were corrected afterwards.

But, at the same time, the King having taken such

care of him, that hearing he had suffered in his health last winter, by the want of a stove, such as is used in Germany, he had sent him 20*l.* to have one made for him; he was told, that the King would expect a new-year's gift from him, of a book made for his own use: so, upon that occasion, he wrote a book, entitled, "Concerning the Kingdom of Christ." He sets out in it the miseries of Germany, which, he says, were brought on them by their sins, for they would bear no discipline; nor were the ministers so earnest in it as was fitting; though in Hungary it was otherwise. He writes largely of ecclesiastical discipline, which was intended chiefly for separating ill men from the sacrament, and to make good men avoid their company, whereby they might be ashamed: he presses much the sanctification of the Lord's-day, and of the other holy-days, and that there might be many days of fasting; but he thought Lent had been so abused, that other times for it might be more expedient. He complains much of pluralities and non-residence, as a remainder of popery, so hurtful to the church, that in many places there were but one or two, or few more sermons in a whole year; but he thought that much was not to be expected from the greatest part of the clergy, unless the King would set himself vigorously to reform these things. Lastly, he would have a complete exposition of the doctrine of the church digested, and set out; and he proposed divers laws to the King's consideration: as,

Bucer wrote a book for the King's use.

1. For catechising children.

2. For sanctifying holy-days.

3. For preserving churches for God's service, not to be made places for walking, or for commerce.

4. To have the pastoral function entirely restored to what it ought to be; that bishops, throwing off all secular cares, should give themselves to their spiritual employments: he advises that coadjutors might be given to some, and a council of presbyters be appointed for them all. It was plain, that many of them complied with the laws against their minds; these he would have deprived. He advises rural bishops to be set over

PART II.

1550.

twenty or thirty parishes, who should gather their clergy often together, and inspect them closely: and that a provincial synod should meet twice a year, where a secular man in the King's name should be appointed to observe their proceedings.

5. For restoring church lands, that all who served the church might be well provided: if any lived in luxury upon their high revenues, it was reasonable to make them use them better, but not to blame or rob the church for their fault.

6. For the maintenance of the poor, for whom, anciently, a fourth part of the church's goods was assigned.

The 7th was about marriage. That the prohibited degrees might be well settled; marriage, without consent of parents, annulled; and that a second marriage might be lawful after a divorce, which he thought might be made for adultery, and some other reasons.

8. For the education of youth.

9. For restraining the excess of some people's living.

10. For reforming and explaining the laws of the land, which his father had begun.

11. To place good magistrates; that no office should be sold, and that inferior magistrates should often give an account to the superior, of the administration of their offices.

12. To consider well who were made judges.

13. To give order that none should be put in prison upon slight offences.

The 14th was for moderating of some punishments: chiefly, the putting thieves to death, which was too severe; whereas, adultery was too slightly passed over: though adultery be a greater wrong to the suffering party than any theft, and so was punished with death by Moses's law.

The King thinks of reforming many abuses. Coll. K. Edw. Remains, Numb. 2.

This book was sent to the young King: and he, having received it, set himself to write a general discourse about a reformation of the nation, which is the second among the discourses written by him, that follow the Journal of his reign. In it he takes notice of the corrections of the book of the Liturgy, which were then

under consideration; as, also, that it was necessary there should be a rule of church discipline, for the censures of ill livers; but he thought that power was not to be put into the hands of all the bishops at that time. From thence he goes on to discourse of the ill state of the nation, and of the remedies that seemed proper for it. The first he proposes, was the education of youth; next, the correction of some laws; and there either broke it off, or the rest of it is lost: in which, as there is a great discovery of a marvellous probity of mind, so there are strange hints, to come from one not yet fourteen years of age: and yet it is all written with his own hand, and in such a manner, that any who shall look on the original, will clearly see it was his own work: the style is simple, and suitable to a child. Few men can make such composures, but somewhat above a child will appear in their style; which makes me conclude it was all a device of his own.

He writes a Journal of all proceedings during his reign.

This year the King began to write his Journal himself: the first three years of his reign are set down in a short way of recapitulating matters; but this year he set down what was done every day, that was of any moment, together with the foreign news that were sent over: and oftentimes he called to mind passages some days after they were done; and some time after the middle of a month he tells what was done in the beginning of it, which shews clearly it was his own work: for if it had been drawn for him by any that were about him, and given him only to copy out for his memory, it would have been more exact; so that there remains no doubt with me but that it was his own originally. And therefore, since all who have writ of that time, have drawn their informations from that Journal; and though they have printed some of the letters he wrote when a child, which are indeed the meanest things that ever fell from him; yet, except one little fragment, nothing of it has been yet published: I have copied it out entirely, and set it before my Collection. I have added to it some other papers that were also writ by him: the first of these is in French; it is a collection of many passages out of the

Coll. K. Edw. Remains, Numb. 1.

PART II.

1550.

Old Testament against idolatry, and the worshipping of images, which he dedicated to his uncle, being then Protector: the original, under his own hand, lies in Trinity College, in Cambridge, from whence I copied the preface and the conclusion, which are printed in the Collection, after his Journal.

Ridley visits his diocess.

There was nothing else done of moment this year, in relation to the church, save the visitation made of the diocess of London, by Ridley, their new bishop: but the exact time of it is not set down in the register: it was, according to King Edward's Journal, some time before the 26th of June; for he writes, that, on that day, Sir Jo. Yates, the high-sheriff of Essex, was sent down with letters to see the Bishop of London's injunctions performed, which touched the plucking down of superaltaries, altars, and such-like ceremonies and abuses; so that the visitation must have been about the beginning of June. The articles of it are in Bishop Sparrow's Collection: they are concerning the doctrines, and lives, and labours, and charities, of the clergy; viz. whether they spake in favour of the Bishop of Rome, or against the use of the Scripture, or against the book of Common-Prayer? Whether they stirred up sedition, or sold the communion, or trentals, or used private masses any where? Whether any anabaptists, or others, used private conventicles, with different opinions and forms from those established? Whether there were any that said the wickedness of the minister took away the effect of the sacraments, or denied repentance to such as sinned after baptism? Other questions were about baptisms and marriages. Whether the curates did visit the sick, and bury the dead, and expound the Catechism, at least some part of it, once in six weeks? Whether any observed abrogated holy-days, or the rites that were now put down?

Collect. Numb. 52.

To these he added some injunctions, which are in the Collection: most of them relate to the old superstitions, which some of the priests were still inclinable to practise, and for which they had been gently, if at all, reproved by Bonner. Such were, washing their hands at the altar, holding up the bread, licking the

chalice, blessing their eyes with the patten or sudary, and many other relics of the mass. The ministers were also required to charge the people oft to give alms, and to come oft to the communion, and to carry themselves reverently at church: but that which was most new, was, that there having been great contests about the form of the Lord's board, whether it should be made as an altar, or as a table; therefore, since the form of a table was more like to turn the people from the superstition of the popish mass, and to the right use of the Lord's supper, he exhorted the curates and churchwardens to have it in the fashion of a table, decently covered; and to place it in such part of the choir or chancel as should be most meet, so that the ministers and communicants should be separated from the rest of the people; and that they should put down all by-altars.

He orders all altars to be turned to tables for the communion.

There are many passages among ancient writers, that shew their communion-tables were of wood, and that they were so made as tables, that those who fled into churches for sanctuary did hide themselves under them. The name altar, came to be given to these generally, because they accounted the Eucharist a sacrifice of praise, as also a commemorative sacrifice of the oblation which Christ made of himself on the cross. From hence it was, that the communion-table was called also an altar. But now it came to be considered, whether, as these terms had been on good reason brought into the church, when there was no thought of the corruptions that followed; so, if it was not fit, since they did still support the belief of an expiatory sacrifice in the mass, and the opinion of transubstantiation, and were always but figurative forms of speech, to change them; and to do that more effectually, to change the form and place of them. Some have fondly thought, that Ridley gave this injunction after the letter which the council wrote to him in the end of November following. But as there was no set time to begin a visitation after that time this year, so the style of the injunctions shews they were given before the letter: the injunction only exhorts the curates to do it, which Ridley could not

PART II.

1550.

have done in such soft words, after the council had required and commanded him to do it: so it appears, that the injunctions were given only by his episcopal power; and that afterwards, the same matter being brought before the council, who were informed, that in many places there had been contests about it, some being for keeping to their old custom, and others being set on a change, the council thought fit to send their letter concerning it to Ridley on the 24th of November following. The letter sets out, that altars were taken away in divers places, upon good and godly considerations, but still continued in other places; by which there rose much contention among the King's subjects: therefore, for avoiding that, they did charge and command him to give substantial order through all his diocess, for removing all altars, and setting up tables every where for the communion to be administered in some convenient part of the chancel; and, that these orders might be the better received, there were reasons sent with the letters, which he was to cause discreet preachers to declare, in such places as he thought fit, and that himself should set them out in his own cathedral, if conveniently he could.

The reasons* were, to remove the people from the superstitious opinions of the popish mass; and because a table was a more proper name than an altar, for that on which the sacrament was laid: and whereas, in the book of Common-Prayer these terms are promiscuously used, it is done without prescribing any thing about the form of them, so that the changing the one into the other did not alter any part of the Liturgy. It was observed, that altars were erected for the sacrifices under the law, which ceasing, they were also to cease; and that Christ had instituted the sacrament not at an altar, but at a table: and it had been ordered by the preface to the book of Common-Prayer, that if any doubt arose about any part of it, the determining of it should be referred to the bishop of the diocess. Upon these reasons, therefore, was this change ordered to be made

* These reasons were drawn up by Ridley.

all over England, which was universally executed this year.

1550.

There began this year a practice, which might seem in itself not only innocent, but good, of preaching sermons and lectures on the week-days, to which there was great running from neighbouring parishes. This, as it begat emulation in the clergy, so it was made use of as a pretence for many to leave their labour, and gad idly about. Upon complaint, therefore, made of it, Ridley had a letter sent to him from the council, against all preaching on working-days, on which there should only be prayers. How this was submitted to then is not clear; but it cannot be denied, that there have been, since that time, excesses on all hands in this matter; while some have, with great sincerity and devotion, kept up these in market-towns, but others have carried them on with too much faction, and a design to detract from such as were not so eminent in their way of preaching. Upon these abuses, while some rulers have studied to put all such performances down, rather than to correct the abuses in them, great contradiction has followed on it; and the people have been possessed with unjust prejudices against them, as hinderers of the word of God, and that opposition has kept up the zeal for these lectures; which, nevertheless, since they have been more freely preached, have of late years produced none of the ill effects that did follow them formerly, when they were endeavoured to be suppressed.

Sermons on working-days forbidden.

And thus I end the transactions about religion this year. The rest of the affairs at home were chiefly for the regulating of many abuses that had grown up, and been nourished by a long continuance of war. All the foreign soldiers were dismissed; and though the Duke of Lunenburg had offered the King ten thousand men to his assistance, and desired to enter into a treaty of marriage for the Lady Mary, they only thanked him for the offer of his soldiers, of which they, being now at peace with all their neighbours, had no need; and since the proposition for marrying the Lady Mary to the Infant of Portugal was yet in dependance, they could

PART II.

1550.

not treat in that kind with any other prince till that overture was some way ended. There were endeavours also for encouraging trade, and reforming the coin. And at the court things began to put on a new visage; for there was no more any faction: the Duke of Somerset and the Earl of Warwick being now joined into a near alliance, the Earl's eldest son, the Lord Lisle, marrying the Duke's daughter; so that there was a good prospect of happy times.

The affairs of Scotland,

In Scotland, the peace being proclaimed, the government was now more entirely in the hands of the Duke of Castelherault, who gave himself up wholly to the counsels of his base brother, who was Archbishop of St. Andrew's; and he was so abandoned to his pleasures, that there was nothing so bad that he was ashamed of; he kept another man's wife openly for his concubine: there were also many excesses in the government: which things, as they alienated all people's minds from the clergy, so they disposed them to receive the new doctrines, which many teachers were bringing from England, and prepared them for the changes that followed afterwards. The Queen-Mother went over into France, in September, pretending it was to see her daughter, and the rest of her kindred there; where she laid down the method for the wresting of the government of Scotland out of the Governor's hands, and taking it into her own.

And of Germany.

The Emperor appointed a diet of the empire to meet in the end of July, and required all to appear personally at it, except such as were hindered by sickness, of which they were to make faith upon oath; and at the same time he proscribed the town of Magdeburg; but the magistrates of that town set out a large manifesto for their own vindication, as they had done the former year. They said, "They were ready to give him all the obedience that they were bound to by the laws of the empire: they were very apprehensive of the mischiefs of a civil war: they were not so blind as to think they were able to resist the Emperor's great armies, lifted up with so many victories, if they trusted only to their own strength; they had hitherto done no act of hosti-

lity to any, but what they were forced to for their own defence. It was visible, the true ground of the war of Germany was religion, to extinguish the light of the gospel, and to subdue them again to the papal tyranny; for the artifices that were formerly used to disguise it, did now appear too manifestly, so that it was not any more denied: but it would be too late to see it when Germany was quite oppressed. In civil matters, they said, they would yield to the miseries of the time; but St. Peter had taught them, that it was better to obey God than man; and, therefore, they were resolved to put all things to hazard, rather than to make shipwreck of faith and a good conscience." There were tumults raised in Strasburg, and divers other towns, against those who set up the mass among them; and, generally, all Germany was disposed to a revolt, if they had had but a head to lead them.

The Emperor had also set out a very severe edict in Flanders when he left it, against all that favoured the new doctrines, as they were called; but the execution of this was stopped at the intercession of the town of Antwerp, when they perceived the English were resolved to remove from thence, and carry their trade to some other place. When the diet was opened, the Emperor pressed them to submit to the council which the new Pope had removed back to Trent. Maurice, of Saxe, answered, he could not submit to it, unless all that had been done formerly in it should be reviewed, and the divines of the Augsburg Confession were both heard and admitted to a suffrage, and the Pope should subject himself to their decrees, and dispense with the oath which the bishops had sworn to him: on these terms he would submit to it, and not otherwise. This was refused to be entered into the registers of the diet by the Elector of Mentz; but there was no haste, for the council was not to sit till the next year. The Emperor complained much that the Interim was not generally received; to which it was answered by the princes, that it was necessary to give the people time to overcome their former prejudices. All seemed to comply with him; and Maurice did so insinuate himself into him,

PART II.

1550. that the siege of Magdeburg being now formed, and a great many princes having gathered forces against it, among whom the Duke of Brunswick and the Duke of Meckleburg were the most forward; yet he got himself declared, by the diet-general of the empire, for the reduction of that place, and he had one hundred thousand crowns for undertaking it, and sixty thousand crowns a month were appointed for the expense of the war. He saw well, that if Magdeburg were closely pressed, it would soon be taken, and then all Germany would be brought to the Emperor's devotion, and so the war would end in a slavery; but he hoped so to manage this small remainder of the war, as to draw great effects from it. This was a fatal step to the Emperor, thus to trust a Prince who was of a different religion, and had a deep resentment of the injury he had done him, in detaining his father-in-law, the Landgrave of Hesse, prisoner, against the faith he had given him: but the Emperor reckoned, that, as long as he had John Duke of Saxe in his hands, Maurice durst not depart from his interests, since it seemed an easy thing for him to repossess the other of his dominions and dignity. Thus was the crafty Emperor deluded, and now put that, upon which the completing of his great designs depended, into the hands of one that proved too hard for him at that in which he was such a master, cunning and dissimulation.

1551. The compliance of the popish clergy. In these consultations did this year end. In the beginning of the next year, there was a great complaint brought against Dr. Oglethorp, afterwards bishop of Carlisle under Queen Mary, and now president of Magdalen College in Oxford. But he, to secure himself from that part of the complaint that related to religion, being accused as one that was against the new book of service, and the King's other proceedings, signed a paper (which will be found in the Collection), in which he declared, "that he had never taught any thing openly against those, but that he thought them good, if well used: and that he thought the order of religion now set forth to be better and much nearer the use of the apostolical and primitive church, than that which was for-

Collect. Numb. 53.

merly: and that, in particular, he did approve of the communion in both kinds, the people's communicating always with the priest, the service in English, and the Homilies that had been set forth: and that he did reject the lately received doctrine of transubstantiation, as being not agreeable to the Scriptures, or to ancient writers: but he thought there was an inconceivable presence of Christ's body in the sacrament, and that therefore it should be received not without great examination beforehand." So compliant was he now, though he became of another mind in Queen Mary's time; yet then he was more moderate, than the greatest part of those who did now comply most servilely. In particular, Dr. Smith had written a book for the celibate of priests, and had opposed all the changes that had been made: he was brought to London upon the complaints that were sent up against him from Oxford, but, after a whiles imprisonment, he was set at liberty, giving surety for his good behaviour: and carried himself so obediently after it, that Cranmer got his sureties to be discharged; upon which he writ him a letter as full of acknowledgment as was possible: which is in the Collection. "He protested he should retain the sense of it as long as he lived: he wished that he had never written his book of the celibate of priests, which had been printed against his will: he found he was mistaken in that which was the foundation of it all, that the priests of England had taken a vow against marriage: he desired to see some of the collections Cranmer had made against it." (It seems Cranmer was inquiring after a MS. of Ignatius's Epistles, for he tells him, "they were in Magdalen College library.") "He acknowledged the Archbishop's great gentleness toward all those who had been complained of for religion in that University: and protested, that for his own part if ever he could serve his basest servant, he would do it; wishing that he might perish if he thought otherwise than he said: and wished him long life for the propagation and advancement of the Christian doctrine." Soon after he writ another letter to Cranmer, in which he cited some passages out of Austin concerning his retractations; and professes he would

1551.

Collect. Numb. 54.

PART II.

1551.

not be ashamed to make the like, and to set forth Christ's true religion; and called, in St. Paul's words, "God to be a witness against his soul if he lied." He had also in the beginning of this reign made a recantation sermon of some opinions he had held concerning the mass; but what these were, King Edward's Journal (from whence I gather it) does not inform us.* Day, bishop of Chichester, did also now so far comply, as to preach a sermon at court against transubstantiation, though he had refused to set his hand to the book of Common-Prayer, before it was enacted by law. For the principle that generally run among the popish party, was, that though they would not consent to the making of such alterations in religion, yet, being made, they would give obedience to them, which Gardiner plainly professed: and it appeared in the practice of all the rest. This was certainly a gross sort of compliance, in those who retained the old opinions, and yet did now declare against them; and, in the worship they offered up to God, acted contrary to them; which was the highest degree of prevarication both with God and man that was possible. But Cranmer was always gentle and moderate. He left their private consciences to God: but thought, that if they gave an external obedience, the people would be brought to receive the changes more easily; whereas the proceeding severely against them might have raised more opposition. He was also naturally a man of bowels and compassion, and did not love to drive things to extremities: he considered that men who had grown old in some errors could not easily lay them down, and so were by degrees to be worn out of them. Only in the proceedings against Gardiner and Bonner, he was carried beyond his ordinary temper. But Gardiner he knew to be so inveterate a papist, and so deep

* The particulars were, 1. Concerning submission to governors in church and state; 2. Concerning unwritten traditions; 3. Concerning the sacrifice of the mass, &c. as may be seen in his retraction, printed at London in 1547, entitled, "A godly and faithful Retraction, made and published at Paul's Cross in London, anno 1547, 15th May; by Master Richard Smith, D. D. and reader of the King's Majesties Lecture in Oxford, revoking therein certain errors and faults, by him committed in some of his books." It was repeated at Oxford, July 24th, the same year.

a dissembler, that he was for throwing him out, not so much for the particulars objected to him, as upon the ill character he had of him. Bonner had also deceived him so formally, and had been so cruel a persecutor upon the statute of the six Articles, and was become so brutal and luxurious, that he judged it necessary to purge the church of him. And the sees of London and Winchester were of such consequence, that he was induced, for having these well supplied, to stretch a little in these proceedings against those dissembling bishops.

Bucer's death.

In the beginning of March he lost his friend Martin Bucer, on whose assistance he had depended much, in what remained yet to be done. Bucer died of the stone, and griping of the guts. Bradford, who will be mentioned in the next book with much honour, waited most on him in his sickness. He lamented much the desolate state of Germany, and expressed his apprehensions of some such stroke coming upon England, by reason of the great dissoluteness of the people's manners, of the want of ecclesiastical discipline, and the general neglect of the pastoral charge. He was very patient in all his pain, which grew violent on him ; he lay oft silent, only after long intervals cried out sometimes, " Chastise me, Lord, but throw me not off in mine old age." He was by order from Cranmer and Sir John Cheek, buried with the highest solemnities that could be devised, to express the value the University had for him. The Vice Chancellor, and all the graduates, and the Mayor, with all the town, accompanied his funeral to St. Mary's ; where, after prayers, Haddon, the University orator, made such a speech concerning him, and pronounced it with that affection, that almost the whole assembly shed tears. Next Dr. Parker, that had been his most intimate friend, made an English sermon in his praise, and concerning the sorrowing for our departed friends. And the day following, Dr. Redmayn, then master of Trinity College, made another sermon concerning death : and in it gave a full account of Bucer's life and death. He particularly commended the great sweetness of his temper to all, but remarkably to those who differed from

PART II.

1551.

him. Redmayn and he had differed in many things, both concerning justification and the influences of the Divine grace. But he said, as Bucer had satisfied him in some things, so he believed if he had lived he had satisfied him in more; and that he being dead, he knew none alive from whom he could learn so much. This character given him by so grave and learned a man, who was in many points of a different persuasion from him, was a great commendation to them both. And Redmayn was, indeed, an extraordinary person. All in the University, that were eminent either in Greek or Latin poetry, did adorn his coffin with epitaphs: in which they expressed a very extraordinary sense of their loss: about which one Carr * writ a copious and passionate letter to Sir John Cheek. But Peter Martyr bore his death with the most sensible sorrow that could be imagined; having in him lost a father, and the only intimate friend he had in England. He was a very learned, judicious, pious, and moderate person. Perhaps he was inferior to none of all the reformers for learning: but for zeal, for true piety, and a most tender care of preserving unity among the foreign churches, Melancthon and he, without any injury done the rest, may be ranked apart by themselves. He was much opposed by the popish party at Cambridge; who, though they complied with the law, and so kept their places, yet, either in the way of argument, as it had been for dispute's sake, or in such points as were not determined, set themselves much to lessen his esteem. Nor was he furnished naturally with the quickness that is necessary for a dispute, from which they studied to draw advantages: and therefore Peter Martyr writ to him to avoid all public disputes with them: for they did not deal candidly on these occasions. They often kept up their questions till the hour of the dispute, that so the extemporary faculty of him who was to preside might be the more exposed; and right or wrong they used to make exclamations, and run away with a triumph. In one of his letters to Bucer, he particularly mentions Dr. Smith for

His character.

* Nicholas Carr, regius professor of the Greek tongue, and a great restorer of learning in that University.

an instance of this. It was that Smith he said who writ against the marriage of priests, and yet was believed to live in adultery with his man's wife. This letter was occasioned by the disputes that were in August the former year, between Bucer and Sedgwick, Young and Pern, about the authority of the Scripture, and the church. Which disputes Bucer intending to publish, caused them to be writ out, and sent the copy to them to be corrected, offering them, that if any thing was omitted that they had said, or if they had any thing else to say which was forgot in the dispute, they might add it: but they sent back the papers to him without vouchsafing to read them. At Ratisbone he had a conference with Gardiner, who was then King Henry's ambassador: in which Gardiner broke out into such a violent passion, that as he spared no reproachful words, so the company thought he would have fallen on Bucer and beat him: he was in such disorder, that the little vein between his thumb and fore-finger did swell and palpitate, which Bucer said he had never before that observed in any person in his life.

Gardiner is deprived.

But as Bucer was taken away by death, so Gardiner was some time before put out, which was a kind of death; though he had afterwards a resurrection fatal to very many. There was a commission issued out to the Archbishop; the Bishops of London, Ely, and Lincoln; Secretary Petre; Judge Hales; Griffith Leyson and John Oliver, two civilians; and Goodrick and Gosnold, two masters of chancery, to proceed against Gardiner for his contempt in the matters formerly objected to him. He put in a compurgation, by which he endeavoured to shew there was malice borne to him, and conspiracies against him, as appeared by the business of Sir Henry Knevet, mentioned in the former part, and the leaving him out of the late King's will, which he said was procured by his enemies. He complained of his long imprisonment without any trial, and that articles of one sort after another were brought to him: so that it was plain he was not detained for any crime, but to try if such usage could force him to do any thing that should be imposed on him. He declared, that what

PART II.

1551.

order soever were set out by the King's council, he should never speak against it, but to the council themselves; and that though he could not give consent to the changes before they were made, he was now well satisfied to obey them; but he would never make any acknowledgment of any fault. The things chiefly laid against him, were, that being required, he refused, to preach concerning the King's power when he was under age; and that he had affronted preachers sent by the King into his diocess; and had been negligent in obeying the King's injunctions; and continued, after all, so obstinate, that he would not confess his fault nor ask the King mercy. His crimes were aggravated by this, that his timely asserting the King's power under age, might have been a great mean for preventing the rebellion and effusion of blood; which had afterwards happened, chiefly on that pretence, to which his obstinacy had given no small occasion. Upon this, many witnesses were examined; chiefly the Duke of Somerset, the Earls of Wiltshire and Bedford, who deposed against him. But to this he answered, that he was not required to do it by any order of council, but only in a private discourse, to which he did not think himself bound to give obedience. Other witnesses were also examined on the other particulars. But he appealed from the delegates to the King in person. Yet his judges, on the 18th of April, gave sentence against him; by which, for his disobedience and contempt, they deprived him of his bishoprick. Upon that he renewed his protestation and appeal: and so his process ended, and he was sent back to the Tower, where he lay till Queen Mary discharged him.

The same censures, with the same justifications, belong both to this and Bonner's business; so I shall repeat nothing that was formerly said. He had taken a commission, as well as Bonner, to hold his bishoprick only during the King's pleasure; so they both had the less reason to complain, which way soever the royal pleasure was signified to them. Eight days after, on the 26th of April, Poinet was translated from Rochester to Winchester; and had two thousand marks a year in

lands assigned him out of that wealthy bishoprick for his subsistence. Dr. Scory was made bishop of Rochester. Veysey, bishop of Exeter, did also resign, pretending extreme old age; but he had reserved 485*l.* a year in pension for himself, during life, out of the lands of the bishoprick; and almost all the rest he had basely alienated, taking care only of himself, and ruining his successors. Miles Coverdale was made bishop of Exeter. So that now the bishopricks were generally filled with men well affected to the Reformation. The business of Hooper was now also settled. He was to be attired in the vestments that were prescribed, when he was consecrated, and when he preached before the King, or in his cathedral, or in any public place; but he was dispensed with upon other occasions. On these conditions he was consecrated in March: for the writ for doing it bears date the 7th of that month. So now the bishops being generally addicted to the purity of religion, most of this year was spent in preparing articles, which should contain the doctrine of the church of England.

1551.

Hooper is consecrated upon his conformity.

Many thought they should have begun first of all with those. But Cranmer upon good reasons was of another mind, though much pressed by Bucer about it. Till the order of bishops was brought to such a model, that the far greater part of them would agree to it, it was much fitter to let that design go on slowly, than to set out a profession of their belief, to which so great a part of the chief pastors might be obstinately averse. The corruptions that were most important were those in the worship, by which men, in their immediate addresses to God, were necessarily involved in unlawful compliances, and these seemed to require a more speedy reformation. But for speculative points, there was not so pressing a necessity to have them all explained, since in these men might, with less prejudice, be left to a freedom in their opinions. It seemed also advisable to open and ventilate matters in public disputations and books written about them for some years, before they should go too hastily to determine them: lest, if they went too fast in that affair, it would not be so decent to make altera-

PART II.

1551.

tions afterwards; nor could the clergy be of a sudden brought to change their old opinions. Therefore, upon all these considerations, that work was delayed till this year; in which they set about it, and finished it, before the convocation met in the next February. In what method they proceeded for the compiling of these articles, whether they were given out to several bishops and divines to deliver their opinions concerning them, as was done formerly, or not, it is not certain. I have found it often said, that they were framed by Cranmer and Ridley; which I think more probable; and that they were by them sent about to others, to correct or add to them as they saw cause. They are in the Collection, with the differences between these and those set out in Queen Elizabeth's time marked on the margin.

Collect. Numb. 55.

The articles of religion are prepared.

They began with the assertion of the blessed Trinity, the incarnation of the eternal Word, and Christ's descent into hell; grounding this last on those words of St. Peter, of his "preaching to the spirits that were in prison." The next article was about Christ's resurrection. The fifth, about the Scriptures containing all things necessary to salvation: so that nothing was to be held an article of faith that could not be proved from thence. The sixth, that the Old Testament was to be kept still.

The 7th, for the receiving the three creeds, the Apostles', the Nicene, and Athanasius' Creed: in which they went according to the received opinion, that Athanasius was the author of that Creed, which is now found not to have been compiled till near three ages after him.

The 8th makes original sin to be the corruption of the nature of all men descending from Adam; by which they had fallen from original righteousness, and were by nature given to evil: but they defined nothing about the derivation of guilt from Adam's sin.

The 9th; For the necessity of prevailing grace, without which we have no free will to do things acceptable to God.

The 10th; About Divine grace, which changeth a man, yet puts no force on his will.

The 11th; That men are justified by faith only; as was declared in the Homily.

The 12th; That works done before grace are not without sin.

The 13th; Against all works of supererogation.

The 14th; That all men, Christ only excepted, are guilty of sin.

The 15th; That men who have received grace may sin afterwards, and rise again by repentance.

The 16th; That the blaspheming against the Holy Ghost is, when men out of malice and obstinacy rail against God's word, though they are convinced of it, yet persecuting it: which is unpardonable.

The 17th; That predestination is God's free election of those, whom he afterwards justifies: which though it be matter of great comfort to such as consider it aright, yet it is a dangerous thing for curious and carnal men to pry into: and it being a secret, men are to be governed by God's revealed will. They added not a word of reprobation.

The 18th; That only the name of Christ, and not the law or light of nature, can save men.

The 19th; That all men are bound to keep the moral law.

The 20th; That the church is a congregation of faithful men, who have the word of God preached, and the sacraments rightly administered: and that the church of Rome, as well as other particular churches, have erred in matters of faith.

The 21st; That the church is only the witness and keeper of the word of God: but cannot appoint any thing contrary to it, nor declare any articles of faith without warrant from it.

The 22d; That general councils may not be gathered without the consent of princes: that they may err and have erred in matters of faith: and that their decrees in matters of salvation have strength only as they are taken out of the Scriptures.

The 23d; That the doctrines of purgatory, pardons, worshipping of images and relics, and invocation of saints, are without any warrant, and contrary to the Scriptures.

The 24th; That none may preach or minister the

PART II.

1551.

sacraments, without he be lawfully called by men who have lawful authority.

The 25th; That all things should be spoken in the church in a vulgar tongue.

The 26th; That there are two sacraments, which are not bare tokens of our profession, but effectual signs of God's good will to us: which strengthen our faith, yet not by virtue only of the work wrought, but in those who receive them worthily.

The 27th; That the virtue of these does not depend on the minister of them.

The 28th; That by baptism we are the adopted sons of God; and that infant baptism is to be commended, and in any ways to be retained.

The 29th; That the Lord's supper is not a bare token of love among Christians; but is the communion of the body and blood of Christ: that the doctrine of transubstantiation is contrary to Scripture, and hath given occasion to much superstition: that a body being only in one place, and Christ's body being in heaven, therefore there cannot be a real and bodily presence of his flesh and blood in it: and that this sacrament is not to be kept, carried about, lifted up, nor worshipped.

The 30th; That there is no other propitiatory sacrifice, but that which Christ offered on the cross.

The 31st; That the clergy are not by God's command obliged to abstain from marriage.

The 32d; That persons rightly excommunicated are to be looked on as heathens, till they are by penance reconciled, and received by a judge competent.

The 33d; It is not necessary that ceremonies should be the same at all times: but such as refuse to obey lawful ceremonies, ought to be openly reproved as offending against law and order, giving scandal to the weak.

The 34th; That the Homilies are godly and wholesome, and ought to be read.

The 35th; That the book of Common-Prayer is not repugnant, but agreeable to the gospel; and ought to be received by all.

The 36th; That the King is supreme head under Christ: that the Bishop of Rome hath no jurisdiction

in England: that the civil magistrate is to be obeyed for conscience' sake: that men may be put to death for great offences: and that it is lawful for Christians to make war.

The 37th; That there is not to be a community of all men's goods; but yet every man ought to give to the poor according to his ability.

The 38th; That though rash swearing is condemned, yet such as are required by the magistrate may take an oath.

The 39th; That the resurrection is not already past, but at the last day men shall rise with the same bodies they now have.

The 40th; That departed souls do not die, nor sleep with their bodies, and continue without sense till the last day.

The 41st; That the fable of the millenaries is contrary to Scripture, and a Jewish dotage.

The last condemned those who believed that the damned, after some time of suffering, shall be saved.

Thus was the doctrine of the church cast into a short and plain form: in which they took care both to establish the positive articles of religion, and to cut off the errors formerly introduced in the time of popery, or of late broached by the anabaptists and enthusiasts of Germany: avoiding the niceties of schoolmen, or the peremptoriness of the writers of controversy: leaving, in matters that are more justly controvertible, a liberty to divines to follow their private opinions, without thereby disturbing the peace of the church.

There was in the ancient church a great simplicity in their creeds, and the exposition of the doctrine. But afterwards, upon the breaking out of the Arian and other heresies, concerning the person of Jesus Christ, as the orthodox fathers were put to find out new terms to drive the heretics out of the equivocal use of those formerly received, so they too soon grew to love niceties, and to explain mysteries with similes, and other subtilties which they invented: and councils afterwards were very liberal in their anathematisms against any who did not agree in all points to their terms or ways

PART II.

1551.

of explanation. And though the council of Ephesus decreed, that there should be no additions made to the creed, they understood that not of the whole belief of Christians, but only of the creed itself: and did also load the Christian doctrine with many curiosities. But though they had exceeded much, yet the schoolmen getting the management of the doctrine, spun their thread much finer: and did easily procure condemnations, either by papal bulls, or the decrees of such councils as met in those times, of all that differed from them in the least matter. Upon the progress of the Reformation, the German writers, particularly Osiander, Illiricus, and Amstorfius, grew too peremptory, and not only condemned the Helvetian churches for differing from them in the manner of Christ's presence in the sacrament, but were severe to one another for lesser punctilios; and were at this time exercising the patience of the great and learned Melancthon, because he thought, that, in things of their own nature indifferent, they ought to have complied with the Emperor. This made those in England resolve on composing these articles with great temper in many such points. Only one notion, that has been since taken up by some, seems not to have been then thought of; which is, that these were rather articles of peace than of belief: so that the subscribing was rather a compromise not to teach any doctrine contrary to them, than a declaration that they believed according to them. There appears no reason for this conceit, no such thing being then declared; so that those who subscribed, did either believe them to be true, or else they did grossly prevaricate.

Some corrections made in the Common-Prayer-Book.

The next business in which the reformers were employed this year was, the correcting the Common-Prayer-Book, and the making some additions, with the changing of such particulars as had been retained only for a time. The most considerable additions were, that in the daily service they prepared a short, but most simple and grave, form of a general confession of sins; in the use of which they intended, that those who made this confession, should not content themselves with a bare recital of the words, but should join with them in

their hearts, a particular confession of their private sins to God. To this was added, a general absolution, or pronouncing, in the name of God, the pardon of sin to all those who did truly repent, and unfeignedly believe the gospel: for they judged, that if the people did seriously practise this, it would keep up in their thoughts frequent reflections on their sins; and it was thought, that the pronouncing a pardon upon these conditions, might have a better effect on the people, than that absolute and unqualified pardon which their priests were wont to give in confession: by which absolution, in times of popery, the people were made to believe that their sins were thereupon certainly forgiven, than which nothing could be invented that would harden them into a more fatal security, when they thought a full pardon could be so readily purchased. But now they heard the terms, on which only they could expect it, every day promulgated to them. The other addition was also made, upon good consideration, in the office of the communion, to which the people were observed to come without due seriousness or preparation; therefore, for awakening their consciences more feelingly, it was ordered, that the office of the communion should begin with a solemn pronouncing of the Ten Commandments, all the congregation being on their knees, as if they were hearing that law anew; and a stop to be made at every Commandment, for the people's devotion, of imploring mercy for their past offences, and grace to observe it for the time to come. This seemed as effectual a mean as they could devise, till church penitence were again set up, to beget in men deep reflections on their sins, and to prepare them thereby to receive that holy sacrament worthily. The other changes were, the removing of some rites which had been retained in the former book; such as the use of oil in confirmation, and extreme unction, the prayers for souls departed, both in the communion-service, and in the office of burial; the leaving out some passages in the consecration of the eucharist that seemed to favour the belief of the corporal presence, with the use of the cross in it, and in confirmation; with some smaller variations;

PART II.

1551.

and, indeed, they brought the whole Liturgy to the same form in which it is now, except some inconsiderable variations that have been since made for the clearing of some ambiguities.

An account of kneeling in the communion.

In the office of the communion, they added a rubric concerning the posture of kneeling, which was appointed to be still the gesture of communicants. It was hereby declared, that that gesture was kept up, as a most reverent and humble way of expressing our great sense of the mercies of God in the death of Christ there communicated to us; but that thereby there was no adoration intended to the bread and wine, which was gross idolatry: nor did they think the very flesh and blood of Christ were there present, since his body, according to the nature of all other bodies, could be only in one place at once; and so, he being now in heaven, could not be corporally present in the sacrament. This was, by Queen Elizabeth, ordered to be left out of the Common-Prayer-Book, since it might have given offence to some otherwise inclinable to the communion of the church, who yet retained the belief of the corporal presence. But since his present Majesty's restoration, many having excepted to the posture, as apprehending something like idolatry or superstition might lie under it, if it were not rightly explained; that explication which was given in King Edward's time was again inserted in the Commen-Prayer-Book.

For the posture, it is most likely that the first institution was in the table-gesture, which was, lying along on one side; but it was apparent in our Saviour's practice, that the Jewish church had changed the posture of that institution of the passover, in whose room the eucharist came. For though Moses had appointed the Jews to eat their paschal lamb standing, with their loins girt, with staves in their hands, and shoes on their feet; yet the Jews did afterwards change this into the common table-posture; of which change, though there is no mention in the Old Testament, yet we see it was so in our Saviour's time; and since he complied with the common custom, we are sure that change was not criminal. It seemed reasonable to allow the Christ-

ian church the like power in such things with the Jewish; and as the Jews thought their coming into the promised land might be a warrant to lay aside the posture appointed by Moses, which became travellers best; so, Christ being now exalted, it seemed fit to receive this sacrament with higher marks of outward respect than had been proper in the first institution, when he was in the state of humiliation, and his Divine glory not yet so fully revealed: therefore, in the primitive church they received standing, and bending their body, in a posture of adoration. But how soon that gesture of kneeling came in, is not so exactly observed, nor is it needful to know. But, surely, there is a great want of ingenuity in them that are pleased to apply these orders of some latter popes for kneeling at the elevation, to our kneeling; when ours is not at one such part, which might be more liable to exception, but during the whole office; by which, it is one continued act of worship, and the communicants kneel all the while. But of this no more needs to be said than is expressed in the rubric, which occasioned this digression.

Some orders given to the King's chaplains.

Thus were the reformations both of doctrine and worship prepared: to which, all I can add of this year, is, that there were six eminent preachers chosen out to be the King's chaplains in ordinary; two of those were always to attend at court, and four to be sent over England to preach and instruct the people. In the first year, two of these were to go into Wales, and the other two into Lancashire: the next year, two into the marches of Scotland, and two into Yorkshire: the third year, two into Devonshire, and two into Hampshire; and the fourth year, two into Norfolk, and two into Kent and Sussex: these were Bill, Harley, Pern, Grindal, Bradford, and Knox. These, it seems, were accounted the most zealous and readiest preachers of that time, who were thus sent about as itinerants, to supply the defects of the greatest part of the clergy, who were generally very faulty.

The Lady Mary continued to have mass said in her chapel.

The business of the Lady Mary was now taken up with more heat than formerly. The Emperor's earnest suit, that she might have mass in her house, was long re-

PART II.

1551.

jected; for it was said, that as the King did not interpose in the matters of the Emperor's government, so there was no reason for the Emperor to meddle in his affairs. Yet, the state of England making his friendship at that time necessary to the King, and he refusing to continue in his league, unless his kinswoman obtained that favour, it was promised, that, for some time, in hope she would reform, there should be a forbearance granted. The Emperor's ambassadors pressed to have a licence for it under the great seal: it was answered, that being against law, it could not be done. Then they desired to have it certified under the King's hand, in a letter to the Emperor; but even that was refused; so that they only gave a promise for some time by word of mouth, and Paget and Hobby, who had been the ambassadors with the Emperor, declared they had spoken of it to him with the same limitations. But the Emperor, who was accustomed to take for absolute what was promised only under conditions, wrote to the Lady Mary, that he had an absolute promise for the free exercise of her religion; and so she pretended this when she was at any time questioned about it. The two grounds she went on were, that she would follow the ancient and universal way of worship, and not a new invention that lay within the four seas; and that she would continue in that religion in which her father had instructed her. To this the King sent an answer, telling her, that she was a part of this church and nation, and so must conform herself to the laws of it; that the way of worship now set up was no other than what was clearly consonant to the pure word of God; and the King's being young, was not to be pretended by her, lest she might seem to agree with the late rebels. After this, she was sent for to court, and pains were taken to instruct her better: but she refused to hear any thing, or to enter into reasonings; but said, she would still do as she had done. And she claimed the promise that was said to be made to the Emperor; but it was told her, that it was but temporary and conditional. Whereupon, the last summer she was designing to fly out of England; and the King of France gave

Sir John Mason, the English resident, notice, that the Regent of Flanders had hired one Scipperus, who should land on the coast of Essex, as if it had been to victual his ship, and was to have conveyed her away. Upon this information, order was given to see well to the coast; so the design being discovered, nothing could be effected. It was certainly a strange advice to carry her away, and no less strange in the King's ministers to hinder it, if there was at that time any design formed to put her by her succession: for if she had been beyond sea at the King's death, it is not probable that she could have easily come to the crown. The Emperor's ambassador solicited for her violently, and said, he would presently take leave, and protest that they had broken their faith to his master, who would resent the usage of the Lady Mary as highly as if it were done immediately to himself. The counsellors having no mind to draw a new war on their heads, especially from so victorious a Prince, were all inclined to let the matter fall. There was also a year's cloth lately sent over to Antwerp; and fifteen hundred quintals of powder, with a great deal of armour, bought there for the King's use, was not come over; so it was thought by no means advisable to provoke the Emperor, while they had such effects in his ports; nor were they very willing to give higher provocations to the next heir of the crown; therefore, they all advised the King not to do more in that matter at present, but to leave the Lady Mary to her discretion, who would certainly be made more cautious by what she had met with, and would give as little scandal as was possible by her mass: but the King could not be induced to give way to it, for he thought the mass was impious and idolatrous: so he would not consent to the continuance of such a sin. Upon this the council ordered Cranmer, Ridley, and Poinet, to discourse about it with him: they told him, that it was always as in in a prince to permit any sin; but to give a connivance, that is, not to punish, was not always a sin, since sometimes a lesser evil connived at might prevent a greater. He was overcome by this; yet not so easily, but that he burst forth in tears, lamenting his

The King is very earnest against it.

PART II.

1551.

sister's obstinacy, and that he must suffer her to continue in so abominable a way of worship, as he esteemed the mass. So he answered the Emperor's agents, that he should send over an ambassador to clear that matter; and Dr. Wotton was dispatched about it, who carried over attestations from all the council concerning the qualifications of the promise that had been made; and was instructed to press the Emperor not to trouble the King in his affairs at home in his own kingdom. If the Lady Mary was his kinswoman, she was the King's sister and subject. He was also to offer, that the King would grant as much liberty for the mass in his dominions, as the Emperor would grant for the English service in his dominions. But the Emperor pretended, that when her mother died, she left her to his protection, which he had granted her, and so must take care of her: and the Emperor was so exalted with his successes, that he did not easily bear any contradiction. But the council being farther offended with her for the project of going beyond sea, and being now less in fear of the Emperor, since they had made peace with France, resolved to look more nearly to her; and finding that Dr. Mallet and Barkley, her chaplains, had said mass in one of her houses when she was not in it, they ordered them to be proceeded against. Upon which, in December, the last year, she wrote earnestly to the council to let it fall. By her letter it appears, that Mallet used to be sometimes at his benefice, where it is certain he could officiate no other way but in that prescribed by law; so it seems his conscience was not very scrupulous. The council wrote her a long answer, which, being in the style of a churchman, seems to have been penned either by Cranmer or Ridley: in which letter they fully cleared the matter of the promise: then they shewed how express the law was, with which they could not dispense, and how ill-grounded her faith, as she called it, was. They asked her, what warrant there was in Scripture, that the prayers should be in an unknown tongue, that images should be in the church, or that the sacrament should be offered up for the dead. They told her, that in all questions about religion, St.

The council wrote to her of it.

1551.

Austin, and the other ancient doctors, appealed to the Scripture; and if she would look into these, she would soon see the errors of the old superstition, which were supported by false miracles and lying stories, and not by Scripture or good authority. They expressed themselves in terms full of submission to her, but said, they were trusted with the execution of the King's laws, in which they must proceed equally; so they required her, if the chaplains were in her house, to send them to the Sheriff of Essex. But it seems they kept out of the way, and so the matter slept till the beginning of May this year, that Mallet was found, and put in the Tower, and convicted of his offence. Upon this, there passed many letters between the council and her; she earnestly desiring to have him set at liberty, and they as positively refusing to do it.

In July, the council sent for Rochester, Inglefield, and Walgrave, three of her chief officers, and gave them instructions to signify the King's express pleasure to her, to have the new service in her family; and to give the like charge to her chaplains, and all her servants, and to return with an answer. In August they came back, and said, she was much indisposed, and received the message very grievously. She said, she would obey the King in all things, except where her conscience was touched; but she charged them to deliver none of their message to the rest of her family; in which they, being her servants, could not disobey her, especially when they thought it might prejudice her health. Upon this, they were sent to the Tower. The Lord Chancellor, Sir Anthony Wingfield, and Sir William Petre, were next sent to her, with a letter from the King, and instructions from the council, for the charge they were to give to her and her servants. They came to her house of Copthall in Essex. The Lord Chancellor gave her the King's letter, which she received on her knees; and said, she paid that respect to the King's hand, and not to the matter of the letter, which she knew proceeded from the council; and when she read it, she said, "Ah! Mr. Cecil took much pains here:" (he was then secretary of state in Dr. Wotton's room.)

And sent some to her.

PART II.

1551.

So she turned to the counsellors, and bid them deliver their message to her. She wished them to be short, for she was not well at ease, and would give them a short answer, having writ her mind plainly to the King with her own hand. The Lord Chancellor told her, that all the council were of one mind, that she must be no longer suffered to have private mass, or a form of religion different from what was established by law. He went to read the names of those who were of that mind, but she desired him to spare his pains, she knew they were all of a sort. They next told her, they had order to require her chaplain to use no other service, and her servants to be present at no other, than what was according to law. She answered, she was the King's most obedient subject and sister, and would obey him in every thing but where her conscience held her; and would willingly suffer death to do him service: but she would lay her head on a block rather than use any other form of service than what had been at her father's death; only she thought she was not worthy to suffer death on so good an account. When the King came to be of age, so that he could order these things himself, she would obey his commands in religion; for although he, "good sweet king," (these were her words) had more knowledge than any of his years, yet he was not a fit judge in these matters; for if ships were to be set to sea, or any matter of policy to be determined, they would not think him fit for it, much less could he be able to resolve points of divinity. As for her chaplains, if they would say no mass, she could hear none; and for her servants, she knew they all desired to hear mass: her chaplains might do what they would, it was but a whiles imprisonment: but for the new service, it should never be said in her house; and if any were forced to say it, she would stay no longer in the house. When the counsellors spake of Rochester, Inglefield, and Walgrave, who had not fully executed their charge, she said it was not the wisest counsel to order her servants to control her in her own house; and they were the honester men not to do such a thing against their consciences. She insisted on the promise made to the Em-

But she was intractable.

peror, which she had under his hand, whom she believed better than them all: they ought to use her better for her father's sake, who had raised them all almost out of nothing. But though the Emperor were dead, or would bid her obey them, she would not change her mind, and she would let his ambassador know how they used her. To this they answered, clearing the mistake about the promise, to which she gave little heed. They told her, they had brought one down to serve as her comptroller in Rochester's room: she said she would choose her own servants, and if they went to impose any on her she would leave the house. She was sick, but would do all she could to live; but if she died, she would protest they were the causes of it; they gave her good words, but their deeds were evil. Then she took a ring from her finger, and on her knees gave it to the Lord Chancellor, to give to the King as a token from her, with her humble commendations; and protested much of her duty to him; but she said, this will never be told him. The counsellors went from her to her chaplains, and delivered their message to them, who promised they would obey. Then they charged the rest of the servants in like manner, and also commanded them to give notice if those orders were broken. And so they went to go away. But as they were in the court the Lady Mary called to them from her window, to send her comptroller to her; for she said, that now she herself received the accounts of her house, and knew how many loaves were made of a bushel of meal, to which she had never been bred, and so was weary of that office; but if they would needs send him to prison, she said, "I beshrew him if he go not to it merrily, and with a good will;" and concluded, "I pray God to send you to do well in your souls and bodies, for some of you have but weak bodies." This is the substance of the report these counsellors gave when they returned back to the court on the 29th of August. By which they were now out of all hopes of prevailing with her by persuasions or authority; so it was next considered, whether it was fit to go to further extremities with her. How the matter was determined, I do not clearly find; it is

PART II.

1551.

certain the Lady Mary would never admit of the new service, and so I believe she continued to keep her priests, and have mass; but so secretly, that there was no ground for any public complaint. For I find no further mention of that matter than what is made by Ridley, of a passage that befel him in September next year.

Nor would she hear Bishop Ridley preach.

He went to wait on her, she living then at Hunsden; where she received him at first civilly, and told him, she remembered of him in her father's time, and at dinner sent him to dine with her officers. After dinner he told her, he came not only to do his duty to her, but to offer to preach before her next Sunday: she blushed, and once or twice desired him to make the answer to that himself. But when he pressed her further, she said, the parish church would be open to him if he had a mind to preach in it; but neither she nor any of her family should hear him. He said, he hoped she would not refuse to hear God's word: she said, she did not know what they called God's word, but she was sure that was not now God's word that was called so in her father's days. He said, God's word was the same at all times. She answered, she was sure he durst not for his ears have avowed these things in her father's time which he did now; and for their books, as she thanked God she never had, so she never would read them. She also used many reproachful words to him, and asked him, if he was of the council: he said not. She replied, he might well enough be, as the council goes now a-days; and so dismissed him, thanking him for coming to see her, but not at all for offering to preach before her. Sir Thomas Wharton, one of her officers, carried him to a place where he desired him to drink, which Ridley did; but reflecting on it, said, he had done amiss, to drink in a place where God's word was rejected: for if he had remembered his duty, he should upon that refusal have shaken the dust off his feet, for a testimony against the house, and have departed immediately. These words he was observed to pronounce with an extraordinary concern, and went away much troubled in his mind. And this is all I find of the Lady Mary during this reign. For the Lady Elizabeth, she had been always bred up to like

the Reformation; and Dr. Parker, who had been her mother's chaplain, received a strict charge from her mother a little before her death, to look well to the instructing her daughter in the principles of true religion; so that there is no doubt to be made of her cheerful receiving all the changes that had been established by law.

The designs of the Earl of Warwick.

And this is all that concerns religion that falls within this year. But now a design came to be laid, which, though it broke not out for some time, yet it was believed to have had a great influence on the fall of the Duke of Somerset. The Earl of Warwick began to form great projects for himself, and thought to bring the crown into his family. The King was now much alienated from the Lady Mary; the privy-council had also embroiled themselves so with her, that he imagined it would be no hard matter to exclude her from the succession. There was but one reason that could be pretended for it, which was, that she stood illegitimated by law; and that therefore the next heirs in blood could not be barred their right by her; since it would be a great blot on the honour of the English crown to let it devolve on a bastard. This was as strong against the Lady Elizabeth, since she was also illegitimated by a sentence in the spiritual court, and that confirmed in parliament; so if their jealousy of the elder sister's religion, and the fear of her revenge, moved them to be willing to cut her off from the succession, the same reason that was to be used in law against her, was also to take place against her sister. So he reckoned that these two were to be passed over, as being put both in the act of succession, and in the late King's will, by one error. The next in the will were the heirs of the French Queen by Charles Brandon, who were the Dutchess of Suffolk and her sister: though I have seen it often said, in many letters and writings of that time, that all that issue by Charles Brandon was illegitimated; since he was certainly married to one Mortimer, before he married the Queen of France, which Mortimer lived long after his marriage to that Queen, so that all her children were bastards: some say he was divorced

PART II.

from his marriage to Mortimer, but that is not clear to me.*

1551. The sweating sickness.

This year, the sweating sickness, that had been formerly both in Henry the Seventh's and the late King's reign, broke out with that violence in England, that many were swept away by it. Such as were taken with it died certainly if they slept, to which they had a violent desire; but if it took them not off in twenty-four hours, they did sweat out the venom of the distemper; which raged so in London, that in one week eight hundred died of it. It did also spread into the country, and the two sons of Charles Brandon by his last wife, both dukes of Suffolk, died within a day of each other, and were both buried in the chancel of Bugden church, they dying at the bishop's house. So that title was fallen. Their sister by the half blood was married to Gray, Lord Marquis of Dorset. So she being the eldest daughter to the French Queen, the Earl of Warwick resolved to link himself to that family, and to procure the honour of the dukedom of Suffolk to be given to the Marquis of Dorset, who was a weak man, and easily governed. He had three daughters: the eldest was Jane, a lady of as excellent qualities as any of that age; of great parts, bred to learning, and much conversant in Scripture; and of so rare a temper of mind, that she charmed all who knew her; in particular the young King, about whom she was bred, and who had always lived with her in the familiarities of a brother. The Earl of Warwick designed to marry her to Guilford, his fourth son then living, his three elder being already married; and so to get the crown to descend on them if the King should die, of which, it is thought, he resolved to take care. But apprehending some danger from the Lady Elizabeth's title, he intended to send her away: so an ambassador was dispatched to Denmark,

* Charles Brandon first married Margaret, one of the daughters of John Nevil, Marquis Montague, widow of Sir John Mortimer; secondly, Anne, daughter of Sir Anthony Brown, by whom he had issue, after marriage, Mary, wedded to Thomas Stanley, Lord Monteagle; thirdly, Mary, Queen of France, as Sir William Dugdale hath it in the text, though, in the scheme subjoined by him, the order is inverted:—1. Anne; 2. Margaret, but *repudiata*; 3. Mary.

to treat a marriage for her with that King's eldest son.

1551. The King treats with the French King for a marriage with his daughter.

To amuse the King himself, a most splendid embassy was sent to France, to propose a marriage for the King to that King's daughter Elizabeth, afterwards married to Philip of Spain. The Marquis of Northampton was sent with this proposition, and with the order of the garter. With him went the Earls of Worcester, Rutland, and Ormond; the Lords Lisle, Fitzwater, Bray, Abergaveny, and Evers; and the Bishop of Ely, who was to be their mouth: with them went many gentlemen of quality, who with their train made up near five hundred. King Henry received the garter with great expressions of esteem for the King. The Bishop of Ely told him, they were come to desire a more close tie between these crowns by marriage, and to have the league made firmer between them in other particulars. To which the Cardinal of Lorrain made answer in his way of speaking, which was always vain, and full of ostentation. A commission was given to that Cardinal, the Constable, the Duke of Guise, and others, to treat about it.

The English began first, for form's sake, to desire the Queen of Scots. But that being rejected, they moved for the daughter of France, which was entertained; but so that neither party should be bound in honour and conscience, till the lady were twelve years of age. Yet this never taking effect, it is needless to enlarge further about it; of which the reader will find all the particulars in King Edward's Journal. The King of France sent another very noble embassy into England, with the order of St. Michael to the King, and a very kind message, that he had no less love to him than a father could bear to his own son. He desired the King would not listen to the vain rumours which some malicious persons might raise to break their friendship; and wished there might be such a regulation on their frontiers, that all differences might be amicably removed. To this the young King made answer himself, "That he thanked his good brother for his order, and for the assurances of his love, which he would always requite.

PART II.

1551.

For rumours, they were not always to be credited, nor always to be rejected; it being no less vain to fear all things, than it was dangerous to doubt of nothing: and for any differences that might arise, he should be always ready to determine them by reason, rather than force, so far as his honour should not be thereby diminished." Whether this answer was prepared beforehand, or not, I cannot tell; I rather think it was; otherwise, it was extraordinary for one of fourteen to talk thus on the sudden.

A conspiracy against the Duke of Somerset.

But while this was carrying on, there was a design laid to destroy the Duke of Somerset. He had such access to the King, and such freedoms with him, that the Earl of Warwick had a mind to be rid of him, lest he should spoil all his projects. The Duke of Somerset seemed also to have designed in April this year, to have got the King again in his power: and dealt with the Lord Strange, that was much in his favour, to persuade him to marry his daughter Jane, and that he would advertise him of all that passed about the King. But the Earl of Warwick, to raise himself and all his friends higher, procured a great creation of new honours. Gray was made Duke of Suffolk, and himself Duke of Northumberland; for Henry Piercy, the last earl of Northumberland, dying without issue, his next heirs were the sons of Thomas Piercy that had been attainted in the last reign for the Yorkshire rebellion. Pawlet, then lord treasurer, and Earl of Wiltshire, was made Marquis of Winchester; and Sir William Herbert, that had married the Marquis of Northampton's sister, was made Earl of Pembroke. The Lord Russel had been made Earl of Bedford last year, upon his return from making the peace with the French; Sir Thomas Darcy had also been made Lord Darcy. The new Duke of Northumberland could no longer bear such a rival in his greatness as the Duke of Somerset was, who was the only person that he thought could take the King out of his hands. So, on the 17th of October, the Duke was apprehended, and sent to the Tower; and with him the Lord Gray; Sir Ralph Vane, who had escaped over the river, but was taken in a stable in

Lambeth, hid under the straw; Sir Thomas Palmer and Sir Thomas Arundel were also taken, yet not sent at first to the Tower, but kept under guards in their chambers. Some of his followers, Hamond, Nudigate, and two of the Seymours, were sent to prison. The day after, the Dutchess of Somerset was also sent to the Tower, with one Crane and his wife, that had been much about her, and two of her chamber-women. After these, Sir Thomas Holdcroft, Sir Miles Partridge, Sir Michael Stanhop, Wingfield, Bannister, and Vaughan, were all made prisoners. The evidence against the Duke was, that he had made a party for getting himself declared Protector in the next parliament, which the Earl of Rutland did positively affirm; and the Duke did so answer it, that it is probable it was true. But though this might well inflame his enemies, yet it was no crime. But Sir Thomas Palmer, though imprisoned with him as a complice, was the person that ruined him. He had been before that brought secretly to the King, and had told him, that on the last St. George's day, the Duke, apprehending there was mischief designed against him, thought to have raised the people, had not Sir William Herbert assured him he should receive no harm; that lately he intended to have the Duke of Northumberland, the Marquis of Northampton, and the Earl of Pembroke, invited to dinner at the Lord Paget's, and either to have set on them by the way, or to have killed them at dinner; that Sir Ralph Vane had two thousand men ready; that Sir Thomas Arundel had assured the Tower, and that all the gendarmourie were to be killed. The Duke of Somerset, hearing Palmer had been with the King, challenged him of it, but he denied all. He sent also for Secretary Cecil, and told him he suspected there was an ill design against him: to which the Secretary answered, if he were not in fault, he might trust to his innocency; but if he were, he had nothing to say but to lament him.

The King is possessed against him.

All this was told the King with such circumstances, that he was induced to believe it; and the probity of his disposition wrought in him a great aversion to his uncle, when he looked on him as a conspirator against

PART II.

1551.

the lives of the other counsellors; and so he resolved to leave him to the law. Palmer, being a second time examined, said, that Sir Ralph Vane was to have brought two thousand men, who, with the Duke of Somerset's one hundred horse, were on a muster-day to have set on the gendarmourie; that being done, the Duke resolved to have gone through the city, and proclaimed Liberty, liberty! and if his attempt did not succeed, to have fled to the Isle of Wight, or to Pool. Crane confirmed all that Palmer had said; to which he added, that the Earl of Arundel was privy to the conspiracy, and that the thing had been executed, but that the greatness of the enterprise had caused delays, and sometimes diversity of advice: and that the Duke, being once given out to be sick, had gone privately to London, to see what friends he could make. Hamond, being examined, confessed nothing, but that the Duke's chamber at Greenwich had been guarded in the night by many armed men. Upon this evidence, both the Earl of Arundel and the Lord Paget were sent to the Tower. The Earl had been one of the chief of those who had joined with the Earl of Warwick to pull down the Protector; and being, as he thought, ill rewarded by him, was become his enemy. So this part of the information seemed very credible. The thing lay in suspense till the 1st of December, that the Duke of Somerset was brought to his trial; where the Marquis of Winchester was lord steward. The peers that judged him were twenty-seven in number: the Dukes of Suffolk and Northumberland, the Marquis of Northampton, the Earls of Derby, Bedford, Huntingdon, Rutland, Bath, Sussex, Worcester, Pembroke, and the Viscount of Hereford; the Lords Abergaveny, Audley, Wharton, Evers, Latimer, Borough, Souch, Stafford, Wentworth, Darcy, Stourton, Windsor, Cromwell, Cobham, and Bray. The crimes laid against him were cast into five several indictments, as the King has it in his Journal; but the record mentions only three, whether indictments or articles is not so clear. That he had designed to have seized on the King's person, and so have governed all affairs; and that he, with one hundred others, intended to have impri-

He is brought to his trial.

soned the Earl of Warwick, afterwards Duke of Northumberland, and that he had designed an insurrection in the city of London. Now by the act that passed in the last parliament, if twelve persons should have assembled together to have killed any privy-counsellor, and upon proclamation they had not dispersed themselves, it was treason: or if such twelve had been by any malicious artifices brought together for any riot, and being warned did not disperse themselves, it was felony, without benefit of clergy or sanctuary. It seemed very strange that the three peers, Northumberland, Northampton, and Pembroke, who were his professed enemies, and against the first of whom it was pretended in the indictment that he had conspired, should sit his judges; for though by the law no peer can be challenged in a trial, yet the law of nations, that is superior to all other laws, makes that a man cannot be judge in his own cause: and, which was very unusual, the Lord Chancellor, though then a peer, was left out of the number; but it is likely the reconciliation between the Duke of Somerset and him was then suspected, which made him not be called to be one of his judges.

The Duke of Somerset being, it seems, little acquainted with law, did not desire council to plead, or assist him in point of law, but only answered to matters of fact. He prefaced, that he desired no advantage might be taken against him, for any idle or angry word that might have at any time fallen from him. He protested he never intended to have raised the northern parts, but had only, upon some reports, sent to Sir William Herbert to be his friend: that he had never determined to have killed the Duke of Northumberland, or any other person, but had only talked of it, without any intention of doing it: that for the design of destroying the gendarmourie, it was ridiculous to think that he with a small troop could destroy so strong a body of men, consisting of nine hundred; in which, though he had succeeded, it could have signified nothing: that he never designed to raise any stirs in London, but had always looked on it as a place where he was most safe: that his having men about him in Greenwich was with

PART II.

1551.

no ill design, since, when he could have done mischief with them, he had not done it, but upon his attachment rendered himself a prisoner without any resistance. He objected also many things against the witnesses, and desired they might be brought face to face. He particularly spoke much against Sir Thomas Palmer, the chief witness. But the witnesses were not brought, only their examinations were read. Upon this, the King's council pleaded against him, that to levy war was certainly treason; that to gather men with intention to kill privy-counsellors was also treason; that to have men about him to resist the attachment was felony; and to assault the lords, or contrive their deaths, was felony. Whether he made any defence in law or not, does not appear: for the material defence is not mentioned in all the accounts I have seen of it; which was, that these conspiracies, and gatherings of the King's subjects, were only treasonable and felonious, after they had been required to disperse themselves, and had refused to give obedience: and in all this matter, that is never so much as alleged, no, not in the indictment itself, to have been done. It is plain it was not done; for if any such proclamation, or charge, had been sent him, it is probable he would either have obeyed it, or gone into London, or to the country, and tried what he could have done by force; but to have refused such a command, and so to have come within the guilt of treason, and yet not to stir from his house, are not things consistent.

When the peers withdrew, it seems the proofs about his design of raising the north, or the city, or of the killing the gendarmes, did not satisfy them; for all these had been, without question, treasonable: so they only held to that point of conspiring to imprison the Duke of Northumberland. If he, with twelve men about him, had conspired to do that, and had continued together after proclamation, it was certainly felony; but that not being pretended, it seems there was no proclamation made. The Duke of Suffolk was of opinion, that no contention among private subjects should be on any account screwed up to be treason. The Duke of Northumberland said, he would never

consent that any practice against him should be reputed treason. After a great difference of opinion, they all acquitted him of treason, but the greater number found him guilty of felony. When they returned him not guilty of treason, all the people who were much concerned for his preservation, shouted for joy, so loud, and so long, that they were heard at Charing-cross: but the joy lasted not long, when they heard that he was condemned of felony, and sentence was thereupon given, that he should die as a felon.

1551. And is acquitted of treason, but found guilty of felony.

The Duke had carried himself all the while of the trial with great temper and patience; and though the King's council had, in their usual way of pleading, been very bitter against him, perhaps the rather, that thereby they might recommend themselves to the Duke of Northumberland; yet, he never took notice of these reflections, nor seemed much affected with them. When sentence was given, he thanked the lords for their favour, and asked pardon of the Dukes of Northumberland, Northampton, and Pembroke, for his ill intentions against them; and made suit for his life, and for his wife and children: from thence he was carried back to the Tower. Whether this asking the lords' pardon had in it a full confession of the crime charged on him, or was only a compliment to them, that they might not obstruct his pardon, is but a matter of conjecture. He confessed he had spoken of killing them, and this made it reasonable enough for him to ask their pardon; so that it does not imply a confession of the crime. All people thought, that being acquitted of treason, and there being no felonious action done by him, but only an intention of one, and that only of imprisoning a peer, proved, that one so nearly joined to the King in blood, would never be put to death on such an occasion. But, to possess the King much against him, a story was brought him, and put by him in his Journal, that at the Duke's coming to the Tower, he had confessed that he had hired one Bartuile to kill the lords; and that Bartuile, himself, acknowledged it, and that Hamond knew of it. But, whether this was devised to alienate the King wholly from him, or whether it was true, I

PART II.

1551.

can give no assurance. But though it was true, it was felony in Bartuile, if he were the King's servant; but not in the Duke, who was a peer. Yet, no doubt, this gave the King a very ill opinion of his uncle, and so made him more easily consent to his execution: since all such conspiracies are things of that inhuman and barbarous cruelty, that it is scarce possible to punish them too severely. But it is certain, that there was no evidence at all of any design to kill the Duke of Northumberland, otherwise the indictment had not been laid against him only for designing to seize on and imprison him, as it was; the conspiring to kill him not being so much as mentioned in the indictment: but it was maliciously given out to possess the world, and chiefly the King, against him.

See the indictment, Coke's Entries, fol. 482.

The King also, in his letter to Barnaby Fitzpatrick, who was likely to be his favourite, and was then sent over for his breeding into France, wrote, that the Duke seemed to have acknowledged the felony, and that after sentence he had confessed it, though he had formerly vehemently sworn the contrary; from whence it is plain that the King was persuaded of his being guilty. Sir Michael Stanhop, Sir Thomas Arundel, Sir Ralph Vane, and Sir Miles Partridge, were next brought to their trials: the first and the last of these were little pitied: for, as all great men have people about them, who make use of their greatness only for their own ends, without regarding their masters' honour, or true interest, so they were the persons upon whom the ill things which had been done by the Duke of Somerset were chiefly cast. But Sir Thomas Arundel was much pitied, and had hard measure in his trial, which began at seven o'clock in the morning and continued till noon: then the jury went aside, and they did not agree on their verdict till next morning, when those who thought him not guilty, yet, for preserving their own lives, were willing to yield to the fierceness of those who were resolved to have him found guilty. Sir Ralph Vane was the most lamented of them all: he had done great services in the wars, and was esteemed one of the bravest gentlemen of the nation. He pleaded for himself, that

Some of his friends also condemned.

he had done his country considerable service during the wars; though now, in time of peace, the coward and the courageous were equally esteemed. He scorned to make any submissions for life. But this height of mind in him did certainly set forward his condemnation: and, to add more infamy to him in the manner of his death, he and Partridge were hanged, whereas the other two were beheaded.

The seals are taken from the Lord Rich,

The Duke of Somerset was using means to have the King better informed and disposed towards him, and engaged the Lord Chancellor to be his friend; who thereupon sent him an advertisement of somewhat designed against him by the council, and being in haste, wrote only on the back of his letter, "To the Duke;" and bid one of his servants carry it to the Tower, without giving him particular directions to the Duke of Somerset. But his servant having known of the familiarities between his master and the Duke of Norfolk, who was still in the Tower, and knowing none between him and the other Duke, carried the letter to the Duke of Norfolk. When the Lord Chancellor found the mistake at night, he knew the Duke of Norfolk, to make Northumberland his friend, would certainly discover him; so he went in all haste to the King, and desired to be discharged of his office, and thereby prevented the malice of his enemies: and upon this he fell sick, either pretending he was ill, that it might raise the more pity for him, or perhaps the fright in which he was did really cast him into sickness. So the seal was sent for by the Marquis of Winchester, the Duke of Northumberland, and the Lord Darcy, on the 21st of December, and put into the hands of the Bishop of Ely, who was made keeper during pleasure; and when the session of parliament came on, he was made Lord Chancellor. But this was much censured: when the Reformation was first preached in England, Tindal, Barns, and Latimer, took an occasion, from the great pomp and luxury of Cardinal Wolsey, and the secular employments of the other bishops and clergymen, to represent them as a sort of men that had wholly neglected the care of souls, and those spiritual studies and exer-

And given to the Bishop of Ely.

PART II.

1551.

cises that disposed men to such functions, and only carried the names of bishops and churchmen to be a colour to serve their ambition and covetousness; and this had raised great prejudices in the minds of the people against those who were called their pastors, when they saw them fill their heads with cares, that were at least impertinent to their callings, if not inconsistent with the duties that belonged to them. So now, upon Goodrick's being made Lord Chancellor, that was a reformed bishop, it was said by their adversaries, these men only condemned secular employments in the hands of churchmen, because their enemies had them; but changed their mind as soon as any of their own party came to be advanced to them. But, as Goodrick was raised by the popish interest in opposition to the Duke of Somerset, and to Cranmer, that was his firm friend, so it appeared in the beginning of Queen Mary's reign, that he was ready to turn with every tide; and that, whether he joined in the Reformation only in compliance to the time, or was persuaded in his mind concerning it; yet he had not that sense of it that became a bishop, and was one of those who resolved to make as much advantage by it as he could, but would suffer nothing for it. So his practice in this matter is neither a precedent to justify the like in others, nor can it cast a scandal on those to whom he joined himself. Christ being spoke to to divide an inheritance between two brethren said, "Who made me a judge or a divider?" St. Paul, speaking of churchmen, says, "No man that warreth entangleth himself with the affairs of this life;" which was understood by St. Cyprian as a perpetual rule against the secular employments of the clergy. There are three of the apostolical canons against it; and Cyprian, reckoning up the sins of his time, that had provoked God to send a persecution on the church, names this, that many bishops forsaking their sees undertook secular cares; in which he was so strict, that he thought the being tutor to orphans was a distraction unsuitable to their character; so that one priest leaving another tutor to his children, because, by the Roman law, he, to whom this was left, was obliged to

undergo it, the priest's name who made that testament, was appointed to be struck out of the list of those churchmen who had died in the faith, and were remembered in the daily offices. Samosatanus is represented as one of the first eminent churchmen that involved himself much in secular cares. Upon the Emperor's turning Christian, it was a natural effect of their conversion for them to cherish the bishops much, and many of the bishops became so much in love with the court and public employments, that canons were made against their going to court, unless they were called; and the *canaliis*, or road to the court, was kept by the Bishop of Rome, so that none might go without his warrant. Their meddling in secular matters was also condemned in many provincial councils, but most copiously and amply by the general council at Chalcedon. It is true, the bishops had their courts for the arbitration of civil differences; which were first begun upon St. Paul's Epistle to the Corinthians, against their going to law before unbelievers, and for submitting their suits to some among themselves. The reasons of this ceased when the judges in the civil courts were become Christians; yet these episcopal audiences were still continued after Constantine's time, and their jurisdiction was sometimes enlarged, and sometimes abridged, as there was occasion given. St. Austin, and many other holy bishops, grew weary even of that, and found, that the hearing causes, as it took up much of their time, so filled their heads with thoughts of another nature than what properly belonged to them.

The bishops of Rome and Alexandria, taking advantage from the greatness and wealth of their sees, began first to establish a secular principality of the church: and the confusions that fell out in Italy after the fifth century, gave the bishops of Rome great opportunities for it, which they improved to the utmost advantage. The revolutions in Spain gave a rise to the Spanish bishops meddling much in all civil matters; and when Charles the Great and his son had given great territories and large jurisdictions to many sees and monasteries, bishops and abbots came, after that, not only to have a share

PART II.

1551.

in all the public councils of most of the states of Europe, to which their lands gave them a right, but to be chiefly employed in all affairs and offices of state. The ignorance of these ages made this in a manner necessary; and church preferments were given as rewards to men who had served in the state, in embassies, or in their prince's courts of justice; so that it was no wonder if men advanced upon that merit, continued in their former method and course of life. Thus the bishops became, for the greatest part, only a sort of men who went in peculiar habits, and upon some high festivities performed a few offices; but for the pastoral care, and all the duties incumbent on them, they were universally neglected; and that seriousness, that abstraction from the world, that application to study and religious exercises, and chiefly the care of souls, which became their function, seemed inconsistent with that course of life which secular cares brought on men who pursued them: nor was it easy to persuade the world that their pastors did very much aspire to heaven, when they were thrusting themselves so indecently into the courts of princes, or ambitiously pretending to the administration of matters of state; and it was always observed, that churchmen who assumed to themselves employments, and an authority that was eccentric to their callings, suffered so much in that esteem, and lost so much of that authority, which of right belonged to their character and office.

But to go on with the series of affairs. There was all possible care taken to divert and entertain the King's mind with pleasing sights, as will appear by this Journal; which it seems had the effect that was desired, for he was not much concerned in his uncle's preservation.

1552. An order was sent for beheading the Duke of Somerset on the 22d of January, on which day he was brought to the place of execution on Tower-hill. His whole deportment was very composed, and no way changed from what it had ordinarily been: he first kneeled down, and prayed; and then he spake to the people in these words:

The Duke of Somer- "Dearly beloved friends—I am brought here to suf-

1552

fer death, albeit that I never offended against the King neither by word nor deed, and have been always as faithful and true to this realm, as any man hath been. But, forsomuch as I am by law condemned to die, I do acknowledge myself, as well as others, to be subject thereto; wherefore, to testify my obedience which I owe unto the laws, I am come hither to suffer death; whereunto I willingly offer myself, with most hearty thanks to God, that hath given me this time of repentance, who might, through sudden death, have taken away my life, that neither I should have acknowledged him, nor myself. Moreover, there is yet somewhat that I must put you in mind of, as touching Christian religion, which, so long as I was in authority, I always diligently set forth, and furthered to my power; neither repent I me of my doings, but rejoice therein, sith that now the state of Christian religion cometh most near unto the form and order of the primitive church, which thing I esteem as a great benefit given of God, both to you and me; most heartily exhorting you all, that this which is most purely set forth to you, you will with like thankfulness accept and embrace, and set out the same in your living; which thing if you do not, without doubt greater mischief and calamity will follow."

set's speech at his execution.

When he had gone so far, there was an extraordinary noise heard, as if some house had been blown up with gunpowder; which frighted all the people, so that many ran away, they knew not for what: and the relator, who tarried still, says, it brought into his remembrance the astonishment that the band was in that came to take our Saviour, who thereupon fell backwards to the ground. At the same time Sir Anthony Brown came riding towards the scaffold, and they all hoped he had brought a pardon; upon which there was a general shouting, "Pardon, pardon, God save the King!" many throwing up their caps; by which the Duke might well perceive how dear he was to the people. But as soon as these disorders were over, he made a sign to them with his hand to compose themselves, and then went on in his speech thus:—

"Dearly beloved friends, there is no such matter here

PART II.

1552.

in hand, as you vainly hope or believe. It seemeth thus good unto Almighty God, whose ordinance it is meet and necessary that we all be obedient to. Wherefore I pray you all to be quiet, and to be contented with my death; which I am most willing to suffer. And let us now join in prayer to the Lord for the preservation of the King's Majesty, unto whom hitherto I have always shewed myself a most faithful and firm subject. I have always been most diligent about his Majesty, in his affairs both at home and abroad; and no less diligent in seeking the common commodity of the whole realm; (upon this the people cried out, it was most true;) unto whose Majesty I wish continual health, with all felicity and all prosperous success. Moreover, I do wish unto all his counsellors the grace and favour of God, whereby they may rule in all things uprightly with justice; unto whom I exhort you all in the Lord to shew yourselves obedient, as it is your bounden duty, under the pain of condemnation; and also most profitable for the preservation and safeguard of the King's Majesty. Moreover, forasmuch as heretofore I have had affairs with divers men, and hard it is to please every man, therefore, if there have been any that have been offended or injured by me, I most humbly require and ask him forgiveness; but especially Almighty God, whom throughout all my life I have most grievously offended: and all other whatsoever they be that have offended me, I do with my whole heart forgive them." Then he desired them to be quiet, lest their tumults might trouble him; and said, "Albeit the spirit be willing and ready, the flesh is frail and wavering; and through your quietness I shall be much more quieter. Moreover, I desire you all to bear me witness, that I die here in the faith of Jesus Christ, desiring you to help me with your prayers, that I may persevere constant in the same to my life's end."

His death.

Then Dr. Cox, who was with him on the scaffold, put a paper in his hand, which was a prayer he had prepared for him. He read it on his knees; then he took leave of all about him, and undressed himself to be fitted for the axe. In all which there appeared no change in

him, only his face was a little ruddier than ordinary: he continued calling, "Lord Jesus, save me," till the executioner severed his head from his body.

1552.

Thus fell the Duke of Somerset: a person of great virtues, eminent for piety, humble and affable in his greatness, sincere and candid in all his transactions. He was a better captain than a counsellor: had been oft successful in his undertakings, was always careful of the poor and the oppressed, and, in a word, had as many virtues, and as few faults, as most great men, especially when they were so unexpectedly advanced, have ever had. It was generally believed, that all this pretended conspiracy, upon which he was condemned, was only a forgery. For both Palmer and Crane, the chief witnesses, were soon after discharged, as were also Bartuile and Hamond, with all the rest that had been made prisoners on the pretence of this plot. And the Duke of Northumberland continued after that in so close a friendship with Palmer, that it was generally believed he had been corrupted to betray him. And, indeed, the not bringing the witnesses into the court, but only the depositions, and the parties sitting judges, gave great occasion to condemn the proceedings against him. For it was generally thought, that all was an artifice of Palmer's, who had put the Duke of Somerset in fears of his life, and so got him to gather men about him for his own preservation; and that he afterwards, being taken with him, seemed through fear to acknowledge all that which he had before contrived. This was more confirmed by the death of the other four formerly mentioned, who were executed on the 26th of February, and did all protest they had never been guilty of any design, either against the King, or to kill the lords. Vane added, that his blood would make Northumberland's pillow uneasy to him. The people were generally much affected with this execution; and many threw handkerchiefs into the Duke of Somerset's blood, to preserve it in remembrance of him. One lady, that met the Duke of Northumberland when he was led through the city in Queen Mary's reign, shaking one of these bloody handkerchiefs, said, "Behold, the blood of that worthy

And character.

PART II.

1552.

man, that good uncle of that excellent King, which was shed by thy malicious practice, doth now begin apparently to revenge itself on thee." Sure it is, that Northumberland, as having maliciously contrived this, was ever after hated by the people.

But, on the other hand, great notice was taken that the Duke of Norfolk (who, with his son the Earl of Surrey, were believed to have fallen in all their misery by the Duke of Somerset's means) did now outlive him, and saw him fall by a conspiracy of his own servants, as himself and his son had done. The proceeding against his brother was also remembered, for which many thought the judgments of God had overtaken him. Others blamed him for being too apt to convert things sacred to his own use, and because a great part of his estate was raised out of the spoils of many churches: and some late writers have made an inference from this, upon his not claiming the benefit of clergy, that he was thus left of God not to plead that benefit, since he had so much invaded the rights and revenues of the church. But in this they shewed their ignorance: for by the statute, that felony of which he was found guilty was not to be purged by clergy. Those who pleased themselves in comparing the events in their own times, with the transactions of the former ages, found out many things to make a parallel between the Duke of Somerset, and Humphrey the good Duke of Gloucester in Henry the Sixth's time; but I shall leave the reader in that to his own observation.

Now was the Duke of Northumberland absolute at court, all offices being filled with those that were his associates. But here I stop to give a general view of affairs beyond sea this year, though I have a little transgressed the bounds of it, to give an account of the Duke of Somerset's fall altogether. The siege of Magdeburg went on in Germany. But it was coldly followed by Maurice, who had now other designs. He had agreed with the French King, who was both to give him assistance, and to make war on the Emperor, at the same time when he should begin. Ferdinand was also not unwilling to see his brother's greatness lessened; for he

The affairs of Germany.

1551.

was pressing him, not without threatenings, to lay down his dignity as King of the Romans, and thought to have established it on his son. All the other princes of Germany were also oppressed by him, so that they were disposed to enter into any alliance for the shaking off of that yoke. Maurice did also send over to try the inclinations of England; if they would join with him, and contribute 400,000 dollars towards the expense of a war, for the preservation of the protestant religion, and recovering the liberty of Germany. The ambassadors were only sent to try the King's mind, but were not empowered to conclude any thing. They were sent back with a good answer, that the King would most willingly join in alliance with them that were of the same religion with himself; but he desired, that the matter of religion might be plainly set down, lest, under the pretence of that, war should be made for other quarrels. He desired them also to communicate their designs with the other princes, and then to send over others more fully empowered. Maurice, seeing such assistances ready for him, resolved both to break the Emperor's designs, and, by leading on a new league against him, to make himself more acceptable to the empire, and thereby to secure the electoral dignity in his family. So, after Magdeburg had endured a long siege, he, giving a secret intimation to some men in whom they confided, persuaded them, about the end of November, to surrender to him; and then broke up his army: but they fell into the dominions of several of the popish princes, and put them under very heavy contributions. This alarmed all the empire; only the Emperor himself, by a fatal security, did not apprehend it, till it came so near him, that he was almost ruined before he dreamed of any danger.

This year the transactions of Trent were remarkable. The Pope had called the council to meet there, and the 1st of May this year there was a session held. There was a war now broken out between the Pope and the King of France on this occasion. The Pope had a mind to have Parma in his own hands; but that Prince, fearing that he would keep it, as the Emperor did Placentia, and so he should be ruined between them, im-

Proceedings at Trent.

PART II.

1551.

plored the protection of France, and received a French garrison for his safety. Upon this, the Pope cited him to Rome, declaring him a traitor if he appeared not: and this engaged the Pope in a war with France. At first he sent a threatening message to that King, that if he would not restore Parma to him, he would take France from him. Upon this the King of France protested against the council of Trent, and threatened that he would call a national council in France. The council was adjourned to the 10th of September. In the mean while the Emperor pressed the Germans to go to it. So Maurice, and the other princes of the Augsburg Confession, ordered their divines to consider of the matters which they would propose to the council. The Electors of Mentz and Trier went to Trent. But the King of France sent the Abbot of Bellosana thither, to make a protestation, that by reason of the war that the Pope had raised, he could not send his bishops to the council; and that therefore he would not observe their decrees: (for they had declared in France, that absent churches were not bound to obey the decrees of a council: for which many authorities were cited from the primitive time.) But at Trent they proceeded for all this, and appointed the articles about the eucharist to be first examined: and the presidents recommended to the divines to handle them according to Scripture, tradition, and ancient authors, and to avoid unprofitable curiosities. The Italian divines did not like this: for they said, to argue so, was but an act of the memory, and was an old and insufficient way, and would give great advantage to the Lutherans, who were skilled in the tongues; but the school-learning was a mystical and sublime way, in which it was easier to set off or conceal matters, as was expedient. But this was done to please the Germans: and, at the suit of the Emperor, the matter of communicating in both kinds was postponed, till the German divines could be heard. A safe conduct was desired by the Germans, not only from the Emperor, but from the council. For at Constance, John Huss and Jerome of Prague were burnt, upon this pretence, that they had not the council's safe

conduct; and therefore, when the council of Basil called for the Bohemians, they sent them a safe conduct, besides that which the Emperor gave them. So the princes desired one in the same form that was granted by those of Basil. One was granted by the council, which in many things differed from that of Basil; particularly in one clause, that all things should be determined according to the Scriptures, which was in that safe conduct of Basil, but was now left out. In October an ambassador from the Elector of Brandenburg came to Trent, who was endeavouring to get his son settled in the archbishoprick of Magdeburg, which made him more compliant. In his first address to the council, he spoke of the respect his master had to the fathers in it, without a word of submitting to their decrees. But in the answer that was made in the name of the council, it was said, they were glad he did submit to them, and would obey their decrees. This being afterwards complained of, it was said, that they answered him according to what he should have said, and not according to what he had said. But in the mean while the council published their decrees about the eucharist; in the first part of which they defined, that the way of the presence could hardly be expressed, and yet they called transubstantiation a fit term for it. But this might be well enough defended, since that was a thing as hard to be either expressed or understood, as any thing they could have thought on. They went on next to examine confession and penitence. And now, as the divines handled the matter, they found the gathering proofs out of Scripture grew endless and trifling; for there was not a place in Scripture where *I confess* was to be found, but they drew it in to prove auricular confession. From that they went on to extreme unction. But then came the ambassadors of the Duke of Wittemberg, another prince of the Augsburg Confession, and shewed their mandate to the Emperor's ambassadors; who desired them to carry it to the presidents; but they refused to do that; since it was contrary to the protestation, which the princes of their Confession had made against a council in which the Pope should preside. On the 25th of November they

PART II.

1551. published the decree of the necessity of auricular confession, that so the priest might thereby know how to proportion the penance to the sin. It was much censured, to see it defined that Christ had instituted confession to a priest, and not shewed where or how it was instituted. And the reason for it, about the proportioning the penance, was laughed at, since it was known what slight penances were universally enjoined to expiate the greatest sins. But the ambassadors of Wittemberg moving that they might have a safe conduct for their divines to come and propose their doctrine; the Legate answered, that they would not upon any terms enter into any disputation with them; but if their divines had any scruple in which they desired satisfaction, with a humble and obedient mind, they should be heard. And for a safe conduct, he thought it was a distrusting the council to ask any other than what was already granted. Soon after this, there arrived ambassadors from Strasburg, and from other five cities, and those sent from the Duke of Saxe were on their journey: so the Emperor ordered his ambassadors to study to gain time till they came; and then an effectual course must be taken for compassing that about which he had laboured so long in vain to bring it to a happy conclusion. And thus this year ended.

1552. A session of parliament. The parliament was opened on the 23d of January, and sate till the 15th of April. So I shall begin this year with the account of the proceedings in it. The first act that was put into the House of Lords, was for an order to bring men to Divine service; which was agreed to on the 26th, and sent down to the Commons, who kept it long before they sent it back. On the 6th of April, when it was agreed to, the Earl of Derby, the Bishops of Carlisle and Norwich, and the Lords Stourton and Windsor, dissented. The Lords afterwards brought in another bill, for authorising a new Common-Prayer-Book, according to the alterations which had been agreed on the former year. This the Commons joined to the former, and so put both in one act. By it was first set forth, "That an order of Divine service being published, many did wilfully abstain from it, and

An act authorising the new Common-Prayer-Book.

refused to come to their parish churches; therefore all are required, after the feast of All-hallows next, to come every Sunday and holy-day to common prayers, under pain of the censures of the church. And the King, the Lords temporal, and the Commons, did in God's name require all archbishops, bishops, and other ordinaries, to endeavour the due execution of that act, as they would answer before God for such evils and plagues with which he might justly punish them, for neglecting that good and wholesome law: and they were fully authorised to execute the censures of the church on all that should offend against this law. To which is added, that there had been divers doubts raised about the manner of the ministration of the service, rather by the curiosity of the ministers and mistakers, than of any other worthy cause; and that for the better explanation of that, and for the greater perfection of the service, in some places, where it was fit to make the prayer and fashion of service more earnest and fit to stir Christian people to the true honouring of Almighty God; therefore, it had been by the command of the King and parliament perused, explained, and made more perfect. They also annexed to it the form of making bishops, priests, and deacons; and so appointed this new book of service to be every where received after the feast of All-Saints next, under the same penalties that had been enacted three years before, when the former book was set out."

Which was much censured.

It was upon this act said by the papists, that the Reformation was likely to change as oft as the fashion did; since they seemed never to be at a point in any thing, but new models were thus continually framing. To which it was answered, that it was no wonder that the corruptions which they had been introducing for above a thousand years, were not all discovered or thrown out at once; but now the business was brought to a fuller perfection, and they were not like to see any more material changes. Besides, any that would take the pains to compare the offices that had been among the papists, would clearly perceive, that in every age there was such an increase of additional rites and ceremonies, that

PART II.

1552.

though the old ones were still retained, yet it seemed there would be no end of improvements and additions. Others wondered why the execution of this law was put off so long as till the end of the year. All the account I can give of this is, that it was expected that by that time the new body of the ecclesiastical laws, which was now preparing, should be finished: and therefore, since this act was to be executed by the clergy, the day in which it was to be enforced was so long delayed, till that reformation of their laws were concluded.

An act concerning treasons.

On the 8th of February, a bill of treasons was put in, and agreed to by all the Lords, except the Lord Wentworth. It was sent down to the Commons, where it was long disputed: and many sharp things were said of those who now bore the sway; that whereas they who governed in the beginning of this reign had put in a bill for lessening the number of such offences, now they saw the change of councils, when severer laws were proposed. The Commons at last rejected the bill, and then drew a new one, which was passed. By it they enacted, "That if any should call the King, or any of his heirs named in the statute of the thirty-fifth of his father's reign, heretic, schismatic, tyrant, infidel, or usurper of the crown; for the first offence they should forfeit their goods and chattels, and be imprisoned during pleasure; for the second, should be in a *præmunire*; for the third, should be attainted of treason: but any who should advisedly set that out in printing or writing, was for the first offence to be held a traitor. And that those who should keep any of the King's castles, artillery, or ships, six days after they were lawfully required to deliver them up, should be guilty of treason: that men might be proceeded against for treasons committed out of the kingdom, as well as in it. They added a proviso, that none should be attainted of treason on this act, unless two witnesses should come, and to their face aver the fact for which they were to be tried, except such as without any violence should confess it; and that none should be questioned for any thing said or written, but within three months after it was done."

This proviso seems clearly to have been made with

relation to the proceeding against the Duke of Somerset, in which the witnesses were not brought to aver the evidence to his face, and by that means he was deprived of all the benefit and advantage which he might have had by cross examining them. It is certain, that though some false witnesses have practised the trade so much, that they seem to have laid off all shame, and have a brow that cannot be daunted; yet, for the greatest part, a bright serenity and cheerfulness attends innocence, and a lowering dejection betrays the guilty, when the innocent and they are confronted together.

An act about fasts and holy-days.

On the 3d of March a bill was brought into the Lords for holy-days and fasting days, and sent down to the Commons on the 15th of March, by whom it was passed, and had the royal assent. In the preamble it was set forth, "That men are not at all times so set on the performance of religious duties as they ought to be; which made it necessary that there should be set times in which labour was to cease, that men might on these days wholly serve God; which days were not to be accounted holy of their own nature, but were so called, because of the holy duties then to be set about: so that the sanctification of them (was not any magical virtue in that time, but) consisted in the dedicating them to God's service: that no day was dedicated to any saint, but only to God, in remembrance of such saints: that the Scripture had not determined the number of holy-days, but that these were left to the liberty of the church. Therefore, they enact, that all Sundays, with the days marked in the calendar and liturgy, should be kept as holy-days: and the bishops were to proceed by the censures of the church against the disobedient." A proviso was added, for the observation of St. George's feast by the knights of the garter; and another, that labourers or fishermen might, if need so required, work on those days either in or out of harvest. The eves before holy-days were to be kept as fasts; and in Lent, and on Fridays and Saturdays, abstinence from flesh was enacted: but if a holy-day fell to be on a Monday, the eve for it was to be kept on Saturday, since Sunday was never to be a fasting day. But it was ge-

PART II.

1552.

nerally observed, that in this and all such acts, the people were ready enough to lay hold on any relaxation made by it, but did very slightly observe the stricter parts of it: so that the liberty left to tradesmen to work in cases of necessity, was carried further than it was intended, to a too public profanation of the time so sanctified; and the other parts of it, directing the people to a conscientious observing of such times, was little minded.

On the 5th of March, a bill concerning the relief of the poor was put into the House of Lords: the form of passing it has given occasion to some to take notice, that though it is a bill for taxing the subjects, yet it had its birth in the Lords' House, and was agreed to by the Commons. By it the churchwardens were empowered to gather charitable collections for the poor; and if any did refuse to contribute, or did dissuade others from it, the bishop of the diocess was to proceed against them. On the 9th of March the bishops put in a bill for the security of the clergy from some ambiguous words that were in the submission which the convocation had made to King Henry, in the twenty-first year of his reign; by which they were under a *præmunire* if they did any things in their courts contrary to the King's prerogative; which was thought hard, since some through ignorance might transgress. Therefore, it was desired, that no prelate should be brought under a *præmunire*, unless they had proceeded in any thing after they were prohibited by the King's writ. To this the Lords consented, but it was let fall by the Commons.

An act for the marriage of the clergy.

There was another act brought in for the marriage of the clergy, which was agreed to by the Lords; the Earls of Shrewsbury, Derby, Rutland, and Bath, and the Lords Abergaveny, Stourton, Monteagle, Sands, Windsor, and Wharton, protesting against it. The Commons also passed it, and it was assented to by the King. By it was set forth, "That many took occasion from words in the act formerly made about this matter, to say, that it was only permitted, as usury and other unlawful things were, for the avoiding greater evils; who thereupon spoke slanderously of such marriages,

and accounted the children begotten in them to be bastards, to the high dishonour of the King and parliament, and the learned clergy of the realm, who had determined, that the laws against priests' marriages were most unlawful by the law of God; to which they had not only given their assent in the convocation, but signed it with all their hands. These slanders did also occasion, that the word of God was not heard with due reverence; whereupon it was enacted, that such marriages, made according to the rules prescribed in the book of service, should be esteemed good and valid, and that the children begot in them should be inheritable according to law."

The Marquis of Northampton did also put in a bill for confirming his marriage which was passed; only the Earl of Derby, the Bishops of Carlisle and Norwich, and the Lord Stourton, dissented. By it, "the marriage is declared lawful, as, by the law of God, indeed, it was; any decretal, canon, ecclesiastical law, or usage to the contrary, notwithstanding." This occasioned another act, that no man might put away his wife, and marry another, unless he were formerly divorced; to which the Bishop of Norwich dissented; because he was of opinion, that a divorce did not break the marriage-bond. But this bill fell in the House of Commons, being thought not necessary, for the laws were already severe enough against such double marriages.

By another act, the bishoprick of Westminster was quite suppressed, and reunited to the see of London; but the collegiate church, with its exempted jurisdiction, was still continued. Another bill was put in against usury, which was sent from the Lords to the Commons, and passed by both, and assented to. By it, an act passed in parliament, in the thirty-seventh year of the late King's reign, "That none might take above twenty per cent. for money lent, was repealed; which, they say, was not intended for the allowing of usury, but for preventing further inconveniencies: and since usury was, by the word of God, forbidden, and set out in divers places of Scripture as a most odious and detestable vice, which yet many continued to practise, for the

An act against usury.

PART II.

1552.

filthy gain they made by it; therefore, from the 1st of May, all usury, or gain for money lent, was to cease; and whosoever continued to practise to the contrary were to suffer imprisonment, and to be fined at the King's pleasure."

This act has been since repealed, and the gain for money lent has been at several times brought to several regulations. It was much questioned, whether these prohibitions of usury, by Moses, were not judicial laws, which did only bind the nation of the Jews, whose land being equally divided among the families by Lot, the making gain by lending money was forbid to them of that nation: yet it did not seem to be a thing of its nature sinful, since they might take increase of a stranger. The not lending money on use was more convenient for that nation, which, abounding in people and being shut up in a narrow country, they were necessarily to apply themselves to all the ways of industry for their subsistence; so that every one was, by that law of not lending upon use, forced to employ his money in the way of trade or manufacture, for which they were sure to have vent, since they lay near Tyre and Sidon, that were then the chief places of traffic and navigation of the world; and without such industry the soil of Judea could not possibly have fed such vast numbers as lived on it; so that it seemed clear, that this law in the Old Testament properly belonged to that policy. Yet it came to be looked on by many Christians as a law of perpetual obligation: it came also to be made a part of the canon law, and absolution could not be given to the breakers of it without a special faculty from Rome. But, for avoiding the severity of the law, the invention of mortgages was fallen on; which, at first, were only purchases made, and let back to the owner, for such rent as the use of the money came to; so that the use was taken as the rent of the land thus bought: and those who had no land to sell thus, fell upon another way; the borrower bought their goods, to be paid within a year, (for instance, 110*l.*) and sold them back for a sum to be presently laid down as they should agree, (it may be 100*l.*)

by this means the one had 100*l.* in hand, and the other was to have 10*l.* or more at a year's end: but this, being in the way of sale, was not called usury. This law was looked on as impossible to be observed in a country like England; and it could not easily appear where the immorality lay, of lending money upon moderate gain, such as held proportion to the value of the land, provided that the perpetual rule of Christian equity and charity were observed; which is, not to exact above the proportion duly limited by the law, and to be merciful in not exacting severely of persons who, by inevitable accidents, have been disabled from making payment. This digression I thought the more necessary, because of the scruples that many good and strict persons have still in that matter.

Another act passed both Houses, against all simoniacal pactions, the reservation of pensions out of benefices, and the granting advowsons while the incumbent was yet alive. It was agreed to by the Lords; the Earls of Derby, Rutland, and Sussex, the Viscount Hereford, and the Lords Monteagle, Sands, Wharton, and Evers, dissenting. But, upon what reason I do not know, the bill was not assented to by the King, who, being then sick, there was a collection made of the titles of the bills which were to have the royal assent, and those the King signed, and gave commission to some lords to pass them in his name. These abuses have been oft complained of, but there have been still new contrivances found out to elude all laws against simony; either bargains being made by the friends of the parties concerned without their express knowledge, or bonds of resignation given, by which incumbents lie at the mercy of their patrons; and in these the faultiness of some clergymen is made the colour of imposing such hard terms upon others, and of robbing the church oftentimes by that means.

A repeal of the entail of the Duke of Somerset's estate.

There was a private bill put in about the Duke of Somerset's estate, which had been by act of parliament entailed on his son, in the twenty-third year of the last King's reign. On the 3d of March it was sent to the

PART II.

1552.

House of Commons, signed by the King; it was for the repeal of that act. Whether the King was so alienated from his uncle, that this extraordinary thing was done by him for the utter ruin of his family, or not, I cannot determine; but I rather incline to think it was done in hatred to the Dutchess of Somerset, and her issue; for the estate was entailed on them by that act of parliament, in prejudice of the issue of the former marriage, of whom are descended the Seymours of Devonshire: who were disinherited and excluded from the Duke of Somerset's honours by his patents, and from his estate by act of parliament; partly upon some jealousies he had of his former wife, but chiefly by the power his second wife had over him. This bill of repeal was much opposed in the House, though sent to them in so unusual a way by the King himself; and though there was, on the 8th of March, a message sent from the Lords, that they should make haste towards an end of the parliament, yet still they stuck long upon it; looking on the breaking of entails that were made by act of parliament as a thing of such consequence, that it dissolved the greatest security that the law of England gives for property. It was long argued by the Commons, and was fifteen several days brought in; at last a new bill was devised, and that was much altered too; it was not quite ended till the day before the parliament was dissolved: but near the end of the session, a proviso was sent from the Lords to be added to the bill, confirming the attainder of the Duke and his complices. It seems his enemies would not try this at first, till they had by other things measured their strength in that House, and finding their interest grew there, they adventured on it; but they mistook their measures, for the Commons would not agree to it. In conclusion, the bill of repeal was agreed to. But whereas there had been some writings for a marriage between the Earl of Oxford's daughter and the Duke of Somerset's son, and a bill was put in for voiding these; upon a division of the House, the 28th of March, there were sixty-eight that agreed, and sixty-nine that rejected it: so this bill was cast out. By this we see

what a thin House of Commons there was at that time, the whole being but a hundred and thirty-seven members. But this was the natural effect of a long parliament, many of those who were at first chosen being infirm; and others not willing to put themselves to the charge and trouble of such constant and long attendance. It is also from hence clear how great an interest the Duke of Somerset had in the affections of the parliament.

The Commons refuse to attaint the Bishop of Duresme by bill.

Another bill gave a more evident discovery how hateful the Duke of Northumberland was to them. The Bishop of Duresme was, upon some complaint brought against him of misprision of treason, put into the Tower about the end of December, last year. What the particulars were I do not find; but it was visible that the secret reason was, that he being attainted, the Duke of Northumberland intended to have had the dignities and jurisdiction of that principality conferred on himself: so that he should have been made count palatine of Duresme. Tonstall had in all points given obedience to every law, and to all the injunctions that had been made: but had always in parliament protested against the changes in religion; which he thought he might with a good conscience submit to and obey, though he could not consent to them: only in the matter of the corporal presence he was still of the old persuasion, and wrote about it. But the Latin style of his book is much better than the divinity and reasonings in it. So what he would have done, if he had been required to subscribe the articles that were now agreed on, did not appear; for he was all this while prisoner. There was a constant good correspondence between Cranmer and him: though in many things they differed in opinion; yet Tonstall was both a man of candour and of great moderation, which agreed so well with Cranmer's temper, that no wonder they lived always in good terms. So when the bill for attainting him as guilty of misprision of treason was passed in the House of Lords, on the 31st of March, being put in on the 28th, Cranmer spoke so freely against it, that the Duke of Northumberland and he were never after that in friendship together. What his arguments were I could not re-

PART II.

1552.

cover; but when he could do no more, he protested against it, being seconded only by the Lord Stourton. How it came to pass that the other popish lords and bishops that protested against the other acts of this parliament, did not join in this, I cannot imagine: unless it was, that they were the less concerned for Tonstall, because Cranmer had appeared to be so much his friend, or were awed by their fear of offending the Duke of Northumberland. But when the bill was carried down to the Commons, with the evidences against him, which were some depositions that had been taken, and brought to the Lords; they who were resolved to condemn that practice for the future, would not proceed upon it now. So on the 5th of April they ordered the privy-counsellors of their House to move the Lords, that his accusers and he might be heard face to face: and that not being done, they went no further in the bill.

The parliament is dissolved.

By these indications the Duke of Northumberland saw how little kindness the House of Commons had for him. The parliament had now sat almost five years, and being called by the Duke of Somerset, his friends had been generally chosen to be of it. So that it was no wonder, if upon his fall they were not easy to those who had destroyed him: nor was there any motion made for their giving the King a supply. Therefore the Duke of Northumberland thought it necessary for his interest to call a new parliament. And accordingly on the 15th of April the parliament was dissolved; and it was resolved to spend this summer in making friends all over England, and to have a new parliament in the opening of the next year.

The convocation at this time agreed to the articles of religion that were prepared the last year: which, though they have been often printed, yet, since they are but short, and of so great consequence to this History, I have put them into the Collection, as was formerly told.

Thus the reformation of doctrine and worship was brought to its perfection, and they were not after this in a tittle mended or altered in this reign, nor much after-

wards; only some of the articles were put in more general words under Queen Elizabeth.

1552. A reformation of ecclesiastical courts considered.

Another part of the Reformation was yet unfinished, and it was the chief work of this year; that was, the giving rules to the ecclesiastical courts, and for all things relating to the government of the church, and the exercise of the several functions in it. In the former volume it was told, that an act had passed for this effect; yet it had not taken effect, but a commission was made upon it, and those appointed by King Henry had met and consulted about it, and had made some progress in it, as appears by an original letter of Cranmer's to that King, in the year 1545, in which he speaks of it as a thing then almost forgotten, and quite laid aside; for from the time of the six Articles till then, the design of the Reformation had been going backward. At that time the King began to reassume the thoughts of it, and was resolved to remove some ceremonies, such as the creeping to the cross, the ringing of bells on St. Andrew's eve, with other superstitious practices; for which Cranmer sent him the draught of a letter to be written in the King's name to the two Archbishops, and to be by them communicated to the rest of the clergy. In the postscript of his letter he complains much of the sacrilegious waste of the cathedral church of Canterbury, where the dean and prebendaries had been made to alienate many of their manors upon letters obtained by courtiers from the King, as if the lands had been desired for the King's use: upon which they had surrendered those lands, which were thereupon disposed of to the courtiers that had an eye upon them. This letter should have come in the former volume, but I had not seen it then, so I took hold on this occasion to direct the reader to it in the Collection. Collect. Numb. 61.

It was also formerly told, that an act had passed in this reign to empower thirty-two persons, who should be named by the King, to make a reformation of the ecclesiastical laws, which was to be finished in three years. But the revolutions of affairs, and the other more pressing things that were still uncompleted, had

PART II.

1552.

kept them hitherto from setting to that work. On the 11th of November last year, a commission was given to eight persons to prepare the matter for the review of the two-and-thirty, that so it might be more easily compiled, being in a few hands, than could well be done if so many had been to set about it. These eight were, the Archbishop of Canterbury and the Bishop of Ely; Dr. Cox and Peter Martyr, two divines; Dr. May and Dr. Taylor, two doctors of the law; and John Lucas and Richard Goodrick, two common lawyers. But on the 14th of November the commission was renewed, and the Bishop of London was named in the room of the Bishop of Ely; one Traheron * in the room of May; and Gosnald in Goodrick's room. These, it seems, desiring more time than one year to finish it in, for two of the years were now lapsed, in the last session of the parliament they had three years more time offered them. But it seems the work was believed to be in such a forwardness, that this continuation was not judged necessary, for the royal assent was not given to that act. After the parliament was ended, they made haste with it. But I find it said in the preface to the book, as it was printed in Queen Elizabeth's reign, that Cranmer † did the whole work almost himself: which will justify the character that some give of him, that he was the greatest canonist then in England. Dr. Haddon, who was the King's professor of civil law in the University of Cambridge, and Sir Jo. Cheek, were employed to put it in Latin. And they did so imitate the style of the Roman laws, that any who reads the book will fancy himself to be reading a work of the purer ages of that state, when their language was not yet corrupted with those barbarous terms which the mixture of other nations brought in, and made it no where more nauseously rude than in the canon law.

The work was digested and cast into fifty-one titles,

* Bartholomew Traheron, afterward made lecturer of divinity at Frankford, on the new molding of the congregation there, in Queen Mary's days; and Dean of Chichester, in Queen Elizabeth's.

† Cranmer's part is thus expressed, *Summæ Negotii præfuit.*

to bring it near the number of the books of the Pandects, into which Justinian had digested the Roman law. It was prepared by February this year, and a commission was granted to thirty-two persons, of whom the former eight were a part: consisting of eight bishops, eight divines, among whom John Alasco was one, eight civilians, and eight common lawyers. They were to revise, correct, and perfect the work, and so to present it to the King. They divided themselves into four classes, eight to a class; and every one of these was to prepare his corrections, and so to communicate them to the rest. And thus was the work carried on and finished; but before it received the royal confirmation the King died, and this fell with him: nor do I find it was ever since that time taken up, or prosecuted, with the care that a thing of such consequence deserved: and therefore I shall not think it improper for me, having before shewed what was done, in the next place to give an account of what was then intended to be done; and is now very fit to be well considered. 1552.

The first title was of the Trinity, and the catholic faith; in which those who denied the Christian religion were to suffer death, and the loss of their goods. The books of Scripture were numbered, those called Apocryphal being left out of the canon; which, though they were read in the church, it was only for the edification of the people, but not for the proof of the doctrine. The power of the church was subjected to the Scriptures: the four general councils were received; but all councils were to be examined by the Scripture; as were also the writings of the fathers, who were to be much reverenced; but, according to what themselves have written, they were only to be submitted to when they agreed with the Scriptures. The chief heads of it.

The second title contains an enumeration of many heresies, viz. against the Trinity, Jesus Christ, the Scriptures, about original sin, justification, the mass, purgatory; and censured those who denied magistracy to be lawful, or asserted the community of goods, or wives; or who denied the pastoral office, and thought any might assume it at pleasure; or who thought the

PART II.

1552.

sacraments naked signs, who denied the baptism of infants, or thought none could possibly be saved that were not baptized; or who asserted transubstantiation, or denied the lawfulness of marriage, particularly in the clergy; or who asserted the Pope's power; or such as excused their ill lives by the pretence of predestination, as many wicked men did: from which and other heresies all are dissuaded, and earnestly exhorted to endeavour the extirpation of them.

The third was about the judgments of heresy before the bishop of the diocess, even in exempted places. They were to proceed by witnesses; but the party, upon fame, might be required to purge himself: if he repented, he was to make a public profession of it in those places where he had spread it; and to renounce his heresy, swearing never to return to it any more: but obstinate heretics were to be declared infamous, incapable of public trust, or to be witnesses in any court, or to have power to make a testament; and were not to have the benefit of the law: clergymen falling into heresy were not to return to their benefices, unless the circumstances were such that they required it; and thus all capital proceedings for heresy were laid down.

The fourth was about blasphemy, flowing from hatred or rage against God, which was to be punished as obstinate heresy was.

The fifth was about the sacraments of baptism and the Lord's supper. To which is added, that imposition of hands is to be retained in the ordination of pastors; that marriages are to be solemnly made; that those who renew their baptismal vow be confirmed by the bishop; and that the sick should be visited by their pastors.

The sixth was about idolatry, magic, witchcraft, or consulting with conjurors; who were to be arbitrarily punished, if they submitted; otherwise, to be excommunicated.

The seventh was about preachers; whom the bishops were to examine carefully, before they licensed them; and were once a year to gather together all those who were licensed in their diocesses, to know of them the true state of their flock; what vices abounded, and what

remedies were most proper. Those who refused to hear sermons, or did make disturbance in them, were to be separated from the communion. It seems it was designed, that there should be in every diocess some who should go round a precinct, and preach like evangelists, as some then called them.

The eighth was about marriage, which was to be after asking banns three Sundays, or holy-days. Those who were married in any other form, than that in the book of service, were not to be esteemed lawfully married: those who corrupted virgins, were to be excommunicated, if they did not marry them; or, if that could not be done, they were to give them the third part of their goods, besides other arbitrary punishments. Marriages made without the consent of parents or guardians were declared null. Then follow the things that may void marriages; they are left free to all: polygamy is forbidden; marriages made by force are declared void; mothers are required to suckle their children.

The ninth is about the degrees of marriage. All those in the Levitical law, or those that are reciprocal to them, are forbidden: but spiritual kindred was not to hinder marriage, since there was nothing in Scripture about it, nor was there any good reason for it.

The tenth was about adultery. A clergyman guilty of it was to forfeit all his goods and estate to his wife and children; or, if he had none, to the poor, or some pious use; and to lose his benefice, and be either banished, or imprisoned during life. A layman was to restore his wife's portion, and to give her the half of his goods, and be imprisoned, or banished, during life. Wives that were guilty, were to be in like manner punished. But the innocent party might marry again; yet such were rather exhorted, if they saw hope of amendment, to be reconciled to the offending party. No marriage was to be dissolved without a sentence of divorce. Desertion, long absence, capital enmities, where either party was in hazard of their life, or the constant perverseness or fierceness of a husband against his wife, might induce a divorce: but little quarrels

PART II.

1553.

might not do it; nor a perpetual disease, relief in such a misery being one of the ends of marriage. But all separation from bed and board, except during a trial, was to be taken away.

The 11th was about admission to ecclesiastical benefices. Patrons were to consider, the choice of the person was trusted to them, but was not to be abused to any sacrilegious or base ends: if they did otherwise, they were to lose their right for that time. Benefices were not to be given, or promised, before they were void; nor let lie destitute above six months, otherwise they were to devolve to the bishop. Clergymen, before their ordination, were to be examined by the archdeacons, with such other triers as the bishop should appoint to be assistant to them, and the bishop himself was to try them, since this was one of the chief things upon which the happiness of the church depended. The candidate was to give an oath to answer sincerely, upon which he was to be examined about his doctrine, chiefly of the whole points of the Catechism, if he understood them aright: and what knowledge he had of the Scriptures: they were to search him well whether he held heretical opinions: none was to be admitted to more cures than one; and all privileges for pluralities were for ever to cease; nor was any to be absent from his cure, except for a time, and a just cause, of which he was to satisfy his ordinary. The bishops were to take great care to allow no absence longer than was necessary: every one was to enter upon his cure within two months after he was instituted by the bishop. Prebendaries who had no particular cure, were to preach in the churches adjacent to them. Bastards might not be admitted to orders, unless they had eminent qualities. But the bastards of patrons were upon no account to be received, if presented by them. Other bodily defects, unless such as did much disable them, or made them very contemptible, were not to be a bar to any. Beside the sponsions in the office of ordination, they were to swear that they had made no agreement to obtain the benefice to which they were presented, and that if they come

to know of any made by other on their account, they should signify it to the bishop; and that they should not do any thing to the prejudice of their church.

The 12th and 13th were about the renouncing or changing of benefices.

The 14th was about purgation upon common fame, or when one was accused for any crime, which was proved incompletely, and only by presumptions. The ecclesiastical courts might not re-examine any thing that was proved in any civil court; but upon a high scandal a bishop might require a man to purge himself, otherwise to separate him from holy things. The form of a purgation was, to swear himself innocent; and he was also to have four compurgators of his own rank, who were to swear, that they believed he swore true: upon which the judge was to restore him to his fame. Any that were under suspicion of a crime, might by the judge be required to avoid all the occasions from which the suspicion had risen: but all superstitious purgations were to be rejected.

The 15th, 16th, 17th, and 18th, were about dilapidations, the letting of the goods of the church, the confirming the former rules of election in cathedrals or colleges, and the collation of benefices. And there was to be a purgation of simony, as there should be occasion for it.

The 19th was about Divine offices. In the mornings on holy-days, the Common-Prayer was to be used, with the communion service joined to it. In cathedrals, there was to be communion every Sunday and holy-day; where the bishop, the dean, and the prebendaries, and all maintained by that church, were to be present. There was no sermon to be in cathedrals in the morning, lest that might draw any from the parish churches; but only in the afternoons. In the anthems, all figured music, by which the hearers could not understand what they sung, was to be taken away. In parish churches there were only to be sermons in the morning; but none in the afternoon, except in great parishes. All who were to receive the sacrament, were to come the day before, and inform the minister of it; who was to

PART II.

1552.

examine their consciences and their belief. On holy-days, in the afternoon, the Catechism was to be explained for an hour. After the evening prayers, the poor were to be looked to; and such as had given open scandal were to be examined, and public penitence was to be enjoined them: and the minister, with some of the ancients of the parish, were to commune together about the state of the people in it: that if any carried themselves indecently, they might be first charitably admonished; and, if that did not prevail, subjected to severer censures: but none were to be excommunicated, without the bishop were first informed, and had consented to it. Divine offices were not to be performed in chapels, or private houses, lest the churches should, under that pretence, be neglected, and errors more easily disseminated; excepting only the houses of peers and persons of great quality, who had numerous families; but in these, all things were to be done according to the book of Common-Prayer.

The 20th was about those that bore office in the church; sextons, churchwardens, deacons, priests, and rural deans. This last was to be a yearly office: he that was named to it by the bishop, being to watch over the manners of the clergy and people in his precinct, was to signify the bishop's pleasure to them, and to give the bishop an account of his precinct every sixth month. The archdeacons were to be general visitors over the rural deans. In every cathedral, one of the prebendaries, or one procured by them, was thrice a week to expound some part of the Scriptures. The bishops were to be over all, and to remember that their authority was given to them for that end, that many might be brought to Christ, and that such as had gone astray might be restored by repentance. To the bishop all were to give obedience according to the word of God. The bishop was to preach often in his church; was to ordain none for rewards, or rashly; was to provide good pastors, and to deprive bad ones; he was to visit his diocess every year, or oftener, as he saw cause; but then he was to do it at his own charge: he was to have yearly synods, and to confirm such as were well

instructed. His family was to consist of clergymen, whom he should bring up to the service of the church: (so was St. Austin's, and other ancient bishops' families constituted:) this being a great means to supply the great want of good and faithful ministers. Their wives and children were also to avoid all levity or vain dressing. They were never to be absent from their diocesses, but upon a public and urgent cause: and when they grew sick or infirm, they were to have coadjutors. If they became scandalous or heretical, they were to be deprived by the King's authority. The archbishops were to exercise the episcopal function in their diocess; and were once to visit their whole province, and to oversee the bishops, to admonish them for what was amiss, and to receive and judge appeals, to call provincial synods upon any great occasion, having obtained warrant from the King for it. Every bishop was to have a synod of his clergy some time in Lent, so that they might all return home before Palm-Sunday. They were to begin with the Litany, a sermon, and communion; then all were to withdraw into some private place, where they were to give the bishop an account of the state of the diocess, and to consult of what required advice; every priest was to deliver his opinion, and the bishop was to deliver his sentence, and to bring matters to as speedy a conclusion as might be; and all were to submit to him, or appeal to the archbishop.

The 21st, 22d, 23d, 24th, 25th, 26th, 27th, 28th, and 29th titles are about churchwardens, universities, tithes, visitations, testaments, ecclesiastical censures, suspension, sequestration, deprivation.

The 30th is about excommunication; of which, as being the chief ecclesiastical censure, I shall set down their scheme more fully.

Their design concerning the use of excommunication.

Excommunication they reckon an authority given of God to the church, for removing scandalous or corrupt persons from the use of the sacraments, or fellowship of Christians, till they give clear signs of their repentance, and submit to such spiritual punishments, by which the flesh may be subdued, and the spirit saved. This was trusted to churchmen, but chiefly to arch-

PART II.

1552.

bishops, bishops, archdeacons, deans, and any other appointed for it by the church. None ought to be excommunicated but for their obstinacy in great faults; but it was never to be gone about rashly; and, therefore, the judge who was to give it, was to have a justice of peace with him, and the minister of the parish where the party lived, with two or three learned presbyters, in whose presence the matter was to be examined, and sentence pronounced, which was to be put in writing. It was to be intimated in the parish where the party lived, and in the neighbouring parishes, that all persons might be warned to avoid the company of him that was under excommunication: and the minister was to declare what the nature and consequences of excommunication were, the person so censured being cut off from the body of Christ: after that, none was to eat, or drink, or keep company with him, but those of his own family: whosoever did otherwise, if being admonished they continued in it, were also to be excommunicated. If the person censured continued forty days without expressing any repentance, it was to be certified into the chancery, and a writ was to issue for taking and keeping him in prison till he should become sensible of his offences; and when he did confess these, and submitted to such punishments as should be enjoined, the sentence was to be taken off, and the person publicly reconciled to the church. And this was to take place against those, who, being condemned for capital offences, obtained the King's pardon, but were notwithstanding to be subject to church censures.

Then follows the office of receiving penitents. They were first to stand without the church, and desire to be again received into it, and so to be brought in: the minister was to declare to the people the heinousness of sin, and the mercies of God in the gospel, in a long discourse, of which the form is there prescribed: then he was to shew the people, that as they were to abhor hardened sinners, so they were to receive, with the bowels of true charity, all sincere penitents: he was next to warn the person, not to mock God, and deceive the people, by a feigned confession; he was thereupon

to repeat, first, a general confession, and then more particularly to name his sin, and to pray to God for mercy to himself, and that none by his ill example might be defiled; and finally to beseech them all to forgive him, and to receive him again into their fellowship: then the minister was to ask the people, whether they would grant his desires, who were to answer, they would: then the pastor was to lay his hand on his head, and to absolve him from the punishment of his offences, and the bond of excommunication; and so to restore him to his place in the church of God. Then he was to lead him to the communion-table, and there to offer up a prayer of thanksgiving to God for reclaiming that sinner. For the other titles, they relate to the other parts of the law of those courts, for which I refer the reader to the book itself.

How far any of those things, chiefly the last about excommunication, may be yet brought into the church, I leave to the consultations of the governors of it, and of the two houses of parliament. It cannot be denied, that vice and immorality, together with much impiety, have overrun the nation; and though the charge of this is commonly cast on the clergy, who certainly have been in too many places wanting to their duty; yet, on the other hand, they have so little power, or none at all, by law, to censure even the most public sins, that the blame of this great defect ought to lie more universally on the whole body of the nation, that have not made effectual provision for the restraining of vice, the making ill men ashamed of their ways, and the driving them from the holy mysteries, till they change their course of life.

A project for relieving the clergy reduced to great poverty.

There was another thing proposed this year for the correcting the great disorders of clergymen, which were occasioned by the extreme misery and poverty to which they were reduced. There were some motions made about it in parliament, but they took not effect: so one wrote a book concerning it, which he dedicated to the Lord Chancellor, then the Bishop of Ely. He shewed, that without rewards or encouragements few would apply themselves to the pastoral function, and

PART II.

1552.

that those in it, if they could not subsist by it, must turn to other employments: so that at that time, many clergymen were carpenters, and tailors, and some kept alehouses. It was a reproach on the nation, that there had been so profuse a zeal for superstition, and so much coldness in true religion. He complains of many of the clergy who did not maintain students at the universities according to the King's injunctions; and that in schools and colleges, the poor scholars' places were generally filled with the sons of the rich; and that livings were most scandalously sold; and the greatest part of the country clergy were so ignorant, that they could do little more than read. But there was no hope of doing any thing effectually for redressing so great a calamity, till the King should be of age himself to set forward such laws as might again recover a competent maintenance for the clergy.

Heath and Day turned out of their bishopricks.

This year, both Heath, of Worcester, and Day, bishop of Chichester, were put out of their bishopricks. For Heath, it has been already said, that he was put in prison for refusing to consent to the book of Ordinations. But for Day, whether he refused to submit to the new book, or fell into other transgressions, I do not know. Both these were afterwards deprived, not by any court consisting of churchmen, but by secular delegates, of whom three were civilians, and three common lawyers, as King Edward's Journal informs us. Day's sentence is something ambiguously expressed, in the patent that Scory, bishop of Rochester, had to succeed him; which bears date the 24th of May, and mentions his being put there in the room of George, late bishop of that see, who had been deprived or removed from it. In June following, upon Holbeach bishop of Lincoln's death, Taylor, that had been dean of Lincoln, was made bishop. This year the bishoprick of Gloucester was quite suppressed, and converted into an exempted archdeaconry: and Hooper was made bishop of Worcester. In the December before, Worcester and Gloucester had been united, by reason of their vicinage and their great poverty, and that they were not very populous; so they were to be for ever after

one bishoprick with two titles, as Coventry and Litchfield, and Bath and Wells, were; and Hooper was made bishop of Worcester and Gloucester. But now they were put into another method, and the bishop was to be called only bishop of Worcester. In all the vacancies of sees, there were a great many of their best lands taken from them: and the sees that before had been profusely enriched, were now brought to so low a condition, that it was scarce possible for the bishops to subsist: and yet, if what was so taken from them had been converted to good uses, to the bettering the condition of the poor clergy over England, it had been some mitigation of so heinous a robbery; but these lands were snatched up by every hungry courtier, who found this to be the easiest way to be satisfied in his pretensions: and the world had been so possessed with the opinion of their excessive wealth, that it was thought they never could be made poor enough. 1552.

The affairs of Ireland.

This year a passage fell out relating to Ireland, which will give me occasion to look over to the affairs of that kingdom. The kings of England had formerly contented themselves with the title of Lords of Ireland; which King Henry the Eighth, in the thirty-third year of his reign, had, in a parliament there, changed into the title of a kingdom. But no special crown or coronation was appointed, since it was to follow the crown of England. The popes and the emperors have pretended, that the conferring titles of sovereign dignity belonged to them. The Pope derived his claim from what our Saviour said, "That all power in heaven and in earth was given to him," and by consequence to his vicar. The emperors, as being a dead shadow of the Roman empire, which title, with the designation of Cæsar, they still continued to use, and pretended, that as the Roman emperors did anciently make kings, so they had still the same right: though, because those emperors made kings in the countries which were theirs by conquest, it was an odd stretch to infer, that those who retained nothing of their empire but the name, should therefore make kings in countries that belonged not to them: and it is certain, that every entire or independent

PART II.

1552.

crown or state may make for or within itself what titles it pleases. But the authority the crown of England had in Ireland was not then so entire, as, by the many rebellions that have fallen out since, it is now become. The heads of the clans and names had the conduct of all their several tribes, who were led on by them to what designs they pleased: and though within the English pale, the King was obeyed, and his laws executed almost as in England; yet the native Irish were an uncivilized and barbarous nation, and not yet brought under the yoke; and for the greatest part of Ulster, they were united to the Scots, and followed their interests.

There had been a rebellion in the second year of this reign. But Sir Anthony St. Leiger, then deputy, being recalled, and Sir Edward Bellinghame sent in his room, he subdued O'Canor and O'More, that were the chief authors of it: and not being willing to put things to extremities, when England was otherwise distracted with wars, he persuaded them to accept of pensions of 100*l.* a-piece, and so they came in and lived in the English pale. But the winter after, there was another rebellion designed in Ulster, by O'Neal, O'Donnel, O'Docart, and the heads of some other tribes; who sent to the Queen Dowager of Scotland to procure them assistance, from France, and they would keep up the disorders in Ireland. The Bishop of Valence, being then in Scotland, was sent by her to observe their strength, that he might accordingly persuade the King of France to assist them. He crossed the seas, and met with them, and with Wauchop, a Scotchman, who was the bishop of Armagh of the Pope's making, and who, though very short-sighted, was yet esteemed one of the best at riding post in the world. They set out all their greatness to the French Bishop, to engage him to be their friend at the court of France: but he seemed not so well satisfied of their ability to do any great matter, and so nothing followed on this. One passage fell out here, which will a little discover the temper of that Bishop. When he was in O'Docart's house, he saw a fair daughter of his, whom he endeavoured to have corrupted, but she avoided him carefully. Two English

gray-friars, that had fled out of England for their religion, and were there at that time, observing the Bishop's inclinations, brought him an English whore, whom he kept for some time. She one night looking among his things, found a glass full of somewhat that was very odoriferous, and poured it all down her throat: which the Bishop perceiving too late, fell into a most violent passion; for it had been presented to him by Soliman the Magnificent, at his leaving that court, as the richest balm in Egypt; and was valued at two thousand crowns. The Bishop was in such a rage, that all the house was disturbed with it; whereby he discovered both his lewdness and passion at once. This is related by one that was then with him, and was carried over by him to be a page to the Scotch Queen—Sir James Melvil, who lived long in that court, under the Constable of France, and was afterwards much employed by the Prince Elector Palatine in many negotiations; and coming home to his own country, was sent on many occasions to the court of England, where he lived in great esteem. He in his old age wrote a narrative of all the affairs that himself had been concerned in, which is one of the best and perfectest pieces of that nature that I have seen. The original is yet extant under his own hand in Scotland: a copy of it was shewed me by one descended from him, from which I shall discover many considerable passages, though the affairs in which he was most employed were something later than the time of which I am to write. But to return to Ireland. Upon the peace made with France and Scotland, things were quieted there: and Sir Anthony St. Leiger was, in August 1550, again sent over to be deputy there. For the Reformation, it made but small progress in that kingdom. It was received among the English, but I do not find any endeavours were used to bring it in among the Irish. This year Bale was sent into Ireland. He had been a busy writer upon all occasions, and had a great deal of learning, but wanted temper, and did not write with the decency that became a divine, or was suitable to such matters; which it seems made those who recommended men to preferment in this church,

PART II.

1552.

not think him so fit a person to be employed here in England. But the bishoprick of Ossery being void, the King proposed him to be sent thither. So in August this year Dr. Goodaker was sent over to be bishop of Armagh, and Bale to be bishop of Ossery. There were also two other, who were Irishmen, to be promoted. When they came thither, the Archbishop of Dublin intended to have consecrated them according to the old pontifical; for the new book of ordination had not been yet used among them. Goodaker and the two others were easily persuaded to it, but Bale absolutely refused to consent to it: who being assisted by the Lord Chancellor, it was carried, that they should be ordained according to the new book. When Bale went into his diocess, he found all things there in dark popery; but before he could make any reformation there, King Edward's death put an end to his and all such designs.

A change made in the order of the garter.

In England nothing else that had any relation to the Reformation passed this year, unless what belongs to the change made in the order of the garter may be thought to relate to it. On the 23d of April the former year, being St. George's day, a proposition was made to consider the order and statutes, since there was thought to be a great deal of superstition in them; and the story upon which the order was founded, concerning St. George's fighting with the dragon, looked like a legend formed in the darker ages, to support the humour of chivalry, that was then very high in the world. And as the story had no great credibility in itself, so it was delivered by no ancient author. Nor was it found that there had been any such saint: there being among ancient writers none mentioned of that name, but George of Alexandria, the Arian bishop, that was put in when Athanasius was banished. Upon this motion in the former year, the Duke of Somerset, the Marquis of Northampton, and the Earls of Wiltshire and Warwick, were appointed to review the statutes of the order. So this year the whole order was changed; and the Earl of Westmoreland and Sir Andrew Dudley, who were now to be installed, were the first that were received according to the new model; (which the reader will find in

1552. King Edward's Remains, Numb. 3.

the Collection, as it was translated into Latin out of the English, by the King himself, written all with his own hand, and it is the third paper after his Journal.) The preamble of it sets forth the noble design of the order, to animate great men to gallant actions, and to associate them into a fraternity, for their better encouragement and assistance; but says, it had been much corrupted by superstition, therefore the statutes of it were hereafter to be these:

It was no more to be called the order of St. George, nor was he to be esteemed the patron of it; but it was to be called the order of the garter. The knights of this order were to wear the blue riband or garter as formerly; but at the collar, instead of a George, there was to be on one side of the jewel a knight carrying a book upon a sword point, on the sword to be written *Protectio,* on the book *Verbum Dei;* on the reverse, a shield, on which should be written *Fides;* to express their resolution both with offensive and defensive weapons to maintain the word of God. For the rest of the statutes I shall refer the reader to the paper I mentioned. But this was repealed by Queen Mary, and so the old rules took place again, and do so still. This design seems to have been chiefly intended, that none but those of the reformed religion might be capable of it; since the adhering to and standing for the Scriptures, was then taken to be the distinguishing character between the papists and the reformers.

This is the sum of what was either done or designed this year with relation to religion. As for the state, there was a strict inquiry made of all who had cheated the King in the suppression of chantries, or in any other thing that related to churches; from which the visitors were believed to have embezzled much to their own uses; and there were many suits in the star-chamber about it. Most of all these persons had been the friends or creatures of the Duke of Somerset: and the inquiry after these things seems to have been more out of hatred to him, than out of any design to make the King the richer by what should be recovered for his use. But on none did the storm break more severely than on

PART II.

1552. Paget degraded from being a knight of the garter.

the Lord Paget. He had been chancellor of the dutchy of Lancaster, and was charged with many misdemeanours in that office, for which he was fined in 6000*l.* But that which was most severe was, that on St. George's eve he was degraded from the order of the garter, for divers offences; but chiefly, because he was no gentleman, neither by father's or mother's side. His chief offence was his greatest virtue. He had been on all occasions a constant friend to the Duke of Somerset; for which the Duke of Northumberland hated him mortally, and so got him to be degraded to make way for his own son. This was much censured, as a barbarous action, that a man who had so long served the crown in such public negotiations, and was now of no meaner blood than he was when King Henry first gave him the order, should be so dishonoured, being guilty of no other fault, but what is common to most courtiers, of enriching himself at his master's cost; for which his fine was severe enough for the expiation. But the Duke of Northumberland was a person so given up to violence and revenge, that an ordinary disgrace did not satisfy his hatred.

Sir Anthony St. Leiger, another knight of the order, was at the same time accused, upon complaint sent from the Archbishop of Dublin in Ireland, for some high words that he had used. But these being examined, he was cleared, and admitted to his place among the knights at the garter. Many others that were obnoxious came in, upon this violent prosecution, to purchase the favour of Northumberland, who was much set on framing a parliament to his mind, and so took those methods which he thought likeliest to work his ends. It being ordinary for men of insolent and boisterous tempers, who are generally as abject when they are low, as they are puffed up with prosperity, to measure other people by themselves; therefore, knowing that the methods of reason and kindness would have no operation on themselves, and that height and severity are the only ways to subdue them, they use that same way of gaining others which they find most effectual to themselves.

1552. The increase of trade.

This year the King went on, in paying his debts, reforming the coin, and other ways that might make the nation great and wealthy. And one great project was undertaken, which has been the chief beginning and foundation of the great riches and strength of shipping, to which this nation has attained since that time. From the days of King Henry the Third the free towns of Germany, who had assisted him in his wars, obtained great privileges in England: they were made a corporation, and lived together in the Still-yard near the bridge. They had in Edward the Fourth's time been brought into some trouble, for carrying their privileges further than their charter allowed them: and so judgment was given that they had forfeited it, but they redeemed themselves out of that, by a great present which they made to the King. That which chiefly supported them at court, was, that they, trading in a body, were not only able to take the trade out of all other persons' hands, by underselling them, but they had always a great stock of money; and so, when the government was in a strait, they were ready, upon a good security, to lend great sums: and on lesser occasions could obtain the favour of a statesman by the presents they made him. But now trade was raised much above what it had been, and courts becoming more magnificent than formerly, there was a greater consumption, particularly of cloth, than had ever been known. The discovery of the Indies had raised both trade and navigation, so that there was a quicker circulation of the wealth of the world, than had been in former ages.

Antwerp and Hamburgh, lying both conveniently, the one in the mouth of the Elbe, and the other near the mouth of the Rhine, which were the two greatest rivers that fell into those seas, the merchants of those two cities at that time had the chief trade of the world. The English began to look on those easterlings with envy. All that was imported or exported came for the most part in their bottoms: all markets werein their hands, so that commodities of foreign growth were vented by them in England, and the product of the kingdom was bought up by them. And all the nation being then set much on

PART II.

1552.

pasture, they had much advanced their manufacture; insomuch that their own wool, which had been formerly wrought at Antwerp, was now made into cloth in England, which the Still-yard men obtained leave to carry away. At first they shipped not above eight cloths in a year, after that a hundred, then a thousand, then six thousand; but this last year there were shipped in their name forty-four thousand cloths; and not above eleven hundred by all others that traded within England.

The merchant-adventurers found they could not hold out, unless this company was broken. So they put in their complaint against them in the beginning of this year, to which the Still-yard men made answer, and they replied. Upon this, the council made a decree, that the charter was broken, and so dissolved the company. Those of Hamburgh and Lubeck, and the Regent of Flanders, solicited the council to have this redressed, but in vain; for the advantage the nation was to have by it was too visible to admit of any interposition. But the design of trade being thus set on foot, another project of a higher nature followed it. The war was now begun between the Emperor and the King of France; and that, with the persecution raised in Flanders against all that leaned to the doctrine of the protestants, made many there think of changing their seats. It was therefore proposed here in England to open a free trade, and to appoint some mart towns, that should have greater privileges and securities for encouraging merchants to live in them, and should be easier in their customs than they were any where else. Southampton for the cloth trade, and Hull for the northern trade, were thought the two fittest places. And for the advantages and disadvantages of this design, I find the young King had balanced the matter exactly; for there is a large paper all written with his own hand, containing what was to be said on both sides. But his death, and Queen Mary's marrying the Prince of Spain, put an end to this project: though all the addresses her husband made, seconding the desires of the easterlings, could never prevail to the setting up of that company again. If the reader would understand this matter more perfectly, he may find a great deal of it

in the King's Journal, and in the fourth paper that follows it, where the whole affair seems to be considered on all hands: but men that know merchandise more perfectly will judge better of these things.

1552. King Edward's Remains, Numb. 4. Cardan in England.

This summer, Cardan, the great philosopher of that age, passed through England. He was brought from Italy on the account of Hamilton, Archbishop of St. Andrew's, who was then desperately sick of a dropsy. Cardan cured him of his disease: but being a man much conversant both in astrology and magic, as himself professed, he told the Archbishop, that though he had at present saved his life, yet he could not change his fate; for he was to die on a gallows. In his going through England he waited on King Edward, where he was so entertained by him, and observed his extraordinary parts and virtues so narrowly, that on many occasions he wrote afterwards of him, with great astonishment, as being the most wonderful person he had ever seen.

The Affairs of Scotland.

But the mention of the Scotch Archbishop's sickness leads me now to the affairs of Scotland. The Queen had passed through England from France to Scotland last year. In her passage she was treated by the King with all that respect that one crowned head could pay to another. The particulars are in his Journal, and need not be recited here. When she came home, she set herself much to persuade the governor to lay down the government, that it might be put in her hands; to which he, being a soft man, was the more easily induced, because his brother, who had great power over him, and was a violent and ambitious man, was then so sick, that there was no hope of his life. He had also received letters from France, in such a style, that he saw he must either lay down the government, or not only lose the honour and pension he had there, but be forced to struggle for what he had in his own country. Whether the French understood any thing by their spies in the court of England, that it had been proposed there to persuade him to pretend to the crown, and were therefore the more earnest to have the government out of his hands, I do not know: but though I have seen many hundreds of letters that passed in those times be-

PART II.

1552.

tween England and Scotland, I could not find by any of them that he ever entered into any treaty about it.

It seems his base brother had some thoughts of it. For when he was so far recovered that he could inquire after news, and heard what his brother had done, he flew out in a passion, and called him "a beast for parting with the government, since there was none but a —— lass between him and the crown." I set down his own words, leaving a space void for an epithet he used of the young Queen, scarce decent enough to be mentioned. There had been a great consultation in France what to do with the Queen of Scotland. Her uncles pressed the King to marry her to the Dauphin: for thereby another kingdom would be added to France, which would be a perpetual thorn in the side of England; she had also some prospect of succeeding to the crown of England; so that on all accounts it seemed the best match in Europe for the Dauphin. But the wise Constable had observed, that the Spaniards lost by their dominions that lay so remote from the chief seat of their government, though these were the richest countries in Europe; namely, Sicily, Naples, Milan, and the Netherlands: and wisely apprehended that France might suffer much more, by the accession of such a crown, which not only was remote, but where also the country was poor, and the people not easily governed. It would be a vast charge to them, to send navies, and to pay armies there: the nobility might when they would, by confederating with England, either shake off the French government, or put them to a great expense to keep it: so that whereas Scotland had been hitherto, by a pension, and sometimes by a little assistance, kept in a perpetual alliance with France, he apprehended by such an union it might become their enemy, and a great weight on their government. This the Constable pressed much, both out of his care of his master's interest, and in opposition to the House of Guise. He advised the King rather to marry her to some of his subjects, of whom he was well assured, and to send her and her husband home into Scotland; by which means the perpetual amity of that kingdom might be preserved on easy terms. But the

King was so possessed with the notion of the union of that crown to France, that he gave no ear to this wise advice: thinking it flowed chiefly from the hatred and enmity which he knew the Constable bore the family of Guise. This the Constable himself told Melvil, from whose narrative I have it. The Queen-Mother of Scotland being possessed of the government, found two great factions in it. The head of the one was the Archbishop, who now recovering and finding himself neglected, and the Queen governed by other councils, set himself much against her, and drew the clergy for the most part into his interests. The other faction was of those who hated him and them both, and inclined to the Reformation. They set up the Prior of St. Andrew's, who was their young Queen's natural brother, as their head; and by his means offered their service to the Queen, now made Regent: they offered that they would agree with her to send the matrimonial crown to the Dauphin, and consent to the union of both kingdoms: only they desired her protection from the violence of the clergy, and that they might have secretly preachers in their houses to instruct them in the points of religion. This offer the Queen readily accepted of, and so by their assistance carried things till near the end of her regency with great moderation and discretion. And now the affairs of Scotland were put in a channel, in which they held long steady and quiet, till about six years after this, that, upon the peace with the King of Spain, there were cruel councils laid down in France, and from thence sent over into Scotland, for extirpating heresy. But of that we shall discourse in its proper place.

The Affairs of Germany

As for the affairs of Germany, there was this year a great and sudden turn of things there; with which the Emperor was surprised by a strange supineness, that proved as fatal to him, as it was happy to the empire; though all the world besides saw it coming on him. Upon the delivery of Magdeburg, Maurice of Saxe's army, pretending there was an arrear due to them, took up their winter quarters near Saxe, in the dominions of some popish princes: where they were very unwelcome

PART II.

1552.

guests. The sons of the Landgrave, being required by their father, pressed the Duke of Saxe on his honour to free their father, or to become their prisoner in his room, since they had his faith for his liberty: so he went to them, and offered them his person; but though he did not trust them with his whole design, yet he told them so much that they were willing to let him go back. The Emperor's counsellors were alarmed with what they heard from all hands. And the Duke of Alva (well known afterwards by his cruelties in the Netherlands) advised him to send for Maurice to come and give an account of all those suspicious passages, to take the army out of his hands, and to take such securities from him, as might clear all the jealousies, for which his carriage had given great cause. But the Bishop of Arras was on the other hand so assured of him, that he said, the giving him any suspicion of the Emperor's distrust might really engage him into such designs; and that such deep projects as they heard he was in, were too fine conceits for Dutch drunken heads. He also assured them, he had two of his secretaries in pension, so that he was advertised of all his motions. But the Duke of Saxe came to know that those his secretaries were the Emperor's pensioners; and dissembled it so well, that he used them in all appearance with more confidence than formerly: he held all his consultations in their presence, and seemed to open his heart so to them, that they possessed the Bishop with a firm confidence of his sincerity and steadiness to the Emperor's interests. Yet his lingering so at the town of Magdeburg, with the other dark passages concerning him, made the Emperor conceive at last a jealousy of him, and he wrote for him to come and clear himself: then he refined it higher; for having left orders with the officers whom he had made sure to him, to follow with the army in all the haste they could; he himself took post, with as small a train as his dignity could admit of, and carried one of those corrupted secretaries with him: but on the way he complained of pains in his side, so that he could not hold on his journey: but sent forward his secretary, who gave such an account of him, that it, together with

his coming so readily a great part of his way in so secure a manner, made the Emperor now lay down all his former distrusts. The Emperor wrote to Trent, and to many other places, that there was no cause of fear from Maurice. And Maurice, to colour the matter more completely, had sent his ambassadors to Trent, and had ordered Melancthon, and his other divines, to follow them slowly, that, as soon as the safe conduct was obtained, they might go on and defend their doctrine. 1552.

Upon their coming to Trent, and proposing their desires, that all might be again considered, the legates rejected the proposition with much scorn. The emperors, ambassadors, and prelates, pressed that they might be well received. The Archbishop of Toledo shewed how much Christ had borne with the scribes and pharisees; and that, in imitation of him, they ought to leave nothing undone that might gain upon them. So it was resolved, that the council should make a protestation, that the usage they gave them was out of charity, which is above all law; since it was against the decretals to have any treaty with professed heretics. At the same time, the Imperialists dealt no less earnestly with the ambassadors from the protestant princes, not to ask too much at once, but to go on by degrees; and assured them they had a mind to lessen the pope's greatness as much as they had. The ambassadors' first step was to be for obtaining a safe conduct. They excepted to that which the council had given, as different from that the council of Basil had sent to the Bohemians, in four material points. The first was, That their divines should have a decisive voice. Secondly, That all points should be determined according to the Scriptures; and according to the fathers, as they were conformable to those. Thirdly, That they should have the exercise of their religion within their own houses. Fourthly, That nothing should be done in contempt of their doctrine. So they desired that the safe conduct might be word for word the same with that of Basil. Proceedings at Trent.

But the legates abhorred the name of that council, that had endeavoured so much to break the power of the popedom, and had consented to that extraordinary safe

PART II.

1552.

conduct, only to unite Germany, and to gain them by such compliance to be of their side against the pope. Yet the legates promised to consider of it. The ambassadors were received in a congregation, which differed from a session of the council, just as a committee of a whole house of parliament differs from the house when set according to its forms. They began their speech with this salutation, "Most reverend and most mighty fathers and lords:" they added a cold compliment, and desired a safe conduct. At this time, the pope, hearing that the Emperor was resolved to bring on the old designs of some councils for lessening his greatness, and that the Spanish bishops were much set on it, united himself to France, and resolved to break the council as soon as it was possible; and therefore he ordered the legates to proceed in the decision of the doctrine, hoping that the protestants would despair of obtaining any thing, and so go away. So the safe conduct they had desired was not granted them, and another was offered in its room, containing only full security for their persons. Upon this security, such as it was, divines came both from Wirtemberg and the town of Strasburg. But as they were going on to treat of matrimony, the war of Germany broke out, and the bishops of the empire, with the other ambassadors, immediately went home. The legates laid hold on this so readily, that, though the session was to have been held on the 2d of May, they called an extraordinary one on the 28th of April, and suspended the council for two years.

An account of the council of Trent.

And being to have no other occasion to say any thing more of this council, I shall only add, that there had been a great expectation over Christendom of some considerable event of a general council, for many years. The bishops and princes had much desired it, hoping it might have brought the differences among divines to a happy composure; and have settled a reformation of those abuses, which had been long complained of, and were still kept up by the court of Rome, for the ends of that principality that they had assumed in sacred things. The popes, for the same reasons, were very apprehensive of it, fearing that it might have lessened their pre-

rogatives; and, by cutting off abuses that brought in a great revenue to them, have abridged their profits. But it was, by the cunning of the legates, the dissensions of princes, the great number of poor Italian bishops, and the ignorance of the greatest part of the other, so managed, that, instead of composing differences in religion, things were so nicely defined, that they were made irreconcilable. All those abuses, for which there had been nothing but practice, and that much questioned before, were now, by the provisos and reservations, excepted for the privileges of the Roman see, made warrantable. So that it had, in all particulars, an issue quite contrary to what the several parties concerned had expected from it, and has put the world, ever since, out of the humour of desiring any more general councils, as they are accustomed to call them. The history of that council was written with as much life, and beauty, and authority, as had been ever seen in any human writing, by Friar Paul of Venice, within half an age of the time in which it was ended, when the thing was yet fresh in men's memories, and many were alive who had been present: and there was not one in that age that engaged to write against it. But about forty years after, when Father Paul, and all his friends who knew from what vouchers he wrote, were dead, Pallavicini, a Jesuit, who was made a cardinal for this service, undertook to answer him by another history of that council, which, in many matters of fact, contradicts Father Paul; upon the credit, as he tells us, of some journals and memorials of such as were present, which he perused, and cites upon all occasions. We see that Rome hath been, in all ages, so good at forging those things which might be of use to its interests, that we know not how to trust that shop of false wares, in any one thing that comes out of it. And, therefore, it is not easy to be assured of the truth and genuineness of any of the materials, out of which the Jesuit composed his work: but as for the main thread of the story, both his and Father Paul's accounts do so agree, that whosoever compares them will clearly see, that all things were managed by intrigues, and secret practices; so that it will not be easy for a man of common

And a judgment of the histories of it.

PART II.

1552.

sense, after he has read over Pallavicini's history, to fancy that there was any extraordinary influence of the Holy Ghost hovering over and directing their councils. And the care they took for palliating all the corruptions then complained of was so apparent, that their historian had no other way by which to excuse it, but to set up a new hypothesis, which a French writer since has wittily called *the cardinal's new gospel*; "That there must be a temporal principality in the church; that all things which support that principality are to be at least tolerated, though they be far contrary to the primitive patterns, and to the first delivery of the gospel by Christ and his apostles. That which was then set up he accounts a state of infancy, to which milk was proper; but the church being since grown to its full state and strength, other things are now necessary for the maintaining and preserving of it."

But to return to Maurice: he, having possessed the Emperor with an entire confidence in him, gathered his army together, took Augsburg, with many other imperial cities, and displaced the magistrates which the Emperor had put in them, and restored their old ones, with the banished ministers; so that every thing began to put on a new face. Ferdinand, king of the Romans, did mediate, both on his own account, for the Turks were falling into Hungary; and on the empire's, for the King of France was come with a great army to the confines of the empire: and the Constable, pretending that he only desired passage through the town of Metz, entered it, and possessed himself of it. Toul and Verdun fell also into his hands: and the French were endeavouring to be admitted into Strasburg. The Emperor was now in great disorder: he had no army about him; those he had confided in were declared against him; his own brother was not ill pleased at his misfortune; the French were like to gain ground on his hereditary dominions. Being thus perplexed and irresolved, he did not send a speedy answer to Maurice's demands, which he had sent by his brother, for the setting of the Landgrave at liberty, restoring the freedoms of the empire, and particularly in matters of religion. But, to lose no time the mean while, Maurice marched on to Inspruch, where

the Emperor lay: and surprised a pass to which he had trusted, so that he was within two miles of him before he was aware of it. Upon this, the Emperor rose from supper in great haste, and, by torch-light, fled away to make his escape into Italy. He gave the Duke of Saxe his liberty; but he generously resolved to follow him in this his calamity, and perhaps he was not willing to owe his liberty to his cousin Maurice. Thus all that design, which the Emperor had been laying so many years, was now broken off on a sudden: he lost all the advantages he had of his former victories, and was forced to set the prisoners at liberty, and to call in the proscriptions; and, in conclusion, the edict of Passaw was made, by which the several princes and towns were secured in the free exercise of their religion.

I have made this digression, which I thought not disagreeable to the matter of my history, to give account of the extreme danger in which religion was in Germany, and how strangely it was recovered; in which he, who had been the chief instrument of the miseries it had groaned under, was now become its unlooked-for deliverer. I have enlarged on some passages that are in none of the printed histories, which I draw from Melvil's Memoirs, who says he had them from the Elector Palatine's own mouth.

The Emperor is much cast down.

But the Emperor's misfortunes redoubled on him: for, having made peace in the empire, he would, against all reason or probability of success, sit down before Metz. But the Duke of Guise defended the place so against him, and the time of the year was so unseasonable, being in December, that, after a great loss of men, and vast expense of treasure, he was forced to raise his siege. From thence he retired into Flanders, where his afflictions seized so violently on him, that, for some time, he admitted none to come near him: some said he was frantic; others, that he was sullen and melancholy The English ambassadors, at Brussels, for many weeks could learn nothing certain concerning him. Here, it is said, he began to reflect on the vanity of the world; when he, who had but a year before given law to Christendom, was now driven to so low an ebb, that, as he had

PART II.

1552.

irrecoverably lost all his footing in Germany, so, in all other things, his counsels were unlucky. It was one of the notablest turns of fortune that had been in many ages, and gave a great demonstration both of an overruling Providence that disposes of all human affairs at pleasure, and of a particular care that God had of the Reformation, in thus recovering it when it seemed gone without hope in Germany.

These reflections made deep impressions on his mind, and were believed to have first possessed him with the design, which, not long after, he put in execution, of laying down his crowns, and retiring to a private course of life. In his retirement, having time to consider things more impartially, he was so much changed in his opinion of the protestant religion, that he, who hitherto had been a most violent opposer of it, was suspected of being turned to it before he died.

1553.

Thus ended this year; and now I come to the last and fatal year of this young King's life and reign. The first thing done in it, was, a regulation of the privy-council, which was divided into so many committees, and every one of these had its proper work, and days appointed for the receiving and dispatching of all affairs. In all these things a method was prescribed to them, of which the reader will see a full account in the sixth paper of those that follow King Edward's Journal; which paper, though it is not all written with his hand, as the others be, yet it is in so many places interlined by him, that he seems to have considered it much, and been well pleased with it. His second parliament was opened on the 1st of March. On the 6th of March it was moved in the House of Commons, to give the King two-tenths and two-fifteenths, with a subsidy for two years: it was long argued at first, and at the passing the bill it was again argued, but at last the Commons agreed to it. The preamble of it is a long accusation of the Duke of Somerset, for involving the King in wars, wasting his treasure, engaging him in much debt, embasing the coin, and having given occasion to a most terrible rebellion. In fine, considering the great debt the King was left in by his father, the loss he put him-

A regulation of the privy-council.

King Edward's Remains, Numb. 6.

A new parliament.

self to in the reforming the coin, and, they finding his temper to be set wholly on the good of his subjects, and not on enriching himself, therefore they gave him two tenths and two fifteenths, with one subsidy for two years. Whether the debate in the House of Commons was against the subsidies in this act, or against the preamble, cannot be certainly known: but it is probable the debate, at the engrossing the bill, was about the preamble, which the Duke of Northumberland and his party were the more earnestly set on, to let the King see how acceptable they were, and how hateful the Duke of Somerset had been. The clergy did also, for an expression of their affection and duty, give the King six shillings in the pound of their benefices. There was also a bill sent down from the Lords, That none might hold any spiritual promotion, unless he were either priest or deacon; but after the third reading it was cast out. The reason of it was, because many noblemen and gentlemen's sons had prebends given them, on this pretence, that they intended to fit themselves by study for entering into orders; but they kept these, and never advanced in their studies: upon which the bishops prevailed to have the bill agreed to by the Lords, but could carry it no further.

The bishoprick of Duresme suppressed, and two new ones appointed

Another act passed for the suppressing the bishoprick of Duresme, which is so strangely misrepresented by those who never read more than the title of it, that I shall therefore give a more full account of it. It is set forth in the preamble, "That that bishoprick being then void of a prelate, so that the gift thereof was in the King's pleasure; and the compass of it being so large, extending to so many shires so far distant, that it could not be sufficiently served by one bishop; and since the King, according to his godly disposition, was desirous to have God's holy word preached in these parts, which were wild and barbarous, for lack of good preaching and good learning; therefore he intended to have two bishopricks for that diocess: the one at Duresme, which should have two thousand marks revenue; and another at Newcastle, which should have one thousand marks revenue; and also to found a cathedral church at New-

PART II.

1553.

castle, with a deanery and chapter, out of the revenues of the bishoprick: therefore the bishoprick of Duresme is utterly extinguished and dissolved, and authority is given for letters patents to erect the two new bishopricks, together with the deanery and chapter at Newcastle: with a proviso that the rights of the deanery, chapter, and cathedral of Duresme, should suffer nothing by this act."

When this bill is considered, that dissolution that was designed by it will not appear to be so sacriligious a thing as some writers have represented it. For whosoever understands the value of old rents, especially such as these were near the marches of an enemy, where the service of the tenants in the war made their lands be set at very low rates, will know, that three thousand marks of rent being reserved, besides the endowing of the cathedral, which could hardly be done under another thousand marks, there could not be so great a prey of that bishoprick as has been imagined. Ridley, as himself writes in one of his letters, was named to be bishop of Duresme, being one of the natives of that country; but the thing never took effect. For in May, and no sooner, was the temporalty of the bishoprick turned into a county-palatine, and given to the Duke of Northumberland. But the King's sickness, and soon after his death, made that, and all the rest of these designs, prove abortive.

How Tonstall was deprived, I cannot understand. It was for misprision of treason, and done by secular men, for Cranmer refused to meddle in it. I have seen the commission given by Queen Mary to some delegates to examine it; in which it is said, that the sentence was given only by laymen; and that Tonstal, being kept prisoner long in the Tower, was brought to his trial, in which he had neither counsel assigned him, nor convenient time given him for clearing himself; and that after divers protestations, they had, notwithstanding his appeal, deprived him of his bishoprick. He was not only turned out, but kept prisoner, till Queen Mary set him at liberty.

At the end of this parliament, the King granted a free pardon; concerning which this only is remarkable, that

whereas it goes for a maxim, that the acts of pardon must be passed without changing any thing in them, the Commons, when they sent up this act of pardon to the Lords, desired that some words might be amended in it; but it is not clear what was done, for that same day the acts were passed, and the parliament was dissolved.

In it the Duke of Northumberland had carried this point, that the nation made a public declaration of their dislike of the Duke of Somerset's proceedings; which was the more necessary, because the King had let fall words concerning his death, by which he seemed to reflect on it with some concern, and looked on it as Northumberland's deed. But the act had passed with such difficulty, that either the Duke did not think the parliament well enough disposed for him; or else he resolved totally to vary from the measures of the Duke of Somerset, who continued the same parliament long, whereas this that was opened on the first was dissolved on the last day of March.

A visitation for the plate in churches.

Visitors were soon after appointed to examine what church plate, jewels, and other furniture, was in all cathedrals and churches; and to compare their account with the inventories made in former visitations; and to see what was embezzled, and how it was done. And, because the King was resolved to have churches and chapels furnished with that that was comely and convenient for the administration of the sacraments; they were to give one or two chalices of silver, or more, to every church, chapel, or cathedral, as their discretions should direct them; and to distribute comely furniture for the communion-table, and for surplices; and to sell the rest of the linen, and give it to the poor; and to sell copes, and altar-cloths, and deliver all the rest of the plate and jewels to the King's treasurer, Sir Edmund Pecham. This is spitefully urged by one of our writers, who would have his reader infer from it, that the King was ill-principled as to the matters of the church, because, when this order was given by him, he was now in the sixteenth year of his age. But if all princes should be thus judged by all instructions that pass under their

PART II.

1553.

hands, they would be more severely censured than there is cause. And for the particular matter that is charged on the memory of this young prince, which, as it was represented to him, was only a calling for the superfluous plate, and other goods, that lay in churches, more for pomp than for use; though the applying of it to common uses, except upon extreme necessities, is not a thing that can be justified; yet it deserved not so severe a censure; especially the instructions being signed by the King in his sickness; in which it is not likely that he minded affairs of that kind much, but set his hand easily to such papers as the council prepared for him.

Instructions for the President of the north.

These instructions were directed, in the copy that I have perused, to the Earl of Shrewsbury, lord-president of the north; upon which occasion, I shall here make mention of that which I know not certainly in what year to place, namely, the instructions that were given to that Earl when he was made president of the north. And I mention them the rather, because there have been, since that time, some contests about that office, and the court belonging to it. There was by his instructions a council to be assistant to him; whereof some of the members were at large and not bound to attendance, others were not to leave him without licence from him: and he was in all things to have a negative voice in it. For the other particulars, I refer the reader to the copy, which he will find in the Collection. One instruction among them belongs to religion; that he and the other counsellors, when there were at any time assemblies of people before them, should persuade them to be obedient chiefly to the laws about religion, and especially concerning the service set forth in their own mother tongue. There was also a particular charge given them concerning the abolished power of the Bishop of Rome, whose abuses they were, by continual inculcation, so to beat into the minds of the people, that they might well apprehend them, and might see that those things were said to them from their hearts, and not from their tongues, only for form's sake. They were also to satisfy them about the abrogation of many holy days appointed by the same Bishop.

Collect. Numb. 56.

who endeavoured to persuade the world that he could make saints at his pleasure: which, by leading the people to idleness, gave occasion to many vices and inconveniences. These instructions were given after the peace was made with Scotland; otherwise there must have been a great deal in them relating to that war; but the critical time of them I do not know.

The form of the bishops' letters patents.

This year Harley was made bishop of Hereford, instead of Skip, who died the last year. And he being the last of those who were made so by letters patents, I shall give the reader some satisfaction concerning that way of making bishops. The patents began with the mention of the vacancy of the see, by death or removal: upon which the King, being informed of the good qualifications of such an one, appoints him to be bishop, during his natural life, or so long as he shall behave himself well: giving him power to ordain and deprive ministers, to confer benefices, judge about wills, name officials and commissaries, exercise ecclesiastical jurisdiction, visit the clergy, inflict censures, and punish scandalous persons, and to do all the other parts of the episcopal function that were found by the word of God to be committed to bishops; all which they were to execute and do in the King's name and authority. After that, in the same patent, follows the restitution of the temporalties. The day after, a certificate in a writ called a *significavit* was to be made of this, under the great seal, to the archbishop, with a charge to consecrate him.

The first that had his bishoprick by the King's patents was Barlow, that was removed from St. David's to Bath and Wells. They bear date the 3d of February, in the second year of the King's reign: and so Ferrar, bishop of St. David's, was not the first, as some have imagined, for he was made bishop the 1st of August that year. This Ferrar was a rash, indiscreet man, and drew upon himself the dislike of the prebendaries of St. David's. He was made bishop upon the Duke of Somerset's favour to him; but last year many articles were objected to him: some as if he had incurred a *præmunire* for acting in his courts, not in the King's but his

PART II.

1553.

own name, and some for neglecting his charge; and some little indecencies were objected to him, as going strangely habited, travelling on foot, whistling impertinently, with many other things, which, if true, shewed in him much weakness and folly. The heaviest articles he denied; yet he was kept in prison, and commissioners were sent into Wales to examine witnesses, who took many depositions against him. He lay in prison till Queen Mary's time; and then he was kept in on the account of his belief. But his suffering afterwards for his conscience, when Morgan, who had been his chief accuser before on those other articles, being then made his judge, condemned him for heresy, and made room for himself to be bishop by burning him, did much turn people's censures from him upon his successor.

By these letters patents it is clear, that the episcopal function was acknowledged to be of Divine appointment, and that the person was no other way named by the King than as lay-patrons present to livings; only the bishop was legally authorized, in such a part of the King's dominions, to execute that function which was to be derived to him by imposition of hands. Therefore here was no pretence for denying that such persons were true bishops, and for saying, as some have done, that they were not from Christ, but from the King.

Upon this occasion it will not be improper to represent to the reader how this matter stands according to law at this day, which is the more necessary, because some superficial writers have either misunderstood or misrepresented it. The act that authorized those letters patents, and required the bishops to hold their courts in the King's name, was repealed both by the 1 Mar. chap. 2. and 1 and 2 Phil. and Mary, chap. 8. The latter of these that repealed only a part of it, was repealed by the 1 Eliz. chap. 1. and the former by the 1 Jac. chap. 25. So some have argued, that since those statutes which repealed this act of Edward the Sixth, 1 par. chap. 2. are since repealed, that it stands now in full force. This seems to have some colour in it, and so it was brought in question in parliament in the fourth year

of King James; and great debate being made about it, the King appointed the two chief justices to search into the matter: they, upon a slight inquiry, agreed, that the statute of Edward the Sixth was in force by that repeal; but the chief baron, and the other judges, searching the matter more carefully, found that the statute had been in effect repealed by the first of Eliz. chap. 1. where the act of the 25 Hen. VIII. concerning the election and jurisdiction of bishops, as formerly they had exercised it, was revived: so that, being in full force, the act of Edward the Sixth that repealed it was thereby repealed. To this all the learned men of the law did then agree; so that it was not thought so much as necessary to make an explanatory law about it, the thing being indeed so clear, that it did not admit of any ambiguity.

1553.

Coke 2. Inst. p. 684, 685.

In May this year the King, by his letters patents, authorized all schoolmasters to teach a new and fuller catechism, compiled by Alexander Nowel.

These are all the passages in which the church is concerned this year. The foreign negotiations were important; for now the balance began to turn to the French side; therefore the council resolved to mediate a peace between the French and the Emperor. The Emperor had sent over an ambassador in September last year, to desire the King would consider the danger in which Flanders was now, by the French King's having Metz, with the other towns in Lorrain, which did, in a great measure, divide it from the assistance of the empire: and therefore moved that, according to the ancient league between England and the House of Burgundy, they would enter into a new league with him. Upon this occasion the reader will find how the secretaries of state bred the King to the understanding of business with relation to the studies he was then about: for Secretary Cecil set down all the arguments for and against that league, with little notes on the margin, relating to such topics from whence he brought them, by which it seems the King was then learning logic. It is the fifth of those papers after his Journal.

King Edward's Remains, Numb. 5.

It was resolved on to send Sir Richard Morison with

A treaty with the Emperor.

PART II.

1553.

instructions to compliment the Emperor upon his coming into Flanders, and to make an offer of the King's assistance against the Turks, who had made great depredations that year both in Hugary, Italy, and Sicily. If the Emperor should, upon that, complain of the French King, and say that he had brought in the Turks, and should have asked assistance against him; he was to move the Emperor to send over an ambassador to treat about it, since he that was then resident in England was not very acceptable. These instructions (which are in the Collection) were signed in September, but not made use of till January this year; and then new orders were sent to propose the King to be a mediator between France and the Emperor: upon which the Bishop of Norwich and Sir Phillip Hobbey were sent over to join with Sir Richard Morison; and Sir William Pickering and Sir Thomas Chaloner were sent into France. In May the Emperor fell sick, and the English ambassadors could learn nothing certainly concerning him; but then the Queen of Hungary and the Bishop of Arras treated with them. The Bishop of Arras complained that the French had begun the war, had taken the Emperor's ships at Barcelona, had robbed his subjects at sea, had stirred up the princes of Germany against him, had taken some of the towns of the empire from him, while the French ambassadors were all the while swearing to the Emperor, that their master intended nothing so much as to preserve the peace: so that now, although the French were making several overtures for peace, they could give no credit to any thing that came from them. In fine, the Queen and Bishop of Arras promised the English ambassadors to let the Emperor know of the King's offering himself to mediate; and afterwards told them, that the Emperor delayed giving answer till he were well enough to do it himself.

Collect. Numb. 57.

On the 26th of May, the ambassadors wrote over that there was a project sent them out of Germany of an alliance between the Emperor, Ferdinand king of the Romans, the King of England, and the princes of the empire. They did not desire that the King should

offer to come into it of his own accord; but John Frederick of Saxe would move Ferdinand to invite the King into it: this way, they thought, would give least jealousy. They hoped the Emperor would easily agree to the conditions that related to the peace of Germany, since he was now out of all hopes of making himself master of it. The princes neither loved nor trusted him; but loved his brother, and relied much on England. But the Emperor having proposed that the Netherlands should be included in the perpetual league of the empire, they would not agree to that, unless the quotas of their contribution were much changed: for these provinces were like to be the seats of wars, therefore they would not engage for their defence, but upon reciprocal advantages and easy terms.

When the English ambassadors in the court of France desired to know on what terms a peace might be mediated, they found they were much exalted with their success: so that (as they wrote over on the 1st of May) they demanded the restitution of Milan, and the kingdoms of Sicily, Naples, and Navarre, the sovereignty of Flanders, Artois, and the town of Tournay; they would also have Siena to be restored to its liberty, and Metz, Toul, and Verdun, to continue under the protection of France. These terms the council thought so unreasonable, that, though they wrote them over as news to their ambassadors in Flanders, yet they charged them not to propose them. But the Queen of Hungary asked them what propositions they had for a peace, knowing already what they were, and from thence studied to inflame the ambasssadors, since it appeared how little the French regarded their mediation, or the peace of Christendom, when they asked such high and extravagant things upon a little success.

On the 9th of June the Emperor ordered the ambassadors to be brought into his bedchamber, whither they were carried by the Queen of Hungary. He looked pale and lean; but his eyes were lively and his speech clear. They made him a compliment upon his sickness, which he returned with another for their long attendance. Upon the matter of their embassy, he said, the

PART II.

1553. King of France had begun the war, and must likewise begin the propositions of peace: but he accepted of the King's offer very kindly, and said they should always find in him great inclinations to a just peace. On the 1st of July the council wrote to their ambassadors. First, assuring them that the King was still alive, and they hoped he should recover; they told them they did not find that the French would offer any other terms than those formerly made: and they continued still in that mind, that they could not be offered by them as mediators; yet they ordered them to impart them unto the Emperor as news, and carefully to observe his looks and behaviour upon their opening of every one of them.

The King's sickness. But now the King's death broke off this negotiation, together with all his other affairs. He had, last year, first the measles, and then the small-pox, of which he was perfectly recovered. In his progress he had been sometimes violent in his exercises, which had cast him into great colds; but these went off, and he seemed to be well after it. But in the beginning of January this year, he was seized with a deep cough, and all medicines that were used did rather increase than lessen it; upon which a suspicion was taken up and spread over all the world (so that it is mentioned by most of the historians of that age), that some lingering poison had been given him; but more than rumours, and some ill-favoured circumstances, I could never discover concerning this. He was so ill when the parliament met, that he was not able to go to Westminster; but ordered their first meeting, and the sermon to be at Whitehall. In the time of his sickness, Bishop Ridley preached before him, and took occasion to run out much on works of charity, and the obligation that lay on men of high condition to be eminent in good works. This touched the King to the quick: so that presently after sermon he sent for the bishop; and after he had commanded him to sit down by him and be covered, he resumed most of the heads of the sermon, and said he looked on himself as chiefly touched by it: he desired him, as he had already given him the exhortation in general, so to direct him how to do his duty in that parti-

His care of the relief of the poor.

cular. The Bishop, astonished at this tenderness in so young a prince, burst forth in tears, expressing how much he was overjoyed to see such inclinations in him; but told him he must take time to think on it, and craved leave to consult with the Lord Mayor and Court of Aldermen. So the King wrote by him to them to consult speedily how the poor should be relieved. They considered there were three sorts of poor: such as were so by natural infirmity or folly, as impotent persons, and madmen, or ideots; such as were so by accident, as sick or maimed persons; and such as by their idleness did cast themselves into poverty. So the King ordered the Gray friars' church near Newgate, with the revenues belonging to it, to be a house for orphans; St. Bartholomew's, near Smithfield, to be an hospital; and gave his own house of Bridewell, to be a place of correction and work for such as were wilfully idle. He also confirmed and enlarged the grant for the hospital of St. Thomas, in Southwark, which he had erected and endowed in August last. And when he set his hand to these foundations, which was not done before the 26th of June, this year: he thanked God, that had prolonged his life, till he had finished that design. So he was the first founder of those houses, which, by many great additions since that time, have risen to be among the noblest in Europe.

He expressed, in the whole course of his sickness, great submission to the will of God, and seemed glad at the approaches of death; only the consideration of religion and the church touched him much; and upon that account he said, he was desirous of life. About the end of May, or beginning of June, the Duke of Suffolk's three daughters were married: the eldest, Lady Jane, to the Lord Guilford Dudley, the fourth son of the Duke of Northumberland, (who was the only son whom he had yet unmarried:) the second, the Lady Catharine, to the Earl of Pembroke's eldest son, the Lord Herbert: the third, the Lady Mary, who was crooked, to the King's groom porter, Martin Keys. The Duke of Northumberland married his two daughters, the eldest to Sir Henry Sidney, son to Sir William Sidney, that

Several marriages.

PART II.

1553.

had been steward to the King, when he was Prince; the other was married to the Lord Hastings, son to the Earl of Huntington. The people were mightily inflamed against this insolent Duke, for it was generally given out, that he was sacrificing the King to his own extravagant ambition. He seemed little to regard their censures, but attended on the King most constantly, and expressed all the care and concern about him that was possible. And finding that nothing went so near his heart as the ruin of religion, which he apprehended would follow upon his death, when his sister Mary should come to the crown: upon that, he and his party took advantage to propose to him to settle the crown by his letters patents on the Lady Jane Gray. How they prevailed with him to pass by his sister Elizabeth, who had been always much in his favour, I do not so well understand. But the King being wrought over to this, the Dutchess of Suffolk, who was next in King Henry's will, was ready to devolve her right on her daughter, even though she should come afterwards to have sons. So on the 11th of June, Mountague, that was chief-justice of the Common Pleas, and Baker and Bromley, two judges, with the King's attorney, and solicitor, were commanded to come to council. There they found the King with some privy-counsellors about him. The King told them, he did now apprehend the danger the kingdom might be in, if upon his death his sister Mary should succeed; who might marry a stranger, and so change the laws and the religion of the realm. So he ordered some articles to be read to them, of the way in which he would have the crown to descend. They objected, that the act of succession, being an act of parliament, could not be taken away by any such device: yet the King required them to take the articles, and draw a book according to them: they asked a little time to consider of it. So having examined the statute of the first year of this reign, concerning treasons, they found that it was treason, not only after the King's death, but even in his life, to change the succession. Secretary Petre, in the mean while, pressed them to make haste: when they came again to the council, they declared they could not do any

He is persuaded to leave the crown to the Lady Jane.

Which the judges at first opposed.

such thing; for it was treason; and all the Lords should be guilty of treason if they went on in it. Upon which, the Duke of Northumberland, who was not then in the council chamber, being advertised of this, came in great fury, calling Mountague a traitor, and threatened all the judges; so that they thought he would have beaten them. But the judges stood to their opinion. They were again sent for, and came, with Gosnald added to them, on the 15th of June. The King was present, and he somewhat sharply asked them, Why they had not prepared the book as he had ordered them? They answered, That whatever they did would be of no force without a parliament. The King said, he intended to have one shortly. Then Mountague proposed, that it might be delayed till the parliament met. But the King said, he would have it first done, and then ratified in parliament; and therefore he required them on their allegiance to go about it; and some counsellors told them, if they refused to obey that, they were traitors. This put them in a great consternation; and old Mountague, thinking it could not be treason whatever they did in this matter while the King lived, and at worst, that a pardon under the great seal would secure him, consented to set about it, if he might have a commission requiring him to do it, and a pardon under the great seal when it was done. Both these being granted him, he was satisfied. The other judges, being asked if they would concur, did all agree, being overcome with fear, except Gosnold, who still refused to do it. But he also, being sorely threatened, both by the Duke of Northumberland and the Earl of Shrewsbury, consented to it the next day. So they put the entail of the crown in form of law, and brought it to the Lord Chancellor to put the seal to it. They were all required to set their hands to it, but both Gosnald and Hales refused. Yet the former was wrought on to do it, but the latter, though a most steady and zealous man for the Reformation, would upon no consideration yield to it: after that, the Lord Chancellor, for his security, desired that all the counsellors might set their hands to it; which was done on the 21st of June, by thirty-three of them; it is likely, including

But through fear all yielded except Judge Hales.

PART II.

1553.

the judges in the number. But Cranmer, who came often to council after the Duke of Somerset's fall, was that day absent on design. Cecil, in a relation which he made one write of this transaction, for clearing himself afterwards, says, that when he had heard Gosnold and Hales declare how much it was against law, he refused to set his hand to it as a counsellor, and that he only signed as a witness to the King's subscription. But Cranmer still refused to do it after they had all signed it, and said he would never consent to the disinheriting of the daughters of his late master. Many consultations were had to persuade him to it. But he could not be prevailed on, till the King himself set on him; who used many arguments, from the danger religion would otherwise be in, together with other persuasions; so that, by his reasons, or rather importunities, at last he brought him to it. But whether he also used that distinction of Cecil's, that he did it as a witness, and not as a counsellor, I do not know: but it seems probable, that if that liberty was allowed the one, it would not be denied the other.

Cranmer was very hardly brought to consent to it.

The King's sickness becomes desperate.

But though the settling this business gave the King great content in his mind, yet his distemper rather increased than abated; so that the physicians had no hope of his recovery: upon which, a confident woman came, and undertook his cure, if he might be put into her hands. This was done, and the physicians were put from him, upon this pretence, that they having no hopes of his recovery, in a desperate case desperate remedies were to be used. This was said to be the Duke of Northumberland's advice in particular; and it increased the people's jealousy of him, when they saw the King grow very sensibly worse every day after he came under the woman's care: which becoming so plain, she was put from him, and the physicians were again sent for, and took him into their charge. But if they had small hopes before, they had none at all now. Death thus hastening on him, the Duke of Northumberland, who knew he had done but half his work, except he had the King's sisters in his hands, got the council to write to them in the King's name, inviting them to come and keep him

company in his sickness. But as they were on the way, on the 6th of July, his spirits and body were so sunk, that he found death approaching; and so he composed himself to die in a most devout manner. His whole exercise was in short prayers and ejaculations. The last that he was heard to use was in these words: "Lord God, deliver me out of this miserable and wretched life, and take me among thy chosen; howbeit, not my will but thine be done. Lord, I commit my spirit to thee. O Lord, thou knowest how happy it were for me to be with thee: yet for thy chosen's sake send me life and health, that I may truly serve thee. O my Lord God, bless my people, and save thine inheritance; O Lord God, save thy chosen people of England; O Lord God, defend this realm from papistry, and maintain thy true religion, that I and my people may praise thy holy name, for Jesus Christ his sake." Seeing some about him, he seemed troubled, that they were so near, and had heard him: but with a pleasant countenance he said, he had been praying to God. And soon after, the pangs of death coming on him, he said to Sir Henry Sidney, who was holding him in his arms; "I am faint, Lord, have mercy on me, and receive my spirit;" and so he breathed out his innocent soul. The Duke of Northumberland, according to Cecil's relation, intended to have concealed his death for a fortnight, but it could not be done.

His last prayer.

Thus died King Edward the Sixth, that incomparable young prince. He was then in the sixteenth year of his age, and was counted the wonder of that time. He was not only learned in the tongues, and other liberal sciences, but knew well the state of his kingdom. He kept a book, in which he wrote the characters that were given him, of all the chief men of the nation, all the judges, lord-lieutenants, and justices of the peace over England: in it he had marked down their way of living, and their zeal for religion. He had studied the matter of the mint, with the exchange, and value of money; so that he understood it well, as appears by his Journal. He also understood fortification, and designed well. He knew all the harbours and ports, both of his own dominions, and of France and Scotland; and how much water they

His death and character.

PART II.

1553.

had, and what was the way of coming in to them. He had acquired great knowledge in foreign affairs; so that he talked with the ambassadors about them in such a manner, that they filled all the world with the highest opinion of him that was possible; which appears in most of the histories of that age. He had great quickness of apprehension; and being mistrustful of his memory, used to take notes of almost every thing he heard: he wrote these first in Greek characters, that those about him might not understand them; and afterwards wrote them out in his Journal. He had a copy brought him of every thing that passed in council, which he put in a chest, and kept the key of that always himself.

In a word, the natural and acquired perfections of his mind were wonderful; but his virtues and true piety were yet more extraordinary. He was such a friend to justice, that, though he loved his uncle the Duke of Somerset much, yet when he was possessed of a belief of his designing to murder his fellow counsellors, he was alienated from him: and being then but fourteen, it was no wonder if that was too easily infused in him. His chief favourite was Barnaby Fitz Patrick, to whom he wrote many letters and instructions when he sent him to be bred in France. In one of his letters to him, he wrote, that he must not think to live like an ambassador, but like a private gentleman, who was to be advanced as he should deserve it. He allowed him to keep but four servants: he charged him to follow the company of gentlemen, rather than of ladies: that he should not be superfluous in his apparel: that he should go to the campaign, and observe well the conduct of armies, and the fortification of strong places: and let the King know always when he needed money, and he would supply him. All these, with many other directions, the King wrote with his own hand: and at his return, to let him see he intended to raise him by degrees, he gave him a pension only of one hundred and fifty pounds. This Fitz Patrick did afterwards fully answer the opinion this young King had of him. He was bred up with him in his learning; and, as it is said, had been his whipping boy, who, according to the rule of educating our princes,

was always to be whipped for the King's faults. He was afterwards made by Queen Elizabeth baron of Upper Ossory, in Ireland, which was his native country.

King Edward was tender and compassionate in a high measure: so that he was much against the taking away the lives of heretics; and therefore said to Cranmer, when he persuaded him to sign the warrant for the burning of Joan, of Kent, That he was not willing to do it, because he thought that was to send her quick to hell. He expressed great tenderness to the miseries of the poor in his sickness, as hath been already shewn. He took particular care of the suits of all poor persons; and gave Dr. Cox special charge to see that their petitions were speedily answered, and used oft to consult with him how to get their matters set forward. He was an exact keeper of his word: and therefore, as appears by his Journal, was most careful to pay his debts, and to keep his credit; knowing that to be the chief nerve of government: since a prince that breaks his faith, and loses his credit, has thrown up that which he can never recover, and made himself liable to perpetual distrusts, and extreme contempt.

He had above all things a great regard to religion. He took notes of such things as he heard in sermons, which more specially concerned himself; and made his measures of all men by their zeal in that matter. This made him so set on bringing over his sister Mary to the same persuasions with himself; that when he was pressed to give way to her having mass, he said, That he would not only hazard the loss of the Emperor's friendship, but of his life, and all he had in the world, rather than consent to what he knew was a sin: and he cited some passages of Scripture that obliged kings to root out idolatry; by which he said he was bound in conscience not to consent to her mass; since he believed it was idolatry; and did argue the matter so learnedly with the bishops, that they left him, being amazed at his knowledge in divinity. So that Cranmer took Cheek by the hand upon it, and said, He had reason all the days of his life to rejoice that God had honoured him to breed such a scholar. All men who saw and observed these

PART II.

1553.

qualities in him, looked on him as one raised by God for most extraordinary ends; and when he died, concluded that the sins of England must needs be very great, that had provoked God to take from them a prince under whose government they were likely to have seen such blessed times. He was so affable and sweet-natured, that all had free access to him at all times; by which he came to be most universally beloved, and all the high things that could be devised were said by the people to express their esteem of him. The fable of the phœnix pleased most; so they made his mother one phœnix, and him another, rising out of her ashes. But graver men compared him to Josiah; and long after his death I find both in letters and printed books they commonly named him Our Josias, others called him Edward the Saint.

A Prince of such qualities, so much esteemed and loved, could not but be much lamented at his death; and this made those of the Reformation abhor the Duke of Northumberland, who they suspected had hastened him to such an untimely end: which contributed, as much as any thing, to the establishing of Queen Mary on the throne; for the people reckoned none could be so unworthy to govern, as those who had poisoned so worthy a Prince, and so kind a master. I find nothing of opening his body for giving satisfaction about that which brought him to his end; though his lying unburied till the 8th of August, makes it probable that he was opened.

But indeed the sins of England, did at this time call down from Heaven heavy curses on the land. They are sadly expressed in a discourse that Ridley writ soon after, under the title of the Lamentation of England: he says, Lechery, oppression, pride, covetousness, and a hatred and scorn of religion, were generally spread among all people: chiefly those of the higher rank. Cranmer and he had been much disliked: the former for delivering his conscience so freely on the Duke of Somerset's death; and both of them for opposing so much the rapine and spoil of the goods of the church, which was done without law or order. Nor could they

engage any to take care of relieving the poor, except only Dobbs, who was then Lord Mayor of London. These sins were openly preached against, by Latimer, Lever, Bradford, and Knox, who did it more severely, and by others who did it plainly, though more softly. One of the main causes Ridley gives of all these evils, was, that many of the bishops, and most of the clergy, being all the while papists in heart, who had only complied to preserve their benefices, took no care of their parishes, and were rather well pleased that things were ill managed. And of this that good Bishop had been long very apprehensive, when he considered the sins then prevailing, and the judgments which they had reason to look for; as will appear by an excellent letter, which he sent about to his clergy to set them on to such duties as so sad a prospect required: it will be found in the Collection; and though it belongs to the former year, yet I choose rather to bring it in on this occasion. These things having been fully laid open in the former parts of this work, I shall not insist on them here, having mentioned them only for this cause, that the reader may from hence gather, what we may still expect, if we continue guilty of the same or worse sins, after all that illumination and knowledge with which we have been so long blessed in these kingdoms.

Collect. Numb. 58.

BOOK II.

The Life and Reign of Queen Mary.

PART II.

1553. Queen Mary succeeds, but is in great danger.

UPON the death of King Edward, the crown devolved, according to King Henry's will, and the act of parliament, made in the thirty-fifth year of his reign, on his eldest sister, the now Queen Mary. She was on her way to London, in obedience to the letters that had been wrote to her, to come and comfort her brother in his sickness; and was come within half a day's journey of the court, when she received an advertisement from the Earl of Arundel, that her brother was dead; together with an account of what was done about the succession. The Earl also informed her, that the King's death was concealed, on design to entrap her before she knew of it; and therefore he advised her to retire. Upon this, she knowing that the Duke of Northumberland was much hated in Norfolk, for the great slaughter he had made of the rebels, when he subdued them in the third year of the last reign; therefore chose to go that way to the castle of Framlingham in Suffolk: which place being near the sea, she might, if her designs should miscarry, have an opportunity from thence to fly over to the Emperor, that was then in Flanders.

And retires to Suffolk.

At London, it seems, the whole business of setting up the Lady Jane, had been carried very secretly; since if Queen Mary had heard any hint of it, she had certainly kept out of the way, and not adventured to have come so near the town. It was an unaccountable error in the party for the Lady Jane, that they had not, immediately after the seal was put to the letters patents, or at furthest, presently after the King's death, sent some to make sure of the King's sisters; instead of which they thus lingered, hoping they would have come into their toils, in an easier and less violent way. On the 8th of July, they wrote to the English ambassa-



Queen Mary 1st



Jane Gray

dors at Brussels, the news of the King's death, but said nothing of the succession. On the 9th of July they perceived the King's death was known; for Queen Mary wrote to them, from Kenning Hall, that she understood the King her brother was dead; which how sorrowful it was to her, God only knew, to whose will she did humbly submit her will. The provision of the crown to her, after his death, she said was well known to them all; but she thought it strange, that he being three days dead, she had not been advertised of it by them. She knew what consultations were against her, and what engagements they had entered into; but was willing to take all their doings in good part, and therefore she wrote, that she was ready to remit and pardon all that was past, to such as would accept of it, and required them to proclaim her title to the crown in London.

1553. She writes to the council.

Upon this letter, they saw the death of the King could no longer be concealed; so the Duke of Suffolk, and the Duke of Northumberland, went to Durham House, where the Lady Jane lay, to give her notice of her being to succeed to the crown, in the room of the deceased King. She received the news with great sorrow for King Edward's death; which was not at all lessened, but rather increased, by that other part of their message, concerning her being to succeed him.

Who declare for the Lady Jane.

She was a lady that seemed indeed born for a great fortune; for as she was a beautiful and graceful person, so she had great parts, and greater virtues. Her tutor was Dr. Elmer, believed to be the same that was afterwards made bishop of London, by Queen Elizabeth. She had learned from him the Latin and Greek tongues to great perfection; so that, being of the same age with the late King, she seemed superior to him in those languages. And having acquired the helps of knowledge, she spent her time much in the study of it. Roger Ascham, tutor to the Lady Elizabeth, coming once to wait on her at her father's house in Leicestershire, found her reading Plato's works in Greek, when all the rest of the family were hunting in the park. He asked her, How she could be absent from such pleasant diversions? She answered, The pastimes in the park

Lady Jane's character.

PART II.

1553.

were but a shadow to the delight she had in reading Plato's Phedon, which then lay open before her; and added, that she esteemed it one of the greatest blessings that God ever gave her, that she had sharp parents, and a gentle schoolmaster, which made her take delight in nothing so much, as in her study. She read the Scriptures much, and had attained great knowledge in divinity. But with all these advantages of birth and parts, she was so humble, so gentle, and pious, that all people both admired and loved her, and none more than the late King. She had a mind wonderfully raised above the world; and at the age wherein others are but imbibing the notions of philosophy, she had attained to the practice of the highest precepts of it. She was neither lifted up with the hope of a crown, nor cast down when she saw her palace made afterwards her prison; but carried herself with an equal temper of mind, in those great inequalities of fortune that so suddenly exalted and depressed her. All the passion she expressed in it was, that which is of the noblest sort, and is the indication of tender and generous natures, being much affected with the troubles her father and husband fell in, on her account.

Her unwillingness to accept of the crown.

The mention of the crown, when her father, with her father-in-law, saluted her Queen, did rather heighten her disorder upon the King's death. She said, she knew, by the laws of the kingdom, and by natural right, the crown was to go to the King's sisters; so that she was afraid of burdening her conscience, by assuming that which belonged to them; and that she was unwilling to enrich herself by the spoils of others. But they told her, all that had been done was according to the law, to which all the judges and counsellors had set their hands. This, joined with their persuasions, and the importunities of her husband, who had more of his father's temper than of her philosophy in him, at length prevailed with her to submit to it: of which her father-in-law did afterwards say in council, she was rather, by enticement of the counsellors, and force, made to accept of the crown, than came to it by her own seeking and request.

Upon this, order was given for proclaiming her queen the next day. And an answer was wrote to Queen Mary, signed by the Archbishop of Canterbury, the Lord Chancellor, the Dukes of Suffolk and Northumberland; the Marquisses of Winchester and Northampton; the Earls of Arundel, Shrewsbury, Huntington, Bedford, and Pembroke; the Lords Cobham and Darcy; Sir Thomas Cheyney, Sir Richard Cotton, Sir William Petre, Sir William Cecil, Sir John Cheek, Sir John Mason, Sir Edward North, and Sir Robert Bowes, in all one-and-twenty; letting her know, "That Queen Jane was now their sovereign, according to the ancient laws of the land, and the late King's letters patents, to whom they were now bound by their allegiance. They told her, that the marriage between her father and mother, was dissolved by the ecclesiastical courts, according to the laws of God and the land. That many noble universities in Christendom had consented to it; that the sentence had been confirmed in parliaments, and she had been declared illegitimate, and uninheritable to the crown. They therefore required her to give over her pretences, and not to disturb the government; and promised, that if she shewed herself obedient, she should find them all ready to do her any service which in duty they could."

Council writes to Queen Mary.

The day following they proclaimed Queen Jane. The proclamation will be found in the Collection. It sets forth, "That the late King had, by his letters patents, limited the crown, that it should not descend to his two sisters, since they were both illegitimated by sentences in the spiritual courts, and acts of parliament, and were only his sisters by the half-blood, who (though it were granted they had been legitimate) are not inheritable by the law of England. It was added, that there was also great cause to fear, that the King's sisters might marry strangers, and so change the laws of the kingdom, and subject it to the tyranny of the bishops of Rome, and other foreign laws. For these reasons they were excluded from the succession; and the Lady Frances, Dutchess of Suffolk, being next the crown, it was provided, that if she had no sons at the

Lady Jane proclaimed Queen. Collect. Numb. 1.

PART II.

1553.

death of the King, the crown should devolve immediately on her eldest daughter Jane, and after her and her issue, to her sisters; since she was born within the kingdom, and already married in it; therefore she was proclaimed Queen, promising to be most benign and gracious to all her people, to maintain God's holy word, and the laws of the land, requiring all the subjects to obey and acknowledge her." When this was proclaimed, great multitudes were gathered to hear it; but there were very few that shouted with the acclamations ordinary on such occasions. And whereas a vintner's boy did some way express his scorn at that which was done, it was ordered, that he should be made an example the next day, by being set on a pillory, and having his ears nailed to it, and cut off from his head; which was accordingly done; a herald in his coat, reading to the multitude that was called together, by sound of trumpet, the nature of his offence.

Censures passed upon it.

Upon this, all people were in great distraction; the proclamation, opening the new Queen's title, came to be variously descanted on. Some, who thought the crown descended by right of blood, and that it could not be limited by parliament, argued, that the King having his power from God, it was only to descend in the natural way of inheritance; therefore they thought the next heir was to succeed. And whereas the King's two sisters were both, by several sentences, and acts of parliament, declared bastards; and whether that was well judged or not, they were to be reputed such as the law declared them to be, so long as it stood in force; therefore they held, that the Queen of Scotland was to succeed; who, though she pretended this upon Queen Mary's death, yet did not claim now, because, by the papal law, the sentence against Queen Mary was declared null. Others argued, that though a prince were named by an immediate appointment from Heaven, yet he might change the course of succession, as David did, preferring Solomon before Adonijah: but this, it was said, did not belong to the kings of England, whose right to the crown, with the extent of their prerogative, did not come from any Divine designation, but

from a long possession, and the laws of the land: and that therefore the King might by law limit the succession, as well as he and other kings had, in some points, limited the prerogative, (which was clearly Sir Thomas More's opinion); and that therefore the act of parliament, for the succession of the King's sisters, was still strong in law. It was also said, that if the King's sisters were to be excluded for bastardy, all Charles Brandon's issue were in the same predicament; since he was not lawfully married to the French Queen, his former wife Mortimer being then alive, and his marriage with her was never dissolved; (for though some English writers say, they were divorced, yet these who wrote for the Queen of Scots' title, in the next reign, denied it); but in this the difference was great between them; since the King's sisters were declared bastards in law; whereas, this against Charles Brandon's issue, was only a surmise. Others objected, that if the blood gave an indefeasible title, how came it that the Lady Jane's mother did not reign? It is true, Maud the empress, and Margaret countess of Richmond, were satisfied that their sons, Henry the Second, and Henry the Seventh, should reign in their rights; but it had never been heard of, that a mother had resigned to her daughter, especially when she was yet under age. But this was imputed to the Duke of Suffolk's weakness, and the ambition of the Duke of Northumberland. That objection concerning the half-blood, being a rule of common law in the families of subjects, to cut off from step-mothers the inclinations and advantages of destroying their husbands' children, was not applicable to the crown: nor was that of one's being born out of the kingdom, which was hinted at to exclude the Queen of Scotland, thought pertinent to this case: since there was an exception made in the law for the King's children, which was thought to extend to all their issue. But all people agreed in this, that though by act of parliament, King Henry was empowered to provide or limit the crown, by his letters patents; yet that was a grant particularly to him, and did not descend to his heirs: so that the letters patents made by King Edward, could

PART II.

1553.

have no force to settle the crown, and much less when they did expressly contradict an act of parliament. The proceeding so severely against the vintner's boy, was imputed to the violent temper of the Duke of Northumberland. And though, when a government is firm, and factions are weak, the making some public examples, may intimidate a faction otherwise disheartened; yet severities, in such a juncture as this, when the council had no other support but the assistance of the people, seemed very unadvised; and all thought it was a great error to punish him in that manner.

The Duke of Northumberland much hated.

This made them reflect on the rest of Northumberland's cruelties; his bringing the Duke of Somerset, with those gentlemen that suffered with him, to their end, by a foul conspiracy; but above all things, the suspicions that lay on him, of being the author of the late King's untimely death, enraged the people so much against him, that without considering what they might suffer under Queen Mary, they generally inclined to set her up.

Many declare for Queen Mary.

The Lady Jane was proclaimed in many towns near London, yet the people were generally running to Queen Mary: many from Norfolk came to her, and a great body of Suffolk men gathered about her, who were all for the Reformation. They desired to know of her, whether she would alter the religion set up in King Edward's days; to whom she gave full assurances, that she would never make any innovation or change, but be contented with the private exercise of her own religion. Upon this they were all possessed with such a belief of her sincerity, that it made them resolve to hazard their lives and estates in her quarrel. The Earls of Bath and Sussex raised forces, and joined with her; so did the sons of the Lord Wharton and Mordant; with many more.

The council orders forces to be sent against her.

Upon this the council resolved to gather forces for the dispersing of theirs, and sent the Earl of Huntington's brother to raise Buckinghamshire, and others to other parts, ordering them to meet the forces that should come from London, at Newmarket. It was at first proposed to send the Duke of Suffolk to command

them; but the Lady Jane was so much concerned in her father's preservation, that she urged, he might not be sent; and he, being but a soft man, was easily excused. So it fell next on the Duke of Northumberland, who was now much distracted in his mind. He was afraid, if he went away, the city might declare for Queen Mary; nor was he well assured of the council, who seemed all to comply with him, rather out of fear, than good will. Cecil would not officiate as secretary, as himself relates; the judges would do nothing; and the Duke plainly saw, that if he had not (according to the custom of our princes, on their first coming to the crown) gone with the Lady Jane, and the council, into the Tower, whereby he kept them as prisoners, the council were inclined to desert him. This divided him much in his thoughts. The whole success of his design depended on the dispersing of the Queen's forces: and it was no less necessary to have a man of courage continue still in the Tower. There was none there whom he could entirely trust, but the Duke of Suffolk, and he was so mean spirited, that he did not depend much on him. But the progress the Queen's forces made, pressed him to go, and make head against her. So he laid all the heavy charges he could on the council, to look to Queen Jane, and to stand firmly to her interests; and left London on the 14th of July, marching out with two thousand horse and six thousand foot. But as he rode through Bishopsgate Street and Shoreditch, though there were great crowds looking on, none cried out to wish him success, which gave a sad indication how ill they were affected to him.

And wrote to the Emperor.

The council wrote to the Emperor, by one Shelly, whom they sent to give notice of the Lady Jane's succession, complaining that the Lady Mary was making stirs, and that his ambassador had officiously meddled in their affairs; but that they had given orders for reducing the Lady Mary to her duty. They also desired the continuance of his friendship, and that he would command his resident to carry himself as became an ambassador. Sir Philip Hobbey was continued ambassador there; the others were ordered to stay and prose-

PART II.

cute the mediation of the peace; but the Emperor would not receive those letters; and in a few days there went over others from Queen Mary.

1553.

Ridley preaches for the Lady Jane's title.

Ridley was appointed to set out Queen Jane's title, in a sermon at Paul's; and to warn the people of the dangers they would be in, if Queen Mary should reign: which he did, and gave an account in his sermon of what had passed between him and her, when he went and offered to preach to her. At the same time the Duke of Northumberland, at Cambridge, where himself was both chancellor of the university, and steward of the town, made the Vice Chancellor preach to the same purpose. But he held in more general terms, and managed it so, that there was no great offence taken on either hand.

Queen Mary's party grows strong.

But now the Queen had made her title be proclaimed at Norwich; and sent letters all over England, requiring the peers, and others of great quality, to come to her assistance. Some ships had been sent about, to lie on that coast for intercepting her, if she should fly away; but those who commanded them were so dealt with, that instead of acting against her, they declared for her. Sir Edward Hastings having raised four thousand men in Buckinghamshire, instead of joining with the Duke of Northumberland, went over with them into her service. Many were also from all places every day running to her, and in several counties of England she was proclaimed Queen. But none came in to the Duke of Northumberland, so he wrote earnestly to the lords at London to send him more supplies.

And the council turn to her.

They understanding, from all the corners of England, that the tide grew every where strong for the Queen, entered into consultations how to redeem their past faults, and to reconcile themselves to her. The Earl of Arundel hated Northumberland on many accounts. The Marquis of Winchester was famous for his dexterity in shifting sides, always to his own advantage. To them joined the Earl of Pembroke, the more closely linked to the interests of the Lady Jane, since his son had married her sister; which made him the more careful to disentangle himself in time. To those, Sir

Thomas Cheyney, warden of the cinque ports, and Sir John Mason, with the two secretaries, came over. It was said that the French and Spanish ambassadors had desired an audience in some place in the city; and it was proposed to give it in the Earl of Pembroke's house; who being the least suspected, it was agreed to, by the Duke of Suffolk, that they should be suffered to go from the Tower thither. They also pretended, that since the Duke of Northumberland had written so earnestly for new forces, they must go and treat with my Lord Mayor and the city of London about it. But as soon as they were got out, the Earl of Arundel pressed them to declare for Queen Mary; and, to persuade them to it, he laid open all the cruelty of Northumberland, under whose tyranny they must resolve to be enslaved, if they would not now shake it off. The other consenting readily to it, they sent for the Lord Mayor, with the Recorder, and the aldermen; and having declared their resolutions to them, they rode together into Cheapside, and there proclaimed Queen Mary, on the 19th of July: from thence they went to St. Paul's, where *Te Deum* was sung. An order was sent to the Tower, to require the Duke of Suffolk to deliver up that place, and to acknowledge Queen Mary: and that the Lady Jane should lay down the title of Queen. To this, as her father submitted tamely, so she expressed no sort of concern in losing that imaginary glory, which now had for nine days been rather a burden, than any matter of joy to her. They also sent orders to the Duke of Northumberland to disband his forces, and to carry himself as an obedient subject to the Queen. And the Earl of Arundel, with the Lord Paget, were sent to give her an account of it, who continued still at Framlingham in Suffolk.

And proclaimed her Queen.

The Duke of Northumberland had retired back to Cambridge, to stay for new men from London; but, hearing how matters went there, before ever the council's orders came to him, he dismissed his forces, and went to the market-place, and proclaimed the Queen, flinging up his own hat for joy, and crying, "*God save Queen Mary.*" But the Earl of Arundel being sent by

The Duke of Northumberland submits, and is taken.

PART II.

1553.

the Queen to apprehend him; it is said, that when he saw him, he fell abjectly at his feet to beg his favour. This was like him, it being not more unusual for such insolent persons to be most basely sunk with their misfortunes, than to be out of measure blown up with success. He was on the 25th of July sent to the Tower, with the Earl of Warwick his eldest son, Ambrose and Henry two of his other sons. Some other of his friends were made prisoners, among whom was Sir Thomas Palmer, the wicked instrument of the Duke of Somerset's fall, who was become his most intimate confident; and Dr. Sands the vice-chancellor of Cambridge.

With many more prisoners who were sent to the Tower of London.

Now did all people go to the Queen to implore her mercy. She received them all very favourably, except the Marquis of Northampton, Dr. Ridley, and Lord Robert Dudley. The first of these had been a submissive fawner on the Duke of Northumberland; the second had incurred her displeasure by his sermon, and she gladly laid hold on any colour to be more severe to him, that way might be made for bringing Bonner to London again; the third had followed his father's fortunes. On the 27th, the Lord Chief Justices, Cholmley and Montague, were sent to the Tower; and the day after, the Duke of Suffolk and Sir John Cheek went after them; the Lady Jane and her husband being still detained in the Tower. Three days after, an order came to set the Duke of Suffolk at liberty, upon engagement to return to prison when the Queen required it, for it was generally known that he had been driven on by Dudley: and as it was believed, that he had not been faulty out of malice, so his great weakness made them little apprehensive of any dangers from him; and therefore the Queen being willing to express a signal act of clemency at her first coming to the crown, it was thought best to let it fall on him.

Now did the Queen come towards London, being met on the way by her sister Elizabeth, with a thousand horse, who had gathered about her, to shew their zeal to maintain both their titles, which in this late contest had been linked together. She made her entry to London on the 3d of August, with great solemnity

The Queen enters London.

and pomp. When she came to the Tower, the Duke of Norfolk, who had been almost seven years in it; Gardiner, the bishop of Winchester, that had been five years there; the Dutchess of Somerset, that had been kept there near two years; and the Lord Courtney, (whom she made afterwards Earl of Devonshire) that was son to the Marquis of Exeter, and had been kept there ever since his father was attainted, had their liberty granted them. So now she was peaceably settled in the throne, without any effusion of blood; having broken through a confederacy against her, which seemed to be so strong, that if he that was the head of it, had not been universally odious to the nation, it could not have been so easily dissipated. She was naturally pious and devout, even to superstition; had a generous disposition of mind, but much corrupted by melancholy, which was partly natural in her, but much increased by the cross accidents of her life, both before and after her advancement; so that she was very peevish and splenetic towards the end of her life. When the differences became irreconcilable between her father and mother, she followed her mother's interests, they being indeed her own; and for a great while could not be persuaded to submit to the King; who, being impatient of contradiction from any, but especially from his own child, was resolved to strike terror in all his people, by putting her openly to death: which her mother coming to know, wrote her a letter of a very devout strain, which will be found in the Collections. In which, "she encouraged her to suffer cheerfully, to trust to God, and keep her heart clean. She charged her, in all things, to obey the King's commands, except in the matters of religion. She sent her two Latin books, the one of the Life of Christ, (which was perhaps the famous book of Thomas a Kempis) and the other St. Jerome's Letter. She bid her divert herself at the virginals or lute, but above all things to keep herself pure, and to enter into no treaty of marriage till these ill times should pass over; of which her mother seemed to retain still good hopes." This letter should have been in my former volume, if I had then seen it, but it is no improper

She had been in danger in her father's time.

Collect. Numb. 2.

PART II.

1553.

place to mention it here. At court, many were afraid to move the King for her; both the Duke of Norfolk and Gardiner looked on, and were unwilling to hazard their own interests to preserve her. But (as it was now printed, and both these appealed to) Cranmer was the only person that would adventure on it. In his gentle way, he told the King, that she was young and indiscreet, and therefore it was no wonder if she obstinately adhered to that which her mother, and all about her, had been infusing into her for many years: but that it would appear strange if he should for this cause so far forget he was a father, as to proceed to extremities with his own child: that if she were separated from her mother, and her people, in a little time there might be ground gained on her; but to take away her life, would raise horror through all Europe against him. By these means he preserved her at that time.

And was preserved by Cranmer's means

After her mother's death, in June following, she changed her note; for, besides the declaration she then signed, which was inserted in the former part of this work, she wrote letters of such submission, as shew how expert she was at dissembling. Three of these to her father, and one to Cromwell, I have put in the Collection; "in which she, with the most studied expressions, declaring her sorrow for her past stubbornness, and disobedience to his most just and virtuous laws, implores his pardon, as lying prostrate at his feet: and considering his great learning and knowledge, she puts her soul in his hand, resolving that he should for ever thereafter direct her conscience, from which she would never vary." This she repeats in such tender words, that it shews she could command herself to say any thing that she thought fit for her ends. And when Cromwell wrote to her, to know "what her opinion was about pilgrimages, purgatory, and relics; she assures him she had no opinion at all, but such as she should receive from the King, who had her whole heart in his keeping; and he should imprint upon it, in these and all other matters, whatever his inestimable virtue, high wisdom, and excellent learning, should think convenient for her." So perfectly had she learned that

She submitted to her father.

Collect. Numb. 3, 4, 5, 6.

style, that she knew was most acceptable to him. Having copied these from the originals, I thought it not unfit to insert them, that it may appear how far those of that religion can comply, when their interest leads them to it.

From that time this Princess had been in all points most exactly compliant to every thing her father did. And after his death, she never pretended to be of any other religion, than that which was established by him: so that all she pleaded for, in her brother's reign, was only the continuance of that way of worship, that was in use at her father's death. But now, being come to the crown, that would not content her; yet, when she thought where to fix, she was distracted between two different schemes that were presented to her.

The designs for changing religion.

On the other hand, Gardiner and all that party were for bringing religion back to what it had been at King Henry's death; and afterward, by slow degrees, to raise it up to what it had been before his breach with the papacy. On the other hand, the Queen, of her own inclination, was much disposed to return immediately to the union of the catholic church, as she called it: and it was necessary for her to do it, since it was only by the papal authority that her illegitimation was removed. To this it was answered, that all these acts and sentences that had passed against her, might be annulled, without taking any notice of the Pope.

Gardiner's policy.

Gardiner, finding these things had not such weight with her as he desired, (for she looked on him as a crafty temporizing man,) sent over to the Emperor, on whom she depended much, to assure him, that if he would persuade her to make him chancellor, and to put affairs into his hands, he should order them so, that every thing she had a mind to, should be carried in time. But Gardiner understood she had sent for Cardinal Pole; so he wrote to the Emperor, that he knew his zeal for the exaltation of popedom would undo all; therefore he pressed him to write to the Queen for moderating her heat, and to stop the Cardinal's coming over. He said, that Pole stood attainted by law, so that his coming into England would alarm the nation. He observed, that upon a

PART II.

1553.

double account they were averse to the papacy: the one was, for the church-lands, which they had generally bought from the crown on very easy terms, and they would not easily part with them. The other was, the fear they had of papal dominion and power, which had been now for about twenty-five years set out to the people, as the most intolerable tyranny that ever was. Therefore he said, it was necessary to give them some time to wear out these prejudices; and the precipitating of councils might ruin all. He gave the Emperor also secret assurances of serving him in all his interests. All this Gardiner did the more warily, because he understood that Cardinal Pole hated him as a false and deceitful man. Upon this the Emperor wrote to the Queen several letters with his own hand, which are so hardly legible, that it was not possible for me, or some others to whom I have shewed them, to read them, so well as to copy them out: and one that was written by his sister, the Queen of Hungary, and signed by him, is no better; but from many half sentences, I find, that all was with a design to temper her, that she should not make too much haste, nor be too much led by Italian counsels. Upon the return of this message, the seal, which had been taken from Goodrick, bishop of Ely, and put for some days in the keeping of Hare, master of the rolls, was, on the 13th of August, given to Gardiner, who was declared lord chancellor of England, and the conduct of affairs was chiefly put in his hands. So that now the measure of the Queen's councils, was to do every thing slowly, and by such sure steps as might put them less in hazard.

He is made chancellor.

The Duke of Northumberland and others tried.

The first thing that was done, was, the bringing the Duke of Northumberland to his trial. The old Duke of Norfolk was made lord high steward; the Queen thinking it fit to put the first character of honour on him, who had suffered so much for being the head of the popish party. And here a subtle thing was started, which had been kept a great secret hitherto. It was said, the Duke of Norfolk had never been truly attainted; and that the act against him was not a true act of parliament; so that, without any pardon or restitution in

blood, he was still duke of Norfolk.* This he had never mentioned all the last reign, lest that should have procured an act to confirm his attainder. So he came now in upon his former right, by which all the grants that had been given of his estate were to be declared void by common law. The Duke of Northumberland, with the Marquis of Northampton and the Earl of Warwick, were brought to their trials. The Duke desired two points might be first answered by the judges, in matter of law. The one, Whether a man, acting by the authority of the great seal, and the order of the privy council, could thereby become guilty of treason? The other was, Whether those who had been equally guilty with him, and by whose direction and commands he had acted, could sit his judges? To these the judges made answer, That the great seal of one that was not lawful queen, could give no authority nor indemnity to those that acted on such a warrant: and that any peer that was not, by an attainder upon record, convicted of such accession to his crime, might sit his judge, and was not to be challenged upon a surmise or report. So these points, by which only he could hope to have defended himself, being thus determined against him, he confessed he was guilty, and submitted to the Queen's mercy. So did the Marquis of Northampton, and the Duke's son, the Earl of Warwick, who (it seems by this trial) had a writ for sitting in the House of Peers. They were all three found guilty. Judgment also passed next day, in a jury of commoners, against Sir John Gates, and his brother Sir Henry; Sir Andrew Dudley, and Sir Thomas Palmer, confessing their indictments. But of all these it was resolved, that only the Duke of Northumberland, and Sir John Gates and Sir Thomas Palmer, should be made examples: Heath, bishop of Worcester, was employed to instruct the Duke, and to prepare him for his death. Whether he had been always in heart what he then professed, or whether he only pretended it, hoping that it might pro-

And condemned.

At his death he professes he had been always a papist.

* In the session of this parliament a private act passed to make void the Duke of Norfolk's attainder.

PART II.

1553.

cure him favour, is variously reported: but certain it is, that he said, he had been always a catholic in his heart; yet this could not save him. He was known to be a man of that temper, so given both to revenge and dissimulation, that his enemies saw it was necessary to put him out of the way, lest, if he had lived, he might have insinuated himself into the Queen's favour, and then turned the danger upon them. So the Earl of Arundel, now made lord steward of the household, with others, easily obtained that his head should be cut of, together with Sir John Gates's and Sir Thomas Palmer's.

On the 22d of August he was carried to the place of execution. On the way, there was some expostulation between Gates and him; they, as is ordinary for complices in ill actions, laying the blame of their miseries on one another: yet they professed they did mutually forgive, and so died in charity together. It is said, that he made a long speech, accusing his former ill life, and confessing his treasons. But that part of it which concerned religion is only preserved. In it he exhorted the people to stand to the religion of their ancestors, and to reject that of later date, which had occasioned all the misery of the foregoing thirty years; and desired, as they would prevent the like for the future, that they would drive out of the nation these trumpets of sedition, the new preachers; that for himself, whatever he had otherwise pretended, he believed no other religion than that of his forefathers; in which he appealed to his ghostly father, the Bishop of Worcester, then present with him; but, being blinded with ambition, he had made wreck of his conscience, by temporizing, for which he professed himself sincerely penitent. So did he, and the other two, end their days. Palmer was little pitied, as being believed a treacherous conspirator against his former master and friend, the Duke of Somerset.

His character.

Thus died the ambitious Duke of Northumberland. He had been, in the former part of his life, a great captain, and had the reputation of a wise man: he was generally successful, and they that are so are always esteemed wise. He was an extraordinary man in a lower size, but had forgot himself much, when he was raised

higher, in which his mind seemed more exalted than his fortunes. But as he was transported, by his rage and revenge, out of measure, so he was as servile and mean in his submissions. Fox, it seems, was informed, that he had hopes given him of his life, if he should declare himself to be of the popish religion, even though his head were laid on the block: but which way soever he made that declaration, either to get his life by it, or that he had really been always what he now professed; it argued that he regarded religion very little, either in his life or at his death. But whether he did any thing to hasten the late King's death, I do not find it was at all inquired after: only those who considered, how much guilt disorders all people, and that they have a black cloud over their minds, which appears either in the violence of rage, or the abjectness of fear, did find so great a change in his deportment, in these last passages of his life, from what was in the former parts of it, that they could not but think there was some extraordinary thing within him from whence it flowed.

King Edward's funeral.

And for King Edward's death, those who had affairs now in their hands were so little careful of his memory, and indeed so glad of his death, that it is no wonder they made little search about it. It is rather strange that they allowed him such funeral rites. For the Queen kept a solemn exequy, with all the other remembrances of the dead, and masses for him, used in the Roman church, at the Tower, on the 8th of August, the same day that he was buried at Westminster. The Lord Treasurer, (who was the marquis of Winchester, still continued in that trust) the Earls of Shrewsbury and Pembroke, being the principal mourners. Day, that was now to be restored to his see of Chichester, was appointed to preach the funeral sermon: in which he commended and excused the King, but loaded his government severely; and extolled the Queen much, under whom he promised the people happy days. It was intended that all the burial rites should have been according to the old forms that were before the Reformation. But Cranmer opposed this vigorously, and insisted upon it, that as the King himself had been a zealous

PART II.

1553.

promoter of that Reformation, so the English service was then established by law: upon this he stoutly hindered any other way of officiating, and himself performed all the offices of the burial ;* to which he joined the solemnity of a communion. In these, it may be easily imagined, he did every thing with a very lively sorrow; since as he had loved the King beyond expression, so he could not but look on his funeral as the burial of the Reformation, and, in particular, as a step to his own.

The Queen declares she will force no man's conscience.

On the 12th of August the Queen made an open declaration in council, that, although her conscience was stayed in the matters of religion, yet she was resolved not to compel or strain others, otherwise than as God should put into their hearts a persuasion of that truth she was in; and this she hoped should be done by the opening his word to them, by godly, virtuous, and learned preachers. Now all the deprived bishops looked to be quickly placed in their sees again. Bonner went to St. Paul's on the 13th of August, being Sunday, where Bourn, that was his chaplain, preached before him. He spoke honourably of Bonner, with sharp reflections on the proceedings against him in the time of King Edward. This did much provoke the whole audience, who, as they hated Bonner, so could not bear to hear any thing said that seemed to detract from that King. Hereupon there was a great tumult in the church; some called to pull him down, others flung stones, and one threw a dagger towards the pulpit, with that force, that it stuck fast in the timber of it; Bourn, by stooping, saved himself from that danger: and Rogers and Bradford, two eminent preachers, and of great credit with the people, stood up, and gently quieted the heat: and they, to deliver Bourn out of their hands, conveyed him from the pulpit to a house near the church.

A tumult at Paul's Cross

This was such an accident as the papists would have desired; for it gave them a colour to proceed more se-

* It is highly improbable that Cranmer, who was then under displeasure, and was confined to his house, and soon after to the Tower, should be allowed to perform these offices in such manner. *Godwin* (anno 1553) *Annal*, says, "Concionem habente Daio Cicester. Episcopo, qui etiam sacrum peregit vernacula usus Anglicana, et Eucharistiam præsentibus exhibuit," &c. See Holingshed likewise, vol. ii. p. 1089.

verely, and to prohibit preaching, which was the first step they intended to make. There was a message sent to the Lord Mayor, to give a strict charge, that every citizen should take care of all that belonged to him, and see that they went to their own parish church, and kept the peace: as also to acquaint them with what the Queen had declared in council, on the 13th of August. And, on the 18th, there was published an inhibition in the Queen's name to this effect: "that she, considering the great danger that had come to the realm, by the differences in religion, did declare for herself, that she was of that religion that she had professed from her infancy, and that she would maintain it during her time, and be glad that all her subjects would charitably receive it. Yet she did not intend to compel any of her subjects to it, till public order should be taken in it by common assent; requiring all, in the mean while, not to move sedition or unquietness till such order should be settled; and not to use the name of papist or heretic, but to live together in love, and in the fear of God: but if any made assemblies of the people, she would take care they should be severely punished: and she straitly charged them, that none should preach, or expound Scripture, or print any books, or plays, without her special licence. And required her subjects, that none of them would presume to punish any on pretence of the late rebellion, but as they should be authorized by her: yet she did not thereby restrain any from informing against such offenders. She would be most sorry to have cause to execute the severity of the law, but she was resolved not to suffer such rebellious doings to go unpunished; but hoped her subjects would not drive her to the extreme execution of the laws."

1553.

An inhibition of all preaching.

When this was published, it was much descanted on. The profession she made of her religion to be the same it had been from her infancy, shewed it was not her father's religion, but entire popery, that she intended to restore. It was also observed, that whereas before she had said plainly she would compel none to be of it; now that was qualified with this, till public order should be taken in it: which was, till they could so frame a par-

Censures passed upon it.

PART II.

1553.

liament, that it should concur with the Queen's design. The equal forbidding of assemblies, or ill names, on both sides, was thought intended to be a trap for the reformed, that they should be punished if they offended, but the others were sure to be rather encouraged. The restraint of preaching without licence, was pretended to copied from what had been done in King Edward's time: yet then there was a liberty left for a long time to all to preach in their own churches, only they might preach nowhere else without a licence: and the power of licensing was also lodged at first with the bishops in their several diocesses, and at last with the Archbishop of Canterbury, as well as with the King: whereas now, at one stroke, all the pulpits of England, that were in the hands of the reformed, were brought under an interdict; for they were sure to obtain no licences. But the cunningest part of these inhibitions was, the declaring that the Queen would proceed with rigour against all that were guilty of the late rebellion, if they should provoke her; many about London had, some way or other, expressed themselves for it, and these were the hottest among the reformed: so that here was a sharp threatening hanging over them, if they should express any more zeal about religion.

She requites the service of the men of Suffolk ill.

When this was put out, the Queen understanding that in Suffolk those of that profession took a little more liberty than their neighbours, presuming on their great merit, and the Queen's promises to them; there was a special letter sent to the Bishop of Norwich's vicar, himself being at Brussels, to see to the execution of these injunctions, against any that should preach without licence. Upon this, some came from Suffolk to put the Queen in mind of her promise. This was thought insolent, and she returned them no answer, But that they, being members, thought to rule her that was their head; but they should learn, that the members ought to obey the head, and not to think to bear rule over it. One of these had spoken of her promise with more confidence than the rest; his name was Dobbe; so he was ordered to stand three days in the pillory, as having said that which tended to the defamation of the Queen.

And from hence all saw what a severe government they were to come under, in which the claiming of former promises, that had been made by the Queen when she needed their assistance, was to be accounted a crime. But there was yet a more unreasonable severity shewed to Bradford and Rogers, who had appeased the tumult the Sunday before, and rescued the preacher from the rage of the people. It was said, that their appeasing it so easily shewed what interest they had with the people, and was a presumption that they had set it on; so, without any further proof, the one was put in the Tower, and the other confined to his house.

The popish bishops restored.

But now the deprived bishops, who were, Bonner of London, Gardiner of Winchester, Tonstal of Duresme, Heath of Worcester, and Day of Chichester, were to be restored to their sees. I have only seen the commission for restoring Bonner and Tonstal; but the rest were no doubt in the same strain, with a little variation. The commission for Bonner, bearing date the 22d of August, was directed to some civilians, setting forth, that he had petitioned the Queen to examine the appeal he had made from the delegates that had deprived him; and that therefore, the sentence against him being unjust and illegal, he desired it might be declared to be of no effect. Upon which these did without any great hesitation, return the sentences void, and the appeals good. So thus they were restored to their sees. But, because the bishoprick of Duresme was by act of parliament dissolved, and the regalities of it, which had been given to the Duke of Northumberland, were now, by his attainder, fallen into the Queen's hand, she granted Tonstal letters patents, erecting that bishoprick again of new; making mention, that some wicked men, to enrich themselves by it, had procured it to be dissolved.

The consultations among the reformed doctors.

On the 29th of August commission was granted to Gardiner to give licences under the great seal to such grave, learned, and discreet persons, as he should think meet and able to preach God's word. All who were so licensed, were qualified to preach in any cathedral or parochial church, to which he should think it convenient to send them. By this the reformers were not only out

PART II.

1553.

of hope to obtain any licences, but likewise saw a way laid down for sending such men as Gardiner pleased into all their pulpits, to infect their people. Upon this they considered what to do. If there had been only a particular interdiction of some private persons, the considerations of peace and order being of a more more public nature than the consequence of any one man's open preaching could be, they judged it was to be submitted to: but in such a case, when they saw this interdiction was general, and on design to stop their mouths till their enemies should seduce their people, they did not think they were bound in conscience to give obedience. Many of them therefore continued to preach openly; others, instead of preaching in churches, were contented to have only the prayers and other service there; but, for instructing their people, had private conferences with them. The council, hearing that their orders had been disobeyed by some in London, two in Coventry, and one in Amersham, they were sent for, and put in prison. And Coverdale bishop of Exeter, and Hooper of Gloucester, being cited to appear before the council, they came and presented themselves on the 29th and 30th of August; and on the 1st of September Hooper was sent to the Fleet, and Coverdale appointed to wait their pleasure.

At this time the popish party, growing now insolent over England, began to be as forward in making changes before the laws warranted them, as these of the Reformation had been in King Edward's time; so that, in many places, they set up images, and the Latin service, with the old rites again. This was plainly against law: but the council had no mind to hinder it; but, on the other hand, encouraged it all they could. Upon which Judge Hales, who thought he might with the more assurance speak his mind, having appeared so steadily for the Queen, did, at the quarter sessions in Kent, give a charge to the justices to see to the execution of King Edward's laws, which were still in force and unrepealed. Upon this he was, without any regard to his former zeal, put, first, into the King's Bench: from thence he was removed to the Counter, and after that to the Fleet:

The barbarous usage of Judge Hales

where the good old man was so disordered with the cruelties that the warden told him were contrived against all that would not change their religion, that it turned his brain, so that he endeavoured to have killed himself with a penknife.* He was after that, upon his submission, set at liberty; but never came to himself again: so he, not being well looked to, drowned himself. This, with the usage of the Suffolk men, was much censured; and from thence it was said, that no merits or services could secure any from the cruelties of that religion. And it appeared in another signal instance how the actions of men were not so much considered as their religion. The Lord Chief Justice Montague, who had very unwillingly drawn the letters patents for the Lady Jane's succession, was turned out of his place, kept six weeks in prison, fined in a thousand pounds, and some lands, that had been given him by King Edward, were taken from him; though he had sent his son with twenty men to declare for the Queen, and had a great family of seventeen children, six sons and eleven daughters: whereas Judge Bromley, that had concurred in framing the letters patents, without any reluctancy, was made Lord Chief Justice. The true reason was, Bromley was a papist in his heart, and Montague was for the Reformation.

Cranmer declared openly against the mass.

In many other places, where the people were popishly affected, they drove away their pastors. At Oxford Peter Martyr was so ill used, that he was forced to fly for his safety to Lambeth, where he could not look for any long protection, since Cranmer himself was every day in expectation of being sent to prison. He kept himself quiet, and was contriving how to give some public and noble testimonies to the doctrine that he had so long professed, and indeed had been the chief promoter of in this church. But his quiet behaviour was laid hold

* Hales changed his religion: so Fox, vol. iii. p. 957. "Judge Hales never fell into that inconvenience before he had consented to papistry." This probably was one great occasion of his melancholy. And Fox more expressly, in the first edition of his book, p. 1116, says—"He was cast forthwith into a great repentance of the deed, and into a terror of conscience."—And Bradford (Letters of the Martyrs, p. 384.) proposes him as an example of one "that was fearfully left of God to our admonition."

PART II.

1553.

Bonner's insolence. Collect. Numb. 7.

on by his enemies, and it was given out, that he was resolved to comply with every thing the Queen had a mind to. So I find Bonner wrote to his friend Mr. Lechmore, on the 6th of September, in that letter which is in the Collection. "He gives him notice, that the day before he had been restored to his bishoprick, and Ridley repulsed; for which he is very witty. Ridley had a steward for two manors of his, whose name was Shipside, his brother-in-law; upon which he plays as if he had been Sheeps-head. He orders Lechmore to look to his estate, and he should take care at the next parliament that both the Sheepsheads and the Calves-heads should be used as they deserved. He adds that Cranmer, whom in scorn he calls Mr. Canterbury, was become very humble, and ready to submit himself in all things; but that would not serve his turn: and it was expected that he should be sent to the Tower that very day." These reports being brought to Cranmer, some advised him to fly beyond seas: he said, he would not dissuade others from that course, now that they saw a persecution rising; but, considering the station he was in, and the hand he had in all the changes that were made, he thought it so indecent a thing for him to fly, that no entreaties should ever persuade him to it. So he, by Peter Martyr's advice, drew up a writing, that I have put in the Collection; (in Latin, as it was at that time translated.) The substance of it was to this effect; "That as the devil had at all times set on his instruments by lies to defame the servants of God, so he was now more than ordinarily busy. For whereas King Henry had begun the correcting of the abuses of the mass, which his son had brought to a further perfection; and so the Lord's supper was restored to its first institution, and was celebrated according to the pattern of the primitive church: now, the devil intending to bring the mass again into its room, as being his own invention, had stirred up some to give out that it had been set up in Canterbury by his the said Cranmer's order; and it was said, that he had undertaken to sing mass to the Queen's Majesty, both at King Edward's funeral, at Paul's, and other places: and though for these twenty years he had despised all such vain and false reports, as

Cranmer's declaration, Collect. Numb. 8.

were spread of him; yet now he thought it not fit to lay under such misrepresentations. Therefore he protested to all the world, that the mass was not set up at Canterbury by his order; but that a fawning hypocritical monk (this was Thornton, suffragan of Dover) had done it without his knowledge: and for what he was said to have undertaken to the Queen, her Majesty knew well how false that was; offering, if he might obtain her leave for it, to maintain, that every thing in the communion service that was set out by their most innocent and good King Edward, was according to Christ's institution, and the practice of the apostles and the ancient church for many ages; to which the mass was contrary, being full of errors and abuses: and although Peter Martyr was by some called an ignorant man, he, with him or other four or five, such as he should choose, would be ready to defend not only their Book of Common-Prayer, and the other rites of their service, but the whole doctrine and order of religion, set forth by the late King, as more pure, and more agreeable to the word of God, than any sort of religion that had been in England for a thousand years before it: provided that all things should be judged by the Scriptures, and that the reasonings on both sides should be faithfully written down."

This he had drawn, with a resolution to have made a public use of it: but Scory, who had been bishop of Chichester, coming to him, he shewed him the paper, and bid him consider of it. Scory indiscreetly gave copies of it; and one of these was publicly read in Cheapside, on the 5th of September. So, on the 8th of that month, he was called before the star-chamber, and asked whether he was the author of that seditious bill, that was given out in his name; and if so, whether he was sorry for it. He answered, that the bill was truly his; but he was very sorry it had gone from him in such a manner; for he had resolved to have enlarged it in many things, and to have ordered it to be affixed to the doors of St. Paul's, and of the other churches in London, with his hand and seal to it. He was at that time, contrary to all men's expectation, dismissed. Gardiner plainly saw he could not expect to succeed him, and that

Published without his knowledge.

But owned by him before the council.

PART II.

1553.

the Queen had designed that see for Cardinal Pole, so he resolved to protect and preserve Cranmer all he could. Some moved, that he should be only put from his bishoprick, and have a small pension assigned him, with a charge to keep within a confinement, and not to meddle with matters of religion. He was generally beloved for the gentleness of his temper; so it was thought, that proceeding severely with him might alienate some from them, and embroil their affairs in the next parliament. Others objected, that if he, who had been the chief promoter of heresy, was used with such tenderness, it would encourage the rest to be more obstinate. And the Queen, who had forgotten the services he did her in her father's time, remembering rather that he had pronounced the sentence of divorce against her mother, was easily induced to proceed severely. So on the 13th of September, both he and Latimer were called before the council; Latimer was that day committed: but Cranmer was respited till next day, and then he was sent to the Tower, both for matters of treason against the Queen, and for dispersing of seditious bills. Tylor, of Hadlee, and several other preachers, were also put in prison; and upon an information brought against Horn, dean of Duresme, he was sent for.

He and Latimer sent to the Tower.

The foreigners sent out of England.

The foreigners, that were come over upon public faith and encouragement, were better used; for Peter Martyr was preserved from the rage of his enemies, and suffered to go beyond sea. There was also an order sent to John a Lasco and his congregation to be gone; their church being taken from them, and their corporation dissolved. And a hundred and seventy-five of them went away in two ships to Denmark, on the 17th of September, with all their preachers, except two, who were left to look to those few which stayed behind; and, being engaged in trade, resolved to live in England, and follow their consciences in the matters of religion in private, with the assistance of those teachers. But a Lasco, after a long and hard passage, arriving at Denmark, was as ill received there as if it had been a popish country, when they understood that he and his company were of the Helvetian confession: so that, though it was Decem-

ber, and a very severe winter, they were required to be gone within two days, and could not obtain so much as liberty to leave their wives or children behind them till they could provide a place for them. From thence they went, first to Lubeck, then to Wismar and Hamburgh, where they found the disputes about the manner of Christ's presence in the sacrament had raised such violentanimosities, that, after much barbarous usage, they were banished out of all those towns, and could find no place to settle in till, about the end of March, that they came to Friesland, where they were suffered to plant themselves.

Many English fly beyond sea.

Many in England, seeing the government was set on severe courses so early, did infer that this would soon grow up to an extreme persecution; so that above a thousand persons fled beyond seas: most of them went in the company, and as the servants, of French protestants, who, having come over in King Edward's time, were now required, as the Germans had been, to return into their own country. The council, understanding this, took care that no Englishman should escape out of their hands; and therefore sent an order to the ports, that none should be suffered to go over as Frenchmen but those who brought certificates from the French ambassador. Among those that had got over, some eminent divines went; who, either having no cures, or being turned out of their benefices, were not under such ties to any flock: so that they judged themselves disengaged, and therefore did not, as hirelings, leave their flock to the persecution then imminent, but rather went to look after those who had now left England. The chief of these that went at first were, Cox, Sands, Grindal, and Horn. Cox was without any good colour turned out, both of his deanery of Christ-church, and his prebendary at Westminster. He was put into the Marshalsea, but on the 19th of August was discharged. Sands was turned out for his sermon before the Duke of Northumberland at Cambridge: on what account Grindal was turned out, I know not. Horn, soon after he got beyond sea, printed an apology for his leaving his country: he tells, that he heard there were some crimes against the

PART II.

1553.

state objected to him, which made him come up from Duresme to clear himself. It was said, that three letters had been written to him in the Queen's name, requiring him to come up, and intimating that they were resolved to charge him with contempt, and other points of state. He protests that he had never received but one, which was given him on the road; but seeing how he was like to be used, he withdrew out of England; upon which he takes occasion in that discourse to vindicate the preachers in King Edward's time, against whom it was now objected, that they had neglected fasting and prayer, and had allowed the people all sorts of liberty. This, he said, was so false, that the ruling men in that time were much offended at the great freedom which the preachers then took, so that many of them would hear no more sermons: and he says for himself, that, though Tonstal was now his great enemy, he had refused to accept of his bishoprick, and was ill used and threatened for denying to take it.

The Queen rewards those who had served her.

All these things tended much to inflame the people. Therefore great care was taken, first, to oblige all those noblemen who had assisted the Queen at her coming to the crown; since a grateful acknowledgment of past services is the greatest encouragement, both to the same persons to renew them, and to others to undertake the like upon new occasions. The Earl of Arundel was made lord steward; Sir Edward Hastings was made master of the horse, and afterwards Lord Hastings; Sir John Gage, lord chamberlain; Sir John Williams, who had proclaimed the Queen in Oxfordshire, was made Lord Williams; and Sir Henry Jerningham, that first gathered the men of Norfolk about her, was made captain of her guard: but Ratcliff, earl of Sussex, had done the most considerable service of them all; for to him she had given the chief command of her army, and he had managed it with that prudence, that others were thereby encouraged to come in to her assistance; so an unusual honour was contrived for him, that he might cover his head in her presence: which passed under the great seal the 2d of October; he being the only peer of England on whom this honour was ever conferred, as far as I

know.* The like was granted to the Lord Courcy, baron of Kingsale, in Ireland, whose posterity enjoy it to this day; but I am not so well informed of that family, as to know by which of our kings it was first granted. The Queen having summoned a parliament to meet the 5th of October, was crowned on the 1st of that month, by Gardiner; who with ten other bishops, all in their mitres, coaps, and crosiers, performed that ceremony with great solemnity; Day preaching the coronation sermon; who, it seems, was accounted the best preacher among them; since he was ordered to preach both at the late King's funeral, and now again at the coronation.

The Queen is crowned, and discharges all taxes.

But Gardiner had prepared a largess of an extraordinary nature for the Queen to distribute that day among her people, besides her general pardon: he caused a proclamation to be published, which did set forth, "that whereas the good subjects of England had always exhibited aid to their princes, when the good of the public, and honour of the realm, required it; and though the Queen, since her coming to the crown, found the treasury was marvellously exhausted, by the evil government of late years, especially since the Duke of Northumberland bare rule; though she found herself charged with divers great sums of her father and brother's debts, which for her own honour, and the honour of the realm, she determined to pay in times convenient and reasonable; yet having a special regard to the welfare of her subjects, and accounting their loving hearts and prosperity the chiefest treasure which she desired, next to the favour and grace of God; therefore, since in her brother's last parliament, two tenths, two fifteenths, and a subsidy both out of lands and goods, were given to him for paying his debts, which were now due to her; she of her great clemency did fully pardon and discharge these subsidies; trusting her said good subjects will have loving con-

* Dr. Fuller assures us, in his Church History, book ix. p. 167, that he had seen a charter granted by King Henry the Eighth, the 16th of July, in the eighteenth of his reign, and confirmed by act of parliament, to Francis Brown, a commoner, giving him leave to put on his cap in the presence of the King and his heirs; and not to put it off, but for his own ease and pleasure.

PART II.

1553.

sideration thereof for their parts, whom she heartily requires, to bend themselves wholly to God, to serve him sincerely, and with continual prayer, for the honour and advancement of the Queen, and the commonwealth."

A parliament summoned.

And thus matters were prepared for the parliament; which was opened the 5th of October. In the writ of summons, and all other writs, the Queen retained still the title of supreme head. Taylor bishop of Lincoln, and Harley bishop of Hereford, came thither, resolving to justify their doctrine. Most of the other reformed bishops were now in prison: for, besides these formerly mentioned, on the 4th of October, the Archbishop of York was put in the Tower, no cause being given, but heinous offences only named in general. When the mass begun, it is said, that those two bishops withdrew, and were upon that never suffered to come to their places again. But one Fox, the clerk of the council in Queen Elizabeth's time, reports this otherwise, and more probably; that Bishop Taylor took his place in his robes, but, refusing to give any reverence to the mass, was violently thrust out of the house. He says nothing of Harley, so it is probable that he followed the other. The same writer also informs us, that, in many places of the country, men were chosen by force and threats; in other places those employed by the court, did by violence hinder the Commons from coming to choose; in many places false returns were made; and that some were violently turned out of the House of Commons: upon which reasons he concludes that it was no parliament, since it was under a force; and so might be annulled, as the parliament held at Coventry, in the 38th year of King Henry the Sixth, was, upon evidence of the like force, declared afterwards to be no parliament. The Journals of the House of Lords in this parliament are lost; so there is no light to be had of their proceedings, but from the imperfect Journals of the House of Commons.

Bishops violently thrust out for not worshipping the mass.

Great disorder in elections.

On the second day of the session, one moved in the House of Commons for a review of King Edward's laws. But that, being awhile argued, was at this time laid aside,

and the bill for tonnage and poundage was put in. Then followed a debate upon Dr. Nowell's being returned from Loo, in Cornwall, whether he, being a prebendary of Westminster, could sit in that House? and the committee being appointed to search for precedents, it was reported, that he, being represented in the convocation house, could not be a member of that House,* so he was cast out. The bill of tonnage and poundage was sent up to the Lords, who sent it down to the Commons to be reformed in two provisos that were not according to former precedents. How far this was contrary to the rights of the Commons, who now say that the Lords cannot alter a bill of money, I am not able to determine.

An act for moderating some severe laws.

The only public bill that passed in this short session was for a declaration of treasons and felonies; by which it was ordained, that nothing should be judged treason, but what was within the statute of treasons in the twenty-fifth of Edward the Third; and nothing should be so judged felony, that was not so before the first year of King Henry the Eighth, excepting from any benefit of this act, all such as had been in prison for treason, petty treason, or misprison of treason, before the last of September; who were also excepted out of the Queen's pardon at her coronation. Two private bills also passed: the one for the restoring of the wife of the late Marquis of Exeter, who had been attainted in the thirty-second year of King Henry's reign; and the other for her son Edward Courtney, earl of Devonshire. And so the parliament was prorogued from the 21st to the 24th of October, that there might be a session of parliament consisting only of acts of mercy; though this repeal of additional treasons and felonies, was not more than what had passed in the beginning of King Edward's reign, without the clog of so severe a proviso, by which many were cut off from the favour designed by it.

Some have thought, that since treasons had been reduced, by the second act of Edward the Sixth, to the standard of the twenty-fifth of Edward the Third, that

* Tregonnel, a prebendary of Westminster, sat in the House in the second sessions of this parliament.

PART II.

1553.

therefore there was somewhat else designed by this act, than barely the repealing some late severe acts, which, being done the first of Edward the Sixth, needed not be now repealed, if it imported no more. And, since this act, as it is worded, mentions, or rather excepts, those treasons that are declared and expressed in the twenty-fifth of Edward the Third, they have inferred, that the power of parliaments, declaring the treasons *ex post facto*, which was reserved by that statute, is hereby taken away, and that nothing is now to be held treason, but what is enumerated in that statute. Yet this is still liable to debate; since the one may be thought to be declared and expressed in general words, as well as the other specialties are in more particular words; and is also still in force. So nothing seems comprehended within this repeal, but the acts passed in King Edward's reign, declaring other crimes to be treason: some are added in the same act, and others in that of the third and fourth of his reign, chap. 5. Nor is it likely that, if the parliament had intended to have delivered the subjects from the apprehensions of all acts of attainder, upon a declaration of new treasons, they would not have expressed it more plainly; since it must have been very grateful to the nation, which had groaned heavily under arbitrary attainders of late years.

The marriage of Queen Catherine to King Henry confirmed.

When the parliament met again, the first bill the Commons entered on, was that of tonnage and poundage, which they passed in two days. Then was the bill about King Henry's marriage with the Queen's mother sent down on the 26th by the Lords, and the Commons passed it on the 28th: so strangely was the stream turned, that a divorce, that had been for seven years much desired by the nation, was now repealed upon fewer days' consultation. In the preamble it was said, "That truth, how much soever obscured and borne down, will in the end break out: and that therefore they declared, that King Henry the Eighth, being lawfully married to Queen Catherine, by the consent of both their parents, and the advice of the wisest men in the realm, and of the best and notablest men for learning in Christendom, did continue that state twenty years, in

which God blessed them with her Majesty and other issue, and a course of great happiness: but then a very few malicious persons did endeavour to break that happy agreement between them, and studied to possess the King, with a scruple in his conscience about it; and, to support that, caused the seals of some universities to be got against it, a few persons being corrupted with money for that end. They had also, by sinistrous ways and secret threatenings, procured the seals of the universities of this kingdom; and, finally, Thomas Cranmer did most ungodly, and against law, judge the divorce, upon his own unadvised understanding of the Scriptures, upon the testimonies of the universities, and some bare and most untrue conjectures; and that was afterwards confirmed by two acts of parliament, in which was contained the illegitimacy of her Majesty: but that marriage not being prohibited by the law of God, and lawfully made, could not be so broken; since, what God hath joined together, no man could put asunder: all which they considering, together with the many miseries that had fallen on the kingdom since that time, which they did esteem plagues sent from God for it; therefore they declare that sentence given by Cranmer, to be unlawful, and of no force from the beginning: and do also repeal the acts of parliament that had confirmed it."

Which was much censured.

By this act, Gardiner had performed his promise to the Queen, of getting her illegitimation taken off, without any relation to the Pope's authority. But, in the drawing of it, he shewed that he was past all shame; when he could frame such an act, of a business which himself had so violently and servilely promoted. The falsehood of that pretence of corrupting universities has been shewn in the former volume; but it was all they had now to say. The laying it all upon Cranmer was as high a pitch of malice and impudence as could be devised: for, as Gardiner had been setting it on, long before Cranmer was known to King Henry, so he had been joined with him in the commission, and had given his assent to the sentence which Cranmer gave. Nor was the divorce grounded merely upon Cranmer's understanding of the Scriptures, but upon the fullest and most

PART II.

1553.

studied arguments, that had perhaps been in any age brought together in one particular case; and both houses of convocation had condemned the marriage before his sentence. But because in the right of his see he was legate to the Pope, therefore, to make the sentence stronger, it went only in his name, though he had but a small share in it, compared to what Gardiner had.

The Queen carries it severely to the Lady Elizabeth.

By this act, there was also a second illegitimation brought on the Lady Elizabeth, to whom hitherto the Queen had been very kind, using her on all occasions with the tenderness of a sister: but from this time forwards she handled her more severely. It was perhaps occasioned by this act, since before they stood both equally illegitimated; but now the act that legitimated the Queen making her most certainly a bastard in law, the Queen might think it now too much to use her as she had done formerly. Others suggest a more secret reason of this distaste. The new Earl of Devonshire was much in the Queen's favour, so that it was thought she had some inclinations to marry him; but he, either not presuming so high, or really having an aversion to her, and an inclination to her sister, who, of that moderate share of beauty that was between them, had much the better of her, and was nineteen years younger, made his addresses with more than ordinary concern to the Lady Elizabeth, and this did bring them both in trouble, as shall be afterwards shewn.

The laws made by King Edward repealed.

The next bill that was sent from the Lords to the Commons, was for the repealing King Edward's laws about religion. It was sent down on the 31st of October, and argued six days in the House of Commons: but in the end it was carried, and sent back to the Lords. The preamble of it sets forth the great disorders that had fallen out in the nation by the changes that had been made in religion, from that which their forefathers had left them by the authority of the catholic church: thereupon all the laws that had been made in King Edward's time about religion were now repealed, and it was enacted, that, from the 20th of December next, there should be no other form of Divine service but what had been used in the last year of King

Henry the Eighth, leaving it free to all till that day, to use either the books appointed by King Edward, or the old ones at their pleasure.

1553.

An act against the affronting priests.

Another act was passed, which the Commons sent up to the Lords, against all those who by any overt act should molest or disquiet any preacher, because of his office, or for any sermon that he might have preached; or should any way disturb them when they were in any part of the Divine offices, that either had been in the last year of King Henry, or should be afterwards set forth by the Queen; or should break or abuse the holy sacrament, or break altars, crucifixes, or crosses: those that did any of these things should be presented to the justices of peace, and be by them put in prison, where they should lie three months, or till they were penitent for their offences; and if any rescued them, they should be liable to the same punishment. But to this a proviso was added by the Lords, that this act should no way derogate from the authority of the ecclesiastical laws and courts, who might likewise proceed upon such offences: and a certificate from the ordinaries, that such offenders were punished by them, being brought to the justices of peace, they were to proceed no further, or if the justices made a certificate that they had punished them according to law, the ordinary might not punish them a second time. But the Commons were now so heated, that they sent up another bill to the Lords against those who came not to church, nor to sacraments, after the old service should be again set up; the inflicting of the punishments in these cases being left to the ecclesiastical courts. This fell in the House of Lords, not so much from any opposition that was made, as that they were afraid of alarming the nation too much, by many severe laws at once.

An act against unlawful assemblies.

Another law was made for securing the public peace against unlawful and rebellious assemblies: that if any, to the number of twelve or above, should meet to alter any thing of religion established by law, and being required by any, having the Queen's authority, to disperse themselves, should continue after that an hour together, it should be felony: or if that number met to break hedges or parks, to destroy deer or fish, &c. and did not

PART II.

1553.

disperse upon proclamation, it should be felony: or if any, by ringing of bells, drums, or firing of beacons, gathered the people together, and did the things beforementioned, it was felony: if the wives or servants of persons so gathered, carried meat, money, or weapons, to them, it should be felony: and if any above the number of two, and within twelve, should meet for these ends, they should suffer a year's imprisonment; empowering the sheriffs or justices to gather the country for the resistance of persons so offending, with penalties on all, between eighteen and sixty, that, being required to come out against them, should refuse to do it. When this act was known, the people then saw clearly how they had been deceived by the former act, that seemed so favourable, repealing all acts of new treasons and felonies; since there was so soon after it an act passed that renewed one of the severest laws of the last reign, in which so many things, that might flow from sudden heats, were made felonies, and a great many new and severe provisos were added to it. The Queen's discharge of the subsidy was confirmed by another act.

The Marquis of Northampton's second marriage is annulled.

There followed two private acts, which occasioned more debate than the public ones had done: the one was, the repeal of the act that had confirmed the Marquis of Northampton's marriage; it was much argued in the House of Commons, and on the 28th of November it was agreed to. It contains, that the act of confirming the divorce, and the second marriage, were procured more upon untrue surmises and private respects, than for any public good, and increase of virtue: and that it was an encouragement for sensual persons, to practise by false allegations that they might be separated from their wives, rather then a precedent to induce people to live with their wives in a godly sort; thereupon the act was repealed, and declared void and of no effect. In this it seems, the arguments that were against it in the House of Commons had so moderated the style of it, that it was not repealed as an act sinful in itself, but it was only declared that in that particular case the divorce was unlawfully made: for it is reasonable to believe that the bishops had put in the first draught of the bill, a

simple repeal of it, and of all such divorces, founded on the indissolubleness of the marriage bond.

1553. And the Duke of Norfolk's attainder.

The other act was about the Duke of Norfolk, for declaring his attainder void. The patentees that had purchased some parts of his estate from the crown, desired to be heard to plead against it. But the session of the parliament being near at an end, the Duke came down himself to the House of Commons on the 4th of December, and desired them earnestly to pass his bill; and said, that the difference between him and the patentees was referred to arbiters, and if they could not agree it, he would refer it to the Queen. It was long argued after that, but in the end it was agreed to. It sets forth, that the act by which he was attained had no special matter in it, but only treasons in general, and a pretence that, out of the parliament's care for the King, and his son the Prince, it was necessary to attaint him: that the reasons they pretended were, his using coats of arms, which he and his ancestors had and might lawfully use. It further says, that the King died the next night after the commission was given for passing the bill; and that it did not appear, that the King had given his assent to it: that the commission was not signed by the King's hand, but only by his stamp; and that was put to the nether end, and not to the upper part of the bill, which shewed it was done in disorder; and that it did not appear that these commissioned for it had given the royal assent to it. Upon which considerations, that pretended act is declared void and null by the common laws of the land. And it is further declared, that the law was, and ever hath been, that the royal assent should be given, either by the King being present, or in his absence, by a commission under the great seal, signed with his hand, and publicly notified to the Lords and Commons.

Cranmer and others attainted.

The last act of which I shall give an account, was the confirmation of the attainders that had been made. On the 13th of November, Archbishop Cranmer, the Lord Guilford Dudley, and the Lady Jane his wife, with two other sons of the Duke of Northumberland, (which were all, except the Lord Robert, who was reserved for greater fortunes,) were brought to their trial. These all

PART II.

1553.

confessed their indictments. Only Cranmer appealed to those that judged him, how unwillingly he had consented to the exclusion of the Queen; that he had not done it, till those whose profession it was to know the law had signed it: upon which he submitted himself to the Queen's mercy. But they were all attainted of high treason, for levying war against the Queen, and conspiring to set up another in her room. So these judgments, with those that had passed before, were now confirmed by act of parliament.

But the see of Canterbury is not declared void.

And now Cranmer was legally devested of his archbishoprick, which was hereupon void in law, since a man that is attainted can have no right to any church benefice; his life was also at the Queen's mercy. But it being now designed to restore the ecclesiastical exemption and dignity to what it had been anciently, it was resolved, that he should be still esteemed archbishop, till he were solemnly degraded, according to the canon law. The Queen was also inclined to give him his life at this time, reckoning, that thereby she was acquitted of all the obligations she had to him; and was resolved to have him proceeded against for heresy, that so it might appear she did not act out of revenge, or on any personal account. So all that followed on this against Cranmer, was a sequestration of all the fruits of his archbishoprick; himself was still kept in prison. Nor were the other prisoners proceeded against at this time. The Queen was desirous to seem willing to pardon injuries done against herself, but was so heated in the matters of religion, that she was always inexorable on that head.

Having given this account of public transactions, I must relate next what were more secretly carried on; but, breaking out at this time, occasioned the sudden dissolution of the parliament.

The Queen treats about a reconciliation with Rome.

Cardinal Dandino, that was then the Pope's legate at the Emperor's court, sent over Commendone (afterwards a cardinal) to bring him a certain account of the Queen's intentions concerning religion; he gave him in charge, to endeavour to speak with her in private, and to persuade her to reconcile her kingdom to the apostolic see. This was to be managed with great secrecy, for they did

not know whom to trust in so important a negotiation: it seems, they neither confided in Gardiner, nor in any of the other bishops. Commendone, being thus instructed, went to Newport, where he gave himself out to be the nephew of a merchant that was lately dead at London; and hired two servants to whom he was unknown, and so he came over unsuspected to London. There he was so much a stranger, that he did not know to whom he should address himself. By accident he met with one Lee, a servant of the Queen's, that had fled beyond sea during the former reign, and had been then known to him; so he trusted him with the secret of his business in England. He procured him a secret audience of the Queen, in which she freely owned to him her resolution of reconciling her kingdom to the see of Rome, and so of bringing all things back to the state in which they had been before the breach made by her father: but she said, it was absolutely necessary to manage that design with great prudence and secrecy, lest in that confusion of affairs, the discovery of it might much disturb her government, and obstruct her design. She wrote by him to the Pope, giving him assurance of her filial obedience, and so sent Commendone to Rome. She also wrote by him to Cardinal Pole, and ordered Commendone to move the Pope, that he might be sent over with a legatine power. Yet he that wrote that Cardinal's life insinuates, that the Queen had another design in desiring that Pole might be sent over; for she asked him, whether the pope might not dispense with the Cardinal to marry, since he was only in deacon's orders? Before Commendone left England, he saw the Duke of Northumberland executed, and soon after he made all the haste that was possible to carry those acceptable tidings to Rome; and, by his dexterity in this nogotiation, he laid the foundation of those great fortunes, to which he was afterwards advanced. There was no small joy in the consistory, when the Pope and the Cardinals understood, that a kingdom, from which they had drawn so much wealth in former times, was now to become again tributary to them. So there was a public rejoicing for three days, in which the Pope said mass

PART II.

1553.

himself, and distributed his ordinary largess of indulgences, of which he was the more bountiful, because he hoped they should come in credit again, and be purchased at the rates at which they had been formerly sold. Yet, in the consistory, Commendone did not positively say he was sent by the Queen, that being only communicated to the Pope; all he told the cardinals was, that he understood, from very good hands, that the Queen was very well disposed to that see, and that she desired, that a legate might be sent over with full powers. Many of the cardinals thought this was too bare a message; and that it was below the papal dignity, to send a legate, till the Pope was earnestly desired to do it, by an express message, and an embassy sent by the Queen. But it was said, that Commendone had said nothing but by the Queen's express orders, who was yet in so unsettled a condition, that, till she held a session of parliament, it might much endanger her to appear openly in such a matter: they were to remember, how England had been lost by too much stiffness formerly; and they were to imitate the shepherd in the parable, who left his ninety-nine sheep to seek the one that was strayed. So it was granted, that Pole should go legate, with a full power. But Gardiner, coming to know this, sent to the Emperor to stop his journey; assuring him, that things were going well on, and that his coming over would spoil all. At this time the Emperor began to think of marrying his son Philip to the Queen, who, though she was above nine years older than he, yet being but thirty-seven years old, was not out of hopes of having children. The Emperor saw, that if England were united to the Spanish crown, it would raise the monarchy to a great height, they should have all the trade of the world in their hands, and so enclose France, that it seemed as probable a step to the universal monarchy, as that he had lately lost in Germany. When this match was first proposed I do not know; but I have read some parts of a letter concerning it, (for it is not all legible,) which was written by the Queen of Hungary, and signed by the Emperor, in the beginning of November; this, though it was not the first proposition, yet seems to

But stopped in his journey by the Emperor.

have followed soon after it. The Queen entertained the motion easily, not trusting to the affections of her people, nor thinking it possible to have the papal authority set up, nor the church-lands restored, without a foreign force to assist her. It is said, and I have shewn some ground to believe, that she had some inclinations to Cardinal Pole; and that the Emperor, fearing that might be a hinderance to his design, therefore the Cardinal's coming over was stopped, till the Queen was married to his son Philip. But of this I find no certain footsteps. On the contrary, Gardiner, whose eye was chiefly upon the archbishoprick of Canterbury, would rather have promoted Pole's pretensions to the Queen, since her marrying a subject, and not a stranger, would have made the government much easier, and more acceptable to the people; and it would have been the best thing he could do for himself if he could have persuaded her to marry him, who alone was like to stand between him and that dignity.

The true account of it is, the Emperor pressed her first to settle the state, and consummate her marriage; and that would more easily make way for what was to follow: for Gardiner had assured him, the bringing in of the papal power, and making up the marriage, both at once, would be things of such ill digestion, that it would not be easy to carry them together; and therefore it was necessary to let a considerable interval go between. This being resolved on, it was apparent the marriage ought to go first, as that which would give them more strength to conclude the other. And this was the true reason of stopping Cardinal Pole; * which the Emperor at first did by his own authority, but afterwards got the Queen to send one to him to the same purpose. She sent Goldwell (afterwards bishop of St. Asaph) to him with the two acts that were passed, for the justifying of her mother's marriage, and for bringing all things back to the state in which they were at her father's death.

The Queen sent one to him.

* Cardinal Pole was stopped in his journey by Mendoza, sent post to him from the Emperor, desiring him not to proceed in his journey; upon which he went back to Dilling, a town belonging to the Cardinal of Ausbourg.

PART II.

1553.

Thereby she let him see, that she was going forward in the business for which he was sent; but withal she told him, that the Commons, in passing those acts, had expressed great aversion to the taking of the supremacy from the crown, or the restoring of the Pope's power; and that they were much alarmed, to hear he was coming over legate; and it prejudiced her affairs, that the message she had sent by Commendone, had been published in the consistory. Therefore she desired him to keep out of England till he were further advertised. But, to let him see how much she depended on his councils, she desired he would send her a list of such persons as should be made bishops; for many were now to be turned out. To this (besides the answer which he might have written to herself, that I have not seen) he wrote a copious answer, in a tedious paper of instructions, which he gave to Goldwell, the conclusion of which, summing up his whole mind fully enough, I thought sufficient to put into the Collection, for the instructions are extremely long, and very full of words to little purpose. They seem to be of his own hand writing, but of that I am not well assured, having seen nothing else of his hand, except his subscription.

Collect. Numb. 9.

The advice he sent to the Queen.

The substance of it was this: "He rejoiced much at the two acts that were passed, but yet he censures them both, because he observed some defects in them: in the act for confirming her mother's marriage, he found fault that there was no mention made of the Pope's bulls, by the authority of which only it could be a lawful marriage. In the other, he did not like it, that the worship of God and the sacraments were to be as they were in the end of her father's reign; for then the people were yet in a state of schism, and schismatics have no right to the sacraments; the pope's interdict still lay on the nation, and till that were taken off, none could without sin either administer or receive them. He told her, that Commendone had said nothing in her name to the consistory, but had spoken to them only on the reports which, he said, he had heard of her from good hands; and it was necessary to say somewhat, in order to the sending a legate: that many in the consistory had opposed the

sending of him, because there was no express desire sent about it; but it was carried, that he should come over with very full graces, and power to reconcile the kingdom on very easy terms. He also told her, he was afraid, that when the Pope and cardinals should hear that he was stopped, they would repent their benignity, and take this as an affront, and recall him and his powers, and send another that would not be so tender of the nation, or bring with him such full powers: that to prevent this, he had sent one to the Pope and cardinals, to mitigate their displeasure, by letting them know, he was only stopped for a little while, till the act of attainder that stood against him was repealed; and to make a show of going forward he had sent his household stuff to Flanders, but would stay where he was, till he had further orders. He said, he knew this flowed chiefly from the Emperor, who was for using such political courses as himself had followed in the business of the interim, and was earnest to have the state settled, before she meddled with religion: he had spoken with his confessor about it, and had convinced him of the impiety of such courses, and sent him to work on him. He also told the Queen, he was afraid carnal policy might govern her too much, and that she might thereby fall from her simplicity in Christ, in which she had hitherto lived. He encouraged her therefore to put on a spirit of wisdom and courage, and to trust in God, who had preserved her so long, and had settled her on the throne in so unlooked-for a manner. He desired, she would shew as much courage in rejecting the supremacy, as her father had done in acquiring it. He confessed, he knew none in either house of parliament fit to propose that matter: the spiritualty had all complied so far, had written and declared for it so much, that it could not flow from them decently; and the temporalty being possessed of the church-lands, would not willingly move it: therefore he thought it best for herself to go to the parliament, having beforehand acquainted some few, both of the spiritualty and temporalty, with her design; and that she should tell both houses, she was touched in her conscience, that she and her people were in a schism from the catholic

PART II.

1553.

church and the apostolic see; and that therefore she had a legate to come over to treat about it; and should thereupon propose that the attainder might be taken off from him, that he might be capable to come on that message. And he protested, that he had never acted against the King, or kingdom, but only with design to reduce them to the unity of the church; neither before nor after the attainder: and whereas some might apprehend a thraldom from the papacy, she might give him assurance, that they should see all things so well secured, that there should no danger come to the nation from it; and he assured them that he, for his part, should take as much care of that, as any of all the temporalty could desire. What recommendations he sent, for the sees that were to be declared vacant, I do not know.

But Gardiner's methods are preferred to him.

When this dispatch of his was brought into England, Gardiner, by the assistance of the Emperor, convinced the Queen that his method was impracticable, and that the marriage must be first dispatched; and now Gardiner and he did declare open enmity to one another. Gardiner thought him a weak man, that might have some speculative knowledge of abstracted ideas, but understood not the world, nor the genius of the English nation. Pole, on the other hand, thought him a false man, that made conscience of nothing, and was better at intrigues and dissimulation, than the government of the church: but the Emperor saw Gardiner had so prudently managed this parliament, that he concluded his measures were rather to be followed than the Cardinal's.

The House of Commons displeased with the marriage with Spain.

In the House of Commons it was given out, that it was necessary to gain the Queen to the interest of the nation, and to turn her from foreign councils and aid, by being easy to her in the matter of religion, and therefore they were ready both to repeal the divorce, and King Edward's laws. But when they saw the design of the marriage, and uniting with Rome was still carried on, they were all much alarmed: so they sent their Speaker, and twenty of their House with him, with an earnest and humble address to her, not to marry a stranger. This had so inflamed the House, that the

court saw more could not be expected from them, unless they were satisfied in that point: so on the 6th of December the parliament was dissolved. Upon that Gardiner sent to the Emperor to let him know, that the marriage was like to meet with such opposition, that, unless extraordinary conditions were offered, which all should see were much to the advantage of the English crown, it could not be carried without a general rebellion. He also assured him, that if great sums of money were not sent over to gratify the chief nobility and leading men in the country, both for obliging them to his interest, and enabling them to carry elections for the next parliament, the opposition would be such, that the Queen must lay down all thoughts of marrying his son. Upon this the Emperor and his son resolved to offer what conditions the English would demand; for Philip reckoned, if he once had the crown on his head, it would be easy for him, with the assistance which his other dominions might give him, to make all these signify little. And, for money, the Emperor borrowed twelve hundred thousand crowns, (which in English money was 400,000*l.* for the crown was then a noble,) and promised to send it over to be distributed as Gardiner and his ambassadors should think fit: but he made his son bind himself to repay him that sum, when he had once attained the crown of England. And this the Emperor made so little a secret, that when, a year after, some towns in Germany, that had lent a part of the money, desired to be repaid; he answered them, that he had lent his son twelve hundred thousand crowns to marry him to the Queen of England, and had yet received of him only three hundred thousand crowns; but he had good security for the rest, and the merchants were bound to pay him 100,000*l.* sterling: and therefore he demanded a little more time of them. All this was printed soon after at Strasburgh by the English there, in a book which they sent over to England; in which both the address made by the Commons in parliament, and this answer of the Emperor to the towns, are mentioned. And that whole discourse (which is in the form of an address to the Queen, the nobility, and the Commons) is written with

The parliament is dissolved.

1,200,000 crowns sent into England to procure the consent of the nation to the marriage.

PART II.

1553.

such gravity and simplicity of style, that, as it is by much the best I have seen of this time, so in these public transactions there is no reason to think it untrue. For the things which it relates are credible of themselves: and though the sum there mentioned was very great, yet he that considers that England was to be bought with it, will not think it an extraordinary price. In that discourse it is further said, that, as Gardiner corrupted many by bribes, so, in the court of Chancery, common justice was denied to all but those who came into these designs.

The proceedings of the convocation.

Having thus given an account of what was done in parliament, I shall next shew how the convocation proceeded. Bonner being to preside in it, as being the first bishop of the province of Canterbury, appointed John Harpsfield his chaplain to preach; who took his text out of the twentieth of the Acts, (verse 28.) "Feed the flock." He run out in his bidding prayers most profusely on the Queen's praises, comparing her to Deborah, Esther, Judith, Mary the sister of Martha, and the Virgin Mary, with all the servilest flatteries he could invent: next he bid them pray for the Lady Elizabeth; but when he came to mention the clergy, he enlarged in the praises of Bonner, Gardiner, Tonstal, Heath, and Day, so grossly, that it seems the strains of flattering churchmen at that time were very coarse; and he run out so copiously in them, as if he had been to deliver a panegyric and not to bid the beads. In his sermon he inveighed against the late preachers, for not observing fasts, nor keeping Lent, and for their marriages, which he severely condemned.

Disputes concerning the sacrament.

Weston, dean of Westminster, was presented prolocutor by the Lower House, and approved of by Bonner. Whether any of the bishops that had been made in King Edward's time sat among them, I do not know; but in the Lower House there was great opposition made. There had been care taken that there should be none returned to the convocation but such as would comply in all points. But yet there came six non-compliers, who, being deans or archdeacons, had a right to sit in the convocation. These were, Philpot, archdeacon of

Winchester; Philips, dean of Rochester; Haddon, dean of Exeter; Cheyney, archdeacon of Hereford; Ailmer, archdeacon of Stow; and Young, chanter of St. David's. Weston, the prolocutor, proposed to them, on the 18th of October, that there had been a catechism printed in the last year of King Edward's reign in the name of that synod, and, as he understood, it was done without their consents, which was a pestiferous book, and full of heresies; there was likewise a very abominable Book of Common-Prayer set out: it was therefore the Queen's pleasure that they should prepare such laws about religion as she would ratify with her parliament. So he proposed, that they should begin with condemning those books, particularly the articles in them contrary to the sacrament of the altar: and he gave out two questions about it, Whether in the sacrament, upon the sanctification of the bread and wine, all their substance did not vanish, being changed into the body and blood of Christ? and, Whether the natural body of Christ was not corporally present in the eucharist, either by the transubstantiation of the elements into his body and blood, or by the conjunction of concomitance, as some expressed it? The House was adjourned till the 20th, on which day every man was appointed to give in his answer to these questions. All answered and subscribed in the affirmative, except the six before mentioned. Philpot said, whereas it was given out that the catechism was not approved by the convocation, though it was printed in their name, it was a mistake; for the Convocation had authorized a number of persons to set forth ecclesiastical laws, to whom they had committed their synodal authority; so that they might well set out such books in the name of the convocation. He also said, that it was against all order, to move men to subscribe in such points before they were examined: and since the number of these on the one side, was so unequal to those on the other side, he desired that Dr. Ridley, Mr. Rogers, and two or three more, might be allowed to come to the convocation. This seemed very reasonable, so the Lower House proposed it to the bishops. They answered, that these persons being

PART II.

1553.

prisoners, they could not bring them; but they should move the council about it. A message also was sent from some great lords, that they intended to hear the disputation: so the House adjourned till the 23d.

There was then a great appearance of noblemen and others. The Prolocutor began with a protestation, that by this dispute they did not intend to call the truth in doubt, to which they had all subscribed; but they did it only to satisfy the objections of those few who refused to concur with them. But it was denied to let any prisoners or others assist them; for it was said, that that being a dispute among those of the convocation, none but members were to be heard in it. Haddon and Ailmer, foreseeing they should be run down with clamour and noise, refused to dispute: Young went away: Cheyney being next spoke to, did propose his objections; that St. Paul calls the sacrament bread after the consecration; that Origen said it went into the excrement; and Theodoret said, the bread and wine did not in the sacrament depart from their former substance, form, and shape. Moreman was called on to answer him: he said, that St. Paul calling it bread was to be understood thus, the sacrament or form of bread. To Origen's authority he answered nothing; but to Theodoret he said, the word they render *substance* stood in a more general signification, and so might signify *accidental substance*. Upon this, Ailmer, who had resolved not to dispute, could not contain himself, but said the Greek word οὐσία, could not be so understood, for the following words of form and shape belonged to the accidents, but that only belonged to the substance of the elements. Upon this there followed a contest about the signification of that word. Then Philpot struck in, and said, The occasion of Theodoret's writing plainly shewed that was a vain cavil; for the dispute was with the Eutychians, whether the body and human nature of Christ had yet an existence distinct from the Divine nature? The Eutychians said it was swallowed up by his Godhead; and argued from some expressions used concerning the sacrament, as if the

presence of Christ in it had swallowed up the elements: against which, Theodoret, according to the orthodox doctrine, argued to prove that there was in Christ a human nature not swallowed up; and said, that as in the sacrament, notwithstanding the union of Christ with the elements, they did not depart from their substance, form, and shape; so the human nature of Christ was not absorbed by its union to the Godhead. So it plainly appeared this word *substance* stood for the nature of the elements. Moreman being straitened in answering this, Philpot said, if he had not an answer ready, he would desire him to think on one against their next meeting; upon this the Prolocutor checked him, as if he were bragging too soon. He insisted on his argument, but was commanded to be silent. Haddon upon that proposed another argument, from these words of our Saviour, "The poor you have always with you, but me you have not always;" that therefore his body was not in the sacrament. To this the Prolocutor answered, that Christ was not to be always with us so as to receive our alms, which is all that was intended by that place: but Haddon brought a copious citation out of St. Augustine, applying that very place to prove that Christ's natural presence was no more on earth after his ascension into heaven. To this Dr. Watson opposed another place of St. Augustine, and some dispute was about those places: after that, Haddon read more authorities of fathers, asserting that Christ was in heaven and not on earth; the words of the institution did plainly express it, both because the sacrament was to be in remembrance of Christ, and because it was to continue until his coming again. But to this they said, he was not on earth in a bodily manner; and they endeavoured to take away the force of the argument from the words, *until his coming again*, by some other acceptations of the word *until*. But Haddon asked them, whether they thought Christ did eat his own natural body, when he instituted and took the sacrament? they said, he did. Upon that he answered, that that was so absurd that he thought it needless to argue more with those who could yield it, and so he sat down. Philpot argued, that Christ could

PART II.

1553.

not receive his own body in the sacrament, since it was given for the remission of sins, of which he was not capable, having no sin. Weston answered, he might receive it as well as be baptized; but Philpot answered, he was baptized, as he said himself, to be an example to others. So ended this day's dispute.

On the 25th, Philpot, who was ordered to begin that day, had prepared a long discourse in Latin: but Weston interrupted him, and said, he must make no speech, he was only to propose his arguments, and that in English; though it had been before ordered that the dispute should be in Latin: then Philpot went to explain what sort of presence he would dispute against, and what he allowed. Here Weston again interrupted him, and bid him form his argument. Upon that he fell down on his knees, and begged of the lords and privy-counsellors that were present, that he might have leave to speak his mind, which they granted him: so, he said, for their sacrifice of the mass, he would prove that it was no sacrament at all, and that Christ was no way present in it; which if he should not do, before the Queen and her council, against any six that would maintain the contrary, he should be willing to be burnt before the court gates. Upon this there was great outcrying, that he was mad, and talked idly; and Weston threatened to send him to prison. But this noise being laid, and he claiming the privilege of the House for the freedom of speech, was required to go on to an argument. Then he proved that Christ was in heaven; for himself said, "I leave the world, and go to my Father:" and to prove there was no ambiguity in these words, he observed, that his disciples said upon this, "Now thou speakest plainly, without any parable." It was answered by Dr. Chedsey, that those words were only meant of his visible ascension, but did not exclude his invisible presence; and he cited some words of Chrysostom's, that Christ took his flesh with him, and also left his flesh behind him. Weston and the rest said, that authority was unanswerable; and for awhile would not hear his answer: but Philpot shewed him, that Chrysostom's words must be understood in a large sense, as be-

lievers are said to be flesh of his flesh; for that father applies that also to baptism, from these words, "As many as are baptized into Christ, have put on Christ;" so the flesh that Christ left on earth, according to him, is not the corporal presence in the sacrament. Upon this, Pye, dean of Chichester, whispered somewhat to the Prolocutor, who thereupon said to Philpot, that he had disputed enough. He answered, that he had a dozen of arguments, and they were enjoining him silence before he got through one of them. They threatened to send him to prison if he spoke more. He said, that was far from the promise they had made of hearing them fully, and from what was preached last Sunday at Paul's, that all things should be answered in this disputation. But Pye said, he should be answered another way. Philpot replied, there was a company of them now got together, who had heretofore dissembled with God and the world; and were now met to suppress God's truth, and to set forth false devices, which they were not able to maintain. After this, Ailmer stood up, and brought many authorities out of Greek authors, to prove that οὐσία in Theodoret, could only be understood of the *substance* of bread and wine; and Moreman desired a day's time to consider of them. Then Peru, though he had subscribed with the rest, brought some arguments against transubstantiation; for which the Prolocutor chid him, since he had before subscribed. Ailmer answered, that it was against the freedom of the House, for any one to be so chid for delivering his conscience. It was now become late, so they adjourned to the 27th.

Then they again disputed about Theodoret's words, where Haddon shewed, that he said the symbols retained the same substance that they had before. After that Cheyney fell to argue about those words; he acknowledged a real presence, but denied transubstantiation, and pressed Theodoret's authority so close, that Watson said he was a Nestorian; and if Theodoret, who was but one, was of their side, there was above a hundred fathers against them. Upon this Cheyney quoted Irenæus, who had said that our flesh was nourished by the

PART II.

1553.

bread and wine in the sacrament. He also cited Hesychius, who said, that in the church of Jerusalem, the symbols that were not consumed in the communion were burnt afterwards; he desired to know, whether the ashes were the body of Christ, or what it was that was burnt? To all this Harpsfield made a long answer concerning God's omnipotence, and the weakness of men's understandings, that could not comprehend Divine mysteries. But Cheyney still asked, what it was that was burnt? Harpsfield replied, it was either the substance of bread, or the body of Christ; and afterwards said it was a miracle. At that Cheyney smiled, and said, then he could say no more. Weston asked, whether there was not enough said in answer to these men's objections? Many of the clergy cried out, "Yes, yes;" but the multitude, with repeated cries, said, "No, no." Weston said, he spake to those of the House, and not to the rude multitude. Then he asked those divines, whether they would now for three days answer the arguments that should be put to them? Haddon, Cheyney, and Ailmer, said they would not; but Philpot offered to do it. Weston said, he was a madman, and fitter to be sent to Bedlam. Philpot said, he that carried himself with so much passion, and so little indifferency, deserved a room there much better. Weston, neglecting him, turned to the assembly, and said, they might see what sort of men these were, whom they had now answered three days; but though they had promised it, and the order of disputation did require it, that they should answer in their turn three days, they now declined it. Upon that, Ailmer stood up and answered, that they had made no such promise, nor undertaken any such disputation: but being required to give their reasons, why they would not subscribe with the rest, they had done it, but had received no answer to them, and therefore would enter into no further disputation before such judges, who had already determined and subscribed those questions. So the House was adjourned to the 30th; and then Philpot appeared to answer, but desired first leave to prosecute his former argument, and urged, that since Christ as

man is like us in all things without sin, therefore, as we are restrained to one place at a time, so is Christ but in one place, and that is heaven; for St. Peter says, "The heavens must contain him till the restitution of all things." To this it was answered, that Christ being God, his omnipotence was above our understanding; and that to shut him in one place was to put him in prison. Philpot said, he was not speaking of his Divine nature, but that as he was man he was like us; and for their saying that Christ was not to be imprisoned in heaven, he left to all men to judge whether that was a good answer or not. Much discourse following upon this, the Prolocutor commanded him to come no more into the House. He answered, he thought himself happy to be out of their company. Others suggesting to the Prolocutor, that it would be said the meeting was not free, if men were put out of the House for speaking their minds; he said to him, he might come, so he were decently habited, and did not speak but when he commanded him. To this he answered, that he had rather be absent altogether. Weston concluded all by saying, You have the word, but we have the sword: truly pointing out wherein the strength of both causes lay.

Censures passed upon it.

This was the issue of that disputation, which was soon after printed in English; and in Latin by Volerandus Polanus, and is inserted at large in Fox's Acts and Monuments. What account the other side gave of it I do not find. But upon all such occasions, the prevailing party, when the inequality was so disproportioned, used to carry things with so much noise and disorder, that it was no wonder the reformers had no mind to engage in this dispute. And those who reflected on the way of proceeding in King Edward's time, could not but confess things had been managed with much more candour and equality. For in this very point, there had been, as was formerly shewn, disputes for a year together, before there was any determination made; so that all men were free at that time to deliver their opinions without any fear, and then the disputes were in the universities, where, as there were a great silence, and collection of books, so the auditors were more capable of

PART II.

1553.

being instructed by them: but here the point was first determined and then disputed; and this was in the midst of the disorder of the town, where the privy-council gave all possible encouragement to the prevailing party.

The last thing I find done this year was, the restoring Veisey to be bishop of Exeter, which was done on the 28th of December. In his warrant for it under the great seal it is said, that he, for some just troubles both in body and mind, had resigned his bishoprick to King Edward, to which the Queen now restored him. And thus ended this year. Foreign affairs did not so much concern religion, as they had done in the former reign; which, as it made me give some account of them then, so it causes me now not to prosecute them so fully.

1554. Ambassadors sent from the Emperor for the marriage.

In the beginning of the next year, the Emperor sent over the Count of Egmont and some other ambassadors, to make the proposition and treaty of marriage betwixt his son and the Queen. In the managing of this treaty Gardiner had the chief hand, for he was now the oracle at the council-board. He had thirty years' experience in affairs, a great knowledge of the courts of Christendom, and of the state of England, and had great sagacity, with a marvellous cunning, which was not always regulated by the rules of candour and honesty. He, in drawing the articles of the marriage, had a double design; the one was, to have them so framed that they might easily pass in parliament; and the other was, to exclude the Spaniards from having any share in the government of England, which he intended to hold in his own hands. So the terms on which it was agreed were these:

The articles agreed.

The Queen should have the whole government of England, with the giving of offices and benefices, in her own hands; so that though Philip was to be called King, and his name was to be on the coin, and the seals, and in writs, yet her hand was to give force to every thing without his. Spaniards should not be admitted into the government, nor to any offices at court. The laws should not be altered, nor the pleadings put into any other tongue. The Queen should not be made to go out of England, but upon her own desire.

The children born in the marriage should not go out of England, but by the consent of the nobility. If the Queen outlived the Prince, she should have 60,000*l.* a year out of his estate; 40,000*l.* out of Spain, and 20,000*l.* of it out of the Netherlands. If the Queen had sons by him, they should succeed, both to her own crowns, and the Netherlands, and Burgundy; and if the Archduke Charles, Philip's only son, died, they should succeed to all her and his dominions. If she had only daughters, they should succeed to her crowns and the Netherlands, if they married by their brother's consent; or otherwise, they should have such portions, as were ordinarily given to those of their rank: but if the Queen had no issue, the King was not to pretend to any part of the government after her death; but the crown was to descend according to the laws of England to her heirs. There was a perpetual league betwixt England and Spain; but this was not to be in prejudice of their league with France, which was still to continue in force.

These were the conditions agreed on, and afterwards confirmed in parliament, by which it appears the Spaniards were resolved to have the marriage on any terms; reckoning that, if Prince Philip were once in England, he could easily enlarge his authority, which was hereby so much restrained.

The match generally disliked.

It was now apparent, the Queen was to marry the Prince of Spain; which gave an universal discontent to the whole nation. All that loved the Reformation saw, that not only their religion would be changed, but a Spanish government and inquisition would be set up in its stead. Those who considered the civil liberties of the kingdom, without great regard to religion, concluded that England would become a province to Spain; and they saw how they governed the Netherlands, and heard how they ruled Milan, Naples, and Sicily; but above all, they heard the most inhuman things, that ever any age produced, had been acted by them in their new conquest in the West Indies.

It was said, what might they expect, but to lie at the mercy of such tyrannical masters, who would not be long kept within the limits that were now prescribed?

PART II.

1554.

All the great conditions now talked of, were but the gilding the pill, but its operation would be fatal if they once swallowed it down. These things had influence on many; but the chief conspirators were, the Duke of Suffolk, Sir Thomas Wiat, and Sir Peter Carew: the one was to raise the midland counties, the other to raise Cornwall, and Wiat was to raise Kent; hoping, by rising in such remote places, so to distract the government, that they should be able to engage the commons, who were now as much distasted with the Queen as they had been formerly fond of her.

Plots to oppose it,

Are discovered.

But as Carew was carrying on his design in the west, it came to be discovered; and one that he had trusted much in it was taken; upon that Carew fled over into France. Wiat was in Kent when he heard this; but had not yet laid his business as he intended. Therefore, fearing to be undone by the discovery that was made, he gathered some men about him, and on the 25th of January went to Maidstone. There he made proclamation, that he intended nothing but to preserve the liberty of the nation, and keep it from coming under the yoke of strangers; which, he said, all the council, one or two excepted, were against; and assured the people, that all the nobility, and chief men of England, would concur with them. He said nothing of religion, but in private assured those that were for the Reformation, that he would declare for them. One Roper came and declared him and his company traitors; but he took him, with some gentlemen that were gathering to oppose him. From thence he went to Rochester, and wrote to the Sheriff of Kent, desiring his assistance against the strangers; for there were already, as he said, a hundred armed Spaniards landed at Dover. The Sheriff sent him word, that if he, and those with him, had any suits, they were to make them to the Queen on their knees, but not with swords in their hands; and required them to disperse under pain of treason. Wiat kept his men in good order, so that they did no hurt, but only took all the arms they could find.

Wiat breaks out.

At the same time, one Isley and Knevet gathered people together about Tunbridge, and went to join with

Wiat. The Queen sent down a herald to him with a pardon if he would disperse his company in twenty-four hours, but Wiat made him deliver his message at the end of Rochester-bridge, and so sent him away. The High Sheriff gathered together as many as he could, and shewed them how they were abused by lies; there were no Spaniards landed at all; and those that were to come, were to be their friends and confederates against their enemies. Those that he brought together went to Gravesend to meet the Duke of Norfolk and Sir Hen. Jerningham, who were come thither with six hundred men from London; and they hearing, that Knevet was on his way to Rochester, went, and intercepted, and routed him; sixty of his men were killed, and the rest saved themselves in the woods.

The news of this disheartened Wiat much, who was seen to weep; and called for a coat, which he stuffed with angels, designing to have escaped. But the Duke of Norfolk marching to Rochester with two hundred horse and six hundred foot, commanded by one Bret, they were wrought on, by a pretended deserter, Harper, who seemed to come over from Wiat: he persuaded the Londoners, that it was only the preservation of the nation from the Spaniards that they designed; and it was certain none would suffer under that yoke more than they. This had such an effect on them, that they all cried out, "We are all Englishmen," and went over to Wiat. So the Duke of Norfolk was forced to march back. And now Kent was all open to Wiat, who thereupon sent one to the Duke of Suffolk, pressing him to make haste and raise his country; but the bearer was intercepted. Upon that the Earl of Huntington was sent down with some horse to seize on him. The Duke was at all times a mean-spirited man, but it never appeared more than now. For after a faint endeavour to raise the country, he gave it over, and concealed himself in a private house; but he was betrayed by him to whom he had trusted himself, into the hands of the Earl of Huntington, and so was brought to the Tower.

The Londoners revolt.

Wiat's party increasing, they turned towards London. As they came to Deptford, Sir Edward Hastings, and

PART II.

1554.

Sir Thomas Cornwallis, came to them, in the Queen's name, to ask what would content them? Wiat desired, that he might have the command of the Tower; that the Queen might stay under his guard; and that the council might be changed. Upon these extravagant propositions there passed high words, and the privy-counsellors returned to the Queen. After this she went into Guildhall, and there gave an account of her message to Wiat, and his answer. And for her marriage, she said, she did nothing in it but by advice of her council, and spoke very tenderly of the love she bore to her people, and to that city. On the 31st, Wiat was become four thousand strong, and came near Southwark. On the 2d of February he fell into Southwark. Some of his company had a mind to have broken into Winchester-house, and robbed it; but he threatened to hang any that should do it. He was put in hope, that upon his coming to Southwark, London would have declared for him; but in that he was deceived. The bridge was fortified, so that he found it was not possible to force it. Here he held a council of war with his officers; some were for turning back into Kent, to disperse a body of men that the Lord Abergaveny had gathered together; but he said, that was a small game. The strength of their party was in London, and therefore it was necessary for him to be there as soon as he could; for though they could not open the bridge to him, yet he was assured, if he were on the other side many would come out to him. Some were for crossing over to Essex, where they heard the people were well-affected to them; but they had not boats enough, so he marched to get over at Kingston-bridge.

Wiat's demands.

He came to Southwark.

He crossed the Thames at Kingston;

On the 4th they came to Kingston, where the Queen had ordered the bridge to be cut; but his men repairing it, he crossed the river that night; and though he lost much time, by the mending of one of his carriages that broke by the way, he was at Hyde-Park by nine of the clock next morning, it being Ash-Wednesday.

But is defeated,

The Earl of Pembroke had gathered a good body of men to have fallen on him, for his men were now in great disorder; but they looked on, to let him cast him-

self into their hands. He did not march by Holborn, as some advised, but came down to Charing-Cross. There the Lord Clinton fell in with several bodies of his men, and dispersed them so, that he had not five hundred left about him; but with those that remained, he passed through the Strand, and Fleet-Street, to Ludgate, where he stopped, in hopes to have found the gates opened to him. That hope failing, he returned back; and being now out of all heart, was taken at Temple-Bar by a herald. All this time the Queen shewed great courage; she would not stir out of Whitehall, nor go by the water to the Tower, as some advised her, but went with her women and priests to her devotions.

And taken.

This was a rebellion both raised and dispersed in as strange a manner as could have been imagined. Wiat was a popular and stout man, but had not a head for such an undertaking, otherwise the government was so feeble, that it had not been a difficult thing to have driven the Queen to great straits. It was not at all raised upon pretence of religion, which, according to the printed account set out by the Queen's order, was not so much as once named. And yet some of our own writers say, that Poinet, the late bishop of Winchester, was in it. *But this is certainly false, for so many prisoners being taken, it is not to be imagined but this would have been found out, and published, to make that religion more odious; and we cannot think but Gardiner would have taken care that he should have been attainted in the following parliament.

Poinet was not in rebellion.

Christophorson soon after wrote a book against rebellion, in which he studies to fasten this rising on the preachers of the new religion, as he calls it, and gives some presumptions, that amount to no more but little flourishes of his wit, but never names this, which had been a decisive proof. So that it is but a groundless fiction, made by those who have either been the authors, or at least have laid down the principles, of all the rebellions in the Christian world, and yet would cast that

* Poinet wrote a book to justify resisting the Queen.

PART II.

1554.

blame on others, and exempt themselves from it; as if they were the surest friends of princes, while they design to enslave them to a foreign power, and will neither allow them to reign, nor to live, but at the mercy of the head of that principality, to which all other powers must bend or break, if they meet with an age that is so credulous and superstitious, as to receive their dictates.

This raw and soon-broken rebellion was as lucky to Gardiner, and those who set on the marriage, as if they had projected it; for now the people were much disheartened, and their own designs as much fortified: since, as some fevers are critical, and cast out those latent distempers, which no medicines could effectually purge away, and yet if they were not removed, must in the end corrupt the whole mass of blood; so in a weak government, to which the people are ill-affected, ill-digested rebellions raise the prince higher, and add as much spirit to his friends, as they take from the faction against him, and give a handle to do some things, for which otherwise it were not easy, either to find colours or instruments.

The Lady Jane and her husband executed.

One effect of this was, the proceeding severely against the Lady Jane, and her husband the Lord Guilford, who both suffered on the 12th of February. The Lady Jane was not much disordered at it, for she knew, upon the first jealousy, she must be the sacrifice; and therefore had now lived six months in the continual meditations of death. Fecknam, afterwards abbot of Westminster, was sent to her by the Queen, three days before, to prepare her to die. He had a long conversation with her, but she answered him with that calmness of mind, and clearness of reason, that it was an astonishing thing to hear so young a person, of her sex and quality, look on death, so near her, with so little disorder, and talk so sensibly, both of faith and holiness, of the sacrament, the Scriptures, and the authority of the church. Fecknam left her, seeing he could work nothing on her: but procured, as is said, the continuance of her life three days longer, and waited on her on the scaffold. She wrote to her father to moderate his grief for her death (which must needs have been great, since his folly had occasioned it.) "She expressed her sense of her sin in

Her preparation for death.

assuming the royal dignity, though he knew how unwillingly she was drawn to it; and that, in her royal estate, her enforced honour had never defiled her innocent heart. She rejoiced at her approaching end, since nothing could be to her more welcome, than to be delivered from that valley of misery, into that heavenly throne, to which she was to be advanced, where she prayed that they might meet at last."

There was one Harding * that had been her father's chaplain, and that was a zealous preacher in King Edward's days; before whose death he had animated the people much to prepare for persecution, and never to depart from the truth of the gospel, but he had now fallen away himself. To him she wrote a letter full of severe expostulations and threatenings for his apostacy, but it had no effect on him. It is of an extraordinary strain, full of life in the thoughts, and of zeal, if there is not too much, in the expressions. The night before her execution, she sent her Greek Testament, which she had always used, to her sister, with a letter; in which, in most pathetic expressions, she sets out the value that she had of it, and recommended the study and practice of it earnestly to her. She had also composed a very devout prayer for her retirements; and thus had she spent the last moments of her life. She expressed great tenderness, when she saw her husband led out first; but soon overcame it, when she considered how closely she was to follow him. He had desired to take leave of her before he died, but she declined it, since it would be rather an increase of grief, than any addition of comfort to them. She said, she hoped they would shortly meet, and be united in a happier state; and with a settled countenance, she saw them bring back the beheaded body to the chapel, where it was to be buried. When she was brought to the scaffold, which was raised for her within the Tower, to prevent the compassion which her dying more publicly might have raised, she confessed she had sinned in taking the Queen's honour, when it was given her: she acknowledged the act was

* Thomas Harding, afterwards antagonist to Bishop Jewel.

PART II.

1554.

unlawful, as was also her consenting to it: but, she said, it was neither procured nor desired by her. She declared, that she died a true Christian, and hoped to be saved only by the mercy of God in the blood of Christ. She acknowledged that she had too much neglected the word of God, and had loved herself and the world too much, for which that punishment had come justly to her from God: but she blessed him that had made it a means to lead her to repentance. Then, having desired the people's prayers, she kneeled down, and repeated the fifty-first Psalm: then she undressed herself, and stretched out her head on the block, and cried out, "Lord, into thy hands I commend my spirit;" and so her head was cut off.

All people lamented her sad and untimely end, which was not easily consented to, even by the Queen herself. Her death had a most violent operation on Judge Morgan, that had pronounced the sentence: soon after he fell mad, and in all his ravings still called to take away the Lady Jane from him. Indeed the blame of her death was generally cast on her father, rather than on the Queen, since the rivalry of a crown is a point of such niceness, that even those who bemoaned her death most could not but excuse the Queen, who seemed to be driven to it, rather from considerations of state, than any resentment of her own. On the 17th of February was the Duke of Suffolk tried by his peers, and condemned: he suffered on the 23d. He would have died more pitied for his weakness, if his practices had not brought his daughter to her end. Next, Wiat was brought to his trial, where in most abject words he begged his life, and offered to promote the Queen's marriage, if they would spare him; but for all that he was beheaded. Bret was hanged in chains at Rochester. In all, fifty-eight were executed in several places, whose attainders were confirmed by an act of the following parliament; six hundred of the rabble were appointed to come before the Queen with halters about their necks, and to beg their lives, which she granted them: and so was this storm dissipated. Only the effusion of blood after it was thought too liberal; and this excess of punishment was generally cast on

Her father's execution.

Gardiner, and made him become very hateful to the nation; which has been always much moved at a repetition of such sad spectacles.

The Lady Elizabeth unjustly suspected for plotting.

The Earl of Devonshire and the Lady Elizabeth came to be suspected of the plot, as if the rising in the west had been set on by the Earl, with design, if it had succeeded, to have married the Lady Elizabeth, and put her in the Queen's room. Wiat did at his death clear them of any occasion to his confederacies. Yet the Queen, who was much alienated from her sister upon old scores, was not unwilling to find a pretence for using her ill; so she was made a prisoner. And the Earl of Devonshire had, upon the account formerly mentioned, offended the Queen, who thought her kindness ill requited, when she saw he neglected her, and preferred her sister: so he was again put into prison. Sir Nicholas Throgmorton was also charged with that same guilt, and brought to his trial, which lasted ten hours; but was acquitted by the jury: upon which they were cast into prison, and severely fined, some in 2000*l.* and some in a thousand marks. This was fatal to his brother Sir John, who was cast by the jury, upon the same evidence that his brother had been acquitted; but he protested his innocence to the last. Sir John Cheek had got beyond sea, finding he was also suspected and sought after; and both Sir Peter Carew and he, hoping that Philip would be glad, at his first admission to the crown of England, to shew acts of favour, went into Flanders; where, upon assurances given of pardon and mercy, they rendered themselves.* But, upon their coming into England, they were both put into the Tower. Carew made his escape, and was afterwards employed by Queen Elizabeth in her affairs in Ireland. Cheek was at this time discharged, but upon some new offence he was again taken in Flanders, in May 1556, and was prevailed upon to renounce his religion, and then he was set at liberty; but was so sadly affected at the unworthiness of that action, that it was believed to have cast him into a lan-

Many severe proceedings.

* They did not render themselves, but were seized on their journey, bound and thrown into a cart, and sent prisoners to England.

PART II.

guishing, of which he soon after died. There was a base imposture set up at this time, of one that seemed to speak from a wall with a strange sort of voice. Many seditious things were uttered by that voice, which was judged of variously. Some called it *the spirit of the wall.* Some said it was an angel that spake; and many marvellous things were reported of it: but the matter being narrowly inquired into, it was found to be one Elizabeth Crofts, a girl, who, from a private hole in the wall, with the help of a whistle, had uttered those words. She was made to do penance openly at Paul's for it: but, by the account then printed of it, I do not find any complices were found,* except one Drake, to whom no particular character is added. So it seems it was a trick laid betwixt those two; for what purpose I cannot find. Sure enough, in those times, it was not laid to the charge of the preachers of the Reformation; which I the rather take notice of, because of the malignity of one of our historians, who has laid this to the charge of the Zuinglian gospellers, though all the proof he offers for casting it on them, is in these words, "For I cannot consider this but as a plot of theirs:" and sets it up in opposition to the notorious imposture of the Maid of Kent, mentioned in the former volume, and says, "Let not the papists be more charged with that, since these were now as faulty."

1554. The imposture of the spirit in the wall.

The nation being now settled, the Queen did next give instructions to the bishops to proceed to visit the clergy, according to some articles which she sent them, which will be found in the Collection. In those, after a long and invidious preamble of the disorders that had been in the time of King Edward, she commanded them to execute all such ecclesiastical laws as had been in force in her father's reign: that the bishops should in their courts proceed no more in the Queen's name: that the oath of supremacy should be no more exacted of any of the clergy: that none suspected of heresy should be admitted to orders: that they should endeavour to repress

The instructions to the bishops. Collect. Numb. 10.

* Seven persons were discovered to be complices: the words spoken from the wall were against the Queen, the Prince of Spain, the mass, and confession.

heresy, and punish heretics: that they should suppress all naughty books, and ballads: that they should remove all married clergymen, and separate them from their wives; but for those that renounced their wives, they might put them into some other cure, or reserve a pension out of their benefice for them: that no religious man who had professed chastity, should be suffered to live with his wife: that care should be taken of vacant churches; that, till they were provided, the people should go to the neighbouring churches: that all the ceremonies, holy-days, and fasts, used in King Henry's time, should be again observed: that those who were ordained by the new book in King Edward's time, not being ordained in very deed, the bishop, if they were otherwise sufficient, should supply what was wanting before, and so admit them to minister: that the bishops should set forth an uniform doctrine of homilies; and compel the people to come to church, and hear Divine service: that they should carefully look to all schoolmasters and teachers of children: and that the bishops should take care to set forth the premises, with all kind of virtue, godly living, and good example; and endeavour to keep down all sort of vice.

Proceedings against the bishops that adhered to the Reformation.

These were signed on the 4th of March, and printed, and sent over the kingdom. But, to make the married bishops examples of the severity of their proceedings, the Queen gave a special commission to Gardiner, Tonstal, Bonner, Parfew, bishop of St. Asaph, Day, and Kitchin of Landaff, making mention, "that, with great grief of heart, she had heard, that the Archbishop of York, the Bishops of St. David's, Chester, and Bristol, had broken their vows, and defiled their function, by contracting marriage; therefore those, or any three of them, are empowered to call them before them, and if the premises be found to be true, to deprive, and turn them out of their bishopricks." This I have put into the Collection, with another commission to the same persons, to call the Bishops of Lincoln, Gloucester, and Hereford, before them; in whose patents it was provided, that they should hold their bishopricks so long as they behaved themselves well; and since they, by

Collect. Numb. 11, 12.

PART II.

1554.

preaching erroneous doctrine, and by inordinate life and conversation, as she credibly understood, had carried themselves contrary to the laws of God, and the practice of the universal church, these, or any two of them, should proceed against them, either according to ecclesiastical canons, or the laws of the land, and declare their bishopricks void, as they were indeed already void. Thus were seven bishops all at a dash turned out. It was much censured, that, there having been laws made allowing marriage to the clergy, the Queen should, by her own authority, upon the repealing these laws, turn out bishops for things that had been so well warranted by law; for the repeal was only an annulling of the law for the future, but did not void it from the beginning; so that, however it might have justified the proceedings against them for the future, if they had lived with their wives; yet it could not warrant the punishing them for what was past: and even the severest popes, or their legates, who had pressed the celibate most, had always, before they proceeded to deprive any priests for marriage, left it to their choice, whether they would quit their wives or their benefices; but had never summarily turned them out for being married. And for the other bishops, it was an unheard-of way of procedure, for the Queen, before any process was made, to empower delegates to declare their sees void, as they were indeed already void. This was to give sentence before hearing. And all this was done by virtue of the Queen's supremacy; for, though she thought that a sinful and schismatical power, yet she was easily persuaded to use it against the reformed clergy, and to turn them out of their benefices upon such unjust and illegal pretences. So that now, the proceedings against Gardiner and Bonner, in which were the greatest stretches made that had been in the last reign, were far outdone by those new delegates. For the Archbishop of York, though he was now turned out, yet he was still kept prisoner; till King Philip, among the acts of grace he did at his coming over, procured his liberty. But his see was not filled till February next; for then Heath had his *congé d'élire*. On or before the 18th of March this year, were those other

1554.

sees declared vacant. For that day did the *congé d'élire* go out to the Deans and Chapters of St. David's, Lincoln, Hereford, Chester, Gloucester, and Bristol; for Morgan, White, Parfew, Coates, Brookes, and Holyman. Goodrick of Ely died this year. He seems to have complied with the time, as he had done often before; for he was not at all cast into any trouble, which it cannot be imagined he could have escaped, since he had put the great seal to the patents for the Lady Jane, if he had not redeemed it by a ready consenting to the changes that were to be made. He was a busy secular spirited man, and had given himself up wholly to factions and intrigues of state: so that, though his opinion had always leaned to the Reformation, it is no wonder if a man so tempered would prefer the keeping of his bishoprick before the discharge of his conscience. Thirleby of Norwich was translated to Ely, and Hopton was made Bishop of Norwich:* but Scory, that had been bishop of Chichester, though, upon Day's being restored, he was turned out of his bishoprick, did comply merely: he came before Bonner, and renounced his wife, and did penance for it, and had his absolution under his seal, the 14th of July this year; which is in the Collection. But it seems this was out of fear, for he soon after fled out of England, and lived beyond sea until Queen Elizabeth's days, and then he came over: but it was judged indecent to restore him to his former see, where it is likely this scandal he had given was known; and so he was made bishop of Hereford. The Bishop of Bath and Wells, Barlow, was also made to resign, as appears by the *congé d'élire* for Bourn to succeed him, dated the 19th of March. Therein it is said, that the see was vacant by the resignation of the former bishop; though, in the election that was made on the 28th of March, it is said, the see was vacant by the removal or deprivation of their former bishop. But I incline to believe it truer, that he did resign; since he is not mentioned in the commissions formerly spoken of. But that was not all; for at this time a book was

Numb. 13.

* Hopton, by the Regist. of Cant. was consecrated the 28th of October; Anthony Harmer, p. 134. says it was the 25th of October.

PART II.

1554.

set out in his name, whether written by him, or forged and laid on his name, I cannot judge, in which he retracts his former errors, and speaks of Luther and Œcolampadius, and many others, with whom he says he had familiarly conversed, with great bitterness. He also accuses the gospellers in England of gluttony, hypocrisy, pride, and ill nature: and indeed it is one of the most virulent invectives against the Reformation that was written at that time. But it is not likely, if he had turned so heartily as the strain of that book runs, that he would have been quite thrown out; so I rather look on it as a forgery cast on his name, to disgrace the Reformation. He fled beyond sea, where he lived till the beginning of Queen Elizabeth's reign; and then it seems there was some offence taken at his former behaviour, for he was not restored to Bath and Wells, but put into Chichester, that was a much meaner bishoprick.* Thus I have given a clear account, and free of all partiality or reservation, of the changes made in the most of the sees in England. The two archbishops, Cranmer and Holgate; the bishops, Ridley, Poinet, Scory, Coverdale, Taylor, Harley,† Bird, Bush, Hooper, Ferrar, and Barlow, were all removed; Rochester was void, and Griffins was put into it this April. Goodrick dying now, Thirleby succeeded him; and Sampson of Coventry and Litchfield dying soon after, Bayn succeeded him. So here were sixteen new bishops brought in, which made no small change in the church.

The mass every where set up.

When this was done, the bishops went about the executing of the Queen's injunctions. The new service was every where cast out, and the old ceremonies and service were again set up. In this business, none was so hot as Bonner; for the act that repealed King Edward's laws, being agreed to by the Commons, to whom the Lords had sent it, he, without staying for the royal assent, did that very night set up the old worship at Paul's,

* Wells had been much impoverished by the alienations in Barlow's time; the regret whereof might probably make him less desirous of returning to it. Afterward its profits were raised by the lead mines, about Bishop Stillingfleet's time.

† Bishop Harley is said to have been deprived, because married, by Fox and Godwin, though no notice be taken of it in the order.

on St. Katharine's day; and it being the custom, that on some holy-days, the quire went up to the steeple to sing the anthems, that fell to be on that night; which was an antic way of beginning a form of worship, to which the people had been long disused: and the next day, being St. Andrew's, he did officiate himself, and had a solemn procession.

The most eminent preachers in London were either put in prison, or under confinement; and as all their mouths had been stopped, by the prohibiting of sermons, unless a licence were obtained, so they were now to be fallen on for their marriages. Parker estimates it, that there were now about sixteen thousand clergymen in England; and of these, twelve thousand were turned out upon this account: some, he says, were deprived without conviction, upon common fame; some were never cited to appear, and yet turned out: many that were in prison were cited, and turned out for not appearing, though it was not in their power: some were induced to submit, and quit their wives for their livings: they were all summarily deprived. Nor was this all; but, after they were deprived, they were also forced to leave their wives; which piece of severity was grounded on the vow, that (as was pretended) they had made: though the falsehood of this charge was formerly demonstrated.

Books against the marriage of the clergy.

To justify this severity of procedure, many were set to write against the marriage of the clergy. Smith, of whom I made mention in the former book, that had then so humbly recanted and submitted, did now appear very boldly, and reprinted his book, with many additions. But the most studied work was set out by Martin, a doctor of the laws. It was certainly, for most part, Gardiner's work; and I have seen the proof sheets of a great part of it dashed and altered in many places by Gardiner's hand. This Martin had made his court to Cranmer in former times. He had studied the law at Bourges, where Francis Balduin, one of the celebrated lawyers of that time, had publicly noted him for his lewdness, as being a corrupter of all the university, which Balduin certified in a letter to one in England, that took care to print it.

PART II.

1554.

It was also printed, that Bonner had many bastards: and himself was believed to be the bastard of one Savage, a priest in Leicestershire, that had been bastard to Sir John Savage, of Cheshire. Which priest, by Elizabeth Frodshum, the wife of one Edmund Bonner, had this Edmund, now bishop of London; and it seems his mother did not soon give over those her lewd courses, for Wymsly, archdeacon of London, was another of her bastards. That kennel of the uncleanness of the priests and religious houses was again, on this occasion, raked and exposed with too much indecency: for the married priests, being openly accused, for the impurity and sensuality of their lives, thought it was a just piece of self-defence to turn these imputations back on those who pretended to chastity, and yet led most irregular lives, under that appearance of greater strictness.

A new parliament.

This was the state in which things were, when the new parliament met on the 2d of April. Gardiner had beforehand prepared the Commons, by giving the most considerable of them pensions: some had 200, and some 100*l.* a year, for giving their voices to the marriage. The first act that passed, seemed of an odd nature, and has a great secret under it. The Speaker of the House of Commons brought in a bill, declaring, that whereas the Queen had of right succeeded to the crown; but, because all the laws of England had been made by kings, and declared the prerogatives to be in the king's person; from thence some might pretend that the Queen had no right to them; it was therefore declared to have been the law, that these prerogatives did belong to the crown, whether it were in the hands of male or female: and whatsoever the law did limit and appoint for the king, was of right also due to the Queen, who is declared to have as much authority as any other her progenitors.

The regal power asserted to be in a queen, as well as a king.

The secret reasons for that act.

Many in the House of Commons wondered what was the intention of such a law; and as people were at this time full of jealousy, one Skinner, a member of the House, (who in Queen Elizabeth's time took orders, and was made dean of Duresme,) said, he could not imagine why such a frivolous law was desired, since the thing

was without dispute: and, that that which was pretended of satisfying the people, was too slight: he was afraid there was a trick in these words, that the Queen had as great authority as any of her progenitors; on which perhaps it might be afterwards said, she had the same power that William the Conqueror exercised, in seizing the lands of the English, and giving them to strangers; which also Edward the First did upon the conquest of Wales. He did not know what relation this might have to the intended marriage, therefore he warned the House to look well to it; so a committee being appointed to correct it, such words were added, as brought the Queen's prerogative under the same limitations, as well as it exalted it to the height of her progenitors. But one Fleetwood, afterwards recorder of London, told the Earl of Leicester the secret of this, in Queen Elizabeth's time, who wrote down his discourse, and from thence I have copied it. There was one that had been Cromwell's servant, and much employed by him in the suppression of monasteries: he was a man of great notions, but very busy and factious; so, having been a great stickler for the Lady Jane, he was put in the Fleet, upon the Queen's first coming to the crown, yet within a month he was discharged; but upon the last rising was again put up, and indicted of high treason: he had great friends, and made application to one of the Emperor's ambassadors, that was then the Chancellor of the Dutchy of Milan, and by his means he obtained his liberty. Being brought to him, he shewed him a new platform of government, which he had contrived for the Queen. She was to declare herself a conqueror; or that she, having succeeded to the crown by common law, was not at all to be limited by the statute laws, since those were only restrictions upon the kings, but not on the queens of England; and that therefore all those limitations of the prerogative were only binding in the persons of kings, but she was free from them: upon this he shewed how she might establish religion, set up the monasteries, raise her friends, and ruin her enemies, and rule according to her pleasure. The Ambassador carried this to the Queen, and seemed much pleased with

PART II.

it, but desired her to read it carefully, and keep it as a great secret.

1554.

As she read it, she disliked it, and judged it contrary to the oath she had made at her coronation: and thereupon sent for Gardiner, and charged him, as he would answer before the judgment-seat of God, at the general day of the holy doom, that he would consider the book carefully, and bring her his opinion of it next day, which fell to be Maundy-Thursday. So, as the Queen came from her Maundy, he waited on her into her closet, and said these words: "My good and most gracious lady, I intend not to pray your highness, with any humble petitions, to name the devisers of this new-invented platform: but here I say, that it is pity that so noble and virtuous a lady, should be endangered with the pernicious devices of such lewd and subtle sycophants; for the book is naught, and most horrible to be thought on." Upon this the Queen thanked him, and threw the book into the fire; and charged the Ambassador that neither he, nor any of his company, should receive more such projects from any of her people. This made Gardiner apprehend, that if the Spaniards began so soon to put such notions into the Queen's head, they might afterwards, when she was in their hands, make somewhat of them, and therefore, to prevent such designs for the future, he drew the act; in which, though he seemed to do it as an advantage to the Queen, for the putting of her title beyond dispute, yet he really intended nothing by it, but that she should be restrained by all those laws, that the former kings of England had consented to: and because King Henry the Seventh, though his best right to the crown flowed from his marriage to the heir of the house of York, had yet taken the government wholly into his own hands; he, fearing lest the Spaniards should pretend to such a power by the authority which marriage gives the husband over the wife, got the articles of the marriage to be ratified in parliament; by which they not only confirmed those agreed on, but made a more full explanation of that part of them, which declared the entire government of the kingdom to belong only to the Queen.

1554.

To this the Spaniards gave too great an occasion, by publishing King Philip's pedigree, whom they derived from John of Gaunt. They said, this was only done to conciliate the favour of the nation, by representing him not a stranger, but a native: but this gave great offence; concerning which I have seen a little book that was then printed: it was there said, that King Henry the Seventh came in, pretending only to marry the heir of the house of York: but he was no sooner on the throne, than he declared his own title, and kept it his whole life. So it was said, the Spaniard would call himself heir of the house of Lancaster, and upon that pretension, would easily wrest the power out of the Queen's hands, who seemed to mind nothing but her devotions. This made Gardiner look the better to the securing of the liberties of the crown and nation; so that it must be acknowledged, that the preserving of England out of the hands of the Spaniards at that time, seems to be almost wholly owing to him.

Great jealousies of the Spanish power.

In this parliament, the Marquis of Northampton was restored in blood. And the act for restoring the bishoprick of Duresme, not having gone through the last parliament when it was dissolved, was now brought in again. The town of Newcastle opposed it much, when it came down to the Commons. But the Bishop of Duresme came to them on the 18th of April, and gave them a long account of all his troubles from the Duke of Northumberland, and desired that they would dispatch his bill. There were many provisos put into it, for some that were concerned in Gateside; but it was carried in the House, that, instead of these provisos, they should send a desire to him, recommending those persons to his favour: so, upon a division, there were 120 against it, and 201 for it. After this, came the bill confirming the attainders of the Duke of Suffolk, and fifty-eight more, who were attainted for the late rebellion. The Lords put in a proviso, excepting entailed lands out of their forfeitures; but the Commons rejected the proviso, and passed the bill. Then did the Commons send up a bill for reviving the statutes made against Lollardy; which, being read twice by the Lords, was laid aside. The

The bishoprick of Duresme restored.

PART II.

1554.

Commons intended next to have revived* the statute of the six Articles; but it did not agree with the design at court, to take any notice of King Henry's acts; so this was let fall. Then they brought in another bill to extirpate erroneous opinions and books; but that was at the third reading laid aside. After that they passed a particular bill against Lollardy in some points, as the eating of flesh in Lent; but that also, being sent up to the Lords, was at the third reading laid aside, by the major part of the House; so forward were the Commons to please the Queen, or such operation had the Spanish gold on them, that they contrived four bills in one session, for the prosecution of those they called heretics. But, to give some content on the other hand, they passed a bill, that neither the Bishop of Rome, nor any other, should have any power to convene, or trouble any, for possessing abbey-lands: this was sent up to the Lords, but laid aside at that time, assurance being given, that the owners of those lands should be fully secured. The reason of laying it aside was, that since by law the Bishop of Rome had no authority at all in England, it was needless to pass an act against his power in that particular, for that seemed to assert his power in other things: and since they were resolved to reconcile the nation to him, it was said, that it would be indecent to pass an act that should call him only Bishop of Rome, which was the compellation given him during the schism; and it was preposterous to begin with a limitation of his power, before they had acknowledged his authority. So this was laid aside, and the parliament ended on the 25th of May.

But the matters of the convocation are next to be related. Those of the Reformation complained every where, that the disputes of the last convocation had not been fairly carried; that the most eminent men of their persuasion were detained in prison, and not admitted to it; that only a few of them, that had a right to be in the House, were admitted to speak, and that these were much interrupted. So that it was now resolved to ad-

* The bill was to *avoid*, and not to *revive*, the statute of the six Articles.

journ the convocation for some time, and to send the Prolocutor with some of their number to Oxford, that the disputations might be, in the presence of that whole university. And since Cranmer and Ridley were esteemed the most learned men of that persuasion, they were, by a warrant from the Queen, removed from the Tower of London, to the prisons at Oxford. And though Latimer was never accounted very learned, and was then about eighty years of age, yet he having been a celebrated preacher, who had done the Reformation no less service by his labours in the pulpit, than others had done by their abler pens, he was also sent thither to bear his share in the debates.

Some sent to Oxford to dispute with reformed bishops.

Those who were sent from the convocation came to Oxford on the 13th of April, being Friday. They sent for those bishops on Saturday, and assigned them Monday, Tuesday, and Wednesday, every one of them his day, for the defending of their doctrine: but ordered them to be kept apart; and that all books and notes should be taken from them. Three questions were to be disputed.

1. Whether the natural body of Christ was really in the sacrament?

2. Whether any other substance did remain, but the body and blood of Christ?

3. Whether in the mass there was a propitiatory sacrifice for the sins of the dead and living?

When Cranmer was first brought before them, the Prolocutor made an exhortation to him to return to the unity of the church. To which he answered with such gravity and modesty, that many were observed to weep: he said, he was as much for unity as any, but it must be an unity in Christ, and according to the truth. The articles being shewed him, he asked, whether by the body of Christ they meant an organical body? They answering, it was the body that was born of the Virgin; then, he said, he would maintain the negative of these questions.

Cranmer disputes.

On the 16th, when the dispute with Cranmer was to begin, Weston, that was prolocutor, made a stumble in the beginning of his speech; for he said, "Ye are this

PART II.

1554.

day assembled to confound the detestable heresy of the verity of the body of Christ in the sacrament." This mistake set the whole assembly a laughing: but he recovered himself, and went on: he said, it was not lawful to call these things in doubt, since Christ had so expressly affirmed them, that to doubt of them was to deny the truth and power of God. Then Chedsey urged Cranmer with the words, "This is my body:" to which he answered, that the sacrament was effectually Christ's body, as broken on the cross; that is, his passion effectually applied. For the explanation of this, he offered a large paper containing his opinion: of which I need say nothing, since it is a short abstract of what he wrote on that head formerly; and of that a full account was given in the former book. There followed a long debate about these words. Oglethorp, Weston, and others, urged him much, that Christ, making his testament, must be supposed to speak truth, and plain truth; and they ran out largely on that. Cranmer answered, that figurative speeches are true, and when the figures are clearly understood, they are then plain likewise. Many of Chrysostom's high expressions about the sacrament were also cited; which Cranmer said were to be understood of the spiritual presence received by faith. Upon this much time was spent, the Prolocutor carrying himself very indecently towards him, calling him an unlearned, unskilful, and impudent man: there were also many in the assembly that often hissed him down, so that he could not be heard at all; which he seemed to take no notice of, but went on as often as the noise ceased. Then they cited Tertullian's words, "The flesh is fed by the body and blood of Christ, that so the soul may be nourished by God." But he turned this against them, and said, hereby it was plain, the body as well as the soul received food in the sacrament; therefore the substance of bread and wine must remain, since the body could not be fed by that spiritual presence of the body of Christ. Tresham put this argument to him: Christ said, as he lived by the Father, so they that eat his flesh should live by him; but he is by his substance united to his Father, therefore Christians must be united to his

substance. To this Cranmer answered, that the similitude did not import an equality, but a likeness of some sort: Christ is essentially united to his Father, but believers are united to him by grace; and that in baptism as well as in the eucharist. Then they talked long of some words of Hilary's, Ambrose's, and Justin's. Then they charged him, as having mistranslated some of the passages of the fathers in his book; from which he vindicated himself, saying, that he had all his life, in all manner of things, hated falsehood.

After the dispute had lasted from the morning till two of the clock, it was broke up; and there was no small triumph, as if Cranmer had been confounded in the opinion of all the hearers, which they had expressed by their laughter and hissing. There were notaries that took every thing that was said; from whose books Fox did afterwards print the account of it that is in his great volume.

And Ridley.

The next day Ridley was brought out; and Smith, who was spoken of in the former book, was now very zealous to redeem the prejudice which that compliance was like to be to him in his preferment: so he undertook to dispute this day. Ridley began with a protestation, declaring, that, whereas he had been formerly of another mind from what he was then to maintain, he had changed upon no worldly consideration, but merely for love of the truth, which he had gathered out of the word of God and the holy fathers; but because it was God's cause he was then to maintain, he protested that he might have leave afterwards to add, or to change, as upon better consideration he should see cause for it. He also desired he might have leave to speak his mind without interruption; which, though it was promised him, yet he was often stopped, as he went on explaining his doctrine. He argued against the corporal presence, as being contrary to the Scriptures that spoke of Christ's leaving the world; as being against the article of his sitting at the right hand of God; and against the nature of the sacrament, which is a remembrance: he shewed, that by it the wicked receive Christ no less than the godly; that it is against nature to swallow down a

PART II.

1554.

living man; that this doctrine introduced many extraordinary miracles, without any necessity; and must have given advantage to the heretics, who denied Christ had a real body, or a true human nature; and that it was contrary to the doctrine of the fathers: he acknowledged that it was truly the communion of his body, that is, of Christ's death, and of the heavenly life given by him: and did, in a strong nervous discourse as any I ever saw on that subject, gather together the chief arguments for his opinion.

Smith argued, that, notwithstanding Christ's being at the right hand of God, he was seen on earth: Ridley said, he did not deny but he might come and appear on earth, but that was for a moment, to convince some, and comfort others, as St. Paul and St. Stephen; though, he said, it might be they saw him in heaven; but he could not be, at the same time, both in heaven and on earth. They returned oft to Chrysostom's words, and pressed him with some of Bernard's: but as he answered the sayings of the former, that they were rhetorical and figurative; so he excepted against the judgment of the latter, as living in an age when their opinion was generally received. The dispute held till Weston grew weary, and stopped all; saying, "You see the obstinate, vain-glorious, crafty, and inconstant mind of this man; but you see also the force of truth cannot be shaken; therefore cry out with me, Truth has the victory." This being echoed again by the audience, they went away with great triumph; and now they reckoned the hardest part of their work was over, since Latimer only remained.

And Latimer.

Latimer, being next day brought forth, told them, he had not used Latin much these twenty years, and was not able to dispute; but he would declare his faith, and then they might do as they pleased. He declared, that he thought the presence of Christ in the sacrament to be only spiritual, since it is that by which we obtain eternal life, which flows only from Christ's abiding in us by faith; therefore it is not a bare, naked sign: but, for the corporal presence, he looked on it as the root of all the other errors in their church. He enlarged much against the sacrifice of the mass; and lamented that

they had changed the communion into a private mass; that they had taken the cup away from the people; and, instead of service in a known tongue, were bringing the nation to a worship that they did not understand. He perceived they laughed at him; but he told them, they were to consider his great age, and to think what they might be when they came to it. They pressed him much to answer their arguments: he said, his memory was gone, but his faith was grounded on the word of God; he was fully convinced by the book which Dr. Cranmer had written on that subject.

Censures passed upon it.

In this whole disputation, as Ridley wrote of it, there was great disorder, perpetual shoutings, tauntings, and reproaches; so that it looked liker a stage than a school of divines: and the noise and confusions, with which he had been much offended when he was in the Sorbonne, were modest, compared to this.

On April 28th they were again brought to St. Mary's; where Weston told them, they were overcome in the disputation; therefore he required them to subscribe with the rest. Cranmer objected against their way of disputing: he said, they would not hear any one argue against their errors, or defend the truth; that oftentimes four or five of them were speaking at once, so that it was impossible for any to hear, or to answer all these: in conclusion, he refused to subscribe. Ridley and Latimer made the same answers. So they were all judged heretics, and the fautors of heresy. Then they were asked, Whether they intended to turn? They answered, That they would not turn: so they were judged obstinate heretics, and declared to be no more members of the church.

Upon which Cranmer answered; "From this your judgment and sentence, I appeal to the just judgment of Almighty God, trusting to be present with him in heaven, for whose presence on the altar I am thus condemned."

Ridley answered; "Although I be not of your company, yet I doubt not but my name is written in another place, whither this sentence will send us sooner than we should by the course of nature have come."

PART II.

1554.

Latimer answered; "I thank God most heartily that he hath prolonged my life to this end, that I may in this case glorify God with this kind of death."

To them Weston answered; "If you go to heaven with this faith, then I will never come thither, as I am thus persuaded."

After this, there was a solemn procession in Oxford, the host being carried by Weston, the prolocutor; who had been (as himself said in this disputation) six years in prison in King Edward's time. This gave him now great repute, though he was known to be a constant drunkard. Ridley wrote to him, desiring to see what the notaries had written, and that he might have leave to add in any part, as had been promised him; but he had no answer. On the 23d of April, the commissioners, sent from the convocation, returned to London. Cranmer sent a petition sealed, by Weston, to be delivered to the council; in which he earnestly begged their favour with the Queen, that he might be pardoned for his treason, since they knew how unwillingly he consented to the patents for excluding her. He also complained of the disorder in the disputes lately had; saying, that he was not heard, nor suffered to propose his arguments; but all was shuffled up in a day, though he had matter on that subject for twenty days' work; that it looked like a design to shut up all things in haste, and make a triumph, and so to condemn them of heresy: he left it to their wisdom to consider, if this was an indifferent way of handling such a matter. Weston carried this petition half way, and then opening it, and finding what it contained, he sent it back, and said, he would deliver no such petition. Cranmer was so kept, that though Ridley and Latimer could send to one another, yet it was not easy for them to send to him, without giving money to their keepers. In one of Ridley's letters to Cranmer, he said, he heard they intended to carry down Rogers, Crome, and Bradford, to Cambridge, and to make such a triumph there as he had lately made of them at Oxford: he trusted, the day of their deliverance out of all their miseries, and of their entrance into perpetual rest, and perpetual joy and felicity, drew nigh:

he prayed God to strengthen them with the mighty Spirit of his grace: he desired Cranmer to pray for him, as he also did for Cranmer. As for the letters which these and the other prisoners wrote in their imprisonment, Fox gathered the originals from all people that had them: and Sir Walter Mildmay, the founder of Emanuel College, procured them from him, and put them into the library of that college, where I saw them: but they are all printed by Fox, so that the reader, who desires to see them, may find them in his Acts and Monuments. Of them all, Ridley wrote with the greatest connexion and force, both in the matter, and in the way of expression.

The prisoners in London set out in writing their reasons against disputing by word of mouth.

This being now over, there was great boasting among all the popish party, as if the champions of the Reformation had been foiled. The prisoners in London hearing they intended to insult over them, as they had done over those at Oxford, set out a paper, to which the late Bishops of Exeter, St. David's, and Gloucester, with Taylor, Philpot, Bradford, Crome, Sanders, Rogers, and Lawrence, set their hands on the 8th of May.

The substance of it was; "That they, being prisoners neither as rebels, traitors, nor transgressors of any law, but merely for their conscience to God and his truth, hearing it was intended to carry them to Cambridge to dispute, declared they would not dispute, but in writing, except it were before the Queen and her council, or before either of the houses of parliament: and that for these reasons.

1. "It was clear, that the determinations of the universities were already made: they were their open enemies, and had already condemned their cause before they had heard it, which was contrary both to the word of God, and the determinations they had made in King Edward's time.

2. "They saw the prelates and clergy were seeking neither to find out the truth, nor to do them good, otherwise they would have heard them, when they might have declared their consciences without hazard; but that they sought only their destruction, and their own glory.

PART II.

1554.

3. "They saw that those who were to be the judges of these disputes, were their inveterate enemies: and, by what passed in the convocation-house last year, and lately at Oxford, they saw how they must expect to be used.

4. "They had been kept long prisoners, some nine or ten months, without books or papers, or convenient places of study.

5. "They knew they should not be heard to speak their minds fully, but should be stopped, as their judges pleased.

6. "They could not have the nomination of their notaries, who would be so chosen, that they would write and publish what their enemies had a mind to. Therefore they would not engage in public disputes, except by writing: but they would give a summary of their faith, for which they would be ready to offer up their lives to the halter, or the fire, as God should appoint.

"They declared, that they believed the Scriptures to be the true word of God, and the judge of all controversies in the matters of religion: and that the church is to be obeyed, as long as she follows this word. That they believed the Apostles' Creed, and those creeds set out by the councils of Nice, Constantinople, Ephesus, and Chalcedon, and by the first and fourth councils of Toledo; and the symbols of Athanasius, Irenæus, Tertullian, and Damasius. That they believed justification by faith; which faith was not only an opinion, but a certain persuasion wrought by the Holy Ghost, which did illuminate the mind, and suppled the heart to submit itself unfeignedly to God. That they acknowledged an inherent righteousness, yet justification, and the pardon of sins, they believed came only by Christ's righteousness imputed to them. They thought the worship of God ought to be in a tongue understood by the people; that Christ only, and not the saints, was to be prayed to; that immediately after death, the souls pass either to the state of the blessed, or of the damned, without any purgatory between; that baptism and the Lord's supper are the sacraments of Christ, which ought to be administered according to his institution: and therefore

they condemned the denying the chalice, transubstantiation, the adoration, or the sacrifice of the mass; and asserted the lawfulness of marriage to every rank of men. These things they declared they were ready to defend, as they often had before offered: and concluded, charging all people to enter into no rebellion against the Queen, but to obey her in all points, except where her commands were contrary to the law of God."

In the end of this month, the Lady Elizabeth was taken out of the Tower, and put into the custody of the Lord Williams; who waited on her to Woodstock, and treated her with great civility, and all the respect due to her quality: but this not being so acceptable to those who governed, she was put under the charge of Sir Henry Benefield, by whom she was more roughly handled.

Prince Philip lands.

On the 20th of July, Prince Philip landed at Southampton. When he set foot to land first, he presently drew his sword, and carried it a good way naked in his hand. Whether this was one of the forms of his country, I know not: but it was interpreted as an omen, that he intended to rule England with the sword: though others said, it shewed, he intended to draw his sword in defence of the nation. The Mayor of Southampton brought him the keys of the town, an expression of duty always paid to our princes; he took them from him, and gave them back without speaking a word, or expressing by any sign that he was pleased with it. His stiffness amazed the English, who use to be treated by their kings with great sweetness on such occasions: and so much gravity in so young a man was not understood, but was looked on as a sign of vast pride and moroseness. The Queen met him at Winchester; where, on the 25th of July, Gardiner married them in the cathedral, the King being then in the 27th, and the Queen in the 38th year of her age. They were presented from the Emperor by his Ambassador, with a resignation of his titular kingdom of Jerusalem, and his more valuable one of Naples, which were pledges of that total resignation that followed not long after.

And is married to the Queen.

So on the 27th of July they were proclaimed by their new titles; "Philip and Mary, King and Queen

PART II.

1554.

of England, France, Naples, Jerusalem, and Ireland; Princes of Spain and Sicily, defenders of the faith; Archdukes of Austria; Dukes of Milan, Burgundy, and Brabant; Counts of Habspurg, Flanders, and Tirol:" Spain having always delighted in a long enumeration of pompous titles.

It was observed, how happy marriages had been to the Austrian family; who, from no extraordinary beginnings, had now, in eighty years' time, been raised by two marriages; first, with the heir of Burgundy and the Netherlands, and then with the heir of Spain, to be the greatest family in Christendom: and the collateral family, by the marriage of the heir of Bohem and Hungary, was now the greatest in the empire. And surely if issue had followed this marriage, the most extraordinary success possible would have seemed to be entailed on them. But there was no great appearance of that: for as the Queen was now far advanced in years, so she was in no good state of health; a long course of discontent had corrupted both the health of her body, and the temper of her mind: nor did the matter alter much by her marriage, except for the worse. The King's wonderful gravity and silence gained nothing upon the English; but his magnificence and bounty were very acceptable. He brought after him a vast mass of wealth; seven-and-twenty chests of bullion, every chest being a yard and some inches long, which were drawn in twenty carts to the Tower; after which came ninety-nine horse, and two carts, loaded with coined gold and silver. This great wealth was perhaps the sum that was formerly mentioned, which was to be distributed among the English; for it is not improbable, that though he empowered his ambassadors and Gardiner to promise great sums to such as should promote his marriage, yet that he would not part with so much money till it was made sure; and therefore he ordered this treasure to be brought after him. (I mention it here, yet it came not into England till October and January following.) He made his entry into London with great state.

He brings a great treasure with him to England.

At his first settling in England, he obtained of the Queen, that many prisoners should be set at liberty;

Act of favour done by him.

among whom the chief were, the Archbishop of York, and ten knights, with many other persons of quality. These, I suppose, had been committed, either for Wiat's rebellion, or the business of the Lady Jane; for I do not believe any were discharged that were imprisoned on the account of religion. As for this Archbishop, though he went along in the Reformation, yet I find nothing that gives any great character of him. I never saw any letter of his, nor do I remember to have seen any honourable mention made of him any where; so that he seems to have been a soft and weak man; and except those little fragments of his opinions in some points about the mass, (which are in the Collection,) I know no remains of his pen. It seems he did at this time comply in matters of religion, for without that it is not probable that either Philip would have moved for him, or that the Queen would have been easily entreated.

He preserves the Lady Elizabeth.

The intercessions that Philip made for the Lady Elizabeth and the Earl of Devonshire did gain him the hearts of the nation more than any thing else that he ever did. Gardiner was much set against them, and studied to bear down the declaration that Wiat had made of their innocency all that he could; but it was made so openly on the scaffold, that it was not possible to suppress it. Before, in his examinations, Wiat had accused them, hoping to have saved himself by so base an action; but he redeemed it all he could at his death. This had broken Gardiner's design, who thought all they did about religion was but half work, unless the Lady Elizabeth were destroyed. For he knew, that though she complied in many things, yet her education had been wholly under the reformed: and, which was more to him, who judged all people by their interest, he reckoned that interest must make her declare against the papacy (since otherwise she was a bastard) if ever she should outlive her sister.

Philip opposed this, at first, upon a generous account, to recommend himself, by obtaining such acts of favour to be done by the Queen. But afterwards, when the hopes of issue failed him by his marriage, he preserved

PART II.

1554.

her, out of interest of state; for if she had been put out of the way, the Queen of Scotland (that was to be married to the Dauphin) was to succeed; which would have made too great an accession to the French crown: and besides, as it afterwards appeared, he was not without hopes of persuading her to marry himself, if her sister should die without issue. For the Earl of Devonshire, he more easily obtained his freedom, though not till some months had passed. That Earl being set at liberty, finding he was to lie under perpetual distrusts, and that he might be, perhaps upon the first disorder, again put into the Tower, to which his stars seemed to condemn him, resolved to go beyond sea; but died within a year after, as some say, of poison.

He was little beloved by the English.

All this I have laid together, (though it fell not out all at once,) that I might give a full account of all the acts of grace that Philip did in England: but for the rest of his behaviour, it was no way acceptable to the people; for as he engaged the nation in all his interests, so that henceforth, during this reign, England had no share in the consultations of Europe, but was blindly led by him, which proved fatal to them in the conclusion, by the ignominious loss of Calais; so his temper and way of deportment seemed most ridiculous, and extravagantly formal, to the English genius, which naturally loves the mean between the excessive jollity and talkativeness of the French, and the sullen steadiness of the Spaniard; rather inclining more to the briskness of the one, than the superciliousness of the other: and indeed his carriage was such here, that the acting him and his Spaniards, was one of the great diversions of Queen Elizabeth's court. The hall of the court was almost continually shut all his time, and none could have access, unless it were first demanded with as much formality as ambassadors use in asking audience: so that most of the nobility left the court, few staying but the officers of the household.

Gardiner magnifies him much in a sermon.

Gardiner had now the government put entirely in his hands; and he, to make his court the better with the new King, preached at St. Paul's the 30th of September; where, after he had inveighed long against the preachers

in King Edward's time, which was the common subject of all their sermons. he run out much in commendation of the King; affirming him to be as wise, sober, gentle, and temperate, as any prince that ever was in England; and if he did not prove so, he was content that all his hearers should esteem him an impudent liar. The state of the court continued in this posture till the next parliament.

But great discontents did now appear every where. The severe executions after the last rising, the marriage with Spain, and the overturning of religion, concurred to alienate the nation from the government. This appeared no where more confidently than in Norfolk, where the people, reflecting on their services, thought they might have the more leave to speak.

There were some malicious rumours spread, that the Queen was with child before the King came over. This was so much resented at court, that the Queen wrote a letter to the justices there, (which is in the Collection,) to inquire into those false reports, and to look to all that spread false news in the country. The Earl of Sussex, upon this, examined a great many, but could make nothing out of it. It flowed from the officiousness of Hopton, the new bishop of Norwich; who thought to express his zeal to the Queen, whose chaplain he had long been, by sending up the tales of the country to the council table; not considering how much it was below the dignity of the government, to look after all vain reports.

Collect. Numb. 14.

This summer the bishops went their visitations, to see every thing executed according to the Queen's injunctions. Bonner went his with the rest. He had ordered his chaplains to draw a book of homilies, with an exposition of the Christian religion. He says, in his preface to it, that he and his chaplains had compiled it; but it is likely he had only the name of it, and that his chaplains composed it. Yet the greatest, and indeed the best part of it, was made to their hands, for it was taken out of the Institution of a Christian Man, set out by King Henry; only varied in those points, in which it differed from what they were now about to set up: so

Bonner's carriage in his visitation.

PART II.

that concerning the Pope's power, since it was not yet established, he says nothing for or against it.

1554. Collect. Numb. 15.

The articles upon which he made his visitation, will be found in the Collection, and by these we may judge of all the other visitations over England. "In the preface, he protests he had not made his articles out of any secret grudge or displeasure to any; but merely for the discharge of his conscience towards God and the world. The articles were; Whether the clergy did so behave themselves in living, teaching, and doing, that, in the judgment of indifferent men, they seemed to seek the honour of God, of the church, and of the King and Queen? Whether they had been married, or were taken for married? and whether they were divorced, and did no more come at their wives? or whether they did defend their marriages? Whether they did reside, keep hospitality, provide a curate in their absence? and whether they did devoutly celebrate the service, and use processions? Whether they were suspected of heresy? Whether they did haunt alehouses and taverns, bowling-alleys, or suspected houses? Whether they favoured, or kept company with any suspected of heresy? Whether any priest lived in the parish that absented himself from church? Whether these kept any private conventicles? Whether any of the clergy was vicious, blasphemed God or his saints, or was guilty of simony? Whether they exhorted the people to peace and obedience? Whether they admitted any to the sacrament that was suspectd of heresy, or was of an ill conversation, an oppressor, or evil doer? Whether they admitted any to preach that were not licensed, or refused such as were? Whether they did officiate in English? Whether they did use the sacraments aright? Whether they visited the sick, and administered the sacraments to them? Whether they did marry any, without asking the banns three Sundays? Whether they observed the fasts and holy-days? Whether they went in their habits and tonsures? Whether those that were ordained schismatically, did officiate without being admitted by the ordinary? Whether they set leases, for many years, of their benefices? Whether they followed mer-

chandise or usury? Whether they carried swords or daggers, in times or places not convenient? Whether they did once every quarter expound to the people in the vulgar tongue, the Apostles' Creed, Ten Commandments, the two commandments of Christ for loving God and our neighbour, the seven works of mercy, seven deadly sins, seven principal virtues, and the seven sacraments?" These were the most considerable heads on which he visited.

No reordination of those ordained in King Edward's time.

One thing is remarkable; that it appears, both by these and the Queen's injunctions, that they did not pretend to reordain those that had been ordained by the new book in King Edward's time, but to reconcile them, and add those things that were wanting; which were, the anointing, and giving the priestly vestments, with other rites of the Roman pontifical. In this point of reordaining such as were ordained in heresy or schism, the church of Rome has not gone by any steady rule: for though they account the Greek church to be guilty both of heresy and schism, they receive their priests without a new ordination. Yet after the time of the contests between Pope Nicolaus and Photius, and much more after the outrageous heats at Rome between Sergius and Formosus, in which the dead bodies of the former popes were raised and dragged about the streets by their successors, they annulled the ordinations, which they pretended were made irregularly.

Afterwards again, upon the great schism between the popes of Rome and Avignon, they did neither annul nor renew the orders that had been given: but now, in England, though they only supplied at this time the defects which they said were in their former ordination, yet afterwards, when they proceeded to burn them that were in orders, they went upon the old maxim, that orders given in schism were not valid; so they did not esteem Hooper nor Ridley bishops, and therefore only degraded them from priesthood, though they had been ordained by their own forms, saving only the oath to the Pope: but for those who were ordained by the new book, they did not at all degrade them, supposing now they had no true orders by it.

PART II.

1554.

Bonner, in his visitation, took great care to see all things were every where done according to the old rules, which was the main thing intended; other points being put in for form. When he came to Hadham, he prevented the Doctor, who did not expect him so soon by two hours, so that there was no ringing of bells, which put him in no small disorder; and that was much increased, when he went into the church, and found neither the sacrament hanging up, nor a rod set up: thereupon he fell a railing, swearing most intemperately, calling the priest a heretic, a knave, with many other such goodly words. The priest said, all these things should be amended speedily; and knowing that a good dinner was the best way to temper Bishop Bonner, he desired him to go and dine at his house: but Bonner took it so ill, that Hadham, which was one of his own churches, was an ill example to those about it, that he lost all patience; and reaching at Dr. Bricket (that was the parson's name) to beat him, he misguided the stroke, which fell on Sir Thomas Josselin's ear with great force. Fecknam, then dean of Paul's in Dr. May's room, studied to appease Josselin, and said to him, that the Bishop's being so long in the Marshalsea, had so disordered him, that in his passion he knew not what he did; but when he came to himself, he would be sorry for what he had done. Josselin answered, he thought, now that he was taken out of the Marshalsea, he should be carried to Bedlam. But Bonner continued in his fury; and though he had proposed to stay at his house there some days, and had ordered provisions to be made, yet he would needs be gone, though it disordered the rest of his visitation; for he came to every place sooner than he intended, or had given notice.

Bonner's rage.

The carvers and makers of statues had now a quick trade for rods and other images, which were to be provided for all places. Bonner had observed, that in most churches the walls were painted with places of Scripture; and in many places there were passages written, that either favoured the marriage of the clergy, or were against the corporal presence, and the sacrifice of the mass, and the multiplicity of the ceremonies of the

church: so he did, at his return, send out episcopal letters, on the 24th of October, to raze all those paintings. Upon this it was generally said, that the Scriptures must be dashed out to make way for the images, since they were so contrary one to another, that they could not decently stand together. There were many ludicrous things every where done in derision of the old forms, and of the images: many poems were printed, with other ridiculous representations of the Latin service, and the pageantry of their worship. But none occasioned more laughter than what fell out at Paul's the Easter before: the custom being to lay the sacrament into the sepulchre, at the even-song on Good-Friday, and to take it out by break of day on Easter morning: at the time of the taking of it out, the quire sung these words, *Surrexit, non est hic*; "He is risen, he is not here:" but then the priest looking for the host, found it was not there indeed, for one had stolen it out: which put them all in no small disorder, but another was presently brought in its stead. Upon this a ballad followed, that their god was stolen and lost, but a new one was made in his room. This raillery was so salt, that it provoked the clergy much. They offered large rewards to discover him that had stolen the host, or had made the ballad, but could not come to the knowledge of it. But they resolved, ere long, to turn that mirth and pleasantness of the heretics, into severe mourning.

The sacrament stolen.

And thus matters went on to the 11th of November, when the third parliament was summoned. In the writ of summons, the title of supreme head of the church was left out, though it was still by law united to the other royal titles: and therefore this was urged, in the beginning of Queen Elizabeth's reign, as a good reason for annulling that parliament, since it was not called by a lawful writ. Now was Cardinal Pole allowed to come into England. The Emperor had this summer brought him to Flanders, where, to make amends for the rudeness of stopping him on his way, he desired him to mediate a peace between France and him; but that had no effect. It soon appeared, that all things were so well prepared by Gardiner's policy, and the Spanish gold,

A new parliament.

PART II.

1554.

that it would be an easy matter to carry every thing in this session. The Lord Paget and the Lord Hastings were sent from the King and Queen to bring the Cardinal over. At the opening of the parliament, it was an unusual sight, to see both King and Queen ride in state, and come into it with two swords of state, and two caps of maintenance carried before them: the swords were carried, one by the Earl of Pembroke, the other by the Earl of Westmoreland; and the caps, by the Earls of Arundel and Shrewsbury. The first bill put into the Lords' House was the repeal of the attainder of Cardinal Pole: it began on the 17th, was sent down to the Commons on the 19th, who read it twice that day, and the third time on the 20th, and sent it up. This bill being to be passed before he could come into England, it was questioned, in the House of Commons, whether the bill could be passed without making a session, which would necessitate a prorogation? It was resolved it might be done; so on the 22d the King and Queen came and passed it. It set forth, that the only reason of his attainder was, because he would not consent to the unlawful separation and divorce between King Henry and his most godly, virtuous, and lawful wife, Queen Catherine: therefore they, considering the true and sincere conscience of the Cardinal in that point, and his other many godly virtues and qualities, did repeal that act.

The attainder of Cardinal Pole repealed.

On the 24th he came to London, but without the solemnities of a legate's entry, because the Pope's authority was not yet set up by law. What Cardinal Pole's instructions were, I do not know; nor is it fully understood, by learned men, what was the power of a legate *a latere* in those days. But I found, in the King's paper-office, the original bull of Cardinal Beaton's legatine power in Scotland, which it seems was intercepted by some of the King's ships, in the passage by sea thither; or was sent up to London by those who killed him, and possessed themselves of his castle and goods. And I having mentioned this bull to those learned men, by whose direction I have governed myself in this work, I did, by their advice, give it a room in the Collection,

He comes to London.

Collect. Numb. 17.

though it be large; since, no doubt, Cardinal Pole's bull was in the same form. In it the reader will clearly perceive what authority was lodged in the legates, to overthrow and dispense with almost all the rules and canons of the church: only some peculiar things (which were more conspicuously scandalous) were still reserved to the apostolic see itself, whose singular privilege it has been always esteemed, to dispense with the best things and allow of the worst; so the pretenders to those graces paid proportionably for them: this authority was too sacred to be trusted even to a legate, it being the prerogative of the popes themselves, to be the most eminent transgressors of all canons and constitutions.

The Cardinal first declared what his designs and powers were to the King and Queen; and then on the 27th a message was sent to the parliament to come and hear him deliver his legation; which they doing, he made them a long speech, inviting them to a reconciliation with the apostolic see, from whence he was sent by the common Pastor of Christendom, to reduce them who had long strayed from the enclosure of the church. This made some emotion in the Queen, which she fondly thought was a child quickened in her belly: this redoubled the joy, some not sparing to say, that as John Baptist leaped in his mother's belly at the salutation of the Virgin, so here a happy omen followed on this salutation from Christ's vicar. In this, her women, seeing that she firmly believed herself with child, flattered her so far, that they fully persuaded her of it. Notice was given of it to the council, who that night wrote a letter to Bonner about it, ordering a *Te Deum* to be sung at St. Paul's, and the other churches of London, and that collects should be constantly used for bringing this to a happy perfection. All that night, and next day, there was great joy about the court and city.

And makes a speech to the parliament.

The Queen is believed to be with child.

On the 29th, the Speaker reported to the Commons the substance of the Cardinal's speech: and a message coming from the Lords for a conference of some of their House with the Lord Chancellor, four earls, four bishops, and four lords, to prepare a supplication for their being reconciled to the see of Rome, it was consented

PART II.

to: and the petition, being agreed on at the committee, was reported, and approved of by both Houses. It contained an address to the King and Queen:

1554. The parliament's petition to be reconciled to the see of Rome.

"That whereas they had been guilty of a most horrible defection and schism from the apostolic see, they did now sincerely repent of it; and, in sign of their repentance, were ready to repeal all the laws made in prejudice of that see: therefore, since the King and Queen had been no way defiled by their schism, they pray them to be intercessors with the Legate to grant them absolution, and to receive them again into the bosom of the church."

So this being presented, by both Houses on their knees, to the King and Queen, they made their intercession with the Cardinal, who thereupon delivered himself in a long speech:

The Cardinal makes a long speech.

"He thanked the parliament for repealing the act against him, and making him a member of the nation, from which he was by that act cut off: in recompence of which, he was now to reconcile them to the body of the church. He told them, the apostolic see cherished Britain most tenderly, as the first nation that had publicly received the Christian faith. The Saxons were also afterwards converted by the means of that see; and some of their kings had been so devoted to it, that Offa and others had gone to visit the thresholds of the apostles. That Adrian the Fourth, an English pope, had given Ireland to the crown of England: and that many mutual marks of reciprocal kindness had passed between that common father of Christendom and our kings, their most beloved sons: but none more eminent than the bestowing on the late King the title of Defender of the Faith. He told them, that in the unity with that see consisted the happiness and strength of all churches: that since the Greeks had separated from them, they had been abandoned by God, and were now under the yoke of Mahometans. That the distractions of Germany did further demonstrate this; but most of all, the confusions themselves had felt, ever since they had broken that bond of perfection. That it was the ambition and craft of some.

who for their private ends began it, to which the rest did too submissively comply; and that the apostolic see might have proceeded against them for it, by the assistance of other princes, but had stayed looking for that day, and for the hand of Heaven. He run out much on the commendation of the Queen, and said, God had signally preserved her, to procure this great blessing to the church. At last, he enjoined them for penance to repeal the laws they had made; and so, in the Pope's name, he granted them a full absolution, which they received on their knees; and he also absolved the whole realm from all censures."

And grants them absolution.

The rest of the day was spent with great solemnity and triumph; all that had been done was published next Sunday at Paul's. There was a committee appointed by both Houses, to prepare the statute of repeal, which was not finished before the 25th of December; and then, the Bishop of London only protesting against it, because of a proviso put in for the lands which the Lord Wentworth had out of his bishoprick, it was agreed to, and sent to the Commons. They made more haste with it, for they sent it back the 4th of January, with a desire that twenty lines in it, which concerned the see of London and the Lord Wentworth, might be put out, and two new provisos added. One of their provisos was not liked by the Lords, who drew a new one; to which the Viscount Montacute, and the Bishops of London and Coventry, dissented. The twenty lines of the Lord Wentworth's proviso were not put out; but the Lord Chancellor took a knife, and cut them out of the parchment, and said, Now I do truly the office of a chancellor; the word being ignorantly derived by some from *cancelling*. It is not mentioned in the Journal, that this was done by the order of the House; but that must be supposed, otherwise it cannot be thought the parliament would have consented to so unlimited a power in the Lord Chancellor, as to raze or cut out provisos at his pleasure.

"By the act is set forth, their former schism from the see of Rome, and their reconciliation to it now; upon which all acts, passed since the twentieth of Henry the

The act of repealing all laws against that see.

PART II.

1554.

Eighth against that see, were specially enumerated and repealed: there it is said, that, for the removing of all grudges that might arise, they desired that the following articles might, through the Cardinal's intercession, be established by the Pope's authority.

1. "That all bishopricks, cathedrals, or colleges, now established, might be confirmed for ever.

2. "That marriages, made within such degrees as are not contrary to the law of God, but only to the laws of the church, might be confirmed, and the issue by them declared legitimate.

3. "That all institutions into benefices might be confirmed.

4. "That all judicial processes might be also confirmed.

A proviso for church-lands.

"And finally, That all the settlements of the lands, of any bishopricks, monasteries, or other religious houses, might continue as they were, without any trouble by the ecclesiastical censures or laws.

A petition from the convocation about it.

"And to make this pass the better, a petition was procured from the convocation of Canterbury, setting forth, that whereas they, being the defenders and guardians of the church, ought to endeavour, with all their strength, to recover those goods to the church, which in the time of the late schism had been alienated; yet, having considered well of it, they saw how difficult, and indeed impossible, that would prove, and how much it would endanger the public peace of the realm, and the unity of the church; therefore they, preferring the public welfare and the salvation of souls to their own private interests, did humbly pray the King and Queen to intercede with the Legate, that, according to the powers given him by the Pope, he would settle and confirm all that had been done in the alienation of the church and abbey-lands, to which they, for their interests, did consent: and they added an humble desire, that those things which concerned the ecclesiastical jurisdiction and liberty might be re-established, that so they might be able to discharge the pastoral cure committed to them. Upon this, the Cardinal granted a full confirmation of those things: ending it with a heavy

charge on those who had the goods of the church in their hands, that they would consider the judgments of God that fell on Belshazzar, for his profane using the holy vessels, though they had not been taken away by himself, but by his father. And he most earnestly exhorted them, that at least they would take care, that, out of the tithes of parsonages or vicarages, those who served the cures might be sufficiently maintained and encouraged. This was confirmed in parliament; where also it was declared, that all suits about these lands were only to be in the Queen's courts, and not in the ecclesiastical courts: and if any should, upon the pretence of any ecclesiastical authority, disturb the subjects in their possession, they were to fall into a premunire. It was also declared, that the title of Supreme Head never of right belonged to the crown; yet all writings, wherein it was used, were still to continue in force; but that hereafter, all writings should be of force, in which, either since the Queen's coming to the crown or afterwards, that title should be or had been omitted. It was also declared, that bulls from Rome might be executed; that all exemptions that had belonged to religious houses, and had been continued by the grants given of them, were repealed, and these places were made subject to the episcopal jurisdiction, excepting only the privileges of the two Universities, the churches of Westminster and Windsor, and the Tower of London. But, for encouraging any to bestow what they pleased on the church, the statutes of Mortmain were repealed for twenty years to come; provided always, that nothing in this act should be contrary to any of the rights of the crown, or the ancient laws of England: but that all things should be brought to the state they were in at the twentieth year of her father's reign, and to continue in that condition."

An address made by the inferior clergy.

For understanding this act more perfectly, I shall next set down the heads of the address which the lower house of convocation made to the upper; for most of the branches of this act had their first rise from it; I have put it in the Collection, having found

Collect. Numb. 16.

PART II.

1554.

it among Archbishop Parker's papers. "In it they petitioned the lords of the upper house of convocation, to take care, that, by their consent to the settlement of the church-lands, nothing might be done in prejudice of any just title they had in law to them: as also, it being said, in the grant of chantries to King Edward, that schools and hospitals were to be erected in several parts of the kingdom, they desired that some regard might be had to that: likewise, that the statutes of Mortmain might be repealed: and whereas tithes had been at all times appointed for the ecclesiastical ministry, therefore they prayed that all impropriations might be dissolved, and the tithes be restored to the church. They also proposed twenty-seven articles of things meet to be considered for the reformation of the church; namely, that all who had preached any heretical doctrine, should be made openly to recant it: that Cranmer's book of the sacrament, the late service books, with all heretical books, should be burnt; and all that had them should be required to bring them in, otherwise they should be esteemed the favourers of heresy: that great care should be had of the books that were either printed or sold: that the statutes made against Lollards might be revived, and the church restored to its former jurisdiction: that all statutes for pluralities and non-residence might be repealed, that so beneficed men might attend on their cures: that simoniacal pactions might be punished, not only in the clergy that made them, but in the patrons, and in those that mediated in them: that the liberties of the church might be restored according to the *Magna Charta;* and the clergy be delivered from the heavy burdens of first-fruits, tenths, and subsidies: that there might be a clear explanation made of all the articles of the *præmunire;* and that none should be brought under it till there were first a prohibition issued out by the Queen in that particular; and that disobedience to it should only bring them within that guilt: that all exemptions should be taken away; all usury be forbid; all clergymen obliged to go in their

habits. The last was, that all who had spoiled churches without any warrant, might be obliged to make restitution."

1554. The laws against heretics revived.

The next act that was brought in was for the reviving the statutes made by Richard the Second, Henry the Fourth, and Henry the Fifth, against heretics; of which an account was given in the first book of the former part. The act began in the House of Commons; who, as was observed in the former parliament, were much set on severities. It was brought in on the 12th of December, and sent up to the Lords on the 15th, who passed it on the 18th of that month. The Commons put in also another bill, for voiding all leases made by married priests. It was much argued among them; and the first draught being rejected, a new one was drawn, and sent up to the Lords, on the 19th of December: but they, finding it would shake a great part of the rights of the church-lands that were made by married priests or bishops, laid it aside. Thus did the servile and corrupted House of Commons run so fast, that the bishops themselves were forced to moderate their heats. They all understood how much the Queen was set upon having the church raised as high as could be, and saw there was nothing so effectual to recommend any to her favour, as to move high in these matters: and though their motions were thought too violent, and rejected, yet their affections were thereby discovered; so that they knew they should be looked on as men deeply engaged in these interests.

An act declaring treasons.

After this, the bill of treasons was brought in. This was also argued for some days in the House of Commons, but at last agreed to. By it, any one who denied the King's right to the title of the crown, with the Queen's, or endeavoured to put him from it, together with them that did several other offences, were to forfeit all their goods, and to be imprisoned during life; and clergymen were to be deprived by their ordinaries: in these cases, the second offence was to be treason. But if any should compass the King's death, and utter it by any overt deed during his marriage to

PART II.

1554.

the Queen, the first offence of this kind should be treason. It was also enacted, that the parliament having petitioned the King, that if the Queen died with any issue, he would take on him the government of them till they came of age, to which he had assented; therefore, if the Queen died before her children came to be of age, the government of the kingdom should be in the King's hands; if it were a son, till he were eighteen; or if a daughter, till she was fifteen years of age: and in all that time, the conspiring his death was to be treason. The witnesses were to be brought before the parties, and none was to be tried for any words, but within six months after they were spoken.

Another against seditious words.

Another act passed upon a report made of some heretical preachers, who had, as was informed, prayed in their conventicles, that God would turn the Queen's heart from idolatry to the true faith, or else shorten her days, and take her quickly out of the way: all therefore that so prayed for taking away the Queen's life were to be judged traitors; but if they shewed themselves penitent for such prayers, they were not to be condemned of treason, but put to any corporal punishment, other than death, at the judge's discretion. This was passed in great haste, for it was thrice read in the House of Lords, and passed on the 16th of January, in which the parliament was dissolved.

There was another act passed against those that spread lying reports of any noblemen, judges, or great officers; that such as spread them should be imprisoned till they brought their authors, according to former acts. If any spread such reports of the King and Queen, they were to be set on a pillory, and pay 100*l.* or have their ears cut off, and be three months prisoners: and they were to pay one hundred marks, and suffer one month's imprisonment, though they had authors for them, if they reported them maliciously: but if their reports tended to the stirring of any insurrection, they were to lose their right hands; and upon a second offence to suffer imprisonment during their lives; but they were to be proceeded against within three months after the words so spoken.

All the bills being ended, the parliament was dissolved on the 16th of January, to Gardiner's no small joy. He had now performed all that he had undertaken to the Queen, or the Emperor: upon which he had the reputation that he was formerly in, of a great statesman, and a dexterous manager of affairs, much confirmed and raised; since he had brought about, in so small a time, so great a change, where the interests of those who consented to it seemed to lead them another way. To those who had apprehended the tyranny of Rome, he had said, that as our former kings had always kept it under in a great measure, so there was less danger of that now, since they saw that all princes had agreed to preserve their own rights entire, against the Pope's pretensions. He shewed them, that therefore all the old laws against provisions from Rome were still kept in force. And so upon Cardinal Pole's being called over, there was a commission sent him, under the great seal, bearing date the 10th of November, authorizing him to exercise his legatine power in England. By this he shewed them that no legate should ever come into England to execute any power, till his faculties were seen and approved by the Queen. Others thought this was but a vain imagination; for if the papacy were once fully established, and people again brought under the old superstition, of esteeming the popes Christ's vicars, and the infallible heads of the church, it would not be possible to retain the people in their obedience, since all the assistance that the princes of Christendom of this time had from their subjects in their wars with the popes, flowed chiefly from this, that they generally did no more submit implicitly to their priests. But if once that blind obedience were restored, it would be easy for the priests, by their private dealings in confession, to overturn governments as they pleased.

1554. Gardiner is in great esteem.

But that which stuck most was, that the church-lands were, by the common law, so indissolubly annexed to the church, that they could not be separated from it. To this it was answered, that they should secure it by a law at Rome, and should confirm all the

Great fear about the church-lands.

PART II.

1554.

alienations that had been made, both by consent of the clergy, and by the Pope's authority committed to the Legate. Yet even that did not satisfy many, who found some laws in the canon so strict, that the Pope himself could not dispense with them: if the Legate did it, the Pope might refuse to confirm it, and then it was nothing: and what one pope did, another often recalled. So it was said, that this confirmation was but an artifice, to make it pass the more easily. Besides, all observed, that in the Cardinal's confirmation of those lands, there was a charge given to all, to be afraid of the judgments of God that fell on Belshazzar for using the holy vessels; which was, to pardon the thing, and yet to call it a sacrilege, for which they might look for the vengeance of God. So that the Cardinal did at the same time both bind and loose; and it was plain, both by that clause, and the repeal of the statute of Mortmain, that it was designed to possess people with the opinion of the sin of retaining church-lands. It was thought this confirmation was rather an indemnity and permission to keep them, than a declaring the possessors had any lawful title to them: so that when men were near death, and could no longer enjoy those lands themselves, it was not to be doubted, but the terrors of sacrilege, and the punishments due to it, with the hope of that relief and comfort that soul-masses might bring them in purgatory, would prevail with many of them to make at least great, if not entire, restitutions.

This point being carried by those who did not understand what future danger their estates were in, but considered the present confirmation, and the other advantages which they were to have for consenting to this act; all the rest passed with no opposition. The act about the proceeding against heretics passed more easily than any thing that had been proposed: so it seems the opposition that was made to other acts, came not from any that favoured the Reformation, otherwise this would have found some resistance. But now it was the only way to the Queen's favour, and to preferment, to run down that which was called heresy.

1554. Consultations about the way of dealing with heretics.

After the dissolution of the parliament, the first thing taken into consideration was, what way to proceed against the heretics. Cardinal Pole had been suspected to favour the protestants, but seemed now to be much alienated from them: and therefore when Tremellius, who had declared himself a protestant, came to him at Brussels, he would not see him, though he was his godfather. He came over into England, much changed from that freedom of conversation he had formerly practised: he was in reserves to all people, spoke little, and had put on an Italian temper, as well as behaviour: he brought over two Italians, Priuli and Ormaneto, who were his only confidants. He was a man of a generous and good disposition; but knew how jealous the court of Rome would be of him, if he seemed to favour heretics; therefore he expressed great detestation of them. Nor did he converse much with any that had been of that party, but the late Secretary Cecil, who, though he lived for the most part privately at his house near Stamford, where he afterwards built a most sumptuous house, and was known to favour the Reformation still in his heart; yet in many things he complied with the time, and came to have more of his confidence than any Englishman.

The Cardinal is for moderate courses.

The Cardinal professed himself an enemy to extreme proceedings. He said, pastors ought to have bowels, even to their straying sheep: bishops were fathers, and ought to look on those that erred as their sick children, and not for that to kill them: he had seen that severe proceedings did rather inflame than cure that disease: there was a great difference to be made between a nation uninfected, where some few teachers came to spread errors; and a nation that had been overrun with them, both clergy and laity. The people were not so violently to be drawn back, but were to have time given them to recover out of those errors, into which they had been led by the compliance and writings of their prelates. Therefore he proposed, that there should be a strict reformation of the manners of the clergy carried on. He had observed, in every country of Christendom, that all the best and wisest

PART II.

1554.

men acknowledged, that the scandals and ignorance of the clergy had given the entrance to heresy: so he moved, that there might be a reviving of the rules of the primitive church; and then, within a little time, men might by degrees be brought over. I have not found that he proposed the receiving the council of Trent; which is the more strange, since he had been himself one of the legates at the first session of it: but it seems it was not thought seasonable to propose it, till the council were first ended and dissolved.

But Gardiner is for violent ones.

On the other hand, Gardiner, who had no great sense of ecclesiastical matters, but as they served intrigues of state; and being himself of such a temper, that severe proceedings wrought much on him; judged that the executing the laws against the Lollards was that in which they were chiefly to trust. He was confident the preachers then in prison were men of such tempers, that, if they saw they were to be burnt, they would comply; or if they stood out, and were burnt, that would so terrify the rest, that the whole nation would soon change. He remembered well how the Lollards grew in England, only upon Cardinal Wolsey's slackening the execution of the laws against them: and upon the passing of the statute of the six Articles many submitted: so that if King Henry had not discouraged the vigorous execution of that act, all had turned. He did not deny, but a reformation of the clergy was a good and fit mean; but said, that all times could not bear such things: and, if they went to reform their manners, the heretics would from thence take advantage of raising clamours against a scandalous clergy; which would increase rather than lessen the aversion the people had to their pastors. So Gardiner complained, that Pole, by his intention of coming over too hastily, had almost precipitated all things: and now, by his gentle proceedings, would as much prejudice them another way. All these reasonings were such as became a man of Gardiner's temper, which, being servile and abject, made him measure others by himself.

He was also at this time highly provoked by the reprinting of his books of True Obedience, which he

had written in the time of King Henry, and to which Bonner had made the preface. In these books Gardiner had not only argued against the Pope's supremacy, and for the King's, but had condemned the King's marriage with Queen Katharine, calling it often "incestuous and unlawful; and had justified the King's divorcing her, and marrying his most godly and virtuous wife, Queen Anne." This, being reprinted in Strasburg, was now conveyed into England; and it was acknowledged to be a handsome piece of spite in the reformed, thus to expose him to the world. But though this nettled him much, yet he was confident enough, and excused himself, that he had erred through fear and weakness, as St. Peter had done; though it was an unreasonable thing, to compare an error of near thirty years' continuance, to the sudden denial of St. Peter, that was presently expiated with so true and sincere a repentance. 1554.

Between these two counsels, the Queen would have a mean way taken, to follow both in part. She encouraged Pole to go on in the correcting the manners of the clergy; and likewise pressed Gardiner to proceed against the heretics. To which the Queen inclined.

She also sent ambassadors to Rome; who were, the Viscount Montacute, the Bishop of Ely, and Sir Edward Carn, one to represent every state of the kingdom; to make her obedience to the Pope, and to obtain a confirmation of all those graces Cardinal Pole had granted in his name.

On the 23d of January all the bishops went to Lambeth, to receive the Cardinal's blessing and directions. He wished them to return to their cures, and treat their flocks with all gentleness, and to endeavour rather to gain them that way, than to use extremity and rigour. And on the 25th, there was a solemn procession through London; there went first one hundred and sixty priests, all in their copes, eight bishops next, and last of all came Bonner himself, carrying the host, to thank God for reconciling them again to his church; and bonfires were burning all the night. And to keep up a constant remembrance of it, it was ordered, that St. Andrew's day should be still observed as the anni- 1555.

PART II.

versary of it, and be called the Feast of the Reconciliation; and processions, with all the highest solemnities they at any time use, were to be on that day.

1555. They begin with Rogers and others;

But now they turned wholly to the prosecution of the heretics. There had been thirty of them taken at a meeting near Bow-church, where one Rose, a minister, gave them the communion according to the English book of service; so they were all put in prison. On the 22d of January, Rogers, with others, were brought before the council; he had been a prebendary of Paul's, and in a sermon, after the Queen was come to London, had zealously asserted the doctrine he had formerly preached; and, as it has been shewn, was confined to his house, upon the tumult that had been at Paul's. He was much pressed to fly over into Germany, but he would not hearken to it, though the necessities of ten children were great temptations. He was esteemed one of the most learned of the reformers; so that when those of the convocation were required to dispute, they desired that Ridley and he might be suffered to come and join with them. It was resolved to begin with him, and some others, at the council-board, to see if they could be easily brought over.

Who, refusing to comply,

He was accordingly brought before the council; where, being asked by Gardiner, whether he would knit himself to the catholic church and receive the Pope as the supreme head? he said, he knew no other head of the church but Christ; and for the Pope, he had no more authority in England than any other bishop, either by the word of God, or the authority of the church, for four hundred years after Christ. But they objecting, that he had acknowledged King Henry to be supreme head; he answered, he never acknowledged him so to be supreme as to forgive sins, bestow the Holy Ghost, or be a judge above the word of God. But as he was going to explain himself, Gardiner pressed him to answer plainly. He objected to Gardiner, that all the bishops had for many years preached against the Pope. Gardiner said, they were forced to it by the cruelty of the times; but they would argue no more with him: now mercy was offered; if he re-

jected it, justice must come next. Rogers said, if they had been pressed to deny the Pope's power by cruelty, would they now by the same motives force others to acknowledge it? for his part he would never do it. Other ten were called in, one after another; and only one of them, by the Lord Effingham's favour, was let go upon a general question, if he would be an honest man; but all the rest answering resolutely, were sent back to prison, and were kept much stricter than formerly; none being suffered to come near them.

Were judged;

On the 28th of January, the Bishops of Winchester, London, Duresme, Salisbury, Norwich, and Carlisle, sat in St. Mary Overies, in Southwark; where Hooper was first brought before them. It needs not to be doubted, but Bonner remembered that he had informed against him, when he was deprived in King Edward's time. He had been summoned to appear before the Queen, soon after she came to the crown; and it was pretended, he owed great sums of money: many advised him not to appear, for it was but a pretence to put him and a great many more in prison, where they would be kept till laws were made to bring them out to a stake. But he would not withdraw; so now he and Mr. Rogers were singled out and begun with. They were first asked, whether they would submit, or not? they both refused to submit. Rogers being much pressed, and continuing firm in his resolutions, Gardiner said, it was vain-glory in him to stand out against the whole church. He protested it was his conscience, and not vain-glory, that swayed him; for his part, he would have nothing to do with the antichristian church of Rome. Gardiner said, by that he condemned the Queen, and the whole realm, to be of the church of antichrist: Rogers said, the Queen would have done well enough, if it had not been for his counsel. Gardiner said, the Queen went before them in those counsels, which proceeded of her own motion. Rogers said, he would never believe that. The Bishop of Carlisle said, they could all bear him witness to it. Rogers said, they would all witness for one another. Upon that, the Comptroller, and Secretary Bourn, being there, stood up

PART II.

1555.

in court, and attested it. They then asked Rogers, what he thought of the sacrament? He said, it was known he had never meddled in that matter, and was suspected by some to be of a contrary opinion to many of his brethren, but yet he did not allow of their corporal presence. He complained, that after he had been confined half a year in his house, they had kept him a year in Newgate, without any fault; for they could not say that he had broken any of their laws, since he had been a prisoner all the while; so that merely for his opinion they were now proceeding against him. They gave Hooper and him time till next morning, to consider what they would do: but they, continuing in their former resolution, were declared obstinate heretics, and appointed to be degraded, and so to be delivered into the sheriff's hands. Hooper was only degraded from the order of priesthood. Then Rogers desired he might be suffered to speak with his wife, concerning his ten children: they answered, she was not his wife, and so denied it. Upon this they were led away to Newgate.

And condemned.

On the 4th of February, early in the morning, Rogers was called upon to make ready for Smithfield: he was so fast asleep, that he was not easily awakened; he put on his clothes carelessly, being, as he said, so soon to lay them off. When he was brought to Bonner to be degraded, he again renewed his desire to see his wife, but could not obtain it. He was led to Smithfield, where he was not suffered to make any speech to the people: so, in a few words, he desired them to continue in that doctrine which he had taught them, and for which he had not only patiently suffered all the bitterness and cruelty that had been exercised on him, but did now most gladly resign up his life, and give his flesh to the consuming fire, for a testimony to it. He repeated the fifty-first psalm, and so fitted himself for the stake. A pardon was brought, if he would recant: but he chose to submit to that severe but short punishment, rather than put himself in danger of everlasting burnings, by such an apostacy: so the fire was set to him, which consumed him to ashes.

Rogers's martyrdom.

For Hooper, after they had degraded him, they re-

solved to send him to Gloucester: at which he much rejoiced, hoping by his death to confirm their faith, over whom he had been formerly placed. He was carried thither in three days. After he came, he had one day's interval given him, which he spent in fasting and prayer. Some came to persuade him to accept of the Queen's mercy, since life was sweet, and death was bitter. He answered, the death that was to come after was more bitter, and the life that was to follow was more sweet. As some of his friends parted with him, he shed some tears, and told them, all his imprisonment had not made him do so much.

1555. Hooker burnt at Gloucester.

On the 9th he was led out to his execution; where, being denied leave to speak, but only to pray, in the strain of a prayer, he declared his belief. Then the Queen's pardon being shewed him, he desired them to take it away. He prayed earnestly for strength from God, to endure his torment patiently; and undressed himself, and embraced the reeds. When he was tied to the stake with iron chains, he desired them to spare their pains, for he was confident he should not trouble them. The fire was put to him, but the wood being green, burnt ill, and the wind blew away the flame of the reeds: he prayed oft, "O Jesus, thou Son of David, have mercy on me, and receive my soul;" and called to the people, for the love of God, to bring him more fire, for the fire was burning his nether parts, but did not reach his vitals. The fire was renewed, but the wind still blew it away from rising up to stifle him, so that he was long in the torment. The last words he was heard to say, were, "Lord Jesus, receive my spirit." One of his hands dropped off before he died; with the other he continued to knock on his breast some time after; and was in all near three quarters of an hour a burning.

Sanders burnt at Coventry,

Next these, was Sanders condemned, and sent to Coventry to be burnt, where he suffered on the 8th of February. He had been made a prisoner for preaching, notwithstanding the Queen's prohibition, and was condemned for refusing to conform to the new laws. When he was led out to the stake, a pardon was likewise of-

PART II.

1555.

fered him: but he said, he held no heresies, but the blessed gospel of Christ; and that he would never recant. When he came to the stake, he embraced it, and said, "Welcome the cross of Christ, welcome everlasting life;" and so he was burnt.

And Taylor at Hadley.

Dr. Taylor followed next, who was parson of Hadley. Some of his neighbouring priests came to Hadley, and resolved to say mass in his church. He went thither, and openly declared against it, but was by violence thrust out of the church. Gardiner being informed of this, wrote for him to come up. Many of his friends wished him to go out of the way: he said, he must follow Christ, the good shepherd, who not only fed his flock, but died for it. He was old, and thought he should never be able, at any other time, to do his good God such service as he was then called to; so he went with much cheerfulness. Gardiner received him with his ordinary civilities, of traitor, villain, heretic, and knave. He answered, he was none of these; and put Gardiner in mind of the oaths he had sworn, both to King Henry and King Edward. Gardiner said, an unlawful oath was not to be kept; and charged him for hindering mass to be said at his church. He said, he was by law parson of Hadley, and no man had a right to come thither, and defile his church and people with idolatry. After some discourse on that head, he was sent to the King's Bench prison; and being carried before the council on the 22d of January, he refused to turn. After that he was condemned, and degraded: and it was resolved to send him to Hadley to be burnt there. All the way he expressed great cheerfulness. When he was brought to the stake, he said to the people, he had taught them nothing but God's holy word, and was now to seal it with his blood: but one of the guards struck him over the head, and made him give over speaking. Then he went to his prayers, and so to the stake, where he was put in a pitched barrel: as the faggots were laying about him, one flung a faggot at his head, which broke it, and fetched a great deal of blood; but all he said was, "Oh, friend I have harm enough, what needed that?" He

repeated the fifty-first Psalm in English; at which one of the guards struck him over the mouth, and bid him speak Latin. He continued in his ejaculations to God, till the fire was kindled; and one of the guards cut him in the head with his halbert, so that his brains fell out. This was done on the 9th of February.

Bradford was also at the same time condemned, but his execution was respited.

Soon after the condemnation of these men, six others were apprehended on the account of heresy.

Gardiner is disappointed.

By this Gardiner saw, that what he had expected did not follow; for he thought a few severe instances would have turned the whole nation: but finding he was disappointed, he would meddle no more in the condemning of them; but left the whole matter wholly to Bonner, who undertook it cheerfully, being naturally savage and brutal, and retaining deep resentments for what had befallen himself in King Edward's time.

These cruelties are much censured.

The whole nation stood amazed at these proceedings, and the burning of such men, only for their consciences, without the mixture of any other thing, so much as pretended against them. And it was looked upon as a horrible cruelty, because those men had acted nothing contrary to the laws; for they were put in prison, at first for smaller matters, and there kept, till those laws were passed, by which they were now burnt. So that, remembering Gardiner's plea for himself in his imprisonment, when he desired to be first tried, and discharged in the particular for which he was committed, before new matter was brought against him; all men saw now, how much more justly those men might have demanded the like at his hands. But now the spirit of the two religions shewed itself. In King Edward's time, papists were only turned out of their benefices, and at most imprisoned; and of those there were but very few: but now, that could not serve turn, but barbarous cruelties must be executed on innocent men, only for their opinions. One piece of severity was taken notice of among the rest: the council sent

PART II.

1555.

for those who were to be burnt in the country, and required of them a promise to make no speeches; otherwise they threatened to cut out their tongues immediately: so they to avoid that butchery, promised to obey those cruel orders.

Reflections made on Hooper's death.

The manner of Hooper's death, made those who judged too critically of Divine providences, reflect on the dissension that had been raised by him about the vestments; as if he, who had kindled that fire, had suffered now more than ordinary for that reason. But all that difference was at an end before this; for Ridley and he, between whom there had been the greatest animosity, becoming partners in the same sufferings, were perfectly reconciled to each other. He wrote twice to Ridley, who wrote him an answer, as soon as he could convey it; in which he declared how entirely he was knit to him, though in some circumstances of religion they had formerly jarred a little: it was Hooper's wisdom, and his own simplicity, that had divided them; every one following the abundance of his own sense; but now he assured him, that, in the bowels of Christ, he loved him in the truth and for the truth. He encouraged him to prepare for the day of his dissolution; after which they should triumph together in eternal glory: he expressed great joy "for what he heard of Cranmer's godly and fatherly constancy, whose integrity and uprightness, gravity and innocence, were known to the whole nation: and he blessed God that had given, in his reverend old age, such a man to be the witness of his truth: for miserable and hard-hearted was he, whom the godliness and constant confession of so worthy, so grave, and so innocent a man, would not move to acknowledge and confess his truth."

It had been happy if the fires that consumed those good men had put an end to these contests: and if those that have been since engaged in the like, will reflect more on the sense they had of them when they were now preparing for eternity, than on the heats they were put in concerning them, when perhaps ease and

plenty made their passions keener, they may from thence be reduced to have more moderate thoughts of such matters.

1555.

If the English nation was dissatisfied with what was done since the beginning of this reign, it cannot be imagined but their discontent received a great increase by what was now acted. Those that favoured the Reformation were awakened to have more serious thoughts about it; since they saw those that had preached it, died so patiently and resolutely, rather than they would deny it. It begot in them greater tenderness to their memories, and a more violent aversion to their persecutors. The rest of the nation, that neither knew nor valued religion much, yet were startled at the severity and strangeness of these proceedings; and being naturally of relenting and compassionate tempers, were highly disaffected to the King, from whom they believed that this flowed. The Queen had before declared, she would force nobody in these points; so they thought it not reasonable nor decent to charge her with it. Gardiner, with the other bishops and privy counsellors had openly in court purged themselves of it; and laid it on the Queen, being therein more careful of their own credit, than of her honour. So now it could fall no where but on the King: the sourness of whose temper, together with his bigotry for that religion, made it reasonable enough to impute it to him: besides, he had been bred in Spain, where the Inquisition was let loose on all that were suspected of heresy without any restraint: and his father had, during his whole reign, been always, as far as he safely could be, a persecutor of protestants. Philip could not but see that all was cast on him; and understanding that thereby he should become unacceptable to the nation, and so not be able to carry on his design of making himself master of England, he was something concerned to clear himself of these imputations. Therefore Alphonsus, * a Franciscan friar, that was his confessor, in a sermon before him on the 10th of February, preached

These burnings were disliked by the nation.

The King purges himself of them.

* Alphonsus à Castro, famous for his Treatise *de Hæresibus*.

PART II.

1555.

largely against the taking away of people's lives for religion; and, in plain terms, inveighed against the bishops for doing it: he said, they had not learned it in Scripture, which taught bishops in the spirit of meekness to instruct those that opposed them; and not to burn them for their consciences. This startled the bishops; since it was now plain, that the Spaniards disowned these extreme courses; and hereupon there was a stop for several weeks put to any further severities. But the popish clergy, being once engaged in blood, have been always observed to become the most brutally cruel of any sort of men; so that it was not easy to restrain them; and therefore they resolved, rather than the heretics should not be prosecuted any further, to take the blame of it avowedly on themselves.

But they are prosecuted by the clergy.

A petition against persecution.

There was at this time a petition printed, and sent over from some beyond sea, to the Queen, in which they set before her the danger of her being carried away by a blind zeal, to persecute the members of Christ, as St. Paul was before his conversion: they put her in mind, how Cranmer had preserved her in her father's time; so that she had more reason to believe he loved her, and would speak truth to her, than all the rest of her clergy; whom they compared to Jezebel's prophets. They gathered many passages out of Gardiner's, Bonner's, and Tonstal's writings, against the Pope's supremacy, and her mother's marriage: and shewed, that they were men that, by their own confession, had no conscience in them, but measured their actions and professions by their fears and interests; and averred, that it was known that many of that faction did openly profess, that if they lived in Turkey, they would comply with the religion of the country. They said, that the Turks did tolerate Christians, and the Christians did in most places suffer Jews; but the persecution now set on foot was like that which the scribes and pharisees raised against the apostles; for they then pretended that they had been once of their religion, and so were apostates and heretics. They also said, (but by a common mistake), that the first law for burning in England was made by Henry the

Fourth; who, to gratify the bishops that had helped him to depose King Richard the Second, and to advance himself to the throne, as it were, in recompence of that service, had granted them that law: which was both against all humanity, and more particularly against the mercifulness of the Christian religion.

They remembered her, that in King Edward's time, none of the papists had been so used; and in conclusion they told her, she was trusted by God with the sword, for the protection of her people, as long as they did well; and was to answer to him for their blood, if she thus delivered them to the mercy of such wolves.

From the Queen, the address is turned to the nobility, warning them of the danger of not only losing their abbey lands, but all their liberties; and being brought under a Spanish yoke, which had ruined many of the best countries in the world: they are told, they must resolve to come under heavy taxes, and a general excise, such as was in the Netherlands; and that all this would come justly on them, who had joined in the Reformation, for base ends, to get the church-lands; and now, thinking those were secured to them, forsook it: but for all these things they were to answer heartily to God.

From them it turns to the people, and exhorts them to repent of their great sins, which had brought such judgments on them: and in the end, begs the Queen will at least be as favourable to her own people, as she had been to the strangers, to whom she allowed a free passage to foreign parts.

This discourse is written in a strong and good style, much beyond the rate of the other books of that time. Upon this some were set on work to write in defence of such proceedings; so a book was set out about it, with divers arguments, of which the substance follows:

Arguments for persecuting heretics.

They said, the Jews were commanded to put blasphemers to death; and those heretics were such, for they blasphemed the sacrament of the altar, which was the body of Christ, and called it a piece of bread. They noted also, that the heathens had persecuted Christians;

PART II.

1555.

and if they had that zeal for their false religion, it became Christians to be much more zealous for theirs: they made use of that expression in the parable, "Compel them to enter in;" and of St. Paul's, "I would they were cut off that trouble you." They alleged that St. Peter had, by a Divine power, struck Ananias and Sapphira dead; which seemed a good warrant for the magistrate to put such persons to death. They said, that the heretics themselves were for burning when they had power; and that those that died then by their hands, had expressed as much courage in their deaths, and innocence in their lives, as they had ever done: they cited St. Austin, who was for prosecuting the Donatists; and though he had been once of another mind, yet finding severities had a good effect on them, he changed, and was for fining or banishing of them. These were the arguments for and against those proceedings.

But leaving them to the reader's judgment, I proceed in the history. I intend not to write a pompous martyrology, and therefore hereafter I shall only name the persons that suffered, with the reasons for which they were condemned: but, except in a very few instances, I shall not enlarge on the manner of their trial and sufferings; which being so copiously done by Fox, there is nothing left for any that comes after him. In some private passages, which were brought to him upon flying reports, he made a few mistakes, being too credulous; but in the account he gives from records or papers, he is a most exact and faithful writer; so that I could never find him in any prevarication, or so much as a designed concealment. He tells the good and the bad, the weakness and passion, as well as the constancy and patience of those good men who sealed their faith with their blood; who were not all equal in parts nor in discretion; but the weaker any of them were, it argued the more cruelty in their persecutors to proceed so severely against such inconsiderable persons.

They proceed to burn more.

The first intermission being over on the 16th of March, Thomas Thomkins, a weaver in Shoreditch, was burnt in Smithfield, only for denying the corporal presence of

Christ in the sacrament. Bonner kept him many months in his house, hoping to have wrought on him by fair means; but those having no effect, one day he tore out a great deal of the hair of his beard; but to conceal that, made his beard be clean shaved: and another time he held his hand in the flame of the candle, so long, till the sinews and veins shrunk and burst, and spurted in Harpsfield's face, that was standing by, who, interposing with Bonner, got him to give over any further cruelty at that time.

The next that suffered was one William Hunter, of Brentwood, an apprentice of nineteen years old, who had been drawn on in discourse by a priest, till he brought him to deny the presence in the sacrament, and then was accused by him. His own father was made to search for him to bring him to justice; but he, to save his father from trouble, rendered himself. Bonner offered him 40*l.* if he would change, so mercenary a thing did he think conscience to be: but he answered, if they would let him alone, he would keep his conscience to himself, but he would not change; so he was condemned, and sent to be burnt near his father's house, where he suffered on the 20th of March.

On the same day, Causton and Higbed, two gentlemen of good estates and great esteem, were burnt near their own houses in Essex.

On the 28th of March, William Pigot was burnt at Braintree, and Stephen Knight at Malden; and on the 29th, John Lawrence, a priest, was burnt at Colchester.

In all their processes, the bishops brought no witnesses against them; but did only exhibit articles to them according to the way of those courts, called *ex officio*, and required them to make answers; and upon their answers, which were judged heretical, they condemned them; so that all this was singly for their consciences, without the pretence of any other matter.

Ferrar, bishop of St. David's, condemned and burnt.

Ferrar, that had been bishop of St. David's, being dealt with by Gardiner to turn, and refusing to do it, was sent down to Caermarthen, where his successor Morgan sat upon him, and gave him articles about the marriage of priests, the mass, and some other things:

PART II.

1555.

to which his answers being found heretical, he was condemned. He put in an appeal to Cardinal Pole, but it was not received. Yet it seems that delayed the execution till they heard from him; for though he was condemned on the 13th, he was not burnt before the 30th of March.

About that time was Rawlins White, an honest poor fisherman, burnt at Cardiff; it was in March, but the day is not mentioned: he was very ancient, and was put in prison only because he had put his son to school, that he might hear the Bible read by him. After a year's imprisonment, the Bishop of Landaff condemned him, upon articles, to which he answered as a heretic.

On the 24th of April, George March, a priest, was burnt at Chester, being judged as the others had been; only at his death there was a new invention of cruelty; a firkin of pitch was hung over his head, that, the fire melting it, it might scald his head as it dropped on it.

One wounds a priest at the altar, and is burnt for heresy himself, condemning his former act.

After this, one Flower, that had been in orders, but was a rash indiscreet man, went on Easter-day into St. Margaret's church, in Westminster, and there with a knife struck at and wounded the priest, as he was officiating. He for some time justified what he had done, as flowing from zeal; but afterwards he sincerely condemned it. Bonner, upon this, proceeding against him as a heretic, condemned him to the fire; and he was burnt on the 24th of April, in Westminster churchyard. This fact was condemned by all the reformed, who knew that the wrath of man was not the way to accomplish the righteousness of God. In the Jewish government some extraordinary persons did execute vengeance on notorious offenders; but that constitution was in all its policy regulated by the laws given by Moses; in which such instances were proposed as examples, whereby they became a part of the law of that land: so that in such cases, it was certainly lawful to execute punishment in that way: so in some kingdoms, any man that finds an outlawed person may kill him: but where there is no law warranting such things, it is certainly against both religion, and the laws of all so-

ciety and government, for private persons to pretend to the magistrate's right, and to execute justice upon any account whatsoever.

There was at this time a second stop put to the execution of heretics, for till the end of May more fires were not kindled; people grew generally so enraged upon it, that they could not bear it. I shall, therefore, now turn myself to other things, that will give the reader a more pleasing entertainment.

The Queen resolves to surrender up all the church-lands that were in her hands.

On the 28th of March, the Queen called for the Lord Treasurer; Sir Robert Rochester, comptroller; Sir William Petre, secretary of state; and Sir Francis Inglefield, master of the wards. She said, she had sent for them, to declare her conscience to them concerning the church-lands that continued still in the crown: she thought they were taken away in the time of the schism, and by unlawful means, therefore she could not keep them with a good conscience; so she did surrender and relinquish them. If they should tell her, that her crown was so poor that she could not well maintain her dignity if she parted with them; she must tell them, she valued the salvation of her soul more than ten kingdoms; and thanked God, her husband was of the same mind: and therefore she was resolved to have them disposed, as the Pope or his Legate should think fit: so she ordered them to go with the Lord Chancellor, to whom she had spoken of it before, and wait on the Legate, and signify it to him, together with the value of those lands. This flowed from the strictness of the Queen's conscience, who then thought herself near the time of her delivery, and therefore would not have such a load lie on her; of which she was the more sensible, by reason of a bull which Pope Julius had made, excommunicating all that kept any abbey or church-lands; and all princes, prelates, and magistrates, that did not assist in the execution of such bulls. Some said, this related to the business of England; but Gardiner said, it was only made for Germany; and that bulls had no authority, unless they were received in England. This did not satisfy the people much; for if it was such a sin in Germany, they could not see but it was as bad

PART II.

in England: and if the Pope had his authority from Christ and St. Peter, his bulls ought to take place every where.

1555. Pope Julius dies, and Marcellus succeeds.

Pope Julius died soon after this, on the 20th of March; and on the 6th of April after, Cardinal Marcellus Cervinus was chosen Pope; a man of great gravity and innocence of life. He continued to keep his former name, which had not been done a great while, except by Adrian the Sixth, between whose temper and this man there was a great resemblance. He presently turned all his thoughts (as Adrian had done), to a reformation of the corruptions of that see; and blamed his predecessors much who had always put it off: he thought nothing could make the papacy more reverenced, than to cut off their excessive and superfluous pomp; whereby they would be the more esteemed all the world over, and might, on surer grounds, expect the protection of God. He had been one of the legates at Trent, and there observed what was represented as the root of all heresy and disorder—that the clergy were generally corrupted, and had, by many exemptions procured from Rome, broken all the primitive rules. Upon his first election, he called for the Cardinal of Mantua, and, having observed him to be a man of great probity, told him, he knew it was ordinary for all popes, at their first coming to the throne, to talk of reformation; but he would talk little, being resolved to do more; only he opened his mind to him, that if ever he went back from it he might have this check upon him, that so honest a man as he was, would know him to be a knave and a hypocrite. He would suffer none of his friends that were in remote parts to come to Rome; nor his nephews, that were in Rome, to come within the court: he was resolved to have sent all priests and bishops home to their benefices; and talked much of their non-residence with great detestation: he would not change his table, nor his custom of making one read to him when he was sitting at it. One day, after a long musing at dinner, he said, he remembered the words of Hadrian the Fourth, "That the Pope was the most miserable of all men; his whole life was bitterness,

his chair was full of thorns, and his way of briars;" and then, leaning with his hand on the table, he said, "I do not see how they can be saved that hold this high dignity." These thoughts did so affect him, that, on the twelfth day after that he was chosen pope, he sickened, and died ten days after. These things are reported of him by the learned Onuphrius, who knew him well: and they will not be thought impertinent to have a room in this story.

The Queen recommends Card. Pole to the popedom, upon Marcellus's death.

As soon as the news of his death came to England, the Queen wrote, on the 29th day of May, to Gardiner, the Earl of Arundel, and the Lord Paget, who were then at Calais, meditating a peace between the French and Spaniard; which they could not effect, but only procured a truce: she desired them to deal with the Cardinal of Lorrain, the Constable, and the other French commissioners, to persuade their master to set up Cardinal Pole, that he might succeed in that chair, since he seemed every way the fittest person for it: adding (as will appear by the letter which is in the Collection), that she had done this without his knowledge or consent. This could not come in time to Rome, where, on the 23d of that month, Caraffa was chosen pope, who was called Paul the Fourth; and who was as different from his predecessor as any man could be. He had put on an appearance of great strictness before, and had set up a religious order of monks, called Theatines: but upon his coming to the popedom, he put on the greatest magnificence possible, and was the highest-spirited and bloodiest pope that had been since Julius the Second's time.

Collect. Numb. 18.

Paul the Fourth chosen pope.

The English ambassadors come to Rome.

He took it for a great honour, that, on the day of his election, the English ambassadors entered Rome, with a great train of one hundred and forty horse of their own attendants. On the 23d of June, in the first consistory after he was crowned, they were heard. They fell prostrate at his feet, and acknowledged the steps and faults of their schism, enumerating them all; for so the Pope had ordered it; confessing they had been ungrateful for the many benefits they had received from that church, and humbly asking pardon for them. The

PART II.

1555.

Pope held some consultation whether he should receive them, since in their credentials the Queen styled herself Queen of Ireland, that title being assumed by King Henry in the time of schism. It seemed hard to use such ambassadors ill: but, on the other hand, he stood upon his dignity, and thought it belonged only to his see to erect kingdoms; therefore, he resolved so to temper the matter, that he should not take notice of that title, but should bestow it as a mark of his favour. So, on the 7th of June, he did in private erect Ireland into a kingdom; and conferred that title on the King and Queen, and told them, that otherwise he would not suffer them to use it in their public audience: and it is probable, it was the contest about this, that made the audience be delayed almost a month after their arrival. This being adjusted, he received the ambassadors graciously, and pardoned the whole nation; and said, "That in token of his esteem of the King and Queen, he gave them the title of the kingdom of Ireland, by that supreme power which he had from God, who had placed him over all kingdoms, to supplant the contumacious, and to build new ones." But, in his private discourses with the ambassadors, he complained that the church-lands were not restored: which, he said, was by no means to be endured, for they must render all back to the last farthing, since they belonged to God, and could not be kept without their incurring damnation: he said, he would do any thing in his power to gratify the King and Queen; but in this his authority was not so large, as to profane the things dedicated to God. This would be an anathema, and a contagion on the nation, which would bring after it many miseries; therefore he required them to write effectually about it: he repeated this to them every time he spake to them; and told them also, that the Peter-pence must be paid in England, and that he would send a collector to raise it: he himself had been employed in that office when he was young, and he said he was much edified to see the forwardness of the people, especially those of the meaner sort, in paying it: and told them, they must not expect St. Peter

The Pope presses the restoring of the church-lands.

History of the council of Trent.

would open heaven to them, so long as they usurped his goods on earth.

The ambassadors seeing the Pope's haughty temper, that he could endure no contradiction, answered him with great submission; and so gained his favour much; but knew well that these things could not be easily effected; and the Viscount Montacute was too deeply concerned in the matter himself to solicit it hard: for almost his whole estate consisted of abbey-lands. Thus was this business rather laid over, than fully settled.

Instructions sent to the justices for searching after all suspected of heresy.

But now to return to the affairs of England. There came complaints from all places, that the justices of the peace were remiss in matters of religion; and particularly in Norfolk, that these things were ill looked to: so instructions were sent thither, (which will be found in the Collection), requiring the justices to divide themselves into ten or twelve districts, that they might more narrowly look into all particulars; that they should encourage the preachers sent to instruct that county, and turn out such as did not come to church, or conform in all things, but chiefly the preachers of heresy; that the justices and their families should be good examples to the rest; that they should have one or two in every parish to be secretly instructed for giving information of every thing in it; and should look strictly to all vagabonds that wandered about, and to such as spread false reports. This was thought to have so much of the Inquisition in it, that it was imputed to the counsels of the Spaniards. And they seemed to have taken their pattern from the base practices of those called *delatores*, that are set out by Tacitus as the greatest abuse of power that ever was practised by the ill emperors that succeeded Augustus: who, going into all companies, and complying with what may be acceptable to them, engaged men into discourses against the state; and then gave such informations against them, which, without their discovering themselves by being brought to prove them, were made use of to the ruin of the accused persons. This was certainly very contrary to the freedom of the English temper, and helped to alienate them the more from the Spaniards. But it may

Collect. Numb. 19.

PART II.

be easily imagined that others were weary of severities, when Bonner himself grew averse to them: he complained that the matter was turned over upon him, the rest looking on, and leaving the execution of these laws wholly to him. So when the justices and sheriffs sent up heretics to him, he sent them back, and refused to meddle further. Upon which the King and Queen wrote to him on the 24th of May, complaining of this, and admonished him to have from henceforth more regard to the office of a good pastor and bishop; and when such offenders were brought to him, to endeavour to remove them from their errors; or if they were obstinate, to proceed against them according to law. This letter he caused to be put in his register, from whence I copied it, and have placed it in the Collection. Whether he procured this himself for a colour to excuse his proceedings; or whether it was sent to him by reason of his slackness, is not certain; but the latter is more probable, for he had burnt none during five weeks: but he soon redeemed that loss of time.

1555. Bonner grows unwilling to persecute any more, but is required to proceed by the King and Queen.

Collect. Numb. 20.

At this time the nation was in expectation of the Queen's delivery. And on the 3d of May the Bishop of Norwich wrote a letter to the Earl of Sussex, of which I have seen the original, that news was brought him from London, that the Queen had brought forth a noble prince; for which he had *Te Deum* solemnly sung in his cathedral, and in the other churches thereabout. He adds in the postscript, that the news was confirmed by two other hands. But though this was without any ground, the Queen continued still in her opinion that she was with child; and on the 29th of May, letters were written by the council to the Lord Treasurer, to have money in readiness, that those who were appointed to carry the joyful news of the Queen's happy delivery, might be speedily dispatched. In the beginning of June she was believed to be in labour, and it flew over London again that she had brought forth a son. The priests had settled all their hopes on that; so they did every where sing *Te Deum*, and were transported into no small ecstasies of joy. One more officious than the rest, made a sermon about it, and

The Queen's delivery is expected, but in vain.

described all the lineaments of their young Prince: but they soon found they were abused. It was said they had been deceived, and that the Queen had no great belly; but Melvil in his Memoirs says, he was assured from some of her women, that she did cast forth at several times some moles and unformed pieces of flesh. So now there were small hopes of any issue from her. This increased the sourness of her temper; and King Philip being so much younger than she, growing out of conceit with her, did not much care for her; but left her some months after. He saw no hope of children, and finding that it was not possible for him to get England into his hands without that, gave over all his designs about it: so having lived with her about fifteen months after their first marriage, he found it necessary to look more after his hereditary crown, and less after his matrimonial one; and henceforth he considered England rather as a sure ally, that was to adhere firmly to his interests, than as a nation which he could ever hope to add to his other crowns. All these things concurred to increase the Queen's melancholy humours, and did cast her into an ill state of health; so that it was not probable she could live long. Gardiner, upon that, set himself much to have the Lady Elizabeth put out of the way; but, as it was formerly said, King Philip preserved her.

And thus affairs went on, as to civil matters, till the meeting of the next parliament in October following. But I now return to the proceedings against the poor men called heretics; who were again, after a short intermission, brought to new sufferings. John Cardmaker, that had been a divinity reader at Saint Paul's, and a prebendary at Bath; and John Warne, an upholsterer in London, were both burnt in Smithfield on the 30th of May, for denying the corporal presence; being proceeded against *ex officio*. On the 4th of June there was a piece of pageantry acted on the body of one Tooly, who being executed for a robbery, did at his death say something that savoured of heresy: upon which the council wrote to Bonner to inquire into it, and to proceed according to the ecclesiastical laws. He thereupon formed a process, and cited the dead body to answer the

Proceedings against heretics.

PART II.

1555.

points objected to him; but he, to be sure, neither appearing nor answering, was condemned and burnt. After this, on the 10th of June, Thomas Hawkes, a gentleman in Essex, who had lived much in the court, was also burnt at Coxhall; and on the same day John Simpson and John Ardeley, two husbandmen, were also burnt in Essex. Thomas Watts, a linen-draper, was burnt at Chelmsford. On the 9th Nicholas Chamberlain, a weaver, was burnt at Colchester; and on the 15th Thomas Osmond, a fuller, was burnt at Manningtree; and the same day William Bamford, a weaver, was burnt at Harwich.

These, with several others, had been sent up by the Earl of Oxford to Bonner, because they had not received the sacrament the last Easter, and were suspected of heresy; and articles being given to them, they were upon their answers condemned, and sent to be burnt in the places where they had lived. But upon this occasion, the council fearing some tumult, or violent rescue, wrote to the Earl of Oxford and the Lord Rich, to gather the country, and see the heretics burnt. The Earl of Oxford, being some way indisposed, could only send his people to the Lord Rich, who went and obeyed the orders that had been sent him; for which letters of thanks were written to him; and the council understanding that some gentlemen had come to the burning at Colchester, that had not been written to, but, as the words of the letter have it, "had honestly and of themselves gone thither," wrote to the Lord Rich to give them the council's thanks for their zeal. I find in the council-books many entries made, of letters written to several counties, to the nobility and gentry to assist at these executions; and such as made excuses were always after that looked on with an ill eye, and were still under great jealousy.

The council wrote to the lords in Essex to gather the gentry and assist at these burnings.

Bradford's martyrdom.

After these followed the execution of Bradford in July. He had been condemned among the first, but was not burnt until now. He had been a prebendary at St. Paul's, and a celebrated preacher in the end of King Edward's days. He had preserved Bourn in the tumult at Paul's Cross; and that afternoon preaching at Bow-Church, he severely reproved the people for the disorder

at Paul's; but three days after was put in prison, where he lay, removed from one prison to another, nearly two years; wherever he came, he gained so much on the keepers, that they suffered him to preach, and give the sacrament to his fellow-prisoners. He was one of those that were carried before the council on the 22d of January, where Bonner accused him of the tumult at Paul's; though all he pretended to prove it by was, that his way of speaking to the people shewed he thought he had some authority over them, and was a presumption that he had set on the sedition. Bradford appealed to God, that he saw his innocency, and how unworthily he was requited for saving his enemies, who rendered him evil for good. At last, refusing to conform himself to the laws, he was condemned with the rest on the 31st of January, where that rescue was again laid to his charge, together with many letters he had written over England, which (as the Earl of Darby informed the parliament) had done more hurt than he could have done if he had been at liberty to preach. He said, since he understood they acted by a commission which was derived from the Pope, he could not answer them, having sworn never to acknowledge that authority. What he had done at Paul's was at Bourn's earnest desire, who prayed him, for the passion of Christ, to speak to the people; upon which he stepped up to the pulpit, and had almost been killed by the dagger that was thrown at Bourn, for it touched his sleeve. But in the points of religion, he professed his faith so constantly, that for that cause he was condemned. Yet the saving of Bourn was so publicly known, that it was thought indecent to proceed against him so quickly as they did with the rest. So both Heath, archbishop of York, and Day bishop of Chichester, Weston, Harpsfield, and the King's Confessor, and Alphonsus a Castro, went to see him, and endeavoured to gain him; but all to no purpose. It looks very ill in Bourn that he never interposed for Bradford, nor came once to visit him; and as, when Bradford was before the council, Bourn's brother the Secretary was very sharp upon him, so, when he was brought to his trial, Bourn himself, then bishop of Bath and Wells,

PART II.

1555.

being present, did not open his mouth for him, though he appealed to him, as to the business of the tumult. With Bradford one John Leaf, an apprentice nineteen years old, was led out to be burnt, who was also condemned upon his answers to the articles exhibited to him. When they came to the stake they both fell down and prayed. Then Bradford took a faggot in his hands and kissed it; and so likewise kissed the stake, expressing thereby the joy he had in his sufferings; and cried, "O England, repent, repent, beware of idolatry and false antichrists!" But the Sheriff hindering him to speak any more, he embraced his fellow-sufferer, and prayed him to be of good comfort, for they should sup with Christ that night. His last words were, "Strait is the way and narrow is the gate that leadeth into eternal life, and few there be that find it."

Now the persecution was carried on to other places, Bonner stopping it again. But Thornton, suffragan of Dover, Harpsfield, archdeacon of Canterbury, and some others, resolved likewise to shew their zeal. This Thornton had, from the first change made by King Henry, been the most officious and forward in every turn; and had been the first in this reign that had set up the mass at Canterbury. He was much despised for it by Cardinal Pole, but Pole could not hinder the fury of those men, without drawing on himself the Pope's indignation. The Pope was his professed and inveterate enemy; but knew not how to vent his hatred to him, since he had done such an eminent service to the church, as the reconciling of England. Gardiner, understanding this, sent secretly to Rome, to give ill characters of Pole, which the ill-natured Pope was ready enough to receive. Gardiner designed to be made a cardinal, and to get Pole recalled, and himself made archbishop of Canterbury. The Pope was resolved, on the first occasion, to take the legatine power from Pole, and give it to Gardiner; but Pole was so much in the Queen's favour, that this required some time to bring it about. This made Gardiner study to preserve Cranmer as long as he lived. It seemed more reasonable to have begun with him, who had indeed been the chief author of the Re-

formation, and promoter of that they called heresy; nor had Gardiner such kindness for him as to interpose on his account; but he knew, that as soon as he was burnt, Pole would be presently invested in the see of Canterbury. Therefore he suggested, that if he could be any way brought off, it would be the most effectual means possible to extirpate heresy: for if he, who had so much set on these doctrines, did forsake them, it would confound the whole party, and bring over at least all that were weak or staggering; whereas, on the other hand, if he died resolutely for it, his death would confirm them all very much. This was a colour good enough to preserve him. But why the see of Canterbury was not declared vacant, since he was now pronounced an obstinate heretic, I do not so well apprehend: whether there was any thing in the pall, or the later inventions of the canonists, that made it necessary not to fill his see so long as he lived, I knew not. Pole being in these circumstances, durst neither offend those at Rome, nor openly hinder the prosecution of heretics; which it seems he would have done more steadily, if it had not been for fear of the Pope's taking thereby advantages against him, who had before given out in the conclave, that he was a favourer of heresy; and therefore would the more easily be induced to believe any thing that might be written over to Rome to his prejudice.

Some burnt at Canterbury.

Those that sat in Canterbury to judge the heretics, had four men brought before them: two priests, Bland and Frankesh; and Sheterden and Middleton, two laymen. They were condemned upon their answers to the articles exhibited to them, and were burnt at Canterbury on the 12th of July; and, in the same month, Margery Polley was burnt at Tunbridge on the like account, who was the first woman that suffered in this reign. Christopher Ward was condemned with her, and burnt in Dartford. On the 22d of July Dirick Carver was burnt at Lewis; and on the 23d John Launder was burnt at Stening. They had been taken in London, and brought before Bonner; but he would not meddle with them, and desired they might be sent to their own ordinaries. One of them being of Surrey, was

PART II.

1555.

within Gardiner's jurisdiction, who resolved to proceed no more against the heretics; so he procured a letter from the council to Bonner, requiring him to proceed against them, who thereupon presently condemned them.

Pretended plots, and some put to the torture to make discovery.

There were at this time several discoveries of plottings in several counties, especially in Dorsetshire and Essex; but the nature of these plots is not set down in the council-books. Some were taken and put in the Tower. Two or three privy-counsellors were sent thither on the 9th of June, with a letter from the council to the Lieutenant of the Tower, to put them to the torture, according to their discretions; yet nothing following upon this, it is probable these were only surmises devised by the clergy, to set on the council more severely against them, whose ruin they were contriving by all the ways they could think on.

There was also an outrage committed on two friars, Peyto and Elston, who were Franciscans of the observance. They had spoken sharply against King Henry in the business of the divorce, and had fled beyond sea on that account; therefore the Queen had sent for them, and not only procured the attainder that had passed against them to be repealed in the last parliament, but made Peyto her confessor: and, being resolved to raise religious houses in England again, she had begun with their order, the Franciscans of the observance, and with their house at Greenwich, which was the first that was suppressed, as was shewn in the former book; and therefore she ordered that to be rebuilt this summer. So Elston and Peyto going down by water, there were stones flung at them by some that were ashore in London. This the Queen resented highly; so she sent the Lord Treasurer to the Lord Mayor, requiring him to make proclamation of a reward to any that should discover those who had done it; but it could not be found out. She ordered all Sir Thomas More's works to be printed together in one volume, which were in the press this year; and it was given out, as an extraordinary thing, that King Edward had died, and she succeeded to the crown, that very day in which he was beheaded. But, in publishing his works, one piece of fraud has

The Queen builds the Franciscans' house at Greenwich.

Sir Thomas More's works printed.

occurred to me since the former part was printed. I have seen the manuscript out of which his letters were printed, where the originals of the letters that he wrote to his daughter, Mrs. Roper, are; with the copies of those that he wrote to Cromwell. But among these, there is a long letter concerning the Nun of Kent, in which he speaks fully of her hypocrisy and other villanies. It contains many remarkable passages concerning her, of the high opinion he at first had of her; how he was led into it, and how he was afterwards convinced, "that she was the most false dissembling hypocrite that had been known, and guilty of the most detestable hypocrisy, and devilish dissembled falsehood; and he believed that she had communication with an evil spirit." This letter was at that time concealed, but not destroyed; so I find the conjecture I made about it in my former part has proved true; though I did not then hope to come by the letter itself, as I have done since. It seems it was resolved to raise the credit of that story; and since the Nun was believed to be both a martyr and a prophetess, it is like she might have been easily gotten to be canonized; and therefore so great a testimony from such a man was not thought fit to be left in her way. The letter I have put into the Collection.

But his letter about the Nun of Kent was left out.

Collect. Numb. 21.

Concerning this edition of Sir Thomas More's works, I shall recall to the reader's mind what was said in the former part about his life, pretended to be written by Rastal; who was now the publisher of his works, and so much encouraged in it, that the Queen promoted him soon after to be a judge; and so it is not likely that Rastal ever wrote any such book, otherwise he had now prefixed it to this edition. Nor is it probable that the stories, which Sanders vented in his name afterwards, concerning Ann Boleyn, or Queen Elizabeth's birth, were then so much as contrived; otherwise it is not credible, that they should not have been printed at this time; since the Lady Elizabeth being the only object of the fear and jealousy of the popish party, was now out of the Queen's favour, and a prisoner; so that we cannot doubt but all such stories would have been very

Rastal published his works, but did not write his life.

PART II.

1555.

acceptable to the Queen, and the clergy would have taken care to have published them, for the defaming her, and blasting her title. And therefore these things seem to be afterwards contrived in revenge, when Queen Elizabeth began to proceed severely against that party, after the many and repeated conspiracies they had engaged in against her life.

The Queen restores all the church-lands that belonged to the crown.

But now the Queen resolved to endow so many religious houses, as the revenues of the church that were in her hands, could maintain: and about that, and some other particulars, she writ some directions to the council with her own hand, which will be found in the Collections. I have seen two copies of these that differ a little, but I follow that which seemed to me to be best derived from the original. She desired, "That those who had commission to treat with the Cardinal, about the goods of the church, might wait on him once a week, to finish that and some other matters that were to be prepared for the parliament: she particularly recommended the care of having good preaching encouraged, which she wished might be well looked to; and she advised a general visitation, both of the universities and churches, to be made, by such as the Cardinal and they should think fit. As for the punishment of heretics, she wished it might not be done rashly; yet she would have justice done on those who by learning studied to deceive the simple: but would have it so managed, that the people might see, they were not condemned but upon just occasions: and therefore ordered that some of the council should be present at all the burnings about London, and that there should be every where good sermons at those times: she also verily believed, that many benefices should not be in one man's hand; but that every priest ought to look to his cure, and reside upon it. And she looked on the pluralities over England to be a main cause of the want of good preachers; whose sermons, if joined with a good example, would do much good; and without that, she thought their sermons would profit little."

Collect. Numb. 22.

More heretics burnt.

And now I return to the burnings, from which I am not unwilling frequently to break off, since a continued

relation of such things cannot be but an ungrateful entertainment to the reader. In July one Juxon was burnt at Chichester: on the 2d of August James Abeys was burnt at Bury in Suffolk. On the 8th of August Denly, a gentleman, was burnt at Uxbridge, and Robert Smith at Weybridge. On the 26th George Tankervil was burnt at St. Alban's. And on the 28th of August Patrick Packingham also was burnt there. On the 31st of August one Newman was burnt at Saffron Walden in Essex, and Robert Samuel a preacher was burnt at Ipswich. There were also in August six burnt in one fire in Canterbury. Elizabeth Warne burnt at Stratford-le-Bow, Stephen Harwood at Stratford, Thomas Fust at Ware, and William Hall at Barnet; but of their sufferings the days are not marked: and in this month of August, Richard Hook suffered at Chichester. In September, on the 6th day of the month, George Catmer and four others were burnt at Canterbury. On the 20th Robert Glover, a gentleman, and one Cornelius Bangey, were burnt at Coventry: the same month, but we know not on what days, William Allen was burnt at Walsingham, Roger Coo at Yerford, Thomas Cob in Thetford. Thomas Haywood and John Garaway, at Litchfield, were also burnt on the same account. On the 16th of October following, William Wolsey and Robert Pigot were burnt at Ely; where Shaxton (that had been bishop of Salisbury in King Henry's time, and quitted his bishoprick on the account of the six Articles, but in the end of that reign recanted, and was now suffragan to the Bishop of Ely) condemned them.* It is enough to have named all these, who were burnt merely by the proceedings *ex officio*; for being forced, either to accuse themselves, or to die however, they chose rather plainly to answer those articles that were ministered to them, and so were condemned for their answers.

Ridley and Latimer burnt at Oxford.

But on the 16th of October Ridley and Latimer offered up their lives at Oxford, on which it may be expected I should enlarge a little. The Bishops of Lin-

* Shaxton did not condemn them: Fuller, the bishop's chancellor, condemned them. Steyward dean of Ely, and Christopher dean of Norwich, with others, were in the commission, but the Chancellor was the chief.

PART II.

1555.

coln, Gloucester, and Bristol, were sent to Oxford by a special commission from the Cardinal to proceed against them. As soon as Ridley heard they proceeded in the name of the Pope, by authority from the Cardinal, he put on his cap, having stood bare-headed before that, because he would express no sign of reverence to those who acted by such a commission. He said, he paid great respect to the Cardinal as descended from the royal family, and a man endued with such learning and virtue; that therefore he honoured and reverenced him; but for his legatine authority from the Bishop of Rome, he utterly renounced it; and therefore would shew no reverence to that character: and so putting off his cap as he spoke of him on other respects, he put it on again when he named his being legate; and being required to put it off, refused to do it on that account: but one of the beadles did it for him. After that the Bishop of Lincoln made him a long exhortation to recant, and acknowledge the see of Rome; since Christ had built his church on St. Peter, and the fathers had all acknowledged the pre-eminence of that see, and himself had been once of that opinion. To which he answered, it was upon the faith which St. Peter confessed that Christ had founded his church; he acknowledged, the bishops of Rome had been held in great esteem, both for the dignity of the city, and the worthiness of the bishops that had sat in it; but they were only esteemed patriarchs of the west; and the church had not then thought of that power, to which they had since advanced themselves: he confessed he was once of their mind, but it was as St. Paul had been a persecutor: he had seen since such spots in the church of Rome, that he could never return to it. Upon this followed much discourse: in conclusion, they objected to him some articles, about those opinions which he had maintained a year and a half before that, in the schools; and required him to make his answers to them. He began with a protestation, that by answering them he did not acknowledge the Pope's authority; and then answered them as he had done before. Latimer used the like protestation and answers. So they were allowed one night's

respite to consider better, whether they would recant or not; but next day they appearing, and adhering to the answers they had made, were declared obstinate heretics, and ordered to be degraded, and so delivered over to the secular power.

After that, new attempts were made on Ridley to persuade him to accept of the Queen's mercy; but all being to no purpose, the writ was sent down to burn them. The night before the execution, Ridley was very joyful, and invited the Mayor and his wife, in whose house he was kept, to be at his wedding next day: at which when the Mayor's wife wept, he said he perceived she did not love him; but he told her, though his breakfast would be sharp, he was sure his supper would be sweet: he was glad to hear that his sister would come and see him die; and was in such composure of mind, that they were all amazed at it. Next morning being the 16th they were led out to the place of execution, which was before Baliol College: they looked up to the prison to have seen Cranmer; but he was then engaged in dispute with some friars, so that he was not in his window; but he looked after them with great tenderness, and kneeling down prayed earnestly, that God would strengthen their faith and patience in that their last but painful passage. When they came to the stake, they embraced one another with great affection, Ridley saying to Latimer, "Be of good heart, brother, for God will either assuage the fury of the flame, or enable us to abide it." Doctor Smith was appointed to preach, and took his text from these words, "If I give my body to be burnt, and have no charity, it profiteth nothing." He compared their dying for heresy to Judas's hanging himself; and warned the people to beware of them, with as much bitterness as he could express. The best of it was the sermon lasted not above a quarter of an hour. When he had done, Ridley was going to answer him; and the Lord Williams, that was appointed by the Queen to see the execution, was inclined to hear him: but the Vice-Chancellor said, except he intended to recant, he was not to be suffered to speak. Ridley answered, "He would never deny his Lord, nor those truths of

PART II.

1555.

his of which he was persuaded; God's will be done in him: he committed himself to God, who would indifferently judge all." Then he addressed himself to the Lord Williams, and said, "Nothing troubled him so much, as that he had received fines of some who took leases of him when he was bishop of London; and these leases were now voided: he therefore humbly prayed, that the Queen would give order, that those might be made good to the tenants, or that the fines might be restored out of his goods which he had left in his house, and were of far greater value than those fines would amount to; and that some pity might be had of Shipside his brother-in-law, who was turned out of a place he had put him in, and had now attended on him with great care." Then they both prayed and fitted themselves for the stake, Latimer saying to Ridley, "Be of good comfort, we shall this day light such a candle in England, as I trust by God's grace shall never be put out." Then gunpowder being hanged about their bodies in great quantities to hasten their death, the fire was put to, and Latimer was with the first flame, the powder taking fire, put out of pain, and died immediately. But Ridley had a more lingering torment, for they threw on the fire so much wood, that the flame could not break through it: so that his legs were almost consumed before this was observed, and then one opening the passage to the flame, it put an end to his life.

Thus died these two excellent bishops: the one for his piety, learning, and solid judgment, the ablest man of all that advanced the Reformation; and the other, for the plain simplicity of his life, esteemed a truly primitive bishop and Christian. Of his care of his bishoprick the instructions he gave at his visitation, chiefly of the monasteries, will give a good evidence: and therefore I have put them in the Collection, as they were copied from the register of Worcester, by that ingenious and worthy counsellor Mr. Summers; who, out of his zeal to the Reformation, searched all the books there, that he might gather from them such things as he thought could be of use to this work. Bonner had made an ill retribution to Ridley, for the kindness he had shewed

Collect. Numb. 23.

his friends when he was in possession at London: for he had made Bonner's mother always dine with him, when he lived in his country-house of Fulham, and treated her as if she had been his own mother; besides his kindness to his other friends. Heath, then bishop of Worcester, had him kept prisoner a year and a half in Ridley's house, where he lived as if he had been at his own; and Heath used always to call him the best learned of all the party: yet he so far forgot gratitude and humanity, that, though he went through Oxford when he was a prisoner there, he came not to see him. When they lay in the Tower, both Cranmer and they were, by reason of the number of prisoners, put into one chamber for some months; but after they came to Oxford, they could scarce send messages to one another: and men had laid off humanity so much, that all the while they lay there none of the University waited on them: few that favoured their doctrine were then left, and of the rest it is no wonder that none came to visit them; nor did they supply them with any thing they needed: for all the charity that was sent to them came from London.

Suits about the spoils of churches.

This summer there was a strict search made after all the goods of the church that had been embezzled; and all that had been visitors, either in King Henry or King Edward's time, were brought into suits about it; but many compounded, and so purchased their quiet, by an offer to the church of some large gratuity: and according to the greatness thereof their affection to the church was measured. Many of those did favour the Reformation, which made them give the more bountifully, that so they might come under good characters and be the less suspected.

The parliament was opened on the 21st of October. The Chancellor came thither, both then and on the 23d, but could come no more. It was reported, that he had stayed long for dinner that day that Ridley and Latimer were to be burned, till one should bring him word that the fire was set to them: but the messenger coming post, did not reach London till four o'clock in the afternoon, and that he then went cheerfully to dine; but was at dinner struck with the illness of which he

Gardiner's sickness and death.

PART II.

1555.

died. It was a suppression of urine, which held him till the 12th of November, on which he died. He had great remorse for his former life; and Day, bishop of Chichester, coming to him, and comforting him with the assurance of justification through the blood of Christ, he answered him, "He might speak of that to him, or others in his condition; but if he opened that gap again, and preached that to the people, then farewell altogether. He often repeated those words, *Erravi cum Petro, sed non flevi cum Petro*, I have erred with Peter, but I have not mourned with him." He was of a nobler descent than is commonly known. For though he took the name Gardiner from his supposed father, yet he was then believed to be the base son of Richard Woodvil, that was brother to Queen Elizabeth, wife to King Edward the Fourth: so that he was of kin to King Henry the Eighth in the second and third degree of consanguinity; which might be the cause that he was so suddenly advanced to the bishoprick of Winchester. This is mentioned by Sir Edward Hobby, in a letter he writ to one of those that fled beyond sea, giving him an account of his death: where he says of him, he was a man of higher descent than he was commonly reputed; and on the margin it is said, he was nephew to a Queen of England. This explains that which I find objected, both to him and Bonner, in one of the books that were written in the defence of the married clergy; that no wonder they were such enemies to marriage, since both of them were born in adultery. He was a man well skilled in the canon and civil laws, and moderately in divinity. He had a good style in Latin, and understood the Greek well; but his strength lay in deep dissimulation, a quickness of apprehension, a great prospect of affairs, a close and artificial way of concealing his mind, and insinuating himself into the affections and confidences of other persons. He did comply all Henry the Eighth's time; and would willingly have done the like in King Edward's time, but that Cranmer knew him too well to be directed by him, and handled him as he deserved. But the usage he then met with, so recovered him with Queen Mary, that she

put him in the greatest trusts; and now, when a cardinal's hat was like to fall on his head, he was carried off, and all his ambitious projects fell with him. Of his servile compliance in promoting King Henry's divorce, I have found fresh instances, besides those that are mentioned in the former volume. When he went to Rome, in the year 1529, Anne Boleyn writ a very kind letter to him, which I have put in the Collection. By it the reader will clearly perceive, that he was then in the secret of the King's designing to marry her as soon as the divorce was obtained. There is another particular in that letter, which corrects a conjecture which I set down in the beginning of the former book, concerning the cramp-rings that were blessed by King Henry; which I thought might have been done by him after he was declared Head of the Church. That part was printed before I saw this letter; but this letter shews they were used to be blessed before the separation from Rome; for Anne Boleyn sent them as great presents thither. The use of them had been (it seems) discontinued in King Edward's time; but now, under Queen Mary, it was designed to be revived; and the office for it was written out in a fair manuscript, yet extant; of which I have put a copy in the Collection. But the silence in the writers of that time makes me think it was seldom, if ever, practised.—But to return to Gardiner's officious compliance in the matter of the divorce, I have put in the Collection a letter of his to King Henry, written in such confidence to him, that even Cardinal Wolsey was not to see it. In it he sets out the Pope's timorousness so plainly, that he writes, he saw nothing but the fear he was in of the Emperor's forces kept him from granting what was desired; therefore he advised the King to do the business once in England, and then leave it to the Emperor to complain; not doubting but he would be put off by as many delays as were now used in the King's business.

Collect. Numb. 24.

Collect. Numb. 25.

Collect. Numb. 26.

Heath, archbishop of York, had the seals on the 1st of January; they having been, during that interval, in the hands of Sir Nicholas Hare, then master of the rolls; and he was made chancellor during the Queen's

PART II.

1555.

pleasure. The Queen also, considering that Whitehall had been taken from the see of York, had a scruple in her conscience against living in it; but Heath and she agreed it thus: Suffolk Place, by the Duke's attainder, was now in the Queen's hands; so she gave that to the see of York, which Heath sold, and converted it to tenements, and purchased another house near Charing Cross, which from thenceforward was called York House.

The temper of the parliament is much changed.

But, for the parliament, it was now much changed; men's minds were much alienated from the clergy, and also from the Queen, who minded nothing else but to raise them to great wealth and power again. On the 28th of October it was moved in the House of Commons to give a subsidy, and two fifteenths, for paying the debts of the crown; but it was opposed with great vehemence. It was said, that the Queen had profusely given away the riches of the crown, and then turned to the laity to pay her debts: why did she not rather turn to the spiritualty? But it was answered, that the convocation had given her a subsidy of 6*s.* in the pound; and the Queen asked now, after almost three years' reign, nothing but what she had discharged her subjects of at her first coming to the crown. Yet the heats grew such, that on the 1st of November Secretary Petre brought a message from her, that she thanked them that had moved two fifteenths for her, but she refused it: so the subsidy was agreed on. On the 29th of November the Queen sent for the House of Commons. When they were come, she said to them, she could not with a good conscience take the tenths and first-fruits of spiritual benefices: it was a tax her father laid on the clergy, to support his dignity of supreme head; of which, since she was divested, she would also discharge that. Then the Legate made a speech, to shew that tithes and impropriations of spiritual benefices were the patrimony of the church, and ought to return to it. The Queen upon that declared, that she would surrender them up likewise to the church. Then one Story, of the House of Commons, kneeled down, and said to the Queen, that the Speaker did not

The Queen discharges the clergy of tenths and first-fruits.

open to her their desire that licences might be restrained. This was a great affront to the Speaker; so he, returning to the House, complained of Story. This member thought he might assume more liberty; for in Edward the Sixth's time, when the bill for the first book of the English service passed, he spoke so freely against it, with such reflections on the King and the Protector, that he was put in the Serjeant's hands, and sent to the Tower. The words he said were, "Woe unto thee, O England, when thy king is a child;" and an impeachment was drawn against him. But upon his submission, the House ordered the privy-counsellors to declare to the Protector, that it was their resolution that he should be enlarged: and they desired that the King would forgive his offence against him and the council. Now he had indiscreetly appeared against all licences from Rome, thinking he had a privilege to talk more freely; but he confessed his fault, and the House, "knowing that he spake from a good zeal," forgave him. He was afterwards condemned for treason in Queen Elizabeth's reign.

Eccles. 10. 16.

Journ. Dom. Com.

On the 23d of November, the bill for suppressing the first-fruits and tenths, and the resigning up all impropriations, that were yet in the Queen's gift, to the church, to be disposed of as the Legate pleased, for the relief of the clergy, was brought into the House. It was once thought fit to have the surrender of impropriations left out: for it was said, the Queen might do that as well by letters patent; and if it were put into the bill, it would raise great jealousies; since it would be understood, that the Queen did expect that the subjects should follow her example: but it was resolved, by all means possible, to recover the tithes to the church; so it was put into the bill. It was long argued; some said, the clergy would rob the crown, and the nation both: and that the laity must then support the dignity of the realm. It was particularly committed to Sir William Cecil and others to be examined by them. On the 3d of December the House divided about it; 126 were against it, and 193 were for it.

There was a bill sent down against the Countess of

Against those that

PART II.

Sussex, who had left her husband and gone into France, where she lived openly in adultery, and bare children to others. A bill was put in, to the same purpose, in the first parliament of this reign, to take her jointure from her, and declare her children bastards; and was then cast out by the Commons; and had now again the same fate. Another bill was put in against the Dutchess of Suffolk and others, who had gone beyond sea, to require them to return, under severe punishments: but though it was agreed to by the Lords, yet, upon a division of the House of Commons, it was carried in the negative. The greatest and wealthiest of those who favoured the Reformation, seeing in how ill a condition they must be in if they stayed in England, were gone beyond sea: so it was now endeavoured to force them to return, or to make them lose their estates: but the Commons thought they had already consented to too severe laws against them, and therefore would add no more. The Dutchess of Suffolk had been persecuted while she was in the Netherlands, but narrowly escaped. Another bill was put in, for the incapacitating of several persons from being justices of the peace,* but was cast out by the Commons at the first reading. This was chiefly against such as were suspected of remissness in the prosecuting of heretics: but the Commons would do nothing to encourage that; nor was it necessary, since it was in the Queen's power to leave out of the commission such as she excepted to: but it shewed the zeal of some, who had a mind to recommend themselves by such motions.

1555. had fled beyond sea, rejected.

An act debarring one from the benefit of clergy.

There was a complaint put into the House of Commons, by the wife of one Rufford, against Bennet Smith, who had hired two persons to kill her husband: and which, as the act passed about it says, was one of the most detestable murders that had ever been known in England. But Smith, that had hired and afterwards paid the murderers, might by the law claim, and have the benefit of clergy. It is, and hath been, an ancient

* The bill was, that no servants to gentlemen, and wearing their clothes (except the king and queen's), should be justices. It was read the second time on the 12th of November.

custom in this nation, that for some crimes those who can read are not to suffer death. This was at first done with a declaration, that either they had vowed, or were then resolved, to enter into orders; which was the cause that no bigamy, that is, none that had been twice married, or such as married widows, were capable of it, because such could not receive orders; and the reading was only to shew that they were in some sort qualified for orders: though afterwards the reading, without any such vow or promise, was all that was required, to give one the benefit of clergy. This was granted as an appendix of the ecclesiastical immunity; for the churchmen were not satisfied that their own persons should be exempted from punishment, but would needs have all that resolved to come among them be likewise preserved from the punishment due to those crimes which they had formerly committed. So Rufford's wife petitioning, that Smith might by act of parliament be debarred that benefit, they sent her to the Queen, to beg that she would order Smith to be brought from the Tower, where he was then kept, to the bar of their House; which being done, the other partners and actors confessed all; and though he at first denied, yet he afterwards confessed. So the bill was sent up by the Commons to the Lords, where it was much opposed by the clergy, who would not consent that any diminution should be made of their ancient privileges; but the heinousness of the fact wrought so much on the greater part, that it was passed: the Earls of Arundel and Rutland, the Bishops of London, Worcester, Norwich, and Bristol, the Lords Abergaveny, Fitzwater, and Lumley, protesting. Pates was now bishop of Worcester, upon Heath's translation to York. He was (as some say) designed to be bishop of that see by King Henry, upon Latimer's resignation; but being engaged in a correspondence with the Pope and Cardinal Pole, he fled beyond sea. But the truth is, that, upon the death of Jerome de Ghinuci, he was at Rome made bishop of Worcester by the Pope, and was thereupon attainted; but his attainder had been repealed by the former parliament, and so he was restored to that see.

PART II.

1555. Sir Anthony Kingston put in the Tower for his behaviour in the House of Commons. Ex Lib. Concil.

On the 9th of December the parliament was dissolved. And the day following Sir Anthony Kingston, who had been a main stickler in it, and had one day taken the keys of the House from the Serjeant, which (it seems) was not displeasing to the major part of the House, since they did nothing upon it, was sent to the Tower: and that same day, (as it is in the council-books,) the Bishop of Ely delivered to the Lord Treasurer the Pope's bull, confirming the King and Queen's title to Ireland, bearing date the 7th of June. Kingston lay in the Tower till the 23d of the month, and then he submitted and asked pardon, and was discharged. But he was next year accused to have engaged in a design with some others to have robbed the Exchequer of 50,000*l.* and with it to have made a rebellion. Whereupon eight of them, Udal, Throgmorton, Perkham, Daniel, Stanton, Rosses, Bedyland, and Dethick, were tried and executed for high treason. What evidence was brought against them I do not know; but Kingston died on his way to London.

Cardinal Pole in convocation makes canons for reforming the clergy. Rot. Pat. 1st Par. 3. Reg.

From the parliament I turn next to the convocation, where the Cardinal was now at more liberty, being delivered from Gardiner's jealousies and opposition. He obtained from the Queen, on the 2d of November, a warrant under the great seal, giving him licence to hold a synod. The licence he had formerly taken out is made mention of; and to avoid all ambiguities which might arise from the laws or prerogatives of the crown, she authorized him to call that, or any other synod after, and to decree what canons he should think fit: she also authorized the clergy to meet, consent to, and obey those canons, without any danger of the law. This was thought safe on both sides; both for preserving the rights of the crown and securing the clergy from being afterwards brought within the statute of premunire, as they had been upon their acknowledging Cardinal Wolsey's legatine power. To this convocation Pole proposed a book he had prepared, which was afterwards printed with the title of "The Reformation of England by the Decree of Cardinal Pole," and is now put into the volumes of the councils.

1555. The heads of Pole's reformation.

The first decree is, that there should be constantly a remembrance of the reconciliation now made with Rome, in every mass; besides a procession, with other solemnities, on the anniversary of it. He also confirmed the constitutions of Otho, and Othobonus, forbidding the reading of all heretical books; and set forth the catholic faith, in the words of that exposition of it, which P. Eugenius sent from the Council of Florence to those of Armenia.

The 2d was, for the careful administering and preserving of the sacraments; and for the putting away of all feasting in the festivities of the dedications of churches.

The 3d exhorts the bishops to lay aside all secular cares, and give themselves wholly to the pastoral office; and to reside in their diocess, under the highest pains. Their canons are also required to reside, and also other clergymen. All pluralities of benefices with cure are simply condemned: and those who had more benefices with cure, were required within two months to resign all but one: otherwise it was to be declared that they had forfeited them all.

The 4th is, that whereas the residence of bishops could not be of great use, unless they became truly pastors to their flock; which was chiefly done by their preaching the word of God; that had been, contrary to the Apostles practice, much neglected by many: therefore he requires them to preach every Sunday or holyday; or if they were disabled, to find other fit persons to do it. And they were also in private to instruct and exhort their people; and all the other inferior clergy, and to endeavour to persuade them to the Catholic faith; or, if need were, to use threatenings. And because of the great want of good preachers, the Cardinal declared he would take care there should be homilies set out, for the instruction of the nation. In the mean while, every bishop was to be sending such as were more eminent in preaching over their diocess, thereby to supply the defects of the rest.

The 5th is, about the lives of the bishops; that they should be most strict and exemplary; that they should lay aside all pride and pomp; should not be clothed in

PART II.

1555.

silk, nor have rich furniture; and have frugal tables, not above three or four dishes of meat; and even so many he rather allows, considering the present time, than approves; that at their table the Scriptures, or other good books, should be read, mixed with pious discourses; that they should not have too great numbers of servants or horses: but that this parsimony might appear not to flow from avarice, they were to lay out the rest of their revenues on the poor, and for breeding young scholars, and other works of piety. All the same rules he sets to the inferior clergy, with a due proportion to their stations and profits.

The 6th is about giving orders; they were not to be rashly given, but upon a strict previous *examen*. Every one that was to be ordained, was to give in his name a long time before, that there might be time to inquire carefully about him. The bishops were charged not to turn over the examination upon others, and think their work was only to lay on their hands: but were to examine diligently themselves, and not superficially. And to call to their assistance such as they knew to be pious and learned, and in whom they might confide.

The 7th was about conferring benefices, which in some sort came also within that charge, "Lay hands suddenly on no man." They were to lay aside all partiality in their choice, and seek out the most deserving: and to make such as they put in benefices bind themselves by oath to reside.

The 8th was against giving the advousons of benefices before they were vacant.

The 9th was about simony.

The 10th against the alienations of any of the goods of the church.

The 11th was, that in every cathedral there should be a seminary for supplying the diocess: of whom two ranks were to be made; the one, of those who learned grammar; the other, of those who were grown up and were to be ordained Acolyths; and these were to be trained up in study and virtue, till they were fit to serve in the church. And a tax of the fourth penny was laid on the clergy for their maintenance.

The 12th was about visitations.

These were all finished, agreed to, and published by him in Febuary next year.

1555. Ex MSS. Col. C. C. Cant.

In these decrees mention is made of homilies, which were intended to be published: and among Archbishop Parker's papers I find the scheme he had of them was thus laid: he designed four books of homilies. The first, of the controverted points, for preserving the people from error: the second, for the exposition of the Creed, and Ten Commandments, the Lord's Prayer, the salutation of the Virgin, and the sacraments: the third was to be for the saints' days, and the Sundays and holy-days of the year; for explaining the epistles and gospels: and the fourth was concerning virtues and vices, and the rites and ceremonies of the church.

Pole's design's for reforming the church.

By all these it may appear, how well tempered this Cardinal was. He never set on the clergy to persecute heretics, but to reform themselves; as well knowing, that a strict exemplary clergy can soon overcome all opposition whatsoever, and bear down even truth itself. For the common people are generally either so ignorant, or so distracted with other affairs, that they seldom enter into any exact discussion of speculative points, that are disputed among divines: but take up things upon general notions and prejudices; and none have more influence on them, than the scandals or strict lives of churchmen. So that Pole, intending to correct all those, laid down good rules to amend their lives, to throw out those crying scandals of pluralities and non-residence; to oblige bishops to be exact in their examinations before orders, and in conferring benefices on the most deserving, and not to be biassed by partial affections. In this last thing himself was a great example. For though he had an only brother (so I find him called in one of the Cardinal's commissions to him with some others, though I believe he was a bastard brother), David,* that had continued all King Henry's time in his archdeaconry of

* Cardinal Pole had two brothers, Arthur and Jeffrey, both arraigned in the year 1562, for a conspiracy against Queen Elizabeth. David was not his brother, nor a bastard; for there is no bull of dispensation in his favour among those sent over at this time.

PART II.

1555.

Derby; he, either to punish him for his former compliance, or to shew he had no mind to raise his kindred, did not advance him, till after he had been two years in England: and then he gave him only the bishoprick of Peterborough, one of the poorest of the bishopricks; which, considering his nearness to the crown, and high birth, was a very small preferment. But above all, that design of his to have seminaries in every cathedral for the planting of the diocess, shews what a wise prospect he had of the right methods of recovering a church, which was overrun, as he judged, with heresy. It was the same that Cranmer had formerly designed; but never took effect. Certainly, persons formed from their childhood with other notions, and another method of living, must be much better fitted for a holy character than those that have lived in the pleasures and follies of the world; who, unless a very extraordinary change is wrought in them, still keep some of their old customs about them, and so fall short of that gravity and decency that becomes so spiritual a function.

He shewed the weakness of his spirit in one thing, that, being against cruel proceedings with heretics, he did not more openly profess it: but both suffered the other bishops to go on, and even in Canterbury, now sequestered in his hands, and soon after put under his care, he left those poor men to the cruelties of the brutal and fierce popish clergy. In this he was to be pitied, that he had not courage enough to contend with so haughty a pope as Paul the Fourth was: who thought of no other way of bearing down heresy, but by setting up the inquisition every where: so Pole, it seems, judged it sufficient for him, not to act himself, nor to set on any; and thought he did enough, when he discouraged it in private; but yet he granted commissions to the other bishops and archdeacons to proceed against those called heretics. He was not only afraid of being discharged of his legation, and of losing the archbishoprick of Canterbury, which was now ready to fall upon him; but he feared to be sent for to Rome, and cruelly used by the Pope, who remembered all the quarrels he formerly had with any of the cardinals, and

put Cardinal Merone (that was Pole's great friend) in prison, upon suspicion of heresy. All these things prevailed with Pole to give way to the persecution; and it was thought that he himself hastened the execution of Cranmer, longing to be invested with that see; which is the only personal blemish I find laid on him.

One remarkable thing of him was, his not listening to the proposition the Jesuits made him, of bringing them into England. That order had been set up about twelve years before this, and was in its first institution chiefly designed for propagating the doctrines of that church in heretical or infidel countries; to which was afterwards added, the education of children. It was not easily allowed of at Rome, because the bishops did universally complain of the great numbers of exempted regulars; and therefore at first it was limited to a small number; which restriction was soon taken off. They, besides the vows of other orders, took one for a blind and universal obedience to the see of Rome: and because they were much to be employed, they were dispensed with, as to the hours of the quire, which made them be called a mongrel order between the regulars and seculars. They have since that time, by their care in educating youth, by their indefatigable industry, and chiefly by their accommodating penances, and all the other rules of religion, to the humours and inclinations of those who confess their sins to them, drawn almost all the world after them: and are raised now to that height both of wealth and power, that they are become the objects of the envy and hatred of all the rest of their own church. They suggested to Pole, that whereas the Queen was restoring the goods of the church that were in her hands, it was but to little purpose to raise up the old foundations; for the Benedictine order was become rather a clog than a help to the church: they therefore desired that those houses might be assigned to them, for maintaining schools and seminaries, which they should set on quickly: and they did not doubt, but, by their dealing with the consciences of those who were a dying, they should soon recover the greatest part of the goods of the church. The Je-

PART II.

1555.

suits were out of measure offended with him, for not entertaining their proposition; which I gather from an Italian manuscript which my most worthy friend Mr. Crawford found in Venice, when he was chaplain there to Sir Thomas Higgins, his Majesty's envoy to that republic: but how it came that this motion was laid aside, I am not able to judge.

There passed nothing else remarkable this year, but that, in the end of November, John Web, a gentleman, George Roper, and Gregory Parke, were burnt all at one stake in Canterbury. And on the 18th of December, Philpot, that had disputed in the convocation, was burnt in Smithfield. He was, at the end of that meeting, put in prison for what he had said in it; though liberty of speech had been promised; and the nature of the meeting did require it. He was kept long in the stocks in the Bishop of London's coal-house, and many conferences were had with him, to persuade him to change. By what Bonner said in one of them, it appears that he hoped they should be better used upon Gardiner's death; for Bonner told him, he thought, because the Lord Chancellor was dead they would burn no more; but he should soon find his error, if he did not recant. He continued steadfast in his persuasion, and pleaded that he had never spoken nor written against their laws since they were made, being all the while a prisoner, except what he had said in conference with them; yet this prevailed not with Bonner, who had as little justice as mercy in his temper. On the 16th of December he was condemned and delivered to the sheriffs. He was at first laid in irons, because he was so poor that he could not fee the jailor; but next day these were by the sheriff's order taken off. As he was led into Smithfield, on the 18th, he kneeled down, and said, "I will pay my vows in thee, O Smithfield." When he was brought to the stake, he said, "Shall I disdain to suffer at this stake, since my Redeemer did not refuse to suffer on the cross for me?" He repeated the 106th, 107th, and 108th psalms, and then fitted himself for the fire, which consumed him to ashes. So this year ended, in which there were sixty-seven burnt

Philpot's martyrdom.

for religion; and of those four were bishops, and thirteen were priests.

1556. Foreign affairs.

In Germany a diet was held at Augsburg, where the peace of Germany was fully settled: and it was decreed, that the princes of the Augsburg Confession should have the free liberty of their religion; and that every prince might, in his own state, establish what religion he pleased; excepting only the ecclesiastical princes, who were to forfeit their benefices if they turned. Those of Austria, and Ferdinand's other hereditary dominions, desired freedom for their consciences; but Ferdinand refused it; yet he appointed the chalice to be given in the sacrament. The Duke of Bavaria did the like in his dominions. At all this the Pope was highly offended, and talked of deposing Ferdinand. He had nothing so much in his mouth, as the authority former popes had exercised, in deposing princes at their pleasure. He had sworn to the cardinals, before he was chosen, that he would make but four cardinals in two years; but he created seven within one half year, and would not hear the consistory argue against it, or remember him of his promise; but said, his power was absolute, and could not be limited. One of these cardinals was Gropper, the Dean of Colen, a man of great learning and virtues, but inconstant and fearful, as was shewn in the former book: he refused to accept of that dignity so generally sought after in their church; and was more esteemed for rejecting it, than others were that had by their ambition aspired to it.

Charles the Fifth's resignation.

In the end of this year, and the beginning of the next, a memorable thing fell out; of which if I give a large account, I do not fear to be much censured by the reader for it; especially since it is not impertinent to this work, the King and Queen being so much concerned in it. It was Charles the Fifth's laying down, first some of his hereditary dominions in October this year; and the rest, with the empire, not long after. He had now enjoyed, the one forty years, and the other thirty-six. He was much disabled by the gout, which had held him, almost constantly, for several years; he had been in the greatest fatigues that ever

PART II.

1556.

any prince had undergone ever since the seventeenth year of his age: he had gone nine times into Germany, six times into Spain, seven times into Italy, four times into France; had been ten times in the Netherlands, had made two expeditions into Africa, and been twice in England, and had crossed the seas eleven times. He had not only been a conqueror in all his wars, but had taken a pope, a King of France, and some Princes of Germany, prisoners, besides a vast accession of wealth and empire from the West Indies. But he now growing out of love with the pomp and greatness of the world, began to have more serious thoughts of another life; which were much increased in him by the answer one of his captains gave him, when he desired leave to retire, and being asked the reason, said, that between the affairs of the world, and the hour of death, there ought to be some interval. He found his fortune turned; his designs in Germany were blasted: in the siege of Mentz, he saw he could no more command triumphs to wait on him; for though his army consisted of one hundred thousand men, yet he was forced to raise his siege with the loss of forty thousand men: and though his wars had been this year more successful, both in Italy and Flanders, yet he thought he was too old to deal with the King of France. It was thought his son set this forward; who had left England in discontent; being weary both of his Queen, and of holding a titular crown, only in her right, being excluded from the government. All these things concurring, made the Emperor, in a solemn assembly at Brussels, on the 25th of October, in the presence of his son, and Maximilian, King of Bohemia, and of the Duke of Savoy, and his two sisters, the Queens Dowager of France and Hungary, with a vast number of others of lower quality, first give his son the golden fleece, and so resign the headship of that order to him; and then, the dukedoms of Burgundy and Brabant, and the other provinces of the Netherlands. Two months after that, he resigned all his other hereditary dominions; and the next year he sent a resignation of the empire to the diet, who thereupon did choose his brother Ferdi-

nand emperor; to which the Pope made great exceptions; for he said, the resignation ought to have been only to him, and that being made as it was, it was null; and upon that he would not acknowledge the new emperor.

Charles stayed some time in Flanders in a private house; for he left all his palaces; and had but little company about him. It is said, that when Seld, his brother's secretary, being sent to him, was leaving him once late at night, all the candles on the stairs being burnt out, and none waiting to light him down, the late Emperor would needs carry the candle down after him: the other, as may be well imagined, being much confounded at it, the Emperor told him, he was now a private man: and his servants knowing there was nothing now to be had by attending, did not wait carefully. He bid him tell his brother what a change he had seen in him, and how vain a thing the attendance of courtiers was; since he was so soon forsaken by his own servants. He reserved but one hundred thousand crowns a year for his own use, and sixty servants. But at his coming into Spain, he found even that small pension was not readily paid; at which he was observed to be much displeased. He retired to a place in the confines of Castile and Portugal, which he had observed in his hunting, to be fit for a retreat, by reason of the pleasantness of the situation, and the temperateness of the air: and there he had ordered a little apartment of seven rooms, fourteen feet square, to be built for him. He kept only twelve servants about himself, and sent the rest to stay in the neighbouring towns.

He gave himself at first much to mechanical curiosities, and had great varieties of clocks, and some other motions, which surprised the ignorant monks, who were afraid they were the performances of magic; especially his machines of birds of wood that did fly out and come back, and the representations of armies, that by springs engaged and fought. He also designed that great work of carrying the Tago up a hill near Toledo; which was afterwards done at a vast charge.

PART II.

1556.

He gave himself to gardening, and used to graft and imp with his own hand; and keeping but one horse, rode abroad sometimes, attended only by one footman.

The making of clocks was not then so perfect as it is since; so that he could never bring his clocks to strike in the same minute: and he used upon that to say, he saw the folly of endeavouring to bring all men to be of the same mind in religion, since he could not bring machines to agree exactly.

He set himself also much to study; and in the second year of his retirement, went oftener to the chapel, and to the sacrament, than he had done at first: he used also to discipline himself with a cord, which, after his death, having some marks of the severity he had put himself to, was laid up among his son's chiefest rarities. But amidst all this, it was believed he became in most points to be of the belief of the protestants before he died: and as his confessor was burnt afterwards for heresy, so Miranda, the archbishop of Toledo, who used to come often to him, was upon the same suspicions kept long in prison. Near the end of two years, at the anniversary of his mother's funeral, who had died but a few years before, having lived long mad, he took a conceit, that he would see an obit made for himself, and would have his own funeral rites performed; to which he came himself with the rest of the monks, and prayed most devoutly for the rest of his own soul; which set all the company on weeping. Two days after he sickened of a fever, of which he died on the 21st of September, 1558: a rare and great instance of a mind surfeited with the pomps and glories of the world, seeking for that quiet in retirement, which he had long in vain searched after in palaces and camps.

Cranmer's trial.

And now I return to the affairs of England. The 21st of March was Cranmer brought to the end of all his afflictions, and received his crown. On the 12th of September, the former year, Brooks, bishop of Gloucester, came to Oxford, as the Pope's sub-delegate: and Martin and Story, commissioners from the King and Queen, sat with him in St. Mary's to judge him.

When he appeared before them, he paid a low reverence to them that sat in the King and Queen's name; but would give none to Brooks, since he sat by an authority from the Pope, to which he would pay no respect. Then Brooks made a long speech, to set forth his apostacy and heresy, his incontinence, and finally his treason; and exhorted him to repent; and insinuated to him great hopes of being restored to his see upon it. After this, Martin made a speech of the difference between the civil and ecclesiastical authority.

When they had done, Cranmer first kneeled down, and said the Lord's Prayer; next he repeated the Apostles' Creed: then he told them he would never acknowledge the Bishop of Rome's authority; he owned his allegiance to the crown, according to the oath he had often sworn; and the submitting to the Pope was directly contrary to that: he could not serve two masters. He said, the Bishops of Rome not only set up pretensions that were contrary to the power of princes, but they had also made laws contrary to those made by God: instancing it in the worship of an unknown tongue, the denying the chalice to the people, the pretending to dispose of crowns, and exalting themselves above every creature; which shewed them not to be the vicars of Christ, but to be antichrists, since all these things were manifestly contrary to the doctrine of Christ, that was delivered in the gospel. He remembered Brooks, that he had sworn to the King's supremacy. Brooks said, it was to King Henry the Eighth, and that Cranmer had made him swear it. To which Cranmer replied, that he did him wrong in that; for it was done in his predecessor Warham's time, who had asserted the King's supremacy; and it was also sent to be discussed in the Universities, and they had set their hands and seals to it; and that Brooks, being then a doctor, had signed it with the rest: so that all this being done before he came to be archbishop, it ought not to be called his deed.

After this, Story made another speech of the authority of the church, magnifying the see of Rome, and enlarging on those arguments commonly insisted on; and desired

PART II.

1556.

Brooks would put Cranmer to make a plain answer, and cut off all debates. Then followed a long discourse between Martin and Cranmer; in which Martin objected that he had once sworn to the Pope when he was consecrated, but that, aspiring to be archbishop, he had changed his mind in compliance to King Henry: that he had condemned Lambert of heresy, for denying the presence of Christ in the sacrament, and afterwards turned to that himself. To all this Cranmer answered, pretending that never man came more unwillingly into a bishoprick than he did to his. That he was so far from having aspired to it, that though the King had sent one post to him to come over to be consecrated, he being then in Germany, yet he had delayed his journey seven weeks, hoping that in all that time the King might have forgot him: that at his consecration he publicly explained his meaning in what sense he swore to the Pope, so that he did not act deceitfully in that particular: and that when he condemned Lambert, he did then believe the corporal presence; which he continued to do, till Dr. Ridley shewed him such reasons and authorities as persuaded him to change his mind, and then he was not ashamed to retract his former opinion. Then they objected his having been twice married, his keeping his wife secretly in King Henry's time, and openly in King Edward's reign; his setting out heretical books and articles, and compelling others to subscribe to them; his forsaking the catholic church, and denying Christ's presence in the sacrament of the altar; and disputing against it so publicly lately at Oxford. He confessed his living in marriage, and that he thought it was lawful for all men to marry; and that it was certainly better to do so, than to lie with other men's wives, as many priests did: he confessed all the other articles, only he said, he had never forced any to subscribe.

After this, Brooks made a long speech to him, with many of the common arguments concerning the Pope's power, and the presence in the sacrament: to which Cranmer made another large answer. Then many witnesses were examined upon the points they had heard

Cranmer defend in the schools; and in conclusion they cited him to appear before the Pope within eighty days, to answer for all those things which were now objected to him. He said, he would do it most willingly, if the King and Queen would send him; but he could not go, if he were still detained a prisoner.

After this he was sent back to prison, where he lay till the 14th of February this year; and then Bonner and Thirleby were sent down to degrade him. Bonner desired this employment, as a pleasant revenge on Cranmer, who had before deprived him; but it was forced on the other, who had lived in great friendship with Cranmer formerly, and was a gentle and good-natured man, but very inconstant and apt to change. They had Cranmer brought before them, and then they caused to read their commission, which declared him *contumax* for not coming to Rome, and required them to degrade him. They clothed him in pontifical robes, a mitre and the other garments, with a crosier in his hand; but the robes were made of canvass, to make him shew more ridiculous in them. Then Bonner made a speech full of jeers; "This is the man that despised the Pope, and is now judged by him: this is the man that pulled down churches, and is now judged in a church: this is the man that contemned the sacrament, and is now condemned before it:" with other such expressions, at which Thirleby was much offended, and pulled him off by the sleeve, desiring him to make an end; and challenged him afterwards, that he had broke the promise he had made to him before, of treating him with respect. And he was observed to weep much all the while: he protested to Cranmer, that it was the most sorrowful action of his whole life, and acknowledged the great love and friendship that had been between them; and that no earthly consideration, but the Queen's command, could have induced him to come and do what they were then about: he shed so many tears, that oft he stopped, and could not go on in his discourse for the abundance of them. But Cranmer said, his degradation was no trouble to him at all; he reckoned himself as long ago cut off from all depend-

PART II.

1556.

ance and communion with the see of Rome; so their doing it now with so much pageantry did not much affect him; only he put in an appeal from the Pope, to the next free general council: he said, he was cited to Rome, but all the while kept a prisoner; so there was no reason to proceed against him in his absence, since he was willing to have gone thither and defended his doctrine: he also denied any authority the Pope had over him, or in England; and therefore appealed from his sentence. But notwithstanding that, he was degraded, and all that ludicrous attire was taken piece after piece from him, according to the ceremonies of degradation, which are in use in the church of Rome.

He is degraded.

But there were new engines contrived against him. Many had been sent to confer with him, both English and Spanish divines, to persuade him to recant: he was put in hopes of life and preferment again, and removed out of prison to the dean's lodgings at Christ Church; where all the arguments that could be invented, were made use of to turn him from his former persuasion: and, in conclusion, as St. Peter himself had with curses denied his Saviour, so he who had resisted now almost three years, was at last overcome; and human infirmity, the fears of death, and the hopes that were given him, prevailed with him to set his hand to a paper, renouncing all the errors of Luther and Zwinglius, acknowledging the Pope's supremacy, the seven sacraments, the corporal presence in the eucharist, purgatory, prayer for departed souls, the invocation of saints; to which was added, his being sorry for his former errors; and concluded, exhorting all that had been deceived by his example or doctrine, to return to the unity of the church; and protesting that he had signed it willingly, only for the discharge of his own conscience.

He recants.

Fox, and other later writers from him, have said, that one reason of this compliance was, that he might have time to finish his answer to Gardiner's book, against that which he had written concerning the sacrament: and Fox has printed the letter which he avouches to prove this by. But the good man (it seems), read the letter very carelessly; for Cranmer says no such thing

in it; but only, that he had appealed to the next general council, to try if that could procure him a longer delay, in which he might have time to finish his book: and between these two there is a great difference. How long this was signed before his execution, I find it no where marked, for there is no date put to his subscription.

Cranmer's recantation was presently printed, and occasioned almost equally great insultings on the one hand, and dejection on the other. But the Queen was not at all wrought on by it; and was now forced to discover that her private resentments governed her in this matter, which before she had disowned. She was resolved he should be made a sacrifice for giving the judgment of divorce in her mother's marriage; and though hitherto she had pretended only zeal for religion, yet now when that could be no more alleged, yet she persisted in her resolution of having him burnt: she said, since he had been the great promoter of heresy that had corrupted the whole nation, that must not serve his turn which would be sufficient in other cases; it was good for his own soul, and might do good to others, that he repented: but yet she ordered the sentence to be executed. The writ went out the 24th of February, which will be found in the Collection. Heath took care not only to enrol the writ, but the warrant sent to him for issuing it, which is not ordinary. It is like he did it to leave it on record to posterity; that he did it not in course, as he did other writs, but had a special order from the Queen for it. The long time that passed between the date of the writ, and the execution of it, makes it probable that he made the formerly-mentioned recantation after the writ was brought down; and that the fears of death, then before his eyes, did so work on him, that he signed the writing: but when the second order was sent down to execute the former, he was dealt with to renew his subscription, and then to write the whole over again, which he also did; all this time being under some small hopes of life: but conceiving, likewise, some jealousies that they might burn him, he writ secretly a paper, containing a sincere

Collect. Numb. 27.

PART II.

1556.

confession of his faith, such as flowed from his conscience, and not from his weak fears; and being brought out, he carried that along with him. He was carried to St. Mary's, and set on a place raised higher for him, to be more conspicuously seen. Cole, provost of Eaton, preached: he ran out in his sermon on the mercy and justice of God, which two attributes do not oppose or jostle out one another: he applied this to princes that were gods on earth, who must be just as well as merciful; and therefore they had appointed Cranmer that day to suffer: he said, it was he that had dissolved the marriage between the Queen's father and mother, had driven out the Pope's authority, had been the fountain of all the heresies in England; and since the Bishop of Rochester and Sir Thos. More had suffered for the church, it was meet that others should suffer for heresy: and as the Duke of Northumberland had suffered in More's room, so there was no other clergyman that was equal or fit to be balanced with Fisher but he. Then he turned to Cranmer, and magnified his conversion, which he said was the immediate hand of God; that none of their arguments had done it, but the inward working of God's Spirit: he gave him great hopes of heaven, and assured him there should be dirges and masses said for his soul, in all the churches in Oxford.

All this while Cranmer expressed great inward confusion, lifting up his eyes often to heaven, and then letting them fall downward, as one ashamed of himself; and he often poured out floods of tears. In the end, when Cole bid him declare his faith, he first prayed, with many moving expressions of deep remorse and inward horror. Then he made his exhortation to the people; First, "Not to love or set their hearts on the things of the world: to obey the King and Queen out of conscience to God: to live in mutual love: and to relieve the poor according to their abundance. Then he came to that on which, he said, all his past life, and that which was to come, did hang; being now to enter either into the joys of heaven, or the pains of hell. He repeated the Apostle's Creed, and declared his belief of the Scriptures; and then he spake to that which, he

said, troubled his conscience more than any thing he had ever done in his whole life: which was, the subscribing a paper contrary to the truth, and against his conscience, out of the fear of death and the love of life; and when he came to the fire, he was resolved that hand that had signed it should burn first. He rejected the Pope as Christ's enemy and antichrist; and said, he had the same belief of the sacrament, which he had published in the book he wrote about it."

Upon this, there was a wonderful confusion in the assembly: those who hoped to have gained a great victory that day, seeing it turning another way, were in much disorder; they called to him to dissemble no more: he said, he had ever loved simplicity, and, before that time, had never dissembled in his whole life. And going on in his discourse, with abundance of tears, they pulled him down, and led him away to the stake, which was set in the same place where Ridley and Latimer were burnt. All the way the priests upbraided him for his changing; but he was minding another thing.

He suffers martyrdom with great constancy of mind.

When he came to the stake he first prayed, and then undressed himself; and being tied to it, as the fire was kindling, he stretched forth his right hand towards the flame, never moving it, save that once he wiped his face with it, till it was burnt away; which was consumed before the fire reached his body. He expressed no disorder for the pain he was in; sometimes saying, "that unworthy hand!" and oft crying out, "Lord Jesus receive my spirit." He was soon after quite burnt.

But it was no small matter of astonishment, to find his heart entire, and not consumed among the ashes; which, though the reformed would not carry so far as to make a miracle of it, and a clear proof that his heart had continued true, though his hand had erred; yet they objected it to the papists, that it was certainly such a thing, that if it had fallen out in any of their church, they had made it a miracle.

His character.

Thus did Thomas Cranmer end his days, in the sixty-seventh year of his age. He was a man raised of God for great services; and well fitted for them. He was na-

PART II.

1556.

turally of a mild and gentle temper, not soon heated, nor apt to give his opinion rashly of things, or persons: and yet his gentleness, though it oft exposed him to his enemies, who took advantages from it to use him ill, knowing he would readily forgive them, did not lead him into such a weakness of spirit, as to consent to every thing that was uppermost: for as he stood firmly against the six articles in King Henry's time notwithstanding all his heat for them; so he also opposed the Duke of Somerset in the matter of the sale and alienation of the chantry lands, and the Duke of Northumberland during his whole government; and now resisted unto blood: so that his meekness was really a virtue in him, and not a pusillanimity in his temper. He was a man of great candour; he never dissembled his opinion, nor disowned his friend: two rare qualities in that age, in which there was a continued course of dissimulation, almost in the whole English clergy and nation, they going backward and forward, as the court turned. But this had got him that esteem with King Henry, that it always preserved him in his days. He knew, what complaints soever were brought against him, he would freely tell him the truth; so instead of asking it from other hands, he began at himself. He neither disowned his esteem of Queen Anne, nor his friendship to Cromwell, and the Duke of Somerset in their misfortunes; but owned, he had the same thoughts of them in their lowest condition that he had in their greatest state.

He, being thus prepared by a candid and good nature, for the searches into truth, added to these a most wonderful diligence; for he drew out of all the authors that he read, every thing that was remarkable, digesting these quotations into common places. This begat in King Henry an admiration of him: for he had often tried it, to bid him bring the opinions of the fathers and doctors upon several questions; which he commonly did in two or three days' time: this flowed from the copiousness of his common-place books. He had a good judgment, but no great quickness of apprehension, nor closeness of style, which was diffused and unconnected: therefore when any thing was to be penned that required more

nerves, he made use of Ridley. He laid out all his wealth on the poor, and pious uses: he had hospitals and surgeons in his house for the king's seamen; he gave pensions to many of those that fled out of Germany into England; and kept up that which is hospitality indeed at his table, where great numbers of the honest and poor neighbours were always invited, instead of the luxury and extravagance of great entertainments, which the vanity and excess of the age we live in, has honoured with the name of hospitality, to which too many are led by the authority of custom to comply too far. He was so humble and affable, that he carried himself in all conditions at the same rate. His last fall was the only blemish of his life; but he expiated it, with a sincere repentance, and a patient martyrdom. He had been the chief advancer of the Reformation in his life; and God so ordered it, that his death should bear a proportion to the former parts of his life, which was no small confirmation to all that received his doctrine, when they heard how constantly he had at last sealed it with his blood. And though it is not to be fancied that King Henry was a prophet, yet he discovered such things in Cranmer's temper as made him conclude he was to die a martyr for his religion: and therefore he ordered him to change his coat of arms and to give pelicans instead of cranes, which were formerly the arms of his family: intimating withal, that as it is reported of the pelican, that she gives her blood to feed her young ones; so he was to give his blood for the good of the church. That King's kindness to him subjected him too much to him; for great obligations do often prove the greatest snares to generous and noble minds. And he was so much over-borne by his respects to him, and was so affected with King Henry's death, that he never after that shaved his beard, but let it grow to a great length: which I the rather mention, because the pictures that were afterwards made for him, being taken according to what he was at his death, differ much from that which I have put in my former volume. Those who compared modern and ancient times, found in him so many and excellent qualities, that they did not doubt to compare him to the greatest of

PART II.

1556.

the primitive bishops; not only to the Chrysostoms, Ambroses, and Austins, but to the fathers of the first rate that immediately followed the apostles, to the Ignatiuses, Policarps, and Cyprians. And it seemed necessary that the reformation of this church, which was indeed nothing else but restoring of the primitive and apostolical doctrine, should have been chiefly carried on by a man so eminent in all primitive and apostolical virtues. And to those who upbraided the reformed with his fall, it was answered, that Liberius, whom they so much magnify, had fallen as foully upon a much slighter temptation, only out of a desire to re-enter to his see, from which he had been banished, and that he persisted much longer in it.

Others suffered on the like account.

But now I shall give account of the rest that were burnt this year. On the 27th of January, Tho. Wirtle a priest, Bartlet Green a gentleman, Tho. Brown, John Tudson, and John Went, three tradesmen, Isabel Foster, and Joan Warne, having all been presented because they came not to church; articles were put to them, and upon their answers they were all condemned, and burnt in Smithfield at the same stake. And on the 31st of that month, John Lomas, and four women, were burnt at Canterbury. They were presented, because they came not to confession; whereupon articles being given them, they were found guilty of heresy, and burnt in one fire. In the beginning of March, two women were burnt at Ipswich: three tradesmen were burnt in Salisbury on the 24th of March. On the 29th of April, Robert Drakes a priest, William Tyms a deacon, and four tradesmen that were sent out of Essex, because they came not to church, were condemned, and all burnt together in Smithfield. John Hanpole, and Joan Booek, were burnt at Rochester on the 1st of April: and on the 2d John Hallier, a priest, was burnt in Cambridge.

Six tradesmen were sent up from Colchester: and the Bishop of London, who had hitherto kept his prisoners for some time to see if he could prevail with them, growing weary of that fruitless labour, and becoming by many acts of cruelty less sensible of those affections which belong to human nature, did without any more

ado exhibit the articles to them; and they answering in the way he accounted heresy, he gave them time to consider if they would recant, till the afternoon; but they continuing in the same mind, he condemned them, and sent them back to Colchester, where they were all burnt in one fire.

On the 15th of May he gave yet a more astonishing instance of his barbarity. Laverock an old cripple, a man of sixty-eight years old, and John Apprice, a blind man, were upon the like account condemned, and burnt in the same fire at Stratford-le-Bow; they comforting one another, that they were now to be freed of their lameness, and blindness. The day after three women were burnt in Smithfield; another blind man, with a tradesman, were burnt at Gloucester this month. On the 21st of the month three were burnt at Beckles, in Suffolk. On the 6th of June, four men were burnt at Lewes, in Sussex. Another was burnt there on the 20th, and one was burnt at Leicester on the 26th. But on the 27th of June, Bonner made an unheard of execution of thirteen, whereof eleven were men, and two women, all burnt in one fire in Stratford-le-Bow. He had condemned in all sixteen, but by what intercession I do not know, three of them were preserved by a warrant from Cardinal Pole. It seems Bonner thought it not worth the while, to burn those singly, and therefore sent them in such droves to the stake: but whether the horror of this action, or the discontent, because the Cardinal had saved some of them, wrought on him, I know not; the latter being the more likely; he burnt no more till April next year.

A strange barbarity at Guernsey of burning a child, born in the fire.

The 30th of June, three were burnt at Bury, in Suffolk: on the 16th of July, three men were burnt at Newbury. But this July there was done in Guernsey an act of as great inhumanity, as ever was recorded in any age. A mother and her two daughters, were burnt as the same stake; and one of them a married woman, big with child, when she was in the fire, the violence of it bursting her belly, a boy fell out into the flame, that was snatched out of it by one that was more merciful than the rest: but, after they had a little consulted about it, the infant

PART II.

1556.

was thrown in again, and there was literally baptized with fire. There were many eye-witnesses of this, who attested it afterwards in Queen Elizabeth's time, when the matter was inquired into, and special care was taken to have full and evident proofs of it. For, indeed, the fact was so unnatural, that a man must either be possessed with a very ill opinion of the actors, or be well satisfied about the number and credibility of the witnesses, before he could believe it. But lies and forgeries are seldom made of actions done in the face of the sun, and before so great an assembly as was present at this. Therefore complaint being made of it to Queen Elizabeth, the dean of Guernsey was put in prison for it; and afterwards, he, and nine more, that were all accessary to it, took out their pardons. So merciful was the government then, to pardon an action of such a monstrous nature, because done with some colour of law; since it was said, the mother was condemned to be burnt, and no exception was made of her belly. On the 18th of July, two women and one man were burnt at Greenstead. On the 1st of August, Joan Wast, a blind woman, was burnt at Derby. On the 8th of September, one was burnt at Bristol; and another in the same place on the 25th of that month. On the 24th, four were burnt at Mayfield, in Sussex. On the 27th, a man and a woman were burnt at Bristol: and on the 12th of October, a man was burnt at Nottingham: and thus ended the burning this year: those that suffered were in all eighty-five. All these persons were presented as suspect of heresy, and were required to answer the questions that the Bishop put to them; which related to the corporal presence in the sacrament, the necessity of auricular confession, or the sacrifice of the mass; and upon the answers they made, were condemned to the fire: but none of them were accused of any violence committed on the persons of any churchman, or of any affront put on their religion; and all their sufferings were merely for their conscience, which they kept as private as they could: so that it rather appeared in their abstaining from the communion of a church, which, they thought, had corrupted the chief parts of worship, than in any thing

they had said or done. It was an unusual and an ungrateful thing to the English nation, that is apt to compassionate all in misery, to see four, five, six, seven, and once thirteen burning in one fire: and the sparing neither sex nor age, nor blind nor lame, but making havoc of all equally, and above all the barbarity of Guernsey, raised that horror in the whole nation, that there seems ever since that time such an abhorrence to that religion, to be derived down from father to son, that it is no wonder an aversion so deeply rooted, and raised upon such grounds, does, upon every new provocation or jealousy of returning to it, break out in most violent and convulsive symptoms.

The Reformation spreads for all the persecution.

But all those fires did not extinguish the light of the Reformation, nor abate the love of it. They spread it more, and kindled new heats in men's minds; so that what they had read of the former persecutions under the heathens, seemed now to be revived. This made those who loved the gospel meet often together, though the malice of their enemies obliged them to do it with great caution and secresy: yet there were sometimes at their meetings about two hundred. They were instructed and watched over by several faithful shepherds, who were willing to hazard their lives in feeding this flock committed to their care. The chief of these were Scambler and Bentham, afterwards promoted by Queen Elizabeth to the sees of Peterborough and Litchfield: Foule, Bernher, and Rough, a Scotchman, that was afterwards condemned, and burnt by Bonner. There was also care taken, by their friends beyond sea, to supply them with good books, which they sent over to them for their instruction and encouragement. These that fled beyond sea, went at first for the most part to France, where, though they were well used, in opposition to the Queen, yet they could not have the free exercise of their religion granted them: so they retired to Geneva, and Zurich, and Arraw, in Switzerland; and to Strasburgh, and Frankfort, in the Upper Germany; and to Emden, in the Lower.

Thetroubles at Frankfort among

At Frankfort an unhappy difference fell in among some of them, who had used before the English litur-

PART II.

1556. the English there.

gy, and did afterwasds comply with it, when they were in England, where it had authority from the law; yet they thought that being in foreign parts they should rather accommodate their worship to those among whom they lived; so instead of the English Liturgy, they used one near the Geneva and French forms. Others thought that when those in England who had compiled their liturgy, were now confirming what they had done with their blood; and many more were suffering for it; it was a high contempt of them and their sufferings, to depart from these forms. This contradiction raised that heat, that Dr. Cox, who lived in Strasburgh with his friend, Peter Martyr, went thither; and being a man of great reputation, procured an order from the Senate that the English forms should only be used in their church. This dissention being once raised, went further than perhaps it was at first intended. For those who at first liked the Geneva way better, that, being in foreign parts, they might all seem to be united in the same forms, now began to quarrel with some things in the English liturgy; and Knox, being a man of a hot temper, engaged in this matter very warmly; and got his friend Calvin to write somewhat sharply of some things in the English service. This made Knox and his party leave Frankfort and go to Geneva. Knox had also written indecently of the emperor, which obliged the senate of Frankfort to require him to be gone out of their bounds. There fell in other contests about the censuring of offices; which some of the congregation would not leave in the hands of the ministers only, but would have shared it among the whole congregation. Upon these matters there arose great debates, and many papers were written on both sides, to the great grief of Parker and others, who lived privately in England, and to the scandal of the strangers, who were not a little offended to see a company of people fly out of their country for their consciences, and instead of spending their time in fasting and prayer for their persecuted brethren at home, to fall into such quarrels about matters, which themselves acknowledged, were not the substantials of religion, nor points of conscience; in which

certainly they began the breach, who departed from that way of worship, which they acknowledged was both lawful and good; but there followed too much animosity on both sides, which were the seeds of all those differences that have since distracted this church.

They who reflected on the contests that the Novatians raised both at Rome and Carthage, in Cyprian's time, and the heats the Donatists brought into the African churches, soon after the persecution was over found somewhat parallel both to these schisms now during the persecution, and to those afterwards raised when it was over.

Pole is made Archbishop of Canterbury.

I now return to the affairs of England. On the 22d of March, the very day after Cranmer was burnt, Pole was consecrated Archbishop of Canterbury, by the Archbishop of York, the Bishops of London, Ely, Worcester, Lincoln, Rochester, and St. Asaph. He had come over only a cardinal deacon, and was last winter made a priest, and now a bishop. It seems he had his *conge d'elire* with his election, and his bulls from Rome already dispatched before this time. The Pope did not know with what face to refuse them, being pressed by the Queen on his account, though he wanted only a colour to wreak his revenge on him; to which he gave vent upon the first opportunity that offered itself. It seems Pole thought it indecent to be consecrated as long as Cranmer lived; yet his choosing the next day for it, brought him under the suspicion of having procured his death: so that the words of Elijah to Ahab, concerning Naboth, were applied to him, "thou hast killed and taken possession." On the 28th of that month he came in state through London to Bow Church; where the Bishops of Worcester and Ely, after the former had said mass, put the pall about him. This was a device set up by Pope Paschall the Second in the beginning of the twelfth century, for the engaging of all archbishops to a more immediate dependance on that see: they being after they took the pall, to act as the pope's legates born, (as the phrase was,) of which it was the ensign. But it was at the first admitted with great contradiction both by the Kings of Sicily and Poland, the Archbishops of Palermo

PART II.

1556.

and Gnesna, being the first to whom they were sent; all men wondering at the novelty of the thing, and of the oath which the Popes required of them at the delivery of it. This being put on Pole, he went into the pulpit, and made a cold sermon about the beginning, the use, and the matter of the pall, without either learning or eloquence. The subject could admit of no learning; and for eloquence, though in his younger days when he wrote against King Henry, his style was too luxuriant and florid, yet being afterwards sensible of his excess that way, he turned as much to the other extreme, and cutting off all the ornaments of speech, he brought his style to a flatness that had neither life nor beauty in it.

Some more religious houses endowed.

All the business of England this year, was the raising of religious houses. Greenwich was begun with last year. The Queen also built a house for the Dominicans in Smithfield, and another for the Franciscans; and they being begging orders, these endowments did not cost much. At Sion, near Brentford, there had been a religious house of women of the order of St. Bridget: that house was among the first that had been dissolved by King Henry the Eighth, as having harboured the King's enemies, and being accomplices to the business of the Maid of Kent. The Queen anew founded a nunnery there. She also founded a house for the Carthusians at Sheen, near Richmond, in gratitude to that order for their suffering upon her mother's account. From these she went to a greater foundation, but that which cost her less: for she suppressed the deanery, and the cathedral of Westminster; and in September this year, turned it into a monastery; and made Fecknam, Dean of Paul's, the first abbot of it. On the 23d of September, she gave warrants for pensions to be paid to the prebends of Westminster, until they were otherwise provided; and about that time Fecknam was declared abbot; though the solemn instalment of him, and fourteen other monks with him, was not done until the 21st of November.

All the former records concerning them are razed.

There had been many searches and discoveries made in the former reign of great disorders in these houses; and at the dissolution of them many had made confession of their ill lives and gross superstition; all which

were laid up and recorded in the augmentation office. There had been also in that state of things, which they now called the late schism, many professions made by the bishops and abbots, and other religious men, of their renouncing the Pope's authority, and acknowledging the King's supremacy: therefore it was moved, that all these should be gathered together and destroyed. So on the 23d of September, there was a commission granted to Bonner and Cole (the new dean of Paul's in Fecknam's room), and Dr. Martin, to search all registers; to find out both the professions made against the Pope and scrutinies made in abbies; which, as the commission that is in the Collection sets forth, tended to the subversion of all good religion and religious houses: these they were to gather and carry to the Cardinal, that they might be disposed of as the Queen should give order. It is not upon record how they executed this commission; but the effects of it appear in the great defectiveness of the records, in many things of consequence, which are razed and lost. This was a new sort of expurgation, by which they intended to leave as few footsteps to posterity as they could, of what had been formerly done. Their care of their own credits led them to endeavour to suppress the many declarations themselves had formerly made, both against the see of Rome, the monastic orders, and many of the old corruptions, which they had disclaimed. But many things escaped their diligence, as may appear by what I have already collected: and considering the pains they were at, in vitiating registers and destroying records, I hope the reader will not think it strange, if he meets with many defects in this work. In this search, they not only took away what concerned themselves, but every collateral thing that might inform or direct the following ages how to imitate those precedents: and therefore, among other writings, the commission that Cromwell had to be vicegerent was destroyed; but I have since that time met with it, in a copy that was in the Cotton Library, which I have put in the Collection. How far this resembled the endeavours that the heathens used in the last and hottest persecution, to burn all the registers

Collection Numb. 28.

Collection Numb. 29.

PART II.

1556.

of the church, I leave to the reader. The abbey of Westminster being thus set up, some of the monks of Glastonbury, who were yet alive, were put into it, And all the rest of the old monks that had been turned out of Glastonbury, and who had not married since, were invited to return to this monastery. They began to contrive how to raise their abbey again, which was held the most ancient, and was certainly the richest in England: and therefore they moved the Queen and the Cardinal, that they might have the house and site restored and repaired, and they would by labour and husbandry maintain themselves; not doubting but the people of the country would be ready to contribute liberally to their subsistence. The Queen and Cardinal liked the proposition well; so the monks wrote to the Lord Hastings, then lord chamberlain, to put the Queen in mind of it, and to follow the business until it were brought to a good issue; which would be a great honour to the memory of Joseph of Arimathea who lay there, whom they did heartily beseech to pray to Christ for good success to his lordship. This letter I have put in the Collection copied from the original. What followed upon it I cannot find. It is probable the monks of other houses made the like endeavours, and every one of them could find some rare thing belonging to their house, which seemed to make it the more necessary to raise it speedily. These of St. Alban's could say, the first martyr of England lay in their abbey; those of St. Edmundsbury had a king that was martyred by the heathen Danes: those of Battle could say, they were founded for the remembrance of William the Conqueror's victory, from whence the Queen derived her crown: and those of St. Austin's, in Canterbury, had the apostle of England laid in their church. In short, they were all in hopes to be speedily restored. And though they were but few in number, and to begin upon a small revenue, yet as soon as the belief of purgatory was revived, they knew how to set up the old trade anew, which they could drive with the greater advantage, since they were to deal with the people by a new motive, besides the old ones formerly used, that it was sacrilege to possess the goods of the

Endeavours to raise the abbey of Glastonbury.

Collection Numb. 30.

church, of which it had been robbed by their ancestors. But in this it was necessary to advance slowly: since the nobility and gentry were much alarmed at it; and at the last parliament, many had laid their hands to their swords in the House of Commons, and said they would not part with their estates, but would defend them: yet some, that hoped to gain more favour from the Queen by such compliance, did found chantries for masses for their souls. In the records of the last years of Queen Mary's reign, there are many warrants granted by her for such endowments; for though the statute of Mortmain was repealed, yet for greater security it was thought to take out such licences. This is all I find of our home affairs this year.

Foreign affairs.

Foreign affairs were brought to a quieter state: for, by the mediation of England, a truce for five years was concluded between France and Spain; and the new King of Spain was inclined to observe it faithfully; that so he might be well settled in his kingdoms before he engaged in war: but the violent Pope broke all this. He was much offended with the decree made at Augsburg for the liberty of religion; and with Ferdinand, for ordering the chalice to be given to his subjects; and chiefly, for his assuming the title of Emperor without his approbation. Upon this last provocation the Pope sent him word, that he would let him know to his grief, how he had offended him. He came to talk in as haughty a style as any of all his predecessors had ever done, that he would change kingdoms at his pleasure. He boasted that he made Ireland a kingdom: that all princes were under his feet (and, as he said that, he used to tread with his feet against the ground); and he would allow no prince to be his companion, nor be too familiar with him; nay, rather than be driven to a mean action, he would set the whole world on fire. But, to pretend to do somewhat for a reformation, he appointed a congregation to gather some rules for the condemning of simony. These he published, and said, having now reformed his own court, he would next reform the courts of princes; and, because they had complained much of the corruptions of the clergy and court of Rome, he resolved to turn the matter on them, and

The pope is extravagantly insolent.

PART II.

1556.

said he would gather all the abuses that were in their courts and reform them. But he was much provoked by an embassy that came from Poland to desire of him, that they might have the mass in their own tongue, and the communion in both kinds; that their priests might be allowed to marry; that they might pay annates no more to Rome, and call a national council in their own kingdom. These things put him out of all patience; and, with all the bitterness he could use, he expressed how detestable they were to him. He then said he would hold a council; not that he needed one, for himself was above all; but it should never meet in Trent, to which it had been a vain thing to send about sixty bishops of the least able, and forty doctors of the most insufficient, as had been twice done already; that he would hold it in the Lateran, as many of his predecessors had done: he gave notice of this to the ambassadors of all princes: he said he did that only in courtesy, not intending to ask their advice or consent, for he would be obeyed by them all. He intended in this council to reform them and their courts, and to discharge all impositions which they had laid on the clergy: and therefore he would call it, whether they would or not; and, if they sent no prelates to it, he would hold it with those of his own court; and would let the world see what the authority of the see was, when it had a pope of courage to govern it.

He breaks the truce between France and Spain, absolving the French King from his oath.

But after all these imperious humours of his, which sometimes carried him to excesses, that seemed not much different from madness, he was heartily troubled at the truce between the French and the Spaniards. He hates the Spaniards most, because they supported the Colonesi, whom he designed to ruin. And therefore he sent his nephew into France, with a sword and hat which he had consecrated, to persuade the King to break the truce; offering his assistance for the conquest of the kingdom of Naples, to the use of one of the younger sons of France; though it was believed he designed it for his nephew. He also sent the French King an absolution from his oath that he had sworn for the maintaining of the truce, and promised to create what cardinals he pleased, that so he might be sure of a creature of his

own to succeed in the popedom. Yet the Pope dissembled his design in this so closely, that he persuaded Sir Edward Carne, that was then the Queen's ambassador at Rome, that he desired nothing so much as a general peace; and he hoped, that as the Queen had mediated in the truce, she would continue her endeavours until a perfect peace were made. He said he had sent two legates to procure it; and, since he was the common father of Christendom, God would impute to him, even his silence in that matter, if he did not all he could to obtain it. He complained much of the growth of heresy in Poland, and in the King of the Roman's dominions. For the repressing of it, he said he intended to have a general council; and in order to that, it was necessary there should be a peace; since a truce would not give sufficient encouragement to those who ought to come to the council. He said he intended to be present at it himself, and to hold it in the church of St. John in the Lateran: for he thought Rome, being the common country of all the world, was the meetest place for such an assembly: and he, being so very old, could go no where out of Rome; therefore he was resolved to hold it there. But he said he relied chiefly on the assistance of the Queen, whom he called "that blessed Queen, and his most gracious and loving daughter;" and, holding her letters in his hand, he said, they were so full of respect and kindness to him, that he would have them read in the consistory, and made a cross over her subscription. It was no wonder such discourses, with that way of deportment, deceived so honest and plain-hearted a man as Carne was; as it will appear from the letter that he wrote over upon this occasion to the Queen, which I have put in the Collection. But it soon appeared on what design he had sent his legate to France; for he pressed that King vehemently to break the truce, and renew the war. To this the French King, being persuaded by the Cardinal of Lorraine and Duke of Guise, consented, though all the rest about him dissuaded him from such a dishonourable breach of faith, or meddling more in the war of Italy, which had been always fatal to their people. The Colonesi had been furnished with

Collection Numb. 31.

PART II.

1556.

assistance from Naples; upon which the Pope had proposed it in the consistory, that the King of Spain, by giving them assistance, had lost his territories; and being then assured of assistance from France, he began the war, imprisoning the cardinals and prelates of the Spanish faction, and the ambassadors of Spain and England, pretending that they kept correspondence with the Colonesi, that were traitors. He also sent to raise some regiments among the Guisons. But when they came, some told him they were all heretics, and it would be a reproach for him to use such soldiers: he, understanding they were good troops, said he was confident God would convert them, and that he looked on them as angels sent from God for the defence of his person. Upon this breaking out of the Pope's, the Duke of Alva, that was then in Naples, being himself much devoted to the papacy, did very unwillingly engage in the war. He first used all ways to avoid it: and made several protestations of the indignities that his master had received, and his unwillingness to enter into a war with him that should be the common father of Christendom. But these being all to no purpose, he fell into Campania, and took all the places in it, which he declared he held for the next Pope: he might also have taken Rome itself, but the reverence he had for the papacy restrained him.

This being known in England, was a great grief to the Queen and Cardinal, who saw what advantages those of the Reformation would take from the Pope's absolving princes from the most sacred ties of human societies; since the breach of faith and public treaties, was a thing abhorred by the most depraved nations; and when he, who pretended to be the vicar of Christ, who was the Prince of Peace, was kindling a new flame in Christendom, these things were so scandalous, that they knew they would much obstruct and disorder all their designs. And indeed the Protestants every where were not wanting to improve this all they could. It seemed a strange thing, that in the same year, a great conqueror, that had spent his life in wars and affairs, should, in the fifty-sixth year of his age, retire to a monastery; and that

a bishop of eighty, who had pretended to such abstraction from the world, that he had formerly quitted a bishoprick to retire into a monastery, should now raise such a war, and set Europe again in a flame.

1557. The visitation of the Universities.

In the beginning of the next year was the visitation of the Universities. To Cambridge Pole sent Scot, bishop of Chester, his Italian friend Ormaneto, with Watson and Christopherson, the two elect bishops of Lincoln and Chichester (in the rooms of White, removed to Winchester; out of which Pole reserved a pension of 1000*l.* and of Day, that was dead), with some others. When they came thither, on the 11th of January, they put the churches of St. Mary's and St. Michael's under an interdict; because the bodies of Bucer and Fagius, two heretics, were laid in them. The University orator received them with a speech, that was divided between an invective against the heretics, and commendation of the Cardinal, who was then their Chancellor. They went through all the colleges, and gathered many heretical books together, and observed the order used in their chapels. When they came to Clare Hall, they found no sacrament. Ormaneto asked the head, Swinburn, how that came? He answered, the chapel was not yet consecrated: then Ormaneto chid him more for officiating so long in it; but trying him further, he found he had many benefices in his hands; for which he reproved him so severely, that the poor man was so confounded that he could answer nothing to the other questions he put to him. But Christopherson himself, being Master of Trinity College, did not escape. Ormaneto found he had misapplied the revenues of the house, and had made a lease of some of their lands to his brother-in-law below the value: Ormaneto tore the lease to pieces, and chid him so sharply, that he, fearing it might stop his preferment, fell sick upon it.

Then followed the pageantry of burning the two bodies of Bucer and Fagius. They were cited to appear, or, if any would come in their name, they were required to defend them: so after three citations, the dead bodies not rising to speak for themselves, and

PART II.

1557.

none coming to plead for them (for fear of being sent after them), the visitors thought fit to proceed. On the 26th of January, the Bishop of Chester made a speech, shewing the earnestness of the University to have justice done; to which they, the commissioners, though most unwilling, were obliged to condescend; therefore, having examined many witnesses of the heresies that Bucer and Fagius had taught, they judged them obstinate heretics, and appointed their bodies to be taken out of the holy ground, and to be delivered to the secular power. The writ being brought from London, on the 6th of February their bodies were taken up, and carried in coffins, and tied to stakes, with many of their books, and other heretical writings, and all were burnt together. Pern preached at it; who, as he was that year Vice-Chancellor, so he was in the same office four years after this; when, by Queen Elizabeth's order, public honours were done to the memories of those two learned men; and sermons and speeches were made in their praise: but Pern had turned so oft, and at every one was so zealous, that such turnings came to be nick-named from him. On the feast of purification, Watson preached at Cambridge; where, to extol the rites and processions of the catholics, and their carrying candles on that day, he said, Joseph and the blessed Virgin had carried wax candles in procession that day, as the church had still continued to do from their example: which was heard not without the laughter of many.

The Cardinal did also send Ormaneto, and Brooks, bishop of Gloucester, with some others, to visit the university of Oxford. They went over all the colleges as they had done at Cambridge, and burnt all the English Bibles, with such other heretical books as could be found. They then made a process against the body of Peter Martyr's wife, that lay buried in one of the churches: but she being a foreigner that understood no English, they could not find witnesses that had heard her utter any heretical points; so they gave advertisement of this to the Cardinal, who thereupon wrote back, that since it was notoriously known, that she had

been a nun, and married contrary to her vow, therefore her body was to be taken up,* and buried in a dunghill, as a person dying under excommunication. This was accordingly done: but her body was afterwards taken up again in Queen Elizabeth's time, and mixed with Fridiswide's bones, that she might run the same fortune with her in all times coming.

Great endeavours used to set forward the persecution most vigorously.

While these things were doing, there was great complaints made, that the inferior magistrates grew every where slack in the searching after, and presenting of heretics: they could not find in the counties a sufficient number of justices of peace, that would carefully look after it: and in towns they were generally harboured. Letters were written to some towns, as Coventry and Rye, which are entered in the council-books, recommending some to be chosen their mayors, who were zealous catholics. It is probable that the letters might have been written to other towns; for the council-books for this reign are very imperfect and defective. But all this did not advance their design. The Queen understood that the numbers of the heretics rather increased than abated: so new councils were to be taken. I find it said, that some advised that courts of Inquisition, like those in Spain, might be set up in England. In Spain the inquisitors, who were all Dominicans, received private informations; and upon these laid hold on any that were delated or suspected of heresy, and kept them close in their prisons till they formed their processes; and, by all the ways of torture they could invent, forced from them confessions, either against themselves, or others whom they had a mind to draw into their toils. They had so unlimitted a jurisdiction, that there was no sanctuary that could secure any from their warrants; nor could princes preserve or deliver men out of their hands: nor were their prisoners brought to any public trial, but tried in secret: one of the advocates of the court was, for form's sake, assigned to plead for them; but was always more careful to please

* The reason given in the Cardinal's letter for raising her body, is, *Quoniam juxta Corpus Sanctissimæ Fridernidæ jurabat Corpus Catherinæ Uxoris P. Martyris.*

PART II.

1557.

the court, than to save his client. They proceeded against them, both by articles, which they were to answer, and upon presumptions: and it was a rare thing for any to escape out of their hands, unless they redeemed themselves, either by great presents, or by the discovery of others. These had been set up first in the county of Thoulouse, for the extirpation of the Albigenses; and were afterwards brought into Spain upon Ferdinand of Arragon's driving the Moors out of it, that so none of those might any longer conceal themselves in that kingdom; who being a false and crafty sort of men, and certainly enemies to the government, it seemed necessary to use more than ordinary severity to drive them out. But now those courts examined men suspected of heresy, as well as of Mahometanism; and had indeed effectually preserved Spain from any change in religion. This made the present Pope earnest with all the princes of Christendom, to set up such courts in their dominions; and Philip was so much of the same mind, that he resolved to have them set up in Flanders; which gave the first rise to those wars, that followed afterwards there, and ended in the loss of the seven provinces.

A design to set up the Inquisition in England.

In England, they made now in February a good step towards it. For a commission was given to the bishops of London and Ely, the Lord North, Secretary Bourne, Sir John Mordant, Sir Francis Englefield, Sir Edward Walgrave, Sir Nicholas Hare, Sir Thomas Pope, Sir Roger Cholmley, Sir Richard Read, Sir Tho. Stradling, Sir Rowland Hall, and Serjeant Rastall; Cole Dean of Paul's, William Roper, Randolph Cholmley, and William Cook; Thomas Martin, John Story, and John Vaughan, doctors of the law: "That since many false rumours were published among the subjects, and many heretical opinions were also spread amongst them; therefore they, or any three of them, were to inquire into those, either by presentments, by witnesses, or any other politic way they could devise; and to search after all heresies; the bringers in, the sellers, or readers of all heretical books; they were to examine, and punish all misbehaviours, or negligences, in any church or chapel; and to try all priests that did not preach of the

sacrament of the altar; all persons that did not hear mass, or come to their parish-church to service; that would not go in procession, or did not take holy bread or holy water: and if they found any that did obstinately persist in such heresies, they were to put them into the hands of their ordinaries, to be proceeded against according to the laws: giving them full power to proceed, as their discretions and consciences should direct them; and to use all such means as they could invent, for the searching of the premises: empowering them also to call before them such witnesses as they pleased, and to force them to make oath of such things as might discover what they sought after." This commission I have put in the Collection. It will shew how high they intended to raise the persecution, when a power of such a nature was put into the hands of any three of a number so selected. Besides this, there were many subordinate commissions issued out. This commission seems to have been granted the former year, and only renewed now; for in the rolls of that year, I have met with many of those subaltern commissions, relating to this, as superior to them. And on the 8th of March after this, a commission was given to the Archbishop of York, the Bishop Suffragan of Hull, and divers others, to the same effect: but with this limitation, that if any thing appeared to them so intricate, that they could not determine it, they were to refer it to the Bishop of London and his colleagues, who had a large commission. So now, all was done that could be devised for extirpating of heresy, except courts of Inquisition had been set up; to which, whether this was not a previous step to dispose the nation to it, the reader may judge.

Collect. Numb. 32.

I shall next give an account of the burnings this year. On the 15th of January six men were burnt in one fire at Canterbury; and at the same time two were burnt at Wye, and two at Ashford, that were condemned with the other six. Soon after the fore-mentioned commission, two-and-twenty were sent up from Colchester to London: yet Bonner, though seldom guilty of such gentleness, was content to discharge

Proceedings against the heretics.

PART II.

1557.

them. As they were led through London, the people did openly shew their affection to them, above a thousand following them: Bonner, upon this, wrote to the Cardinal, that he found they were obstinate heretics; yet, since he had been offended with him for his former proceedings, he would do nothing till he knew his pleasure. This letter is to be found in Fox. But the Cardinal stopped him, and made some deal with the prisoners to sign a paper, of their professing that they believed that Christ's body and blood was in the sacrament, without any further explanation; and that they did submit to the catholic church of Christ, and should be faithful subjects to the King and Queen, and be obedient to their superiors, both spiritual and temporal, according to their duties. It is plain, this was so contrived, that they might have signed it without either prevaricating or dissembling their opinions; for it is not said, "that they were to be subject to the church of Rome, but to the church of Christ: and they were to be obedient to their superiors according to their duties;" which was a good reserve for their consciences. I stand the longer on this, that it may appear how willing the Cardinal was to accept of any shew of submission from them, and to stop Bonner's rage. Upon this, they were set at liberty. But Bonner got three men and two women presented to him in London in January, and after he had allowed them a little more time than he had granted others, they standing still firm to their faith, were burnt at Smithfield on the 12th of April. After that, White, the new bishop of Winchester, condemned three, who were burnt on the 3d of May in Southwark; one of these, Stephen Gratwick, being of the diocess of Chichester, appealed from him to his own ordinary: whether he expected more favour from him, or did it only to gain time, I know not; but they brought in a counterfeit, who was pretended to be the Bishop of Chichester (as Fox has printed it from the account written with the man's own hand), and so condemned him. On the 7th of May, three were burnt at Bristol. On the 18th of June, two men and five women were burnt at Maidstone: and on the 19th,

three men and four women were burnt at Canterbury; fourteen being thus in two days destroyed by Thornton and Harpsfield: in which it may seem strange, that the Cardinal had less influence to stop the proceedings in his own diocess, than in London: but he was now under the Pope's disgrace, as shall be afterwards shewn. On the 22d of June, six men and four women were burnt at Lewis, in Sussex, condemned by White; for Christopherson, bishop elect of Chichester, was not yet consecrated. On the 13th of July, two were burnt at Norwich; on the 2d of August, ten were burnt at Colchester, six in the morning, and four in the afternoon: they were some of those who had been formerly discharged by the Cardinal's orders. But the priests in the country complained that the mercy shewed to them had occasioned great disorders among them; heretics, and the favourers of them, growing insolent upon it, and those who searched after them being disheartened: so now, Bonner being under no more restraints from the Cardinal, new complaints being made that they came not to church, condemned them upon their answers to the articles which he objected to them.

At this time one George Eagle, a tailor, who used to go about from place to place, and to meet with those who stood for the Reformation, where he prayed and discoursed with them about religion, and from his indefatigable diligence was nick-named Trudge-over, was taken near Colchester, and was condemned of treason for gathering the Queen's subjects together; though it was not proved that he had ever stirred them up to rebellion, but did it only (as himself always protested) to encourage them to continue steadfast in the faith: he suffered as a traitor. On the 5th of August, one was burnt at Norwich; and, on the 20th, a man and a woman more were burnt at Rochester: one was also burnt at Litchfield, in August, but the day is not named.

The same month a complaint was brought to the council, of the magistrates of Bristol, that they came seldom to the sermons at the cathedral; so that the Dean and Chapter used to go to their houses in procession,

PART II.

1557.

with their cross carried before them, and to fetch them from thence: upon which a letter was written to them, requiring them to conform themselves more willingly to the orders of the church, to frequent the sermons, and go thither of their own accord. On the 17th of of September, three men and one woman were burnt at Islington, near London; and, on the same day, two women were burnt at Colchester. On the 20th, a man was burnt at Northampton; and in the same month one was burnt at Laxfield, in Suffolk. On the 23d, a woman was burnt at Norwich. There were seventeen burnt in the diocess of Chichester about this time: one was a priest, thirteen were laymen, and three women: but the day is not marked. On the 18th of November three were burnt in Smithfield. On the 22d of December John Rough, a Scotchman, was burnt, whose suffering was on this occasion. On the 12th of December there was a private meeting of such as continued to worship God accordiug to the service set out by King Edward, at Islington; where he was to have administered the sacrament, according to the order of that book. The new inquisitors had corrupted one of this congregation to betray his brethren; so that they were apprehended as they were going to the communion. But Rough being a stranger, it was considered by the council whether he should be tried as a native. He had a benefice in Yorkshire, in King Edward's days; so it was resolved, and signified to the Bishop of London, that he should be proceeded against as a subject. Thereupon Bonner objected to him, his condemning the doctrine of the church, and setting out the heresies of Cranmer and Ridley concerning the sacrament, and his using the service set out by King Edward; that he had lived much with those who for their heresies had fled beyond sea; that he had spoken reproachfully of the Pope and cardinals, saying, that when he was at Rome, he had seen a bull of the Pope's that licensed stews, and a cardinal riding openly with his whore with him: with several other articles. The greatest part of them he confessed, and thereupon he, with a woman that was one of the congregation, was

burnt in Smithfield. And thus ended the burnings this year; seventy-nine in all being burnt.

1557. The Lord Stourton hanged for murder.

These severities against the heretics made the Queen shew less pity to the Lord Stourton, than perhaps might have been otherwise expected. He had been all King Edward's time a most zealous papist, and did constantly dissent in parliament from the laws then made about religion. But he had the former year murdered one Argall and his son, with whom he had been long at variance: and after he had knocked them down with clubs, and cut their throats, he buried them fifteen feet under ground, thinking thereby to conceal the fact: but it breaking out, both he and four of his servants were taken, and indicted for it. He was found guilty of felony, and condemned to be hanged with his servants in Wiltshire, where the murder was committed. On the 6th of March they were hanged at Salisbury. All the difference that was made in their deaths, being only thus, that whereas his servants were hanged in common halters, one of silk was bestowed on their lord. It seemed an indecent thing, when they were proceeding so severely against men for their opinions, to spare one that was guilty of so foul a murder, killing both father and son at the same time. But it is strange that neither his quality, nor his former zeal for popery, could procure a change of the sentence, from the more infamous way of hanging, to beheading; which had been generally used to persons of his quality. It has been said, and it passes for a maxim of law, that though in judgments of treason the King can order the execution to be by cutting off the head, since it being a part of the sentence, that the head shall be severed from the body, the King may in that case remit all the other parts of the sentence except that; yet in felonies the sentence must be executed in the way prescribed by law; and that if the King should order beheading instead of hanging, it would be murder in the Sheriff, and those that execute it: so that in such a case they must have a pardon under the great seal for killing a man unlawfully. But this seems to be taken up without good grounds, and against clear precedents: for in

PART II.

1557.

the former reign the Duke of Somerset, though condemned for felony, yet was beheaded. And in the reign of King Charles the First, the Lord Audley, being likewise condemned for felony, all the judges delivered their opinions, that the King might change the execution from hanging to beheading, which was done, and was not afterwards questioned. So it seems the hanging the Lord Stourton flowed not from any scruple as to the Queen's power of doing it lawfully, but that on this occasion she resolved to give public demonstration of her justice and horror at so cruel a murder; and therefore she left him to the law, without taking any further care of him. On the last of February, he was sent from London, with a letter to the Sheriff of Wiltshire, to receive his body, and execute the sentence given against him and his servants; which was accordingly done, as has been already shewn. Upon this, the papists took great advantage to commend the strictness and impartiality of the Queen's justice, that would not spare so zealous a catholic, when guilty of so foul a murder. It was also said, that the killing of men's bodies was a much less crime than the killing of souls, which was done by the propagators of heresy; and therefore, if the Queen did thus execute justice on a friend, for that which was a lesser degree of murder, they who were her enemies, and guilty of higher crimes, were to look for no mercy. Indeed, as the poor protestants looked for none, so they met with very little, but what the Cardinal shewed them: and he was now brought under trouble himself, for favouring them too much, it being that which the Pope made use of to cover his malice against him.

Now the war had again broken out between France and Spain, and the King studied to engage the English to his assistance. The Queen had often complained to the French court, that the fugitives who left her kingdom had been well entertained in France. She understood that the practices of Wiat, and of her other rebellious subjects, were encouraged from thence; particularly of Ashton, who went often between the two kingdoms, and had made use of the Lady Elizabeth's

name to raise seditions, as will appear in a letter (that is in the Collection) which some of the council writ to one that attended that princess. She was indeed the more strictly kept, and worse used upon that occasion. But besides, it so happened, thatt his year one Stafford had gone into France, and gathered some of the English fugitives together, and with money and ships, that were secretly given him by that court, had come and seized on the castle of Scarborough; from whence he published a manifesto against the Queen, that by bringing in the Spaniards she had fallen from her right to the kingdom, of which he declared himself Protector. The Earl of Westmoreland took the castle on the last of April, and Stafford, with three of his accomplices, being taken, suffered as traitors on the 28th of May. His coming out of France added much to the jealousy, though the French King disowned that he had given him any assistance. But Dr. Wotton, who was then ambassador there, resolved to give the Queen a more certain discovery of the inclinations of the French, that so he might engage her in the war, as was desired by Philip. He therefore caused a nephew of his own to come out of England, whom, when he had secretly instructed, he ordered him to desire to be admitted to speak with the French King, pretending that he was sent from some that were discontented in England, and desired the French protection. But the King would not see him, till he had first spoken with the Constable. So Wotton was brought to the Constable, and Melville, from whose Memoirs I draw this, was called to interpret. The young man first offered him the service of many in England; that, partly upon the account of religion, partly for the hatred they bore the Spaniards, were ready, if assisted by France, to make stirs there. The Constable received and answered this but coldly; and said, he did not see what service they could do his master in it. Upon which he replied, they would put Calais into his hands. The Constable, not suspecting a trick, started at that, and shewed great joy at the proposition; but desired to know how it might be effected. Young Wotton told him, there were a thousand pro-

1557. Collect. Numb. 33.

The Queen becomes jealous of the French.

PART II.

1557.

testants in it, and gave him a long formal project of the way of taking it; with which the Constable seemed pleased, and had much discourse with him about it; he promised him great rewards, and gave him directions how to proceed in the design. So the ambassador having found out what he had designed to discover, sent his nephew over to the Queen, who was thereupon satisfied that the French were resolved to begin with her if they found an opportunity. Her husband, King Philip, finding it was not so easy, by letters or messages, to draw her into the war, came over himself about the 20th of May, and staid with her till the beginning of July. In that time he prevailed so far with her and the council, that she sent over a herald, with a formal denunciation of war, who made it at Rhemes, where the King then was, on the 7th of June. Soon after she sent over eight thousand men, under the command of the Earl of Pembroke, to join the Spanish army, that, consisting of near fifty thousand men, sat down before St. Quintin. The Constable was sent to raise the siege with a great force, and all the chief nobility of France. When the two armies were in view of one another, the Constable intended to draw back his army; but by a mistake in the way of it, they fell in some disorder. The Spaniards upon that falling on them, did, with the loss only of fifty of their men, gain an entire victory; two thousand five hundred were killed on the place; the whole army was dispersed, many of the first quality were killed, the Constable, with many others, were taken prisoners. The French King was in such a consternation upon it, that he knew not which way to turn himself. Now all the French cursed the Pope's counsels, for he had persuaded their King to begin this war, and that with a manifest breach of his faith. This action lost the Constable that great reputation which he had acquired and preserved in a course of much success; and raised the credit of the Duke of Guise, who was now sent for in all haste, to come with his army out of Italy, for the preservation of his own country. France, indeed, was never in greater danger than at that time; for if King Philip had known how to have used his success, and

And denounces war.

The great defeat given the French at St. Quintin.

1557.

marched on to Paris, he could have met with no resistance. But he sat down before St. Quintin, which Coligny kept out so long, till the first terror was over that so great a victory had raised; and then, as the French took heart again, so the Spaniards grew less, as well in strength as reputation; and the English, finding themselves not well used, returned home into their country.

As soon as the Pope heard that England had made war upon France, he was not a little inflamed with it; and his wrath was much heightened, when he heard of the defeat at St. Quintin's, and that the Duke of Guise's army was recalled out of Italy, by which he was exposed to the mercy of the Spaniards. He now said openly, they might see how little Cardinal Pole regarded the apostolic see, when he suffered the Queen to assist their enemies against their friends. The Pope being thus incensed against Pole, sought all ways to be revenged of him. At first he made a decree (in May this year) for a general revocation of all legates and nuncios in the King of Spain's dominions, and among these Cardinal Pole was mentioned with the rest. But Carne understanding this, went first to the cardinals, and informed them what a prejudice it would be to their religion to recall the Cardinal, while things were yet in so unsettled a state in England. Of this they were all very sensible, and desired him to speak to the Pope about it; so, in an audience he had of him, he desired a suspension might be made of that revocation. The Pope pretended he did it in general in all the Spanish dominions; yet he promised Carne to propose it to the Congregation of the Inquisition, but he was resolved not to recall it; and said, it did not consist with the majesty of the place he sat in, to revoke any part of a decree which he had solemnly given. In the Congregation, the Pope endeavoured to have got the concurrence of the cardinals, but they were unwilling to join in it. So he told Carne, that though he would recall no part of his decree, yet he would give orders that there should be no intimation made of it to Cardinal Pole: and that if the Queen writ to him to desire his

The Pope is offended with Cardinal Pole.

PART II.

1557.

continuance in England, it might be granted. He also let fall some words to Carne, of his willingness to make peace with King Philip; and indeed at that time he was much distasted with the French. Of this Carne advertised the King, though he was then so much better acquainted with the Pope's dissimulation than formerly, that he did not lay much weight on what he said to him; as will appear by the dispatch he made upon this occasion, which is in the Collection. Whether the Queen did upon this write to the Pope, or not, I do not know.* It is probable she did; for this matter lay asleep till September; and then the Pope did not only recal Pole, but intended to destroy him. He did not know where to find a person to set up against the Cardinal, since Gardiner was dead, and none of the other bishops in England were great enough, or sure enough to him, to be raised to so high a dignity. Peito, the Franciscan friar, seemed a man of his own temper, because he had railed against King Henry so boldly to his face: and he, being chosen by the Queen to be her confessor, was looked on as the fittest man to be advanced. So the Pope wrote for him into England, and when he came to Rome made him a cardinal, and sent over his bulls, declaring that he recalled Pole's legatine power, and required him to come to Rome to answer for some accusations he had received of him, as a favourer of heretics. This might have perhaps been grounded on his discharging that year so many delated of heresy,† upon so ambiguous a submission as they had made. The Pope also wrote to the Queen, that he was to send over Cardinal Peito with full power, requiring her to receive him as the legate of the apostolic see. The Queen called for the bulls, and, according to the way formerly practised in England, and still continued in Spain, when bulls that were unacceptable were sent over, she ordered them to be laid up without opening

Collect. Numb. 34.

And recals his legatine power.

* The Queen and Philip both wrote to the Pope in favour of Cardinal Pole: the letter is dated May 21, shewing how serviceable he had been in restoring religion in England. The parliament seconded this by another letter.

† They were twenty-two in number; their submission is in Fox, p. 17. 92.

them. It has been shewn in the former part, how Archbishop Chicheley, when he was so proceeded against by Pope Martin, appealed to the next general council; and some that desired to see the form of such appeals in those ages, have thought it an omission in me, that I had not published his appeal in the Collection of Records at the end of that work: therefore, upon this occasion, I shall refer the reader to it, which he will find in the Collection. But now Cardinal Pole resolved to behave himself with more submission; for though the Queen had ordered the Pope's breve to him not to be delivered, yet of himself he laid down the ensigns of his legatine power; and sent Ormaneto, who had the title of the Pope's Datary, and was his friend and confidant, to give an account of his whole behaviour in England, and to clear him of these imputations of heresy. This he did with so much submission, that he mollified the Pope: only he said, that Pole ought not to have consented to the Queen's joining in war with the enemies of the Holy See. Peito had begun his journey to England: but the Queen sent him word not to come over, otherwise she would bring him, and all that owned his authority, within the *præmunire*. So he stopped in his journey, and dying in April following, enjoyed but a short while his new dignity, together with the bishoprick of Salisbury, to which the Pope had advanced him, clearly contrary to the old law then in force, against provisions from Rome.

Collect. Numb. 35.

The Queen refuses to admit of Cardinal Peito, the new legate.

This storm against Pole went soon over, by the peace that was made between Philip and the Pope, of which it will not be unpleasant to give the relation. The Duke of Guise having carried his army out of Italy, the Duke of Alva marched towards Rome, and took and spoiled all places on his way. When he came near Rome, all was in such confusion, that he might have easily taken it; but he made no assault. The Pope called the cardinals together, and setting out the danger he was in with many tears, said, he would undauntedly suffer martyrdom; which they, who knew that the trouble he was in flowed from his own restless ambition and fierceness, could scarce hear without

PART II.

laughter. The Duke of Alva was willing to treat. The Pope stood high on the points of honour; and would needs keep that entire, though he was forced to yield in the chief matters: he said, rather than lose one jot that was due to him, he would see the whole world ruined; pretending it was not his own honour, but Christ's, that he sought. In fine, the Duke of Alva was required by him to come to Rome, and on his knees to ask pardon for invading the patrimony of the church, and to receive absolution for himself and his master. He being superstitiously devoted to the papacy, and having got satisfaction in other things, consented to this. So the conqueror was brought to ask pardon, and the vain Pope received him, and gave him absolution, with as much haughtiness and state as if he had been his prisoner. This was done on the 14th of September, and the news of it being brought into England on the 6th of October, letters were written by the council to the Lord Mayor and aldermen of London, requiring them to come to St. Paul's, where high mass was to be said for the peace now concluded between the Pope and the King, after which bonfires were ordered. One of the secret articles of the peace was the restoring Pole to his legatine power.

1557. A peace made between the Pope and the King of Spain.

War being now proclaimed between England and France, the French sent to the Scottish Queen Regent, to engage Scotland in the war with England. Hereupon a convention of the estates was called. But in it there were two different parties. Those of the clergy liked now the English interest, as much as they had been formerly jealous of it, and so refused to engage in the war; since they were at peace with England. They had also a secret dislike to the Regent, for her kindness to the heretical lords. On the other hand, those lords were ready enough to gain the protection of the Regent, and the favour of France, and therefore were ready to enter into the war, hoping that thereby they should have their party made the stronger in Scotland, by the entertainment that the Queen Regent would be obliged to give to such as should fly out of England for religion. Yet the greater part of the convention were against

The beginnings of a war between England and Scotland.

the war. The Queen Regent thought at least to engage the kingdom in a defensive war, by forcing the English to begin with them. Therefore she sent D'Oisel, who was in chief command, to fortify Aymouth, which, by the last treaty with England, was to be unfortified. So the Governor of Berwick making inroads into Scotland, for the disturbing of their works; upon that D'Oisel began the war, and went into England, and besieged Warke Castle. The Scottish lords upon this met at Edinburgh, and complained that D'Oisel was engaging them in a war with England, without their consent, and required him to return back, under pain of being declared an enemy to the nation; which he very unwillingly obeyed. But while he lay there, the Duke of Norfolk was sent down with some troops to defend the Marches. There was only one engagement between him and the Kers; but, after a long dispute, they were defeated, and many of them taken. The Queen Regent, seeing her authority was so little considered, writ to France, to hasten the marriage of her daughter to the Dauphin; for that he being thereupon invested with the crown of Scotland, the French would become more absolute. Upon this a message was sent from France to a convention of estates that sat in December, to let them know that the Dauphin was now coming to be of age, and therefore they desired they would send over some to treat about the articles of the marriage. They sent the Archbishop of Glasgow, the Bishop of Orkney, the Prior of St. Andrew's (who afterwards was Earl of Murray), the earls of Rothes and Cassilis, the Lord Fleming, and the provosts of Edinburgh and Montrose, some of every estate, that in the name of the three estates they might conclude the treaty.

These wars coming upon England when the Queen's treasure was quite exhausted, it was not easy to raise money for carrying them on. They found such a backwardness in the last parliament, that they were afraid the supply from thence would not come easily, or at least, that some favour would be desired for the heretics. Therefore they tried first to raise money by sending or-

PART II.

1557.

ders under the privy-seal, for the borrowing of certain sums. But though the Council writ many letters, to set on those methods of getting money; yet they being without, if not against law, there was not much got this way: so that after all, it was found necessary to summon a parliament, to assemble on the 20th of January. In the end of the year, the Queen had advertisements sent her from the King, that he understood the French had a design on Calais; but she, either for want of money, or that she thought the place secure in the winter, did not send those supplies that were necessary; and thus ended the affairs of England this year.

The affairs of Germany.

In Germany, there was a conference appointed, to bring matters of religion to a fuller settlement. Twelve papists and twelve protestants were appointed to manage it. Julius Pflugius, that had drawn the Interim, being the chief of the papists, moved, that they should begin first with condemning the heresy of Zuinglius. Melancthon, upon that, said it was preposterous to begin with the condemnation of errors, till they had first settled the doctrines of religion. Yet that which the papists expected, followed upon this; for some of the fiercer Lutherans, being much set against the Zuinglians, agreed to it. This raised heats among themselves, which made the conference break up, without bringing things to any issue. Upon this occasion, men could not but see that artifice of the Roman church, which has been often used before and since with too great success. When they cannot bear down those they call heretics with open force, their next way is to divide them among themselves, and to engage them into heats about those lesser matters in which they differ; hoping that by those animosities their endeavours, which being united would be dangerous to the common enemy, may not only be broken, but directed one against another. This is well enough known to all the reformed; and yet many of them are so far from considering it, that upon every new occasion they are made use of to serve the same designs; never reflecting upon the advantages that have been formerly taken from such contentions.

A persecution of pro-

In France, the number of the protestants was now

1557. testants in France.

increased much; and in Paris, in September this year, there was a meeting of about two hundred of them in St. Germain's, to receive the sacrament according to the way of Geneva; which being known to some of their neighbours, they furnished themselves with stones to throw at them when they broke up their meeting. So when it was late, as they went home, stones were cast at some of them; and the enraged zealots forced the doors, and broke in upon the rest. The men drawing their swords, made their way through them, and most of them escaped: but one hundred and sixty women, with some few men, delivered themselves prisoners to the King's officers, that came to take them. Upon this there were published all the blackest calumnies that could be devised, of the loose and promiscuous embraces that had been in this meeting: and so exactly had their accusers copied from what the heathens had anciently charged on the meetings of the Christians, that it was said they found the blood of a child, whom they had sacrificed and eaten among them. These things were confidently told at court, where none durst contradict them, for fear of being judged a favourer of them. But afterwards there was printed an apology for the protestants. In it they gloried much, that the same false accusations by which the heathens had defamed the primitive Christians, were now cast on them. Those that were taken were proceeded against: six men and one woman were burnt. It had gone further, if there had not come envoys, both from the German princes and the cantons of Switzerland, to interpose for them: upon which, since the King needed assistance in his wars, especially from the latter, the prosecution was let fall. The Pope was much troubled, when he heard that the King would exercise no farther severity on the heretics: and, though himself had hired them in his wars, yet he said the affairs of France could not succeed as long as their King had so many heretics in his army. That King had also made two constitutions that gave the Pope great offence: the one, that marriages made by sons under thirty, and daughters under twenty-five, without their father's consent, should be void; the other was for

PART II.

charging the ecclesiastical benefices with a tax, and requiring all bishops and curates to reside on their benefices. So scandalous a thing was non-residence then held, that every where the papists were ashamed of it. Upon which the Pope complained anew, that the King presumed to meddle with the sacraments, and to tax the clergy.

1557.

1558. Calais is besieged.

The beginning of the next year was famous for the loss of Calais. The Lord Wentworth had then the command of it; but the garrison consisted only of five hundred men, and there were not above two hundred of the townsmen that could be serviceable in a siege. The Duke of Guise, having brought his army out of Piedmont, was now in France, and being desirous, when the Constable was a prisoner, to do some great action which might raise him in reputation above the other, who was his only competitor in France, set his thoughts on Calais, and the territory about it. There were two forts on which the security of the town depended. The one Newnambridge, a mile from it, that commanded the avenues to it from the land; from which to the town there was a way raised through a marsh lying on both hands of it. On the other side, to the sea, the fort of Risbank commanded the harbour; so that the whole strength of the place lay in those two forts.

On the 1st of January, the Duke of Guise came and sat down before it. The Governor, having but a small force within, did not think fit to weaken it by sending such supplies as those forts required; so they were taken without any opposition. Then the town being thus shut up, the enemy pressed it hard, and drew the water out of its current, by which the ditches about the town and castle were drained; and having prepared devices for their soldiers to pass them without sticking in the mire, they made the assault, after they had opened a great breach by their ordnance; and, when the sea was out, others crossed on that side, and so carried the castle by storm; which the Governor had looked on as impregnable, and so had brought his chief force to the defence of the town. Seeing the castle thus unexpectedly lost, he did all he could with his small force to regain it; but

1558.

being still repulsed, and having lost two hundred of his best men, he was forced to render the place on the 7th of January. By the articles, all the townsmen and soldiers were to go whither they pleased, only he and fifty more were to be prisoners of war. Thus, in one week's time, and in winter, was so strong a town lost by the English, that had been for many ages in their hands. It was taken two hundred and ten years ago by Edward the Third after the battle of Cressy; and was still called the key of France, as long as it continued in English hands. But now, in a time of war, it was in as ill a condition as if they had been in the profoundest peace: and though Philip had offered to put men into it, yet the English, being jealous that those advertisements were but artifices of his to persuade them to admit a Spanish garrison into it, left it in so naked a condition, that the Governor could do little to preserve it. But yet, that it might appear he had not been too careful of himself, he was content to agree that he should be a prisoner of war.

And taken.

From this, the Duke of Guise went to Guisnes, commanded by the Lord Gray, whose garrison consisted of about eleven hundred men: but the loss of Calais had much disheartened them. At the first impression the French carried the town, and the garrison retired into the castle; but Gray, breaking out on the soldiers, that were fallen to plundering, did beat them out again, and burnt the town. The French battered the castle, till they made a breach in the out-works of it, which they carried, after a long resistance, in which the English lost three hundred. So the Lord Gray was fain to render it; he, and all the officers, being made prisoners of war. There was another castle in that little county, Hammes, which lay in such a marsh, that it was thought inaccessible: but the garrison that was in it, abandoned it, without staying till the enemy came before them. The French writers speak more meanly of the resistance made by the Lord Gray, than of that made by the Lord Wentworth: for there went out of Guisnes about eight hundred soldiers, whereas there went not out of Calais above three hundred. But one

Guisnes and the rest of that territory taken by the French.

PART II.

1558.

of our own writers magnifies the Lord Gray, and speaks dishonourably of the Lord Wentworth, adding, which was an invention of his own, that he was attainted for the losing of Calais. All that historians ground for it, is only this, that there was indeed a mock citation issued out against the Lord Wentworth; to which he could not appear, being not freed from his imprisonment by the French all this reign: but he came over in the beginning of the next, when the treaty of peace being on foot, he obtained his liberty, and was tried by his peers in the first parliament in Queen Elizabeth's reign, and acquitted. It was, as he alleged for himself, his misfortune to be employed in a place, where he had not so much as a fourth part of that number of men that was necessary to hold out a siege. But, in the declinations of all governments, when losses fall out, they must be cast on those that are entrusted, to excuse those who are much more guilty, by neglecting to supply them as the service required. Among the prisoners, one of the chief was Sir Edward Grimston, the Comptroller of Calais, and a privy-counsellor: he had often, according to the duty of his place, given advertisement of the ill condition the garrison was in. But whether those to whom he writ were corrupted by French money, or whether the low state of the Queen's treasury made that they were not supplied, is not certain. It was intended he should not come over to discover that; and therefore he was let lie a prisoner in the Bastile, and no care was taken of him or the other prisoners: the ransom set on him was so high, that having lost a great estate, which he had purchased about Calais, he resolved not to do any further prejudice to his family by redeeming his liberty at such a rate, and intended either to continue a prisoner, or make his escape. He lay above two years in the Bastile, and was lodged in the top of it: at the end of that time he procured a file, and so cut out one of the bars of the window, and having a rope conveyed to him, he changed clothes with his servant, and went down on the rope, which proving a great deal too short, he leaped a great way; and having done that before the gates were shut, made his escape without being discovered.

But his beard, which was grown long, made him fear he should be known by it. Yet by a happy providence he found in the pockets of his servant's clothes a pair of scissars, and going into the fields, did so cut his beard, that he could not have been known: and having learnt the art of war in the company of the Scotch guard de Manche, he spake that dialect; so he passed as a Scotch pilgrim, and by that means escaped into England. And there he offered himself to a trial, where, after the evidence was brought, his innocence did so clearly appear, that the jury were ready to give their verdict without going from the bar. So he was acquitted, and lived to a great age, dying in his ninety-eighth year. He was great grandfather to my noble patron and benefactor Sir Harbotle Grimston, which has made me the more willing to enlarge thus concerning him, to whose heir I owe the chief opportunities and encouragements I have had in composing this work.

Now the Queen had nothing left of all those dominions that her ancestors had once in France, but the isles of Jersey, Guernsey, Alderney, and Sarke. The last of these, being a naked place, only inhabited by some hermits, but having the advantage of a harbour, the French made themselves masters of it. The strength of it consisted in the difficulty of the ascent, the little fort they had being accessible but in one place, where two could only go up abreast. So an ingenious Fleming resolved to beat them out of it: he came thither, and pretending he had a friend dead in his ship, offered them a good present, if he might bury him within their chapel. The French consented to it, if he would suffer himself and his men to be so narrowly searched, that they might not bring so much as a knife ashore. This he consented to; and as he landed with his coffin, the Frenchmen were to send some to his ship to receive the present. So the coffin being carried into the chapel, and the French apprehending nothing from unarmed men, the coffin was opened, which was full of good arms, and every man furnishing himself they broke out upon the French, and took them all; as their companions in the ship did those who went aboard to bring the present.

Sarke taken by the French.

And retaken by an ingenious stratagem.

PART II.

1558. Great discontents in England.

The news of the loss of Calais filled England with great discontent. Those who were otherwise dissatisfied with the conduct of affairs, took great advantages from it to disparage the government, which the Queen had put into the hands of priests, who understood not war, and were not sensible of the honour of the nation. It was said, they had drained her treasury by the restitutions and foundations they got her to make; and, being sensible how much the nation hated them, they had set the Queen on other ways of raising money than by a parliament; so that never did the parliament meet with greater disorder and trouble than now. But that loss affected none so deeply as the Queen herself; who was so sensible of the dishonour of it, that she was much oppressed with melancholy, and was never cheerful after it. Those who took on them to make comments on Divine Providence, expounded this loss as their affections led them. Those of the Reformation said, it was God's heavy judgment upon England, for rejecting the light of his Gospel, and persecuting such as still adhered to it. But, on the other hand, the papists said, Calais could not prosper, since it had been a receptacle of heretics, where the laws against them had never been put in execution. King Philip, as soon as he heard of this loss, wrote over to England, desiring them to raise a great force with all possible haste, and send it over to recover Calais before it was fortified, and he would draw out his army and join with them; for, if they did not retake it before the season of working about it came on, it was irrecoverably lost. Upon which there was a long consultation held about it. They found they could not to any purpose send over under twenty thousand men; the pay of them for five months would rise to 170,000*l.* Garrisons, and an army against the Scots, and securing the coasts against the French, would come to 150,000*l.* The setting out of a fleet, and an army by sea, would amount to 200,000*l.* and yet all that would be too little, if the Danes and Swedes, which they were afraid of, should join against them. There was also a great want of ammunition and ordnance, of which they had lost vast quantities in Calais and Guisnes. All this would

rise to above 520,000*l*.. and they doubted much whether the people would endure such impositions, who were now grown stubborn, and talked very loosely. So they did not see how they could possibly enter into any action this year. One reason, among the rest, was suggested by the bishops: they saw a war would oblige them to a greater moderation in their proceedings at home; they had not done their works, which they hoped a little more time would perfect; whereas a slackening in that, would raise the drooping spirits of those whom they were now pursuing. So they desired another year to prosecute them, in which time they hoped so to clear the kingdom of them, that with less danger they might engage in a war the year after. Nor did they think it would be easy to bring new-raised men to the hardships of so early a campaign; and they thought the French would certainly work so hard in repairing the breaches, that they would be in a good condition to endure a strait and long siege. All this they wrote over to the King on the 1st of February, as appears from their letter, which will be found in the Collection.

Collect. Numb. 36.

The parliament was opened on the 20th of January, where the convocation, to be a good example to the two Houses, granted a subsidy of eight shillings in the pound, to be paid in four years: in the House of Peers, the Abbot of Westminster, and the Prior of St. John of Jerusalem, took their places according to their writs. Tresham, that had given great assistance to the Queen upon her first coming to the crown, was now made prior. But how much was done towards the endowing of that house, which had been formerly among the richest of England, I do not know. On the 24th of January, the Lords sent a message to the Commons, desiring that the Speaker, with ten or twelve of that House, should meet with a committee of the Lords; which being granted, the Lords proposed, that the Commons would consider of the defence of the kingdom. What was at first demanded, does not appear; but after several days arguing about it, they agreed to give one subsidy, a fifteenth, and a tenth; and ordered the Speaker to let the Queen know what they had con-

A parliament is called.

PART II.

1558.

cluded; who sent them her hearty thanks for it. Then, complaints being made of some Frenchmen, it was carried, that they should all go out of the kingdom, and not return during the war. The Abbot of Westminster, finding the revenues of his house were much impaired, thought, that if the old privileges of the sanctuary were confirmed, it would bring him in a good revenue from those that fled to it: so he pressed for an act to confirm it. He brought a great many ancient grants of the Kings of England, which the Queen had confirmed by her letters-patent; but they did not prevail with the House, who proceeded no further in it. In this parliament the procurers of wilful murder were denied the benefit of clergy; which was carried in the House of Lords by the greater number, as it is in their Journals. The bishops did certainly oppose it, though none of them entered their dissent. Sir Ambrose, and Sir Robert Dudley, two sons of the late Duke of Northumberland, were restored in blood. The Countess of Sussex's jointure was taken from her, for her living in adultery so publicly, as was formerly mentioned. In the end of the session, a bill was put in, for the confirming of the Queen's letters-patent: it was designed chiefly for confirming the religious foundations she had made. As this went through the House of Commons, one Copley said, he did not approve such a general confirmation of those she had given, or might give, lest this might be a colour for her to dispose of the crown from the right inheritors. The House was much offended at this, and expressed such dislike at the imagination that the Queen would alienate the crown, that they both shewed their esteem for the Queen, and their resolution to have the crown descend after her death to her sister. Copley was made to withdraw, and voted guilty of great irreverence to the Queen. He asked pardon, and desired it might be imputed to his youth: yet he was kept in the Serjeant's hands, till they had sent to the Queen to desire her to forgive his offence. She sent them word, that at their suit she forgave it; but wished them to examine him, from whence that motion sprung. There is no more entered about it in the Journal, so that it seems to have

been let fall. The parliament was, on the 7th of March, prorogued to the 7th of November.

Soon after this, the King of Sweden sent a message secretly to the Lady Elizabeth, who was then at Hatfield, to propose marriage to her. King Philip had once designed to marry her to the Duke of Savoy, when he was in hope of children by the Queen; but that hope vanishing, he broke it off, and intended to reserve her for himself. How far she entertained that motion, I do not know; but for this from Sweden, she rejected it, since it came not by the Queen's direction. But to that it was answered, the King of Sweden would have them begin with herself, judging that fit for him, as he was a gentleman; and her good liking being obtained, he would next, as a King, address himself to the Queen. But she said, as she was to entertain no such propositions unless the Queen sent them to her; so, if she were left to herself, she assured them she would not change her state of life. Upon this the Queen sent Sir Thomas Pope to her in April, to let her know how well she approved of the answer she had made to them; but they had now delivered their letters, and made the proposition to her, in which she desired to know her mind. She thanked the Queen for her favour to her, but bade Pope tell her, that there had been one or two noble propositions made for her in her brother King Edward's time; and she had then desired to continue in the state she was in, which of all others pleased her best, and she thought there was no state of life comparable to it: she had never before heard of that King, and she desired never to hear of that motion more: she would see his messenger no more, since he had presumed to come to her without the Queen's leave. Then Pope said, he did believe, if the Queen offered her some honourable marriage, she would not be averse to it: she answered, what she might do afterwards she did not know; but protested solemnly that as she was then inclined, if she could have the greatest prince in Christendom, she would not accept of him; though perhaps the Queen might think this flowed rather from a maid's modesty, than any settled determination in her. This I take from a letter Pope wrote

The King of Sweden treats a marriage with the Lady Elizabeth.

Which is rejected by her.

PART II.

about it, which is in the Collection. Yet her life at this time was neither so pleasant, nor so well secured; but that if her aversion to a married state had not been very much rooted in her, it is not unlikely she would have been glad to be out of the hands of her unkind keepers, who grew the more apprehensive of her, the more they observed her sister to decay; and, as the bishops did apprehend she would overthrow all they had been building and cementing with so much blood, so some of them did not spare to suggest the putting of her out of the way: and now that she is so near the throne, in the course of this History I shall look back through this reign, to give account of what befel her in it.

1558. Collect. Numb. 37.

She was hardly used all this reign.

When she was suspected to be accessary to Wiat's conspiracy, the day after his breaking out, the Lord Hastings, Sir Thomas Cornwallis, and Sir Richard Southwell were sent for her to come to court. She then lay sick at her house at Ashridge; but that excuse not being accepted, she was forced to go; so, being still ill, she came by slow journies to the Queen. She was kept shut up in a private court, from the 4th of March to the 16th, and then Gardiner, with nineteen of the council, came to examine her about Wiat's rebellion. She positively denied she knew any thing of it, or of Sir Peter Carew's designs in the west, which they also objected to her. In conclusion, they told her the Queen had ordered her to be sent to the Tower, till the matter should be further inquired into; and, though she made great protestations of her innocence, yet she was carried thither, and led in by the traitors' gate; all her own servants being put from her. Three men, and as many women of the Queen's servants, were appointed to attend on her; and no person was suffered to have access to her. Sir John Gage, who was Lieutenant of the Tower, treated her very severely, kept her closely shut up, without leave to walk either in the galleries or on the leads; nor would he permit her servants to carry in her meat to her, but he did that by his own servants. The other prisoners were often examined about her, and some were put to the rack, to try if they could be brought any way to accuse her: but though Wiat had done it, when he hoped to

have saved his own life by so base an action, yet he afterwards denied that she knew any of their designs: and lest those denials he made at his examinations might have been suppressed, and his former depositions made use of against her, he declared it openly on the scaffold at his death. After some days close imprisonment, upon great intercession made by the Lord Chandois, then constable of the Tower, it was granted that she might sometimes walk in the Queen's rooms, in the presence of the constable, the lieutenant, and three women, the windows being all shut. Then she got leave to walk in a little garden for some air; but all the windows that opened to it were to be kept shut, when she took her walk: and so jealous were they of her, that a boy of four years old was severely threatened, and his father sent for and chid, for his carrying flowers to her. The Lord Chandois was observed to treat her with too much respect; so he was not any more trusted with the charge of her, which was committed to Sir Henry Benefield. About the middle of May she was sent, under the guard of Lord Williams and Benefield, to Woodstock. She was so straitly kept, and Benefield was so sullen to her, that she believed they intended to put her privately to death. The Lord Williams treated her nobly at his house on the way, at which Benefield was much disgusted. When she was at Woodstock, she was still kept under guards, and but seldom allowed to walk in the gardens, none being suffered to come near her. After many months imprisonment, she obtained leave to write to the Queen; Benefield being to see all she wrote. It was believed that some were sent secretly to kill her; but the orders were given so strictly, that none of them could come near her without a special warrant; and so she escaped at that time. But after King Philip understood the whole case, he broke all those designs, as was formerly shewn, and prevailed to have her sent for to court. When she came to Hampton Court, she was kept still a prisoner. Many of the council, Gardiner in particular, dealt often with her, to confess her offences, and submit to the Queen's mercy. She said she had never offended her, not so much as in her thoughts; and she would never

PART II.

1558.

betray her own innocency by such a confession. One night, when it was late, she was sent for by the Queen, before whom she kneeled down, and protested she was, and ever had been, a most faithful subject to her. The Queen seemed still to suspect her, and wished her to confess her guilt, otherwise she must think she had beenun justly dealt with: she answered, that she was not to complain, but to bear her burden, only she begged her to conceive a good opinion of her. So they parted fairly, which King Philip had persuaded the Queen to; and being afraid that the sourness of the Queen's temper might lead her into passion, he was secretly in a corner of the room to prevent any further breach, in case she should have been transported into new heats: but there was no occasion given for it. Soon after that she was discharged of her guards, and suffered to retire into the country; but there were always many spies about her, and she, to avoid all suspicion, meddled in no sort of business, but gave herself wholly to study. And thus she passed these five years, under no small fears and apprehensions; which was perhaps a necessary preparation for that high degree to which she was soon after advanced, and which she held in the greatest and longest course of prosperity and glory that ever any of her sex attained to.

The progress of the persecution.

The bishops, when the parliament was sitting, did always intermit their cruelties; but as soon as it was over, they fell to them afresh. On the 28th of March Cuthbert Simpson, that was in deacon's orders, with two others, were burnt in Smithfield. Simpson had been taken with Rough, that suffered the year before this. He was put to much torture; he lay three hours upon the rack; besides two other inventions of torture were made use of, to make him discover all those in London who met with him in their private assemblies: but he would tell nothing, and shewed such patience, that the bishops did publicly commend him for it. On the 9th of April a man was burnt at Hereford. On the 19th of May three men were burnt at Norwich; and, on the 26th, two men and one woman at Colchester. At this time complaints being made to the Queen, that

books of heresy, treason, and sedition, were either brought in from foreign parts, or secretly printed in England, and dispersed among her subjects; she set out on the 6th of June a proclamation of a strange nature: "That whosoever had any of these, and did not presently burn them, without reading or shewing them to any person, they should be esteemed rebels; and without any further delay, be executed according to the order of the martial law." On the 27th of that month, when seven were to be led out to be burnt in Smithfield, it was proclaimed in the Queen's name, that no man should pray for them, or speak to them, or say "God help them;" which was thought a strain of barbarity beyond all the examples of former times, to deprive dying men of the good wishes and prayers of their friends. But however this might restrain men from giving outward signs of their praying for them, it could not bind up their inward and secret devotions. Those seven had been taken at a meeting in Islington, with many others; of whom some died in prison, and six others were burnt at Brainford the 14th July. The rest of them were kept by Bonner, who now seemed to have been glutted with the blood of so many innocents, and therefore to have put a stop to the effusion of more: yet those that were kept prisoners by him did not so entirely escape his fury, but that he disciplined them himself with rods until he was weary; and so gave over that odd way of pastoral correction, rather to ease himself than in pity to them whom he whipped. On the 10th of July a minister was burnt at Norwich: on the 2d or 3d of August, a gentleman was burnt near Winchester: in August four were burnt at Bury: and in November three more were burnt there. On the 4th of November a man and a woman were burnt at Ipswich: at that time a woman was burnt at Exeter: and, to close up all, on the 10th of November three men and two women were burnt at Canterbury, which made in all thirty-nine this year. There had been seventy-nine burnt the former year, ninety-four the year before that, and seventy-two the first year of the persecution: which in all amount to two hundred and eighty-four. But he that writ the

PART II.

1558.

preface to Bishop Ridley's book *De Cœna Domini*, who is supposed to be Grindal,* afterwards archbishop of Canterbury, says, that in the two first years of the Queen's persecution, there were above eight hundred put to most cruel kinds of death for religion; by which it seems Fox, on whom I depend in the numbers I have assigned, has come far short in his account.† Besides those that were burnt, many others died in bonds, of whom there are sixty reckoned. There were also great numbers of those who were vexed with long and grievous imprisonment: and though they redeemed their lives by the renouncing, or rather the dissembling of their consciences; yet this being but forced from them, they carried with them their old opinions; and the wound they gave their consciences to save their lives, as it begot in many of them great horror for what they had done, so it raised in them the most mortal hatred to those who had driven them to such straits: so that if that religion was hateful before to the nation, for the impostures and scandals that were discovered in the clergy, and some few instances of their cruelty, the repeated burnings and other cruelties, of which now they saw no end, did increase their aversion to it beyond all expression.

The method of the persecution of this reign.

At first the bishops dealt earnestly with those who were brought before them to recant; and were ready at any time to receive them: the Queen's pardon was also sent to them as they were ready to be tied to a stake, if they would then turn. But now it was far otherwise. For in the council-books there is an entry made of a letter, written on the 1st of August this year, to Sir Richard Pexall, sheriff of Hampshire, signifying "that the Queen thought it very strange, that he had delayed the execution of the sentence against one Bembridge, condemned of heresy, because he had recanted; requiring him to execute it out of hand, and if he still continued in the catholic faith, which he outwardly pretended,

* The author of this preface was one William Wittingham, according to Bale, p. 684. 731, who knew the man very well, as well as his writings.

† Lord Burleigh, in the *Execution of Justice*, says, there died by imprisonment, torments, famine, and fire, near four hundred. On this we may depend.

he was then to suffer such divines as the Bishop of Winchester should appoint, to have access to him for confirming him in the faith, and to attend on him at his death, that he might die God's servant; and as soon as the Sheriff had thus burnt him, he was to come to the council, and answer for his presumption in delaying it so long." The matter of fact was thus: Bembridge being tied to a stake, and the fire taking hold on him, he, through the violence of it, yielded, and cried out "I recant." Upon which the Sheriff made the fire be put out; and Bembridge signed such a recantation as Doctor Seton, who was near him, writ for him; but for all that, upon the order of council, he was burnt, and the Sheriff was put in the Fleet: so that now it appeared that it was not so much the conversion of those they called heretics, as their destruction, that the bishops desired; and so much were their instruments set on these severities, that though they saw the Queen declining so fast, that there was no appearance of her living many days; yet, the week before she died, they burnt, as hath been said, five together in one fire at Canterbury.

An unhappy expedition against France.

There was nothing done in the war with France this year, but the sending out a fleet of one hundred and twenty ships, with seven thousand landmen in it, under the command of the Lord Clinton; who landed at Port Conquet, in the point of Bretagne, where, after a small resistance made by the French, he burnt the town; but the country being gathered together, the English were forced to return to their ships, having lost above six hundred of their men. The design was, to have seized on Brest, and fortified it; which was proposed by King Philip, who had sent thirty of his ships to their assistance. This the French knowing by some of the prisoners whom they took, went and fortified Brest, and kept a great body of men together, to resist in case the English should make a second impression. But the Lord Clinton, seeing he could do nothing, returned, having made a very expensive and unprosperous attempt. The English had lost their hearts; the government at home was so little acceptable to them, that

PART II.

they were not much concerned to support it; they began to think Heaven was against them.

1558. Strange and unusual accidents.

There were many strange accidents at home, that struck terror in them. In July, thunder broke near Nottingham with such violence, that it beat down two little towns, with all the houses and churches in them: the bells were carried a good way from the steeples, and the lead that covered the churches was cast four hundred foot from them, strangely wreathed. The river of Trent, as it is apt upon deluges of rain to swell and overrun the country, so it broke out this year with extraordinary violence; many trees were plucked up by the roots, and with it there was such a wind, that carried several men and children a great way, and dashed them against trees or houses, so that they died. Hailstones fell that were fifteen inches about in other places; and, which was much more terrible, a contagious intermitting fever, not unlike the plague, raged every where: so that three parts of four of the whole nation were infected with it. So many priests died of it, that in many places there were none to be had for the performing of the offices. Many bishops died also of it, so that there were many vacancies made by the hand of Heaven against Queen Elizabeth came to the crown; and it spreading most violently in August, there were not men enough, in many counties, to reap the harvest; so that much corn was lost. All these symptoms concurred to increase the aversion the people had to the government; which made the Queen very willing to consent to a treaty of peace, that was opened at Cambray in October; to which she sent the Earl of Arundel, the Bishop of Ely, and Dr. Wotton, as her plenipotentiaries.

A treaty of peace between England, France, and Spain.

The occasion of the peace was from a meeting that the Bishop of Arras had with the Cardinal of Lorrain at Peronne; in which he proposed to him, how much Philip was troubled at the continuance of the war, their forces being so much engaged in it, that they could make no resistance to the Turk; and the meanwhile heresy increasing and spreading in their own dominions, while they were so taken up, that they could not look

1558.

carefully to their affairs at home, but must connive at many things: therefore he pressed the Cardinal to persuade the King of France to an accommodation. The Cardinal was easily induced to this, since, besides his own zeal for religion, he saw that he might thereby bear down the Constable's greatness; whose friends, chiefly his two nephews, the Admiral and Dandelot, who went then among the best captains in France, were both suspected of being protestants; upon which, the latter was shortly after put in prison: so he used all his endeavours to draw the King to consent to it; in which he had the less opposition, since the court was now filled with his dependants, and his four brothers, who had got all the great offices of France into their hands, and the Constable and Admiral being prisoners, there was none to oppose their counsels. The King, thinking that by the recovery of Calais, and the places about it, he had gained enough to balance the loss of St. Quintin, was very willing to hearken to a treaty: and he was in an ill state to continue the war, being much weakened both by the loss he suffered last year, and the blow that he received in July last: the Marshal de Thermes being enclosed by the Count of Egmont near Graveling, where the French army being set on by the Count, and galled with the English ordnance from their ships, that lay near the land, was defeated, five thousand killed, the Marshal and the other chief officers being taken prisoners. These losses made him sensible that his affairs were in so ill a condition, that he could not gain much by the war.

The battle of Graveling.

The Cardinal was the more earnest to bring on a peace, because the protestants did not only increase in their numbers, but they came so openly to avow their religion, that in the public walks without the suburbs of St. Germain, they began to sing David's Psalms in French verse. The newness of the thing amused many, the devotion of it wrought on others, the music drew in the rest; so that the multitudes that used to divert themselves in those fields, instead of their ordinary sports, did now nothing for many nights but go about singing psalms: and that which made it more remark-

The number of the protestants growing in France.

PART II.

1558.

able was, that the King and Queen of Navarre came and joined with them. That King, besides the honour of a crowned head, with the small part of that kingdom that was yet left in their hands, was the first prince of the blood. He was a soft and weak man; but his Queen, in whose right he had that title, was one of the most extraordinary women that any age hath produced, both for knowledge far above her sex, for a great judgment in affairs, an heroical greatness of mind, and all other virtues, joined to a high measure of devotion and true piety: all which, except the last, she derived to her son Henry the Great. When the King of France heard of this psalmody, he made an edict against it, and ordered the doers of it to be punished; but the numbers of them, and the respect to those crowned heads, made the business to go no further.

The Dauphin marries the Queen of Scotland.

On the 24th of April was the Dauphin married to the Queen of Scotland. Four cardinals, Bourbon, Lorrain, Chastilion, and Bertrand, with many of the princes of the blood, and the other great men of France, and the commissioners sent from Scotland, were present. But scarce any thing adorned it more than the Epithalamium, written upon it by Buchanan; which was accounted one of the perfectest pieces of Latin poetry. After the marriage was over, the Scotch commissioners were desired to offer the Dauphin the ensigns of the regality of Scotland, and to acknowledge him their king; but they excused themselves, since that was beyond their commission, which only empowered them to treat concerning the articles of the marriage, and to carry an account back to those that sent them. Then it was desired that they would promote the business at their return to their country; but some of them had expressed their aversion to those propositions so plainly, that it was believed they were poisoned by the brethren of the house of Guise. Four of them died in France; the Bishop of Orkney, and the Earls of Rothes and Cassils, and the Lord Fleming. The Prior of St. Andrew's was also very sick; and though he recovered at that time, yet he had never any perfect health after it. When the other four returned into Scotland, a conven-

1558. A convention of estates in Scotland.

tion of the estates was called, to consult about the propositions they brought.

This assembly consists of all those members that make up a parliament, who were then the bishops, and abbots, and priors, who made the first estate; the noblemen, that were the second estate; and the deputies from the towns, one from every town, only Edinburgh sends two, were the third estate. Anciently all that held lands of the crown were summoned to parliaments, as well the greater as the lesser barons. But in King James the First's time, the lesser barons finding it a great charge to attend on such assemblies, desired to be excused from it; and procured an act of parliament exempting them, and giving them power to send from every county two, three, four, or more, to represent them: but they afterwards thought this rather a charge than a privilege, and did not use it; so that now the second estate consisted only of the nobility. But the gentry finding the prejudice they suffered by this, and that the nobility grew too absolute, procured, by King James the Sixth's favour, an act of parliament restoring them to that right of sending deputies, two from every county, except some small counties that send only one. But according to the ancient law, none has a vote in the elections, but those who hold lands immediately of the crown of such a value. The difference between a parliament, and a convention of estates, is, that the former must be summoned forty days before it sits; and then it meets in state, and makes laws, which are to be prepared by a committee of all the estates, called the Lords of the Articles: but a convention may be called within as few days as are necessary for giving notice to all parts of the nation to make their elections: they have no power of making laws, being only called for one particular emergent; which, during the division of the island, was chiefly upon the breaking out of war betwixt the two nations, and so their power was confined to the giving of money for the occasion which then brought them together.

In the convention now held, after much debate and opposition, whether they should consent to the demand

PART II.

1558.

made by the ambassador sent from France, it was carried, that the Dauphin should be acknowledged their king; great assurances being given that this should be only a bare title, and that he should pretend to no power over them. So the Earl of Argyle, and the Prior of St. Andrew's, who had been the main sticklers for the French interest, upon the promises that the Queen Regent made them, that they should enjoy the free exercise of their religion, were appointed to carry the matrimonial crown into France; but, as they were preparing for their journey, a great revolution of affairs fell out in England.

A session of parliament in England.

The parliament met on the 5th of November. On the 7th the Queen sent for the Speaker of the House of Commons, and ordered him to open to them the ill condition the nation was in: for though there was a treaty begun at Cambray, yet it was necessary to put the kingdom in a posture of defence, in case it should miscarry. But the Commons were now so dissatisfied, that they could come to no resolution. So on the 14th day of November the Lord Chancellor, the Lord Treasurer, the Duke of Norfolk, the Earls of Shrewsbury and Pembroke, the Bishops of London, Winchester, Lincoln, and Carlisle, the Viscount Montacute, the Lords Clinton and Howard, came down to the House of Commons, and sat in that place of the House where the privy-counsellors used to sit. The Speaker left his chair, and he, with the privy-counsellors that were of the House, came and sat on low benches before them. The Lord Chancellor shewed the necessity of granting a subsidy, to defend the nation both from the French and the Scots. When he had done the Lords withdrew; but though the Commons entered, both that and the two following days, into the debate, they came to no issue in their consultations.

The Queen's sickness.

The Queen had never enjoyed her health perfectly since the false conception that was formerly spoken of; upon which followed the neglect from her husband, and the despair of issue, that increased her melancholy: and this receiving a great addition from the loss of Calais, and the other misfortunes of this year, she, by a

long declination of health, and decay of her spirits, was now brought so low, that it was visible she had not many days to live; and a dropsy coming on her, put a conclusion to her unhappy reign and unfortunate life, on the 17th of November, in the forty-third year of her age, after she had reigned five years, four months, and eleven days. 1558. And death.

At the same time Cardinal Pole, as if one star had governed both their nativities, was also dying; and his end being hastened by the Queen's death, he followed her within sixteen hours, in the fifty-ninth year of his age. He left his whole estate to Aliosi Prioli, a noble Venetian, with whom he had lived six-and-twenty years in so entire a friendship, that as nothing could break it off, so neither was any thing able to separate them from one another's company. Prioli, being invited by Pope Julius to come and receive a cardinal's hat, preferred Pole's company before it; and as he had supplied him in his necessities in Italy, so he left his country now to live with him in England. Pole made him his executor: but Prioli was of a more noble temper than to enrich himself by his friend's wealth; for as he took care to pay all the legacies he left, so he gave away all that remained, reserving nothing to himself but Pole's breviary and diary.* And indeed the Cardinal was not a man made to raise a fortune, being, by the greatness of his birth and his excellent virtues, carried far above such mean designs. He was a learned, modest, humble, and good-natured man; and had indeed such qualities, and such a temper, that, if he could have brought the other bishops to follow his measures, or the Pope and Queen to approve of them, he might have probably done much to have reduced this nation to popery again. But God designed better things for it: so he gave up the Queen to the bloody counsels of Gardiner, and the rest of the clergy. It was the only thing in which she was not led by the Cardinal. But she imputed his opinion in that particular rather to the sweetness of his temper, than

Cardinal Pole dies.

His character.

* *Ex quibus Polus Deum precari solitus erat, Breviarum vocamus et diurnale.* Becatell. p. 80.

PART II.

1558.

to his wisdom and experience: and he, seeing he could do nothing of what he projected in England, fell into a languishing, first of his mind, that brought after it a decay of his health, of which he died. I have dwelt the more copiously on his character, being willing to deny to none, of whom I write, the praises that are due to them: and he being the only man of that whole party, of whom I found any reason to say much good, I was the more willing to enlarge about him, to let the world see how little I am biassed in the account I give by interest or opinion. So that if I have written sharply of any others that have been mentioned in this reign, it was the force of truth, and my abhorrence of their barbarous cruelties, that led me to it, more than my being of a contrary persuasion to them. It is certain that Pole's method of correcting the manners of the clergy, and being gentle to the reformed, would in all appearance have been much more fatal to the progress of the Reformation; that was set forward by nothing more than by the severities shewed to those that differed from them, and the indulgence of the bishops to the vices of their own party. Yet Pole had a vast superstition to the see of Rome; and though his being at the council of Trent, had opened his eyes to many things which he had not observed before, yet he still retained his great submission to that see, and thought it impossible to maintain the order and unity of the church, but by holding communion with it; which carried him, in opposition to many apprehensions himself had of some theological points, still to support the interests of the papacy. His neglect of the offer of it, when it was made to him, shewed this flowed from no aspirings of his own, but purely from his judgment: so that what mistakes soever his education, and heats with King Henry, and the disasters of his family, might have involved him in, it cannot be denied that he was a man of as great probity and virtue as most of the age, if not all of that church, in which he lived.

The Queen's character.

For the Queen herself, her character has appeared so manifestly in her reign, that I need make no further description of her. She was a woman of a strict and

innocent life; that allowed herself few of the diversions with which courts abound. She was bred to learning, and understood the Latin tongue well; and was well acquainted with Spanish and French. She was constant at her devotions, and was as much addicted to the interests and humours of the clergy, as they could have wished her. She had great resentment of her own ill usage in her father's and brother's times; which made her be easily induced to take her revenge, though she coloured it with her zeal against heresy. She did not much mind any other affairs but those of the church: so that if she could have extirpated heresy, she seemed to regard all other things very little: and being given up to follow the dictates of Rome, with a nice scrupulosity of conscience, it was no wonder she went on in these designs very vigorously. For as the Pope was ever calling on all princes that were under his obedience to set up the courts of Inquisition, so the fourth general council of Lateran, to which, with the other general councils, she paid no less reverence than to the Scriptures, charged catholic princes to extirpate all heretics out of their dominions; such as were slack must be required to do it by their bishops; and if that prevailed not, they were to be excommunicated by them; and if they continued negligent, and under that censure a year, they were to be deprived by the Pope, and their dominions to be given to others, who should take more care to extirpate heresy. The Pope had also in February this year published a constitution, to which he had made all the cardinals set their hands, confirming all former decrees and canons against heretics; declaring, that all prelates, princes, kings, and emperors, that had fallen into heresy, should be understood to be deprived of their dominions without any further sentence: and that any catholics who would take the forfeiture, should have a good title to all that they invaded and seized. The bishops, besides the other canons binding them to proceed against heretics, were, by the words of the oath of obedience which they swore to the Pope at their consecration, engaged to oppose and persecute the heretics with all their might; so that their

PART II.

1558.

giving severe counsels, and the Queen's following them, flowed mainly from the principles of their religion; in which the sourness of her temper made it the more easy to persuade her to a compliance to those courses, to which her inclination led her without any such motives. To conclude, her death was as little lamented as any of all our princes ever was, the popish clergy being almost the only mourners that were among her own people.

Thus lived and died Mary Queen of England by inheritance, and of Spain by marriage.



Queen Elizabeth

BOOK III.

Of the Settlement of the Reformation of Religion, in the beginning of Queen Elizabeth's Reign.

BOOK III.

1558. Queen Elizabeth succeeds.

QUEEN MARY's death was concealed for some hours. What the secret consultations were upon it is not known; but the issue of them appeared about nine o'clock. Then the Lord Chancellor went to the House of Lords, and first imparted to them the news of the Queen's death; which, as it struck the bishops with no small fear, so those counsellors who had been severe in their advices about her sister, did apprehend she might remember it against them. Yet they all agreed to proclaim her Queen: and by the zeal they expressed for her coming to the crown, intended to balance the errors they had formerly been led to, rather in compliance to the late Queen's resentments, than out of any ill will they bore herself. They sent for the House of Commons, and the Lord Chancellor signified to them the Queen's death; which, he said, would have been a much more sorrowful loss to them, if they had not such a successor, that was the next and indisputed heir to the crown, Elizabeth, of whose right and title none could make any question; therefore they intended to proclaim her Queen, and desired their concurrence. This was echoed with many and long-repeated cries, "God save Queen Elizabeth; long and happily may she reign."

And proclaimed Queen.

The parliament being declared to be dissolved by the late Queen's death, the Lords proclaimed Elizabeth Queen; and went into London, where it was again done by the Lord Mayor, and received every where with such excessive joy, that there was no sign of sorrow expressed for the death of Queen Mary, but what the priests shewed; who, in so public and universal a oy, were forced to betake themselves to secret groans,

PART II.

1558.

since they durst not vent them in public. Never did any before her come to the throne with so many good wishes and acclamations, which the horror of the cruelties, and the reflection of the disasters of the former reign, drew from the people, who now hoped to see better times.

And comes to London.

The Queen was then at Hatfield, where, having received the news of her sister's death, and of her being proclaimed Queen, she came from thence to London. On the 24th, at Highgate, all the bishops met her, whom she received civilly, except Bonner, on whom she looked as defiled with so much blood, that she could not think fit to bestow any mark of her favour on him. She was received in the city with throngs much greater than even such occasions used to draw together, and followed with the loudest shouts of joy that they could raise. She lay that night at the Duke of Norfolk's house in the Charter-house, and next day went to the Tower. There at her entry she kneeled down, and offered up thanks to God for that great change in her condition; that whereas she had been formerly a prisoner in that place, every hour in fear of her life, she was now raised to so high a dignity. She soon cleared all people's apprehensions as to the hardships she had formerly met with, and shewed she had absolutely forgot from whom she had received them; even Benefield himself not excepted, who had been the chief instrument of her sufferings: but she called him always her gaoler, which though she did in a way of raillery, yet it was so sharp that he avoided coming any more to the court.

She presently dispatched messengers to all the princes of Christendom, giving notice of her sister's death, and her succession. She wrote in particular to King Philip a large acknowledgment of his kindness to her, to whom she held herself much bound for his interposing so effectually with her sister for her preservation. She also sent to Sir Edward Karn, that had been her sister's resident at Rome, to give the Pope the news of her succession. The haughty Pope received it in his ordinary style, declaring, "that England was held in fee

She sends a dispatch to Rome.

of the apostolic see; that she could not succeed, being illegitimate, nor could he contradict the declarations made in that matter by his predecessors, Clement the Seventh, and Paul the Third: he said, it was great boldness in her to assume the crown without his consent; for which in reason she deserved no favour at his hands: yet, if she would renounce her pretensions, and refer herself wholly to him, he would shew a fatherly affection to her, and do every thing for her that could consist with the dignity of the apostolic see." When she heard of this, she was not much concerned at it: for she had written to Karn as she did to her other ministers, and had renewed his powers upon her first coming to the crown, being unwilling in the beginning of her reign to provoke any party against her: but hearing how the Pope received this address, she recalled Karn's powers, and commanded him to come home. The Pope on the other hand required him not to go out of Rome, but to stay and take the care of an hospital over which he set him: which it was thought that Karn procured to himself, because he was unwilling to return into England, apprehending the change of religion that might follow, for he was himself zealously addicted to the see of Rome.

But to no effect.

As soon as Philip heard the news, he ordered the Duke of Feria, whom he had sent over in his name to comfort the late Queen in her sickness, to congratulate the new Queen, and in secret to propose marriage to her; and to assure her, he should procure a dispensation from Rome: and at the same time he sent thither to obtain it. But the Queen, though very sensible of her obligation to him, had no mind to the marriage. It appeared by what hath been said in the former book, and by the sequel of her whole life, that though, upon some occasions, when her affairs required it, she treated about her marriage, yet she was firmly resolved never to marry. Besides this, she saw her people were generally averse to any foreigner, and particularly to a Spaniard: and she made it the steady maxim of her whole reign, from which she never departed, to rule in their affections as well as over their

King Philip courts her in marriage.

PART II.

1558.

persons. Nor did she look on the Pope's dispensation as a thing of any force to warrant what was otherwise forbidden by God: and the relation between King Philip and her being the reverse of that which was between her father and Queen Katharine, it seeming to be equally unlawful for one man to marry two sisters, as it was for one woman to be married to two brothers, she could not consent to this marriage without approving King Henry's with Queen Katharine: and if that were a good marriage, then she must be illegitimate, as being born of a marriage which only the unlawfulness of that could justify. So inclination, interest, and conscience, all concurred to make her reject King Philip's motion. Yet she did it in terms so full of esteem and kindness for him, that he still insisted in the proposition; in which she was not willing to undeceive him so entirely as to put him out of all hopes, while the treaty of Cambray was in dependance, that so she might tie him more closely to her interests.

The Queen of Scots pretends to the crown of England.

The French, hearing of Queen Mary's death, and being alarmed at Philip's design upon the new Queen, sent to Rome to engage the Pope to deny the dispensation, and to make him declare the Queen of Scotland to be the right heir to the crown of England, and the pretended Queen to be illegitimate. The Cardinal of Lorrain prevailed also with the French King to order his daughter-in-law to assume that title, and to put the arms of England on all her furniture.

The Queen's council.

But now to return to England; Queen Elizabeth continued to employ some of the same counsellors that had served Queen Mary; namely Heath, the lord chancellor; the Marquis of Winchester, lord treasurer, the Earls of Arundel, Shrewsbury, Derby, and Pembroke; the Lords Clinton and Howard; Sir Thomas Cheyney, Sir William Petre, Sir John Mason, Sir Richard Sackville, and Dr. Wotton, dean of Canterbury and York. Most of these had complied with all the changes that had been made in religion backward and forward since the latter end of King Henry's reign, and were so dexterous at it, that they were still employed in every new revolution. To them, who were all pa-



Lord Burghley

pists, the Queen added, the Marquis of Northampton, the Earl of Bedford, Sir Thomas Parry, Sir Edward Rogers, Sir Ambrose Cave, Sir Francis Knolles, and Sir William Cecil, whom she made secretary of state; and soon after she sent for Sir Nicholas Bacon; who were all of the reformed religion. She renewed all the commissions to those formerly entrusted, and ordered, that such as were imprisoned on account of religion should be set at liberty. After this, a man that used to talk pleasantly, said to her, that he came to supplicate in behalf of some prisoners not yet set at liberty: she asked, who they were? he said, they were Matthew, Mark, Luke, and John, that were still shut up; for the people longed much to see them abroad. She answered him as pleasantly, she would first talk with themselves, and see whether they desired to be set at such liberty as he requested for them.

A consultation about the change of religion.

Now the two great things under consultation were religion and peace. For the former, some were appointed to consider how it was to be reformed. Beal, a clerk of the council, gave advice to Cecil, that the parliaments under Queen Mary should be declared void; the first being under a force (as was before related), and the title of Supreme Head being left out of the summons to the next parliament before it was taken away by law: from whence he inferred, that both these were not lawfully held or duly summoned; and this being made out, the laws of King Edward were still in force: but this was laid aside as too high and violent a way of proceeding, since the annulling of parliaments, upon little errors in writs, or some particular disorders, was a precedent of such consequence, that to have proceeded in such a manner would have unhinged all the government and security of the nation. More moderate courses were thought on. The Queen had been bred up from her infancy with a hatred of the papacy, and a love to the Reformation: but yet, as her first impressions in her father's reign were in favour of such old rites as he had still retained; so in her own nature she loved state, and some magnificence in religion, as well as in every thing else: she thought that in her

PART II.

1558.

brother's reign they had stripped it too much of external ornaments, and had made their doctrine too narrow in some points; therefore she intended to have some things explained in more general terms, that so all parties might be comprehended by them. She inclined to keep up images in churches, and to have the manner of Christ's presence in the sacrament left in some general words; that those who believed the corporal presence might not be driven away from the church by too nice an explanation of it. Nor did she like the title of Supreme Head; she thought it imported too great a power, and came too near that authority which Christ only had over the church. These were her own private thoughts. She considered nothing could make her power great in the world abroad, so much as the uniting all her people together at home: her father's and her brother's reign had been much distracted by the rebellions within England, and she had before her eyes the instance of the coldness that the people had exercised to her sister on all occasions for the maintaining or recovering of her dominions beyond sea: therefore she was very desirous to find such a temper in which all might agree. She observed, that in the changes formerly made, particularly in renouncing the papacy, and making some alterations in worship, the whole clergy had concurred, and so she resolved to follow and imitate these by easy steps.

A method of doing it proposed. Collect. Numb. 1.

There was a long consultation had about the method of the changes she should make: the substance of which shall be found in the Collection, in a paper, where, in the way of question and answer, the whole design of it is laid down. This draught of it was given to Sir William Cecil, and does exactly agree with the account that Cambden gives of it. That learned and judicious man has written the history of this Queen's reign with that fidelity and care, in so good a style, and with so much judgment, that it is without question the best part of our English history: but he himself often says, that he had left many things to those who should undertake the history of the church; therefore, in the account of the beginnings of this reign, as I

shall in all things follow him with the credit that is due to so extraordinary a writer, so, having met with some things which he did not know, or thought not necessary in so succinct a history to enlarge on, I shall not be afraid to write after him, though the esteem he is justly in may make it seem superfluous to go over these matters any more.

The heads of it.

"It seemed necessary for the Queen to do nothing before a parliament were called; for only from that assembly could the affections of the people be certainly gathered. The next thing she had to do was to balance the dangers that threatened her, both from abroad and at home. The Pope would certainly excommunicate and depose her, and stir up all Christian princes against her: the King of France would lay hold of any opportunity to embroil the nation: and by the assistance of Scotland, and of the Irish, might perhaps raise troubles in her dominions. Those that were in power in Queen Mary's time, and remained firm to the old superstition, would be discontented at the reformation of religion: the bishops and clergy would generally oppose it; and since there was a necessity of demanding subsidies, they would take occasion, by the discontent the people would be in on that account to inflame them: and those who would be dissatisfied at the retaining of some of the old ceremonies, would, on the other hand, disparage the changes that should be made, and call the religion a cloaked papistry, and so alienate many of the most zealous from it. To remedy all these things, it was proposed to make peace with France, and to cherish those in that kingdom that desired the Reformation. The curses and practices of Rome were not much to be feared. In Scotland those must be encouraged who desired the like change in religion; and a little money among the heads of the families in Ireland would go a great way. And for those that had borne rule in Queen Mary's time, ways were to be taken to lessen their credit throughout England: they were not to be too soon trusted or employed, upon pretence of turning; but those who were known to be well affected to religion, and the Queen's person, were to be

PART II.

1558.

sought after and encouraged. The bishops were generally hated by the nation: it would be easy to draw them within the statute of *præmunire*, and upon their falling into it, they must be kept under it, till they had renounced the Pope, and consented to the alterations that should be made. The commissions of the peace, and for the militia, were to be carefully reviewed, and such men were to be put in them, as would be firm to the Queen's interests. When the changes should be made, some severe punishments would make the rest more readily submit. Great care was to be had of the Universities, and other public schools, as Eton and Winchester, that the next generation might be betimes seasoned with the love and knowledge of religion. Some learned men, as Bill, Parker, May, Cox, Whitehead, Grindall, Pilkington, and Sir Thomas Smith, were to be ordered to meet and consider of the book of service. In the mean while the people were to be restrained from innovating without authority; and the Queen, to give some hope of a Reformation, might appoint the communion to be given in both kinds. The persons that were thought fit to be trusted with the secret of these consultations, were the Marquis of Northampton, the Earls of Bedford and Pembroke, and the Lord John Gray. The place that was thought most convenient for the divines to meet in, was Sir Thomas Smith's house, in Channon-Row, where an allowance was to be given for their entertainment."

The forwardness in many to the Reformation.

As soon as the news of the Queen's coming to the crown was known beyond sea, all those who had fled thither for shelter did return into England; and those who had lived in corners during the late persecution, now appeared with no small assurance: and these, having notice of the Queen's intentions, could not contain themselves, but in many places begun to make changes, to set up King Edward's service, to pull down images, and to affront the priests. Upon this, the Queen, to make some discovery of her own inclinations, gave order, that the Gospels and Epistles, and the Lord's Prayer, the Apostles' Creed, and the Ten Commandments, should be read in English, and that the Litany



Matthew Parker

should be also used in English; and she forbade the priests to elevate the host at mass. Having done this, on the 27th of December she set out a proclamation against all innovations, requiring her subjects to use no other forms of worship than those she had in her chapel, till it should be otherwise appointed by the parliament, which she had summoned to meet on the 23d of January. The writs were issued out by Bacon, into whose hands she had delivered the great seal. On the 13th of December she performed her sister's funeral rites with great magnificence at Westminster. The Bishop of Winchester being appointed to preach the sermon, did so mightily extol her and her government, and so severely taxed the disorders which he thought the innovators were guilty of, not without reflections on the Queen, that he was thereupon ordered to be confined to his house till the parliament met; but the council, however, set him at liberty on the 19th of January, a few days before the assembling of parliament.

Parker designed to be archbishop of Canterbury.

One of the chief things under consultation, was, to provide men fit to be put into the sees that were now vacant, or that might fall to be so afterwards, if the bishops should continue intractable. Those now vacant, were the sees of Canterbury, Hereford, Bristol, and Bangor: and in the beginning of the next year the Bishops of Norwich and Gloucester died: so that, as Cambden hath it, there were but fourteen bishops living when the parliament met. It was of great importance to find men able to serve in these employments, chiefly in the see of Canterbury. For this, Dr. Parker was soon thought on. Whether others had the offer of it before him or not, I cannot tell: but he was writ to by Sir Nicholas Bacon on the 9th of December, to come up to London; and afterwards, on the 30th of December, by Sir William Cecil; and again by Sir Nicholas Bacon, on the 4th of January. He understood, that it was for some high preferment; and being a man of a humble temper, distrustful of himself, that loved privacy, and was much disabled by sickness, he declined coming up all he could: he begged he might

PART II.

1558.

not be thought of for any public employment, but that some prebend might be assigned him, where he might be free both of care and government; since the infirmities which he had contracted by his flying about in the nights in Queen Mary's time, had disabled him from a more public station. That to which he pretended, shews how moderate his desires were: for he professed, an employment of twenty nobles a year would be more acceptable to him than one of 200*l.* He had been chaplain to Queen Anne Boleyn, and had received a special charge from her, a little before she died, to look well to the instruction of her daughter in the principles of the Christian religion; and now the Queen had a grateful remembrance of those services. This, joined with the high esteem that Sir Nicholas Bacon had of him, soon made her resolve to raise him to that great dignity. And since such high preferments are generally, if not greedily sought after, yet very willingly undertaken by most men; it will be no unfit thing to lay open a modern precedent, which indeed savours more of the ancient than the latter times; for then, instead of that *ambitus*, which has given such offence to the world in the latter ages, it was ordinary for men to fly from the offer of great preferments. Some run away when they understood they were to be ordained, or had been elected to great sees, and fled to a wilderness. This shewed they had a great sense of the care of souls, and were more apprehensive of that weighty charge, than desirous to raise or enrich themselves or families. It hath been shewed before, that Cranmer was very unwillingly engaged in the see of Canterbury; and now, he that succeeded him in that see with the same designs, was drawn into it with such unwillingness, that it was almost a whole year before he could be prevailed upon to accept of it: the account of this will appear in the series of letters both written to him, and by him, on that head; which were communicated to me by the present most worthy and most reverend Primate of this church. I cannot mention him in this place without taking notice, that, as in his other great virtues and learning he has gone in the



Nicholas Bacon

steps of those most eminent archbishops that went before him; so the whole nation is witness how far he was from aspiring to high preferment, how he withdrew from all those opportunities that might be steps to it, how much he was surprised with his unlooked-for advancement, how unwillingly he was raised, and how humble and affable he continues in that high station he is now in: but this is a subject that I must leave for them to enlarge on that shall write the history of this present age.

1558.

1559. Bacon made lord keeper.

In the beginning of the next year, the Queen having found that Heath, archbishop of York, then lord chancellor, would not go along with her, as he had done in the reigns of her father and brother; and having therefore taken the seals from him, and put them into Sir Nicholas Bacon's hand, did now by patent create him lord keeper. Formerly those that were keepers of the seal had no dignity nor authority annexed to their office; they did not hear causes, nor preside in the House of Lords, but were only to put the seals to such writs or patents as went in course; and so it was only put in the hands of a keeper but for some short interval. But now Bacon was the first lord keeper that had all the dignity and authority of the Lord Chancellor conferred on him; and his not being raised to that high title perhaps flowed from his own modesty: for as he was one of the most learned, most pious, and wisest men of the nation; so he retained in all his greatness a modesty equal to what the ancient Greeks and Romans had carried with them to their highest advancement. He was father to the great Sir Francis Bacon, Viscount St. Alban's, and lord chancellor of England, that will be always esteemed one of the greatest glories of the English nation.

The Queen's coronation.

The Queen was now to be crowned; and having gone on the 12th of January to the Tower, she returned from thence in state on the 13th. As she went into her chariot, she lifted up her eyes to heaven, "and blessed God that had preserved her to see that joyful day, and that had saved her, as he did his prophet Daniel, out of the mouth of the lions. She acknow-

PART II.

1559.

ledged her deliverance was only from him, to whom she offered up the praise of it." She passed through London in great triumph; and having observed that her sister, by the sullenness of her behaviour to the people, had much lost their affections; therefore she always used, as she passed through crowds, but more especially this day, to look out of her coach cheerfully on them, and to return the respects they paid her with great sweetness in her looks; commonly saying, "God bless you, my people;" which affected them much. But nothing pleased the city more than her behaviour as she went under one of the triumphal arches: there was a rich Bible let down to her, as from heaven, by a child, representing Truth; she with great reverence kissed both her hands, and receiving it, kissed it, and laid it next her heart; and professed she was better pleased with that present, than with all the other magnificent ones that had been that day made her by the city: this drew tears of joy from the spectators' eyes. And indeed this Queen had a strange art of insinuating herself by such ways into the affections of her people. Some said she was too theatrical in it; but it wrought her end; since by these little things in her deportment she gained more on their affections, than other princes have been able to do by more real and significant arts of grace and favour. The day following she was crowned at Westminster, by Oglethorp, bishop of Carlisle, all the other bishops refusing to assist at that solemnity. He, and the rest of that order, perceived that she would change the religion then established, and looked on the alterations she had already made as pledges of more to follow; and observed, by the favour that Cecil and Bacon had with her, that she would return to what had been set up by her brother. They had already turned so oft, that they were ashamed to be turning at every time. Heath, Tonstall, and Thirleby, had complied in King Edward's time, as well as in King Henry's; and though Thirleby had continued in credit and favour with them to the last, yet he had been one of those who had gone to Rome, where he made such public professions of his respect to the apo-

stolic see; and he had also assisted at the degradation and condemnation of Cranmer; so that he thought it indecent for him to return to that way any more: therefore he, with all the rest, resolved to adhere to what they had set up in Queen Mary's time. There were two of King Edward's bishops yet alive, who were come into England, yet the Queen chose rather to be consecrated by a bishop actually in office, and according to the old rites, which none but Oglethorp could be persuaded to do. After that, she gave a general pardon according to the common form.

The parliament meets.

On the 23d of January, being the day to which the parliament was summoned, it was prorogued till the 25th, and then it was opened with a long speech of the Lord Bacon's, in which he laid before them "the distracted state of the nation, both in matters of religion, and the other miseries that the wars and late calamities had brought upon them: all which he recommended to their care. For religion, the Queen desired they would consider of it without heat or partial affection, or using any reproachful term of papist or heretic; and that they would avoid the extremes of idolatry and superstition on the one hand, and contempt and irreligion on the other; and that they would examine matters without sophistical niceties, or too subtle speculations, and endeavour to settle things so as might bring the people to an uniformity and cordial agreement in them. As for the state of the nation, he shewed the Queen's great unwillingness to lay new impositions on them, upon which he run out largely in her commendation, giving them all assurance that there was nothing she would endeavour more effectually than the advancing of their prosperity, and the preserving their affections. He laid open the loss of Calais, with great reflections on those who had been formerly in the government; yet spoke of it as a thing which they could not at that time hope to recover: and laid before them the charge the government must be at, and the necessities the Queen was in; adding, in her name, that she would desire no supply, but what they did freely and cheerfully offer."

One of the first things that the Commons considered

PART II.

1559.

was, whether the want of the title of Supreme Head, which the Queen had not yet assumed, was a nullity in the summons for this and other parliaments in which it had been omitted; but after this had been considered some days, it was judged to be no nullity; for the annulling of a parliament, except it had been under a force, or for some other error in the constitution, was a thing of dangerous consequence.

The treaty at Cambray.

But, leaving the consultations at Westminster, I shall now give an account of the treaty of peace at Cambray. That at which things stuck most was, the rendering of Calais again to the English, which the French did positively refuse to do. For a great while Philip demanded it with so much earnestness, that he declared he would make peace on no other terms: since, as he was bound in point of honour to see the English, who engaged in the war only on his account, restored to the condition that they were in at the beginning of it; so his interest made him desire that they might be masters of that place, by which, it being so near them, they could have the conveniency of sending over forces to give a diversion to the French at any time thereafter, as their alliances with him should require. But when Philip saw there was no hope of a marriage with the Queen, and perceived that she was making alterations in religion, he grew less careful of her interests, and secretly agreed a peace with the French. But, that he might have some colour to excuse himself for abandoning her, he told her ambassador, that the French had offered him full satisfaction in all his own concerns, so that the peace was hindered only by the consideration of Calais; and therefore, unless the English would enter into a league with him for keeping up the war six years longer, he must submit to the necessity of his affairs. The Queen, perceiving that she was to expect no more assistance from the Spaniard, who was so much engaged to the old superstition, that he would enter into no strict league with any whom he accounted a heretic, was willing to listen to the messages that were sent her from France, by the Constable and others, inducing her to agree to a peace. She on the other hand complained that the Queen of

Scotland, and her husband in her right, had assumed the title and arms of England: it was answered, that was done as the younger brothers in Germany carried the title of the great families from whence they were descended; and for titles, the Queen of England had little reason to quarrel about that, since she carried the title and gave the arms of France.

A peace with France agreed to.

The Queen and her council saw it was impossible for her to carry on the war with France alone. The laying heavy impositions on her subjects in the beginning of her reign, might render her very ungrateful to the nation, who loved not to be charged with many subsidies: and when the war should produce nothing but some wastes on the French coasts, which was all that could be expected, since it was unreasonable to look for the recovery of Calais, it might turn all the joy they were now in at her coming to the crown into as general a discontent. It was the ruin of the Duke of Somerset, that he had engaged in a war in the beginning of King Edward's reign, when he was making changes in religion at home: therefore it was necessary to yield to the necessity of the time, especially since the loss of Calais was no reproach on the Queen, but on her sister: so it was resolved on to make a general peace, that, being at quiet with their neighbours, they might with the less danger apply themselves to the correcting what was amiss in England, both in religion and the civil government. At length a peace was made on these terms: that there should be free commerce between the kingdoms of England, France, and Scotland: the French should keep Calais for eight years; and at the end of that time should deliver it to the English: and if it were not then delivered they should pay to the English 500,000 crowns, for which they should give good security by merchants that lived in other parts, and give hostages till the security were given: but if during these years the Queen made war on France or Scotland, she was to lose her right to that town; or if the French or Scots made war on her, Calais should be presently restored; to which she was still to reserve her right: Aymouth in Scotland was to be razed, and a commission was to be sent down to some

PART II.

1559.

of both kingdoms, to agree all lesser differences. On these terms a peace was made, and proclaimed between those crowns; to which many of the English, that did not apprehend what the charge of war for the regaining of Calais would have amounted to, were very averse: thinking it highly dishonourable, that they, whose ancestors had made such conquests in France, should be now beaten out of the only remainder that they had on the continent; and thus make a peace by which it was in effect parted with for ever. For all these conditions about restoring it were understood to be only for palliating so inglorious a business. But the reformed cast the blame of this on the papists; and some moved, that all the late Queen's council should be questioned for their misgovernment in that particular: for it was thought, nothing would make them so odious to the nation as the charging that on them. They on the other hand did cast the blame of it on the Lord Wentworth, that had been governor of Calais, and was now professedly one of the reformed, and had been very gentle to those of that persuasion during his government. But he put himself on a trial by his peers, which he underwent on the 22d of April, and there did so clear himself, that he was by the judgment of the Peers acquitted.

The proceedings of the parliament.

The Queen's government being thus quieted abroad, she was thereby at more leisure to do things at home. The first bill that was put into the House of Lords to try their affections and disposition to a change in the matters of religion, was that for the restitution of the tenths and first-fruits to the crown. It was agreed to by the Lords on the 4th of February, having been put in the 30th of January, and was the first bill that was read: the Archbishop of York, the Bishops of London, Worcester, Landaff, Litchfield, Exeter, Chester, and Carlisle, protested against it: these were all of that order that were at the session, except the Bishops of Winchester, Lincoln, Ely, and the Abbot of Westminster, who it seems were occasionally absent. On the 6th of February it was sent down to the Commons, to which they readily agreed: and so it had the royal as-

1559.

sent. By it, not only the tenths and first-fruits were again restored to the crown, but also all impropriated benefices which had been surrendered up by Queen Mary.

The address to the Queen for her marrying.

But the Commons, reflecting on the miseries in which they had been lately involved by Queen Mary's marriage, had much debate about an address to the Queen to induce her to marry. On the 4th of February it was argued in the House of Commons; and on the 6th the Speaker, with the privy-counsellors of the House and thirty members more, were sent with their desires to the Queen. "They expressed the affections of the nation to her, and said, that if they could hope she might be immortal they would rest satisfied; but that being a vain imagination, they earnestly besought her to choose such a husband as might make the nation and herself happy; and, by the blessing of God, bring such issue as might reign after her death, which they prayed God might be very late." She said, "She looked on that as an expression both of their affection and respect, since they had neither limited time nor place. She declared that she had hitherto lived in a single state with great satisfaction; and had neither entertained some honourable propositions which, the Lord Treasurer knew, had been made to her in her brother's time, nor had been moved by the fears of death that she was in, while she was under her sister's displeasure; (of which she would say little; for though she knew, or might justly suspect, by whose means it was, yet she would not utter it, nor would she charge it on the dead, or cast the burden of it wholly upon her sister:) but she assured them, if ever she married, she would make such a choice as should be to the satisfaction and good of her people: she did not know what credit she might yet have with them; but she knew well she deserved to have it, for she was resolved never to deceive them: her people were to her instead of children, and she reckoned herself married to them, by her coronation: they would not want a successor when she died; and for her part, she should be well contented that the marble should tell posterity, *Here lies a Queen that reigned so long, and lived*

The Queen's answer.

PART II.

1559.

and died a virgin: she took their address in good part, and desired them to carry back her hearty thanks for the care the Commons had of her."

The Journals of the House of Lords are imperfect, so that we find nothing in them of this matter: yet it appears that they likewise had it before them: for the Journals of the House of Commons have it marked, that, on the 15th of February, there was a message sent from the Lords, desiring that a committee of thirty commoners might meet with twelve lords to consider what should be the authority of the person whom the Queen should marry. The committee was appointed to treat concerning it; but it seems the Queen desired them to turn to other things that were more pressing: for I find nothing after this entered in the Journals of this parliament concerning it.

They recognize her title to the crown.

On the 9th of February the Lords passed a bill for the recognizing of the Queen's title to the crown. It had been considered whether, as Queen Mary had procured a former repeal of her mother's divorce, and of the acts that passed upon it declaring her illegitimate, the like should be done now. The Lord Keeper said, the crown purged all defects, and it was needless to look back to a thing which would at least cast a reproach on her father: the inquiring into such things too anxiously would rather prejudice than advance her title. So he advised, that there should be an act passed in general words asserting the lawfulness of her descent, and her right to the crown, rather than any special repeal. Queen Mary and her council were careless of King Henry's honour; but it became her rather to conceal than expose his weakness. This being thought both wise and pious counsel, the act was conceived in general words, "that they did assuredly believe and declare, that by the laws of God and of the realm she was their lawful Queen, and that she was rightly, lineally, and lawfully descended from the royal blood, and that the crown did without all doubt or ambiguity belong to her, and the heirs to be lawfully begotten of her body after her; and that they, as representing the three estates of the realm, did declare and assert her title, which they

would defend with their lives and fortunes. This was thought to be very wise counsel: for if they had gone to repeal the sentence of divorce which passed upon her mother's acknowledging a precontract, they must have set forth the force that was on her when she made that confession: and that, as it was a great dishonour to her father, so it would have raised discourses likewise to her mother's prejudice; which must have rather weakened than strengthened her title: and, as has been formerly observed, this seems to be the true reason, why, in all her reign, there was no apology printed for her mother. There was another act passed for the restoring of her in blood to her mother, by which she was qualified as a private subject, to succeed either to her grandfather's estate, or to any others by that blood.

The acts that were passed concerning religion.

But for the matters of religion, the Commons began; and on the 15th of February brought in a bill for the English service, and concerning the ministers of the church. On the 21st a bill was read for annexing the supremacy to the crown again; and on the 17th of March another bill was brought in, confirming the laws made about religion in King Edward's time: and on the 21st another was brought in, that the Queen should have the nomination of the bishops, as it had been in King Edward's time. The bill for the supremacy was passed by the Lords on the 18th of March; the Archbishop of York, the Earl of Shrewsbury, the Viscount Montacute, and the Bishops of London, Winchester, Worcester, Landaff, Coventry and Litchfield, Exeter, Chester, and Carlisle, and the Abbot of Westminster dissenting. But afterwards the Commons annexed many other bills to it, as that about the Queen's making bishops, not according to the act made in King Edward's time, but by the old way of elections, as it was enacted in the twenty-fifth year of her father's reign, with several provisos; which passed in the House of Lords with the same dissent. By it, "all the acts passed in the reign of King Henry for the abolishing of the Pope's power are again revived; and the acts in Queen Mary's time to the contrary are repealed. There was also a repeal of the act made by her for proceeding against

PART II.

1559.

heretics. They revived the act made in the first parliament of King Edward, against those that spoke irreverently of the sacrament, and against private masses, and for communion in both kinds; and declared the authority of visiting, correcting, and reforming all things in the church, to be for ever annexed to the crown, which the Queen and her successors might by her letters-patent depute to any persons to exercise in her name. All bishops and other ecclesiastical persons, and all in any civil employment, were required to swear that they acknowledged the Queen to be the supreme governor in all causes as well ecclesiastical as temporal within her dominions; that they renounced all foreign power and jurisdiction, and should bear the Queen faith and true allegiance: whosoever should refuse to swear it, was to forfeit any office he had either in church or state; and to be from thenceforth disabled to hold any employment during life. And if, within a month after the end of that session of parliament, any should, either by discourse or in writing, set forth the authority of any foreign power, or do any thing for the advancement of it, they were to forfeit all their goods and chattels; and if they had not goods to the value of twenty pounds, they were to be imprisoned a whole year; and for the second offence they were to incur the pains of a *præmunire*; and the third offence in that kind was made treason. To this a proviso was added, that such persons as should be commissioned by the Queen to reform and order ecclesiastical matters, should judge nothing to be heresy, but what had been already so judged by the authority of the canonical Scriptures, or by the first four general councils, or by any other general council in which such doctrines were declared to be heresies by the express and plain words of Scripture: all other points, not so decided, were to be judged by the parliament with the assent of the clergy in their convocation."

This act was in many things short of the authority that King Henry had claimed, and the severity of the laws he had made. The title of Supreme Head was left out of the oath: this was done to mitigate the opposition of the popish party: but besides, the Queen her-

self had a scruple about it, which was put in her head by one Lever, a famous preacher among those of the Reformation, of which Sands, afterwards bishop of Worcester, complained to Parker in a letter that is in the Collection. There was no other punishment inflicted on those that denied the Queen's supremacy but the loss of their goods; and such as refused to take the oath did only lose their employments; whereas, to refuse the oath in King Henry's time, brought them into a *præmunire*; and to deny the supremacy was treason. But against this bill the bishops made speeches in the House of Lords. I have seen a speech of this kind said to have been made by Archbishop Heath; but it must be forgery, put out in his name: for he is made to speak of the supremacy as a new and unheard-of thing, which he, who had sworn it so oft in King Henry's and King Edward's times, could not have the face to say. The rest of the bishops opposed it; the rather, because they had lately declared so high for the Pope, that it had been very indecent for them to have revolted so soon. The Bishop of Duresme came not to this parliament.* There were some hopes of gaining him to concur in the Reformation: for in the warrant the Queen afterwards gave to some for consecrating the new bishops, he is first named; and I have seen a letter of Secretary Cecil's to Parker, that gives him some hope that Tonstal would join with them. He had been offended with the cruelties of the late reign; and though the resentments he had of his ill usage in the end of King Edward's time had made him at first concur more heartily to the restoring of popery; yet he soon fell off, and declared his dislike of those violent courses; and neither did he, nor Heath, bring any in trouble within their diocesses upon the account of religion; though it is hardly credible that there was no occasion for their being severe, if they had been otherwise inclined to it. The Bishop of Ely was also absent at the passing of this act;† for though he would not consent

Collect. Numb. 2.

The bishops oppose the Queen's supremacy.

* His presence was needed in the north, for guarding the Marches against the Scots and the French, ready to invade England.

† He was necessarily absent, being in an embassy at Cambray; but he came over on the 17th of April, and joined with the other dissenting bishops.

PART II.

to it, yet he had done all that was prescribed by it so often before, that it seems he thought it more decent to be absent, than either to consent to it or to oppose it.

1559. The beginning of the high commission.

The power that was added for the Queen's commissionating some to execute her supremacy gave the rise to that court, which was commonly called the High Commission Court; and was to be in the room of a single person, to whom, with the title of Lord Vicegerent, King Henry did delegate his authority. It seems the clergymen, with whom the Queen consulted at this time, thought this too much to be put into one man's hand, and therefore resolved to have it shared to more persons, of whom a great many would certainly be churchmen: so that they should not be altogether kept under by the hard hands of the laity, who, having groaned long under the tyranny of an ecclesiastical yoke, seemed now disposed to revenge themselves by bringing the clergy as much under them; for so extremes do commonly rise from one another.

The popish clergy were now every where beginning to declaim against innovation and heresy. Harpsfield had, in a sermon at Canterbury in February, stirred the people much to sedition; and the members belonging to that cathedral had openly said, that religion should not, nor could not be altered. The council also heard that the prebendaries there had bought up many arms; so a letter was written to Sir Thomas Smith, to examine that matter. Harpsfield was not put in prison, but received only a rebuke. There came also complaints from many other places of many seditious sermons: so the Queen, following the precedent her sister had set her, did, in the beginning of March, forbid all preaching, except by such as had a licence under the great seal. But lest the clergy might now in the convocation set out orders in opposition to what the Queen was about to do, she sent and required them, under the pains of a *præmunire*, to make no canons. Yet Harpsfield, that was prolocutor, with the rest of the Lower House, made an address to the Upper House, to be by them presented to the Queen, for the discharge of their consciences. They reduced the particulars into five

articles. 1. That Christ was corporally present in the sacrament. 2. That there was no other substance there but his body and blood. 3. That in the mass there was a propitiatory sacrifice for the dead and the living. 4. That St. Peter and his lawful successors had the power of feeding and governing the church. 5. That the power of treating about doctrine, the sacraments, and the order of Divine worship, belonged only to the pastors of the church. These they had sent to the two Universities, from whence they were returned, with the hands of the greatest part in them to the first four; but it seems they thought it not fit to sign the last: for now the Queen had resolved to have a public conference about religion in the abbey-church of Westminster.

The Archbishop of York was continued still to be of the council; so the conference being proposed to him, he, after he had communicated it to his brethren, accepted of it, though with some unwillingness. It was appointed that there should be nine of a side, who should confer about these three points. 1. Whether it was not against the word of God, and the custom of the ancient church, to use a tongue unknown to the people in the common prayers and the administration of the sacraments? 2. Whether every church had not authority to appoint, change, and take away, ceremonies and ecclesiastical rites, so the same were done to edification? 3. Whether it could be proved by the word of God, that in the mass there was a propitiatory sacrifice for the dead and the living? All was ordered to be done in writing. The bishops, as being actually in office, were to read their papers first upon the first point, and the reformed were to read theirs next; and then they were to exchange their papers, without any discourse concerning them, for the avoiding of jangling. The next day they were to read their papers upon the second, and after that upon the third head: and then they were to answer one another's papers. The nine on both sides were, the Bishops of Winchester, Litchfield, Chester, Carlisle, and Lincoln, and Doctors Cole, Harpsfield, Langdale, and Chedsey, on the popish side:

PART II.

1559.

and Scory, late bishop of Chichester, Cox, Whitehead, Grindal, Horn, Sands, Guest, Almer, and Jewel, for the protestants. The last of March was appointed to be the first day of conference, where the privy-council was to be present, and the Lord Keeper was to see that they should not depart from the rules to which they had agreed.

The noise of this drew vast numbers of people to so unusual a sight: it being expected that there should be much fairer dealings now, than had been in the disputes in Queen Mary's time. The whole House of Commons came to hear it, as no doubt the Lords did also, though it is not marked in their Journal. At their meeting the Bishop of Winchester said their paper was not quite ready, and pretended they had mistaken the order: but Dr. Cole should deliver what they had prepared, though it was not yet in that order that they could copy it out. The secret of this was, the bishops had, in their private consultations, agreed to read their paper, but not to give those they called heretics a copy of it: they could not decently refuse to give a public account of their doctrine, but they were resolved not to enter into disputes with any about it: this seemed to be the giving up of the faith, if they should suffer it again to be brought into question: besides, they looked on it as the highest act of supremacy, for the Queen to appoint such conferences: for she and her council would pretend to judge in these points, when they had done disputing. For these reasons they would not engage to make any exchange of papers. The Lord Keeper took notice, that this was contrary to the order laid down at the council-board, to which the Archbishop of York had, in their names, consented. But they pretending they had mistaken the order, Cole was appointed to deliver their minds, which he did in a long discourse, the greatest part of which he read out of a book, that will be found in the Collection. For though they refused to deliver a copy of it, yet Parker some way procured it, among whose papers I found it. The substance of it was, "That although it might seem that the Scriptures had appointed the worship of God to be in a known

Collect. Numb. 4.

Arguments for the Latin service.

tongue; yet that might be changed by the authority of the church, which had changed the sabbath appointed in the Scripture, without any authority from thence. Christ washed his disciples' feet, and bid them do the like, yet this was not kept up: Christ instituted the sacrament of his body and blood after supper; and yet the church appointed it to be received fasting; so had the church also given it only in one kind, though Christ himself gave it in both. And whereas the apostles, by authority from the Holy Ghost, commanded all believers to abstain from blood, yet that was not thought to oblige any now; and though there was a community of goods in the apostles' times, it was no obligation to Christians to set up that now: so that this matter was in the power of the church. And since the church of Rome had appointed the Latin service to be every where used, it was schismatical to separate from it; for according to Irenæus, all churches ought to agree with her, by reason of her great pre-eminence. Upon which they run out largely to shew the mischiefs of schism, both in France, Spain, Germany, and in other countries: and for the Britons and Saxons of England, their first apostles, that converted them to Christianity, were men of other nations, and did never use any service but that of their native language. All the vulgar tongues did change much, but the Latin was ever the same; and it was not fit for the church to be changing her service. The Queen of Ethiopia's eunuch read Isaiah's book, though he understood it not; upon which God sent Philip to him to expound it: so the people are to come to their teachers, to have those things explained to them which they cannot understand of themselves. There were many rites in the Jewish religion, the signification whereof the people understood as little then, as the vulgar do the Latin now; and yet they were commanded to use them. The people were to use their private prayers in what tongue they pleased, though the public prayers were put up in Latin; and such prayers may be for their profit, though they understand them not, as absent persons are the better for the prayers which they do not hear, much less understand. They said, it was

PART II.

1559.

not to be thought that the Holy Ghost had so long forsaken his church, and that a few lately risen up were to teach all the world. They concluded, that they could bring many more authorities; but they, being to defend a negative, thought it needless, and would refer these to the answers they were to make."

Arguments against it.

When this was done, the Lord Keeper turned to those of the other side, and desired them to read their paper. Horn was appointed by them to do it. He began with a short prayer to God to enlighten their minds, and with a protestation that they were resolved to follow the truth according to the word of God. Then he read his paper, which will be also found in the Collection. "They founded their assertion on St. Paul's words, who, in the fourteenth chapter of his First Epistle to the Corinthians, had treated on that subject of set purpose; and spake in it, not only of preaching, but of praying with the understanding; and said, that the unlearned were to say *Amen* at the giving of thanks. From that chapter they argued that St. Paul commanded that all things should be done to edification, which could not be by an unknown language: he also charged them that nothing should be said that had an uncertain sound; and that, as the sound of a trumpet must be distinct, so the people must understand what is said, that so they might say *Amen* at the giving of thanks. He also required those that spake in a strange language, and could not get one to interpret, to hold their peace; since it was an absurd thing for one to be a barbarian to others in the worship of God: and though the speaking with strange tongues was then an extraordinary gift of God, yet he ordered that it should not be used where there was no interpreter. They added, that these things were so strictly commanded by St. Paul, that it is plain they are not indifferent, or within the power of the church. In the Old Testament, the Jews had their worship in the vulgar tongue; and yet the new dispensation being more internal and spiritual, it was absurd that the worship of God should be less understood by Christians, than it had been by the Jews. The chief end of worship is,

Collect. Numb. 3.

according to David, that we may shew forth God's praises, which cannot be done if it is in a strange tongue. Prayer is the offering up of our desires to God, which we cannot do, if we understand not the language they are in. Baptism and the Lord's supper are to contain declarations of the death and resurrection of Christ, which must be understood, otherwise why are they made? The use of speech is to make known what one brings forth to another. The most barbarous nations perform their worship in a known tongue, which shews it to be a law of nature. It is plain from Justin Martyr's Apology, that the worship was then in a known tongue; which appears also from all the ancient liturgies: and a long citation was brought out of St. Basil for the singing of psalms, duly weighing the words with much attention and devotion; which, he says, was practised in all nations. They concluded, wondering how such an abuse could at first creep in, and be still so stiffly maintained; and why those who would be thought the guides and pastors of the church, were so unwilling to return to the rule of St. Paul, and the practice of the primitive times."

There was a great shout of applause when they had done. They gave their paper, signed with all their hands, to the Lord Keeper, to be delivered to the other side as he should think fit; but he kept it till the other side should bring him theirs. The papists upon this said, they had more to add on that head, which was thought disingenuous by those that had heard them profess they had nothing to add to what Cole had said. Thus the meeting broke up for that day, being Saturday; and they were ordered to go forward on Monday, and to prepare what they were to deliver on the other two heads. The papists, though they could complain of nothing that was done, except the applause given to the paper of the reformers, yet they saw by that, how much more acceptable the other doctrine was to the people, and therefore resolved to go no further in that matter. At the next meeting, they desired that their answer to the paper read by the reformed might be first heard: to this the Lord Keeper said, that they had de-

PART II.

1559.

livered their mind the former day, and so were not to be heard till they had gone through the other points; and then they were to return on both sides to the answering of papers. They said, that what Cole had delivered the former day was extempore, and of himself; but it had not been agreed on by them. This appeared to all the assembly to be very foul dealing; so they were required to go on to the second point. Then they pressed that the other side might begin with their paper, and they would follow; for they saw what an advantage the others had the former day, by being heard last. The Lord Keeper said, the order was that they should be heard first, as being bishops now in office: but both Winchester and Lincoln refused to go any further, if the other side did not begin. Upon which there followed a long debate; Lincoln saying, that the first order, which was that all should be in Latin, was changed, and that they had prepared a writing in Latin: but in this, not only the counsellors, among whom sat the Archbishop of York, but the rest of his own party contradicted him. In conclusion, all, except Fecknam, refused to read any more papers: he said, he was willing to have done it, but he could not undertake such a thing alone; and so the meeting broke up.

The conference between the papists and protestants breaks up.

But the Bishops of Winchester and of Lincoln said, the doctrine of the catholic church was already established, and ought not to be disputed, except it were in a synod of divines: that it was too great an encouragement to heretics, to hear them thus discourse against the faith before the unlearned multitude: and that the Queen by so doing had incurred the sentence of excommunication; and they talked of excommunicating her and her council. Upon this, they were both sent to the Tower. The reformed took great advantage from the issue of this debate to say, their adversaries knew that upon a fair hearing the truth was so manifestly on their side, that they durst not put it to such hazard. The whole world saw that this disputation was managed with great impartiality, and without noise or disorder, far different from what had been in

Queen Mary's time: so they were generally much confirmed in their former belief, by the papists flying the field. They on the other hand said, they saw the rude multitude were now carried with a fury against them; the Lord Keeper was their professed enemy; the laity would take on them to judge, after they had heard them; and they perceived they were already determined in their minds; and that this dispute was only to set off the changes that were to be made with the pomp of a victory: and they blamed the bishops for undertaking it at first, but excused them for breaking it off in time. And the truth is, the strength of their cause, in most points of controversy, resting on the authority of the church of Rome, that was now a thing of so odious a sound, that all arguments brought from thence were not like to have any great effect. Upon this whole matter there was an act of state made, and signed by many privy-counsellors, giving an account of all the steps that were made in it, which will be found in the Collection. Collect. Numb. 5.

This being over, the parliament was now in a better disposition to pass the bill for the uniformity of the service of the church. Some of the reformed divines were appointed to review King Edward's liturgy, and to see if in any particular it was fit to change it. The only considerable variation was made about the Lord's supper, of which somewhat will appear from the letter of Sandys to Parker. It was proposed to have the communion-book so contrived, that it might not exclude the belief of the corporal presence: for the chief design of the Queen's council was, to unite the nation in one faith; and the greatest part of the nation continued to believe such a presence. Therefore, it was recommended to the divines to see that there should be no express definition made against it; that so it might lie as a speculative opinion, not determined, in which every man was left to the freedom of his own mind. Hereupon the rubric that explained the reason for kneeling at the sacrament, "that thereby no adoration is intended to any corporal presence of Christ's natural flesh and blood, because, that is only in heaven, which had been in King Edward's liturgy, was now left out. And whereas

PART II.

1559.

at the delivery of the elements in King Edward's first liturgy, there was to be said, "The body or blood of our Lord Jesus Christ preserve thy body and soul to everlasting life;" which words had been left out in his second liturgy, as favouring the corporal presence too much; and instead of them, these words were ordered to be used in the distribution of that sacrament, "Take and eat this, in remembrance that Christ died for thee, and feed on him in thy heart by faith with thanksgiving;" and "Drink this in remembrance that Christ's blood was shed for thee, and be thankful:" they now joined both these in one. Some of the collects were also a little altered: and thus was the book presented to the House. But for the book of ordination, it was not in express terms named in the act; which gave an occasion afterwards to question the lawfulness of the ordinations made by that book. But by this act, the book that was set out by King Edward, and confirmed by parliament in the fifth year of his reign, was again authorized by law; and the repeal of it in Queen Mary's time was made void. So the Book of Ordinations being in that act added to the Book of Common-Prayer, it was now legally in force again, as was afterwards declared in parliament, upon a question that was raised about it by Bonner.

Debates about the act of uniformity.

The bill that was put in, on the 15th of February, concerning the new service, being laid aside, a new one was framed, and sent up by the Commons on the 18th of April, and debated in the House of Lords. Heath made a long speech against it, rather elegant than learned; he enlarged much on the several changes which had been made in King Edward's time; he said, "that both Cranmer and Ridley changed their opinions in the matter of Christ's presence; he called Ridley the most notable learned man that was of that way. These changes he imputed to their departing from the standard of the catholic church; he complained much of the robbing of churches, the breaking of images, and the stage-plays made in mockery of the catholic religion. Upon all these reasons he was against the bill." The Bishop of Chester spoke also to it: he said, "the bill was against

both faith and charity; that points once defined were not to be brought again into question; nor were acts of parliament foundations for a church's belief: he enlarged on the antiquity of their forms, and said it was an insolent thing to pretend that our fathers had lived in ignorance. The prophets oftentimes directed the Israelites to ask of their fathers. Matters of religion could not be understood by the laity. It was of great consequence to have their faith well grounded. Jeroboam made Israel to sin when he set up a new way of worship: and not only the orthodox but even the Arian emperors ordered, that points of faith should be examined in councils. Gallio, by the light of nature, knew that a civil judge ought not to meddle with matters of religion. In the service-book that was then before them, they had no sacrifice for their sins, nor were they to adore Christ in the host; and for these reasons he could not agree to it: but if any thought he spoke this because of his own concern, or pitied him for what he might suffer by it, he would say in the words of our Saviour, "Weep not for me, weep for yourselves."

After him spake Fecknam, abbot of Westminster: "he proposed three rules by which they should judge of religion: its antiquity, its constancy to itself, and the influence it had on the civil government: he said the old religion began in the time of King Lucius, according to Gildas; the book now proposed was not used before the two last years of King Edward: the one was always the same, the other was changed every second year, as appeared in the point of the presence of Christ in the sacrament. There had been great order and obedience in Queen Mary's reign; but now every where great insolences were committed by the people, with some very indecent profanations of the most holy things: he recommended to them, in St. Austin's words, the adhering to the catholic church: the very name *catholic*, which heretics had not the confidence to assume, shewed their authority. The consent of the whole church in all ages, with the perpetual succession of pastors in St. Peter's chair, ought to weigh more with them, than a

PART II.

1559.

few new preachers, who had distracted both Germany and England of late."

Thus I have given the substance of their speeches, being all that I have seen of that side. I have seen none at all on the other side; though it is not probable but some were made in defence of the service, as well as these were against it. But upon this occasion I shall set down the substance of the second paper, which the reformed divines had prepared on the second point, for the conference about the authority of every particular church to change or take away ceremonies. I do not put it in the Collection, because I have not that which the papists prepared in opposition to it. But the heads of this paper were as followeth: "It is clear by the epistles which St. Paul writ to the Corinthians and other churches, that every church has power in itself to order the forms of their worship, and the administration of the sacraments among them, so as might most tend to order, edification, and peace. The like power had also the seven angels of the churches, to whom St. John writ. And for the first three ages, there was no general meeting of the church in synods; but in those times the neighbouring pastors and bishops, by mutual advice rather than authority, ordered their affairs; and when heresies sprung up they condemned them, without staying for a general determination of the whole church. There were also great differences among them in their customs, as about observing Lent and Easter. Ceremonies grew too soon to a great number. When errors or abuses appeared, private bishops reformed their own dioceses: so those who came in the room of Arian bishops, even when that heresy was spread over all the east, and the see of Rome itself was defiled with it, yet reformed their own churches. Ambrose, finding the custom of feasting in churches on the anniversaries of the martyrs gave occasion to great scandals, took it away. Even in Queen Mary's time, many of the old superstitions of pilgrimages and relics, which had been abolished in King Henry's time, were not then taken up again: from which they argued, that if some things might be altered, why not more? So that if there was

Arguments for the changes made in the service.

good reason to make any changes, it could not be doubted but that as Hezekiah and Josiah had made by their own power, so the Queen might make reformations, which were not so much the setting up of new things, as the restoring of the state of religion to what it was anciently; which had been brought in by consent of parliament and convocation in King Edward's time." The rules they offered in this paper about ceremonies were, that they should not be made necessary parts of worship; that they should not be too many, nor dumb and vain, nor should be kept up for gain and advantage.

These were the arguments used on both sides; but the reformed being superior in number, the bill passed in the House of Lords; the Archbishop of York, the Marquis of Winchester, the Earl of Shrewsbury, the Viscount Montacute, the Bishops of London, Worcester, Ely, Coventry, Chester, and Carlisle, and the Lords Morley, Stafford, Dudley, Wharton, Rich, and North, and the Abbot of Westminster, dissenting. By this act the new book was to take place by St. John Baptist's day.

Another act passed, that the Queen might reserve to herself the lands belonging to bishopricks, as they fell void, giving the full value of them in impropriated tithes in lieu of them. To this the bishops dissented on the 7th of April, when it passed in the House of Lords. But when this came to the Commons, there was great opposition made to it. Many had observed, that in Edward the Sixth's time, under pretence of giving some endowments to the crown, the courtiers got all the church-lands divided amongst themselves; so it was believed the use to be made of this would be the robbing of the church, without enriching the crown. After many days' debate, on the 17th of April the House divided, and ninety were against it, but one hundred and thirty-three were for it, and so it passed.

On the 5th of May another bill passed with the like opposition. It was for annexing of all religious houses to the crown. After that there followed some private acts for declaring the deprivation of the popish bishops in King Edward's time to have been good. When they

PART II.

1559.

were restored by Queen Mary, the sentences passed against them were declared to have been void from the beginning; and so all leases that were made by Ridley, Poinet, and Hooper, and the patents granted by the King, of some of their lands, were annulled. It was particularly remembered in the House of Commons, that Ridley had made the confirming of these leases his last desire, when he was going to be tied to the stake. The ground on which the sentences were declared void was, because the parties had appealed; though in the commission, by virtue of which the delegates deprived them, they were empowered to proceed, notwithstanding any appeal. To this, not only the bishops, but the Marquis of Winchester, and the Lords Stafford, Dudley, and North, dissented.

It shews the great moderation of this government, that this Marquis, notwithstanding his adhering to the popish interest in the House of Lords, was still continued lord treasurer; which employment he held fourteen years after this, and died in the ninety-seventh year of his age, leaving one hundred and three issued from his own body behind him. He was the greatest instance of good fortune and dexterity that we find in the English history; who continued lord treasurer in three such different reigns, as King Edward's, Queen Mary's, and Queen Elizabeth's were.

There was a subsidy, and two tenths and two fifteenths given by the parliament, with the tonnage and poundage, for the Queen's life; and so on the 8th of May it was dissolved.

Bills that were proposed, but not passed.

There were three bills that did not pass in the House of Commons, but upon what account they were laid aside, it does not appear. The one was for the restoring of the bishops that had been deprived by Queen Mary. There were but three of these alive, Barlow, Scory, and Coverdale; the first of these had resigned, and the last had no mind to return to his bishoprick: so perhaps it was not thought worth the while to make an act for one man's sake, especially since there were so many vacant bishopricks in the Queen's hands, and more were like to fall. The other bill was for the re-

storing of all persons that were deprived from their benefices because they were married. This the Queen ordered to be laid aside; of which Sands complained much in his letter to Parker: but yet the Queen took no notice of the laws formerly made against their marriage; and promoted many married priests, particularly Parker himself. There was no law now in force against clergymen's marrying; for Queen Mary had only repealed the laws of Edward the Sixth which allowed it, but had made none concerning that matter: so there was nothing but the canon law against it; and that was resolved to be condemned, by continuing that article of religion concerning the lawfulness of their marriage, among those that should be set out. The next bill, that came to nothing, was a new act for giving authority to thirty-two persons to revise the ecclesiastical laws, and digest them into a body; it was laid aside at the second reading in the House of Commons, and has slept ever since.

The bishops refuse the oath of supremacy.

When the parliament was over, the oath of supremacy was soon after put to the bishops and clergy. They thought, if they could stick close to one another in refusing it, the Queen would be forced to dispense with them, and would not at one stroke turn out all the bishops in England. The last collation Bonner gave of any benefice was on the 6th of May this year. The oath was tendered to them in July; when Heath, archbishop of York, Bonner of London, Thirleby of Ely, Bourn of Bath and Wells, Bain of Litchfield, White of Winchester, and Watson of Lincoln, Oglethorpe of Carlisle, Turberville of Exeter, Pool of Peterborough, Scot of Chester, Pates of Worcester, and Goldwell of St. Asaph, did all refuse to take it: so that only Kitchen, bishop of Landaff, took it. There was some hope of Tonstall; so it was not put to him till September, but he being very old, chose to go out with so much company, more for the decency of the thing, than out of any scruple he could have about the supremacy for which he had formerly writ so much. They were, upon their refusal, put in prison for a little while; but they had all their liberty soon after, except Bon-

PART II.

1559.

ner, White, and Watson. There were great complaints made against Bonner, that he had, in many things, in the prosecution of those that were presented for heresy, exceeded what the law allowed; so that it was much desired to have him made an example. But as the Queen was of her own nature merciful, so the reformed divines had learned in the gospel not "to render evil for evil," nor to seek revenge; and Nazianzen had of old exhorted the orthodox, when they had got an emperor that favoured them, not to retaliate on the Arians for their former cruelties: so they thought it was for the honour of their religion, to give this real demonstration of the conformity of their doctrine to the rules of the gospel, and of the primitive church by avoiding all cruelty and severity, when it looked like revenge.

The Queen's gentleness to them.

All this might have been expected from such a Queen, and such bishops. But it shewed a great temper in the whole nation, that such a man as Bonner had been, was suffered to go about in safety, and was not made a sacrifice to the revenge of those who had lost their near friends by this means. Many things were brought against him and White, and some other bishops; upon which the Queen promised to give a charge to the visitors, whom she was to send over England, to inquire into these things; and after she had heard their report, she said, she would proceed as she saw cause: by this means she did not deny justice, but gained a little time to take off the edge that was on men's spirits, who had been much provoked by the ill usage they had met with from them.

Heath was a man of a generous temper, and so was well used by the Queen; for as he was suffered to live securely at his own house in Surrey, so she went thither sometimes to visit him. Tonstall and Thirleby lived in Lambeth with Parker, with great freedom and ease; the one was learned and good-natured, the other was a man of business, but too easy and flexible. White and Watson were morose, sullen men; to which their studies, as well as their tempers, had disposed them; for they were much given to scholastical divinity, which

inclined men to be cynical, to overvalue themselves, and despise others. Christopherson was a good Grecian, and had translated Eusebius and the other church-historians into Latin, but with as little fidelity, as may be expected from a man violently addicted to a party. Bain was learned in the Hebrew, which he had professed at Paris, in the reign of Francis the First. All these chose to live still in England; only Pates, Scot, and Goldwell, went beyond sea. After them went the Lord Morley, Sir Francis Englefield, Sir Robert Peckham, Sir Richard Shelley, and Sir John Gage; who, it seems, desired to live where they might have the free exercise of their religion: and such was the Queen's gentleness, that this was not denied them, though such favour had not been shewed in Queen Mary's reign. Fecknam, abbot of Westminster, was a charitable and generous man, and lived in great esteem in England. Most of the monks returned to a secular course of life, but the nuns went beyond sea.

A visitation and injunctions ordered by the Queen.

Now the Queen intended to send injunctions over England, and in the end of June they were prepared. There was great difficulty made about one of them; the Queen seemed to think the use of images in churches might be a means to stir up devotion, and that at least it would draw all people to frequent them the more; for the great measure of her counsels was, to unite the whole nation into one way of religion. The reformed bishops and divines opposed this vehemently; they put all their reasons in a long writing which they gave her concerning it; the preface and conclusion of which will be found in the Collection. "They protested they could not comply with that, which, as it was against their own consciences, so it would prove a snare to the ignorant: they had often pressed the Queen in that matter; which, it seems, stuck long with her: they prayed her not to be offended with that liberty they took, thus to lay their reasons before her, it being a thing which Christian princes had at all times taken well from their bishops. They desired her to commit that matter to the decision of a synod of bishops and divines, and not to do

Collect. Numb. 6.

The Queen inclined to retain images in churches.

PART II.

1559.

such a thing merely upon some political considerations; which as it would offend many, so it would reflect much on the reign of her most godly brother, and on those who had then removed all images, and had given their lives afterwards for a testimony to the truth.

Reasons brought against it.

"The substance of their reasons (which for their length I have not put in the Collection) is, that the second commandment forbids the making of any images, as a resemblance of God. And Deut. xxvii. there was a curse pronounced on those 'who made an image, an abomination to the Lord, and put it in a secret place;' which they expounded of some *sacraria* in private house: and Deut. iv. among the cautions Moses gives to the people of Israel to beware of idolatry, this is one, 'that they do not make an image,' for the use of these does naturally degenerate into idolatry: the Jews were so sensible of this after the captivity, that they would die, rather than suffer an image to be put in their temple. The Book of Wisdom calls an image, 'a snare for the feet of the ignorant.' St. John charged those he wrote to, to 'beware of idols.' So Tertullian said, it was not enough to beware of idolatry towards them, but of the very images themselves. And as Moses had charged the people not to lay a stumbling-block in the way of the blind; so it was a much greater sin to leave such a trap for the weak multitude. This was not for edification, since it fed the superstition of the weak and ignorant, who would continue in their former dotage upon them, and would alienate others from the public worship; so that between those that would separate from them if they were continued, and the multitude that would abuse them, the number of those that would use them aright would be very inconsiderable: the outward splendour of them would be apt to draw the minds of the worshippers, if not to direct idolatry, yet to staring and distraction of thoughts. Both Origen and Arnobius tell us, that the primitive Christians had no images at all. Irenæus accused the gnostics for carrying about the image of Christ. St. Austin commends Varro for saying, that the old Ro-

mans worshipped God more chastely, without the use of any images. Epiphanius tore a veil with an image on it; and Serenus broke images in Gregory the Great's time. Valens and Theodosius made a law against the painting or graving of the image of Christ; and the use of images in the eastern churches brought those distractions on that empire, that laid it open to the invasions of the Mahometans."

These reasons prevailed with the Queen, to put it into her injunctions, to have all images removed out of the church.

The injunctions given by King Edward, at his first coming to the crown, were all renewed, with very little variation. To these some things were added, of which I shall give account:—

The heads of the injunctions.

"It was no where declared, neither in the Scriptures, nor by the primitive church, that priests might not have wives; upon which many in King Edward's time had married. Yet great offence was given by the indecent marriages that some of them then made. To prevent the like scandals for the future, it was ordered, that no priest or deacon should marry without allowance from the bishop of the diocess, and two justices of the peace, and the consent of the woman's parents or friends. All the clergy were to use habits, according to their degrees in the Universities; the Queen declaring, that this was not done for any holiness in them, but for order and decency. No man might use any charm, or consult with such as did. All were to resort to their own parish churches, except for an extraordinary occasion. Innkeepers were to sell nothing in the times of Divine service. None were to keep images, or other monuments of superstition, in their houses. None might preach, but such as were licensed by their ordinary. In all places they were to examine the causes why any had been in the late reign imprisoned, famished, or put to death, upon the pretence of religion; and all registers were to be searched for it. In every parish the ordinary was to name three or four discreet men, who were to see that all the parishioners did duly resort on Sundays and holy-days to church;

PART II.

1559.

and those who did it not, and upon admonition did not amend, were to be denounced to the ordinary. On Wednesdays and Fridays, the Common-Prayer and Litany was to be used in all churches. All slanderous words, as papist, heretic, schismatic, or sacramentary, were to be forborn, under severe pains. No books might be printed without a licence from the Queen, the Archbishop, the Bishop of London, the Chancellor of the Universities, or the bishop or archdeacon of the place where it was printed. All were to kneel at the prayers, and to shew a reverence when the name of Jesus was pronounced. Then followed an explanation of the oath of supremacy, in which the Queen declared that she did not pretend to any authority for the ministering of Divine service in the church, and that all that she challenged was that which had at all times belonged to the imperial crown of England; that she had the sovereignty and rule over all manner of persons under God, so that no foreign power had any rule over them; and if those who had formerly appeared to have scruples about it, took it in that sense, she was well pleased to accept of it, and did acquit them of all penalties in the act. The next was about altars and communion-tables; she ordered, that, for preventing of riots, no altar should be taken down, but by the consent of the curate and churchwardens; that a communion-table should be made for every church, and that on sacrament days it should be set in some convenient place in the chancel; and at other times should be placed where the altar had stood. The sacramental bread was ordered to be round and plain, without any figure on it, but somewhat broader and thicker than the cakes formerly prepared for the mass. Then the form of bidding prayer was prescribed, with some variation from that in King Edward's time; for whereas to the thanksgiving for God's blessings to the church in the saints departed this life, a prayer was added, 'That they with us, and we with them, may have a glorious resurrection;' now those words, 'they with us,' as seeming to import a prayer for the dead, were left out."

1559. Reflections made on the injunctions.

For the rule about churchmen marrying, those who reflected on it said, they complained not of the law, but, as St. Jerome did in the making a law in his time, they complained of those that had given occasion for it. Ministers wearing such apparel as might distinguish them from the laity, was certainly a means to keep them under great restraint, upon every indecency in their behaviour laying them open to the censures of the people; which could not be if they were habited so as that they could not be distinguished from other men: and human nature being considered, it seems to be a kind of temptation to many, when they do but think their disorders will pass unobserved. Bowing at the name of Jesus, was thought a fit expression of their grateful acknowledging of our Saviour, and an owning of his divinity: and as standing up at the Creed, or at the Gloria Patri, were solemn expressions of the faith of Christians; so, since Jesus is the name by which Christ is expressed to be our Saviour, it seemed a decent piece of acknowledging our faith in him, to shew a reverence when that was pronounced; not as if there were a peculiar sanctity or virtue in it, but because it was his proper name, Christ being but an appellation added to it. By the Queen's care to take away all words of reproach, and to explain the oath of supremacy, not only clearing any ambiguity that might be in the words, but allowing men leave to declare in what sense they swore it, the moderation of her government did much appear; in which, instead of inventing new traps to catch the weak, which had been practised in other reigns, all possible care was taken to explain things so, that they might be as comprehensive to all interests as was possible. They reckoned, if that age could have been on any terms separated from the papacy, though with allowance for many other superstitious conceits, it would once unite them all; and in the next age they would be so educated, that none of those should any more remain. And indeed this moderation had all the effect that was designed by it for many years, in which the papists came to church, and to the sacraments. But afterwards, it being proposed to the King of Spain, then ready to engage in a war with

PART II.

1559.

the Queen, upon the account of her supporting of the United Provinces, that he must first divide England at home, and procure from the Pope a sentence against the Queen, and a condemnation of such papists as went to the English service; and that, for the maintaining and educating of such priests as should be his tools to distract the kingdom, he was to found seminaries at Douay, Louvain, and St. Omer's, from whence they might come over hither and disorder the affairs of England: the prosecution of those counsels raised the popish party among us, which has ever since distracted this nation, and has oftener than once put it into most threatening convulsive motions, such as we feel at this day.

The first high commission.

After the injunctions were thus prepared, the Queen gave out commissions for those who should visit all the churches of England: in which they lost no time, for the new book of service was by law to take place on St. John Baptist's day; and these commissions were signed that same day. One of those commissions, which was for the archbishoprick and province of York, is put into the Collection. It was granted to the Earls of Shrewsbury and Derby, and some others, among whom Dr. Sands is one.

Collect. Numb. 7.

The preamble sets forth, "that God having set the Queen over the nation, she could not render an account of that trust, without endeavouring to propagate the true religion, with the right way of worshipping God in all her dominions; therefore she, intending to have a general visitation of her whole kingdom, empowered them, or any two of them, to examine the true state of all the churches in the northern parts; to suspend or deprive such clergymen as were unworthy, and to put others into their places; to proceed against such as were obstinate, by imprisonment, church-censure, or any other legal way. They were to reserve pensions for such as would not continue in their benefices, but quitted them by resignation; and to examine the condition of all that were imprisoned on the account of religion, and to discharge them; and to restore all such to their benefices, as had been unlawfully turned out in the late times."

This was the first high commission* that was given out; that for the province of Canterbury was without doubt of the same nature. The prudence of reserving pensions for such priests as were turned out, was much applauded; since thereby they were kept from extreme want, which might have set them on to do mischief; and by the pension which was granted them upon their good behaviour, they were kept under some awe, which would not have been otherwise. That which was chiefly condemned in these commissions was, the Queen's giving the visitors authority to proceed by ecclesiastical censures, which seemed a great stretch of her supremacy: but it was thought, that the Queen might do that, as well as the lay-chancellors did it in the ecclesiastical courts; so that one abuse was the excuse for another.

These visitors having made report to the Queen of the obedience given to the laws and her injunctions, it was found, that of nine thousand four hundred beneficed men in England, there were no more but fourteen bishops, six abbots, twelve deans, twelve archdeacons, fifteen heads of colleges, fifty prebendaries, and eighty rectors of parishes, that had left their benefices upon the account of religion. So compliant were the papists generally. And indeed the bishops after this time had the same apprehension of the danger into which religion was brought by the jugglings of the greatest part of the clergy, who retained their affections to the old superstition, that those in King Edward's time had: so that if Queen Elizabeth had not lived so long as she did, till all that generation was dead, and a new set of men, better educated and principled, were grown up and put in their rooms; and if a prince of another religion had succeeded before that time, they had probably turned about again to the old superstitions as nimbly as they had done before in Queen Mary's days. That which supported the superstitious party in King Edward's time most was, that many great bishops did secretly favour and encourage them: therefore it was now resolved to look well to the filling of the vacant sees.

* This was not a high commission, warranted by act of parliament, but a commission for a royal visitation, by virtue of the Queen's supremacy.

PART II.

1559. Parker's unwillingness to accept of the archbishoprick of Canterbury. Collect. Numb. 8.

It has been said before, that Parker was sent for to London by the Queen's order, and the archbishoprick of Canterbury was offered him: he was upon that cast into such a perplexity of mind, that he was out of measure grieved at it. As soon as he was returned home he writ a letter to the Lord Keeper, which, with all the other letters that passed in this matter, I have put into the Collection: "He professed he never had less joy of a journey to London, and was never more glad to get from it, than upon his last being there. He said, it was necessary to fill that see with a man that was neither arrogant, faint-hearted, nor covetous; an arrogant man would perhaps divide from his brethren in doctrine, whereas the whole strength of the church depended on their unity; but if there should be heart-burnings among them, and the private quarrels that had been beyond sea should be brought home, the peace of the church would be lost, and the success of all their design would be blasted: and if a faint-hearted man were put in, it would raise the spirits of all their adversaries: a covetous man was good for nothing. He knew his own unfitness, both of body and mind, so well, that though he should be sorry to offend him and Secretary Cecil, whom he honoured above all men in the world, and more sorry to displease the Queen; yet he must above all things avoid God's indignation, and not enter into a station into which he knew he could not carry himself so as to answer it either to God, or the world, for his administration. And if he must go to prison for his obstinate untowardness (with which it seems they had threatened him), he would suffer it rather with a quiet conscience, than accept of an employment which he could not discharge. He said, he intended by God's grace never to be of that order, neither higher nor lower. He knew what he was capable of: he was poor, and not able to enter on such a station; he had a rupture, which made him that he could not stir much; therefore he desired some place in the University, where he might wear out his life tolerably. He knew he could not answer their expectation, which made him so importunate not to be raised so high. He said, he had great apprehensions of

differences like to fall out among themselves; which would be a pleasant diversion to those of the church of Rome: he saw some men were men still, even after all their teaching in the school of affliction. He protested he did not seek his own private gain or ease; he had but two or three years more of life before him, and did not intend to heap up for his children." This he writ the 1st of March.

The business of the parliament made this motion to be laid aside till that was dissolved, and then, on the 17th of May, the Lord Keeper wrote to him concerning it: he told him, that he saw, by a resolution taken that day in the Queen's presence, that it would be very hard for his friends to get him delivered from that charge. For his own part, if he knew a man to whom the characters in his letter did agree better than to himself, he should be for preferring of such a one; but knowing no such, he must be still for him. On the 19th, after that, the Lord Keeper and Secretary Cecil signed a letter in the Queen's name, requiring him to come up; and after that they sent a second command to him to come to court, on the 28th of the month. He came up, but again excused himself. Yet at last, being so often pressed, he writ to the Queen herself, "protesting that extreme necessity forced him to trouble her, both out of conscience to God, and regard to her service: he knew his great unworthiness for so high a function; therefore as on his knees he humbly besought her to discharge him of that office, which did require a man of more learning, virtue, and experience, than he perfectly knew was in himself. He lamented his being so meanly qualified, that he could not serve her in that high station; but in any other inferior office he should be ready to discharge his duty to her, in such a place as was suitable to his infirmity." But in the conclusion he submitted himself to her pleasure. In the end he was with great difficulty brought to accept of it. So, on the 18th day of July, the *congé d'élire* was sent to Canterbury; and upon that, on the 22d day of July, a chapter was summoned to meet the 1st of August; where the Dean and prebendaries meeting, they did by

PART II.

1559.

a compromise refer it to the Dean to name whom he pleased; and he naming Doctor Parker, according to the Queen's letter, they all confirmed it, and published their election, singing *Te Deum* upon it. On the 9th of September, the great seal was put to a warrant for his consecration, directed to the Bishops of Duresme, Bath and Wells, Peterborough, Landaff, and to Barlow and Scory (styled only bishops, not being then elected to any sees), requiring them to consecrate him. From this it appears, that neither Tonstall, Bourn, nor Pool, were at that time turned out: it seems there was some hope of gaining them to obey the laws, and so to continue in their sees.

He is consecrated archbishop of Canterbury.

This matter was delayed to the 6th of December. Whether this flowed from Parker's unwillingness to engage in so high a station, or from any other secret reason, I do not know. But then, the three bishops last named refusing to do it, a new warrant passed under the great seal, to the Bishop of Landaff, Barlow, bishop elect of Chichester, Scory, bishop elect of Hereford, Coverdale, late bishop of Exeter, Hodgkins, bishop suffragan of Bedford, John, suffragan of Thetford, and Bale, bishop of Ossory; that they, or any four of them, should consecrate him. So, by virtue of this, on the 9th of December, Barlow, Scory, Coverdale, and Hodgkins, met at the church of St. Mary-le-Bow; where, according to the custom, the *congé d'élire*, with the election, and the royal assent to it, were to be brought before them: and these being read, witnesses were to be cited to prove the election lawfully made; and all who would object to it were also cited. All these things being performed according to law, and none coming to object against the election, they confirmed it according to the usual manner. On the 17th of December, Parker was consecrated in the chapel at Lambeth, by Barlow, Scory, Coverdale, and Hodgkins, according to the Book of Ordinations made in King Edward's time; only the ceremony of putting the staff in his hands was left out of the office in this reign. He being thus consecrated himself, did afterwards consecrate bishops for the other sees: namely, Grindal, bishop of London; Cox, that had

been King Edward's almoner, bishop of Ely; Horn, bishop of Winchester; Sandys, bishop of Worcester; Merick, bishop of Bangor; Young, bishop of St. David's; Bullingham, bishop of Lincoln; Jewel, bishop of Salisbury (the great ornament of that age for learning and piety); Davis, bishop of St. Asaph; Guest, bishop of Rochester; Berkley, bishop of Bath and Wells; Bentham, bishop of Coventry and Litchfield; Alley, bishop of Exeter; and Scambler, bishop of Peterborough. Barlow and Scory were put into the sees of Chichester and Hereford: and some time after this, in February, 1561, Young was translated from St. David's to York, there being now no hopes of gaining Heath to continue in it, which, it seems, had been long endeavoured; for it was now two years that that see had been in vacancy.* In like manner, after so long waiting to see if Tonstall would conform, there being now no more hope of it, in March, 1561, Pilkington was made bishop of Duresme. Best was afterwards made bishop of Carlisle, and Downham, bishop of Chester.

The fable of the Nag's-head confuted.

I have given the more distinct account of these promotions, because of a most malicious slander with which they were aspersed in aftertimes. It was not thought on for forty years after this. But then it was forged, and published, and spread over the world, with great confidence, that Parker himself was not legally nor truly consecrated. The author of it was said to be one Neale, that had been sometime one of Bonner's chaplains. The contrivance was, that the Bishop of Landaff being required by Bonner not to consecrate Parker, or to give orders in his diocess, did thereupon refuse it: upon that the bishops elect being met in Cheapside at the Nag's-head tavern, Neale, that had watched them thither, peeped in through a hole of the door, and saw them in great disorder, finding the Bishop of Landaff was intractable. But (as the tale goes on) Scory bids them all kneel, and he laid the Bible upon every one of their heads or shoulders, and said, "Take thou authority to preach the word of God sincerely," and so they rose up

* May, dean of St. Paul's, was elected archbishop, but died before he was consecrated.

PART II.

1559.

all bishops. This tale came so late into the world, that Sanders, and all the other writers in Queen Elizabeth's time, had never heard of it; otherwise we may be sure they would not have concealed it. And if the thing had been true, or if Neale had but pretended that he had seen any such thing, there is no reason to think he would have suppressed it. But when it might be presumed that all those persons were dead that had been present at Parker's consecration, then was the time to invent such a story; for then it might be hoped none could contradict it. And who could tell, but that some who had seen bishops go from Bow-church to dine at that tavern with their civilians, as some have done after their confirmation, might imagine that then was the time of this Nag's-head consecration. If it were boldly said, one or other might think he remembered it. But as it pleased God, there was one then living that remembered the contrary. The old Earl of Nottingham, who had been at the consecration, declared it was at Lambeth, and described all the circumstances of it, and satisfied all reasonable men that it was according to the form of the church of England. The registers, both of the see of Canterbury and of the records of the crown, do all fully agree with his relation. For as Parker's *congé d'élire*, with the Queen's assent to his election, and the warrant for his consecration, are all under the great seal; so, upon the certificate made by those who consecrated him, the temporalties were restored by another warrant, also enrolled; which was to be shewn in the House of Lords when he took his place there. Besides that, the consecrations of all the other bishops made by him, shew that he alone was first consecrated without any other. And, above all other testimonies, the original instrument of Archbishop Parker's consecration lies still among his other papers in the library of Corpus Christi College, at Cambridge, which I saw and read. It is as manifestly an original writing, as any that I ever had in my hands; I have put it in the Collection, for the more full discovery of the impudence of that fiction. But it served those ends for which it was designed. Weak people hearing it so positively

Collect. Numb. 9.

told by their priests, came to believe it; and I have myself met with many that seemed still to give some credit to it, after all that clear confutation of it made by the most ingenious and learned Bishop Bramhall, the late primate of Ireland. Therefore, I thought it necessary to be the larger in the account of this consecration; and the rather, because of the influence it hath into all the ordinations that have been since that time derived down in this church.

Some excepted against the canonicalness of it, because it was not done by all the bishops of the province, and three of the bishops had no sees when they did it, and the fourth was only a suffragan bishop. But to all this it was said, that after a church had been overrun with heresy, those rules, which were to be observed in its more settled state, were always superseded; as appears particularly when the Arian bishops were turned out of some great sees; for the orthodox bishops did then ordain others to succeed them, without judging themselves bound by the canons in such cases: and bishops that had been rightly consecrated, could certainly derive their own character to others, whether they were actually in sees or not. And a suffragan bishop being consecrated in the same manner that other bishops were, though he had a limited jurisdiction, yet was of the same order with them. All these things were made out with a great deal of learning by Mason, who, upon the publishing of that fiction, wrote in vindication of the English ministry.

Thus were the sees filled, the worship reformed, and the Queen's injunctions sent over England. Three things remained yet to be done. The first was, to set out the doctrine of the church, as it had been done in King Edward's time. The second was, to translate the Bible, and publish it with short notes. And the third was, to regulate the ecclesiastical courts. The bishops therefore set about these. And for the first, though they could not, by public authority, set out the articles of the church until they met in convocation; yet they soon after prepared them. And for the present, they agreed on a short profession of their doctrine, which all

PART II.

incumbents were obliged to read and publish to their people. This will be found in the Collection, copied from it as it was then printed.

1559. Collect. Numb. 11.

In the articles made in King Edward's reign, which I have put in the Collection, the reader will find on the margin the difference between those and these marked. In the third article, the explanation of Christ's descent into hell was left out. In that about the Scriptures, they now added an enumeration of the canonical and apocryphal books; declaring that some lessons were read out of the latter, for the instruction of the people, but not for the confirmation of the doctrine. About the authority of the church, they now added, that the church had power to decree rites and ceremonies, and had authority in controversies of faith; but still subordinate to the Scripture.

In the article about the Lord's supper, there is a great deal left out; for instead of that large refutation of the corporal presence, from the impossibility of a body's being in more places at once; from whence it follows, that since Christ's body is in heaven, the faithful ought not to believe or profess a real or corporal presence of it in the sacrament; in the new articles it is said, "that the body of Christ is given and received after a spiritual manner; and the means by which it is received is faith." But in the original copy of these articles, which I have seen subscribed by the hands of all that sat in either house of convocation, there is a further addition made. The articles were subscribed with that precaution which was requisite in a matter of such consequence; for, before the subscriptions, there is set down the number of the pages, and of the lines in every page of the book, to which they set their hands.

MSS. C. Cor. Christ. Cant.

In that article of the eucharist, these words are added: *Christus in cœlum ascendens, corpori suo immortalitatem dedit, naturam non abstulit: humanæ enim naturæ veritatem, juxta Scripturas perpetuo retinet, quam in uno et definito loco esse, et non in multa vel omnia simul loca diffundi, oportet: quum igitur Christus in cœlum sublatus, ibi usque ad finem seculi sit permansurus, atque inde, non aliunde (ut loquitur Augustinus) ven-*

1559.

turus sit ad judicandum vivos et mortuos, non debet quisquam fidelium, carnis ejus et sanguinis realem et corporalem (ut loquuntur) præsentiam in eucharistia, vel credere vel profiteri. In English thus: "Christ, when he ascended into heaven, made his body immortal, but took not from it the nature of a body: for still it retains, according to the Scriptures, the verity of a human body; which must be always in one definite place, and cannot be spread into many, or all places at once. Since then, Christ being carried up to heaven, is to remain there to the end of the world, and is to come from thence, and from no place else (as says St. Austin) to judge the quick and the dead; none of the faithful ought to believe or profess the real, or, (as they call it) the corporal presence of his flesh and blood in the eucharist."

An explanation of Christ's presence in the sacrament.

But this in the original is dashed over with *minium* yet so, that it is still legible. The secret of it was this: the Queen and her council studied (as hath already been shewn) to unite all into the communion of the church; and it was alleged, that such an express definition against the real presence, might drive from the church many who were still of that persuasion; and therefore it was thought to be enough to condemn transubstantiation, and to say, that Christ was present after a spiritual manner, and received by faith; to say more, as it was judged superfluous, so it might occasion division. Upon this, these words were, by common consent, left out; and in the next convocation the articles were subscribed without them, of which I have also seen the original.

But it is suppressed.

This shews that the doctrine of the church, subscribed by the whole convocation, was at that time contrary to the belief of a real or corporal presence in the sacrament; only it was not thought necessary or expedient to publish it. Though from this silence, which flowed not from their opinion, but the wisdom of that time, in leaving a liberty for different speculations, as to the manner of the presence; some have since inferred, that the chief pastors of this church, did then disapprove of the definition made in King Edward's time, and that they were for a real presence.

For the translating of the Bible, it was divided into

PART II.

1559.

many parcels. The Pentateuch was committed to William Alley, bishop of Exeter. The books from that to the second of Samuel, were given to Richard Davis, who was made bishop of Saint David's, when Young was removed to York. All from Samuel to the second book of Chronicles, was assigned to Edwin Sandys, then bishop of Worcester. From thence to the end of Job, to one whose name is marked A. P. C.* The book of the Psalms was given to Thomas Bentham, bishop of Coventry and Litchfield. The Proverbs to one who is marked A. P. The Song of Solomon to one marked A. P. E.† All from thence to the Lamentations of Jeremiah, was given to Robert Horn, bishop of Winchester. Ezekiel and Daniel, to Bentham. From thence to Malachi, to Grindal, bishop of London. The Apocrypha to the Book of Wisdom, was given to Barlow, bishop of Chichester, and the rest of it, to Parkhurst, bishop of Norwich. The Gospels, Acts, and Epistle to the Romans, were given to Richard Cox, bishop of Ely. The Epistles to the Corinthians, to one marked C. G.‡ I know not to whom the rest of the New Testament was assigned. All these allotments I gather from the Bible itself, as it was afterwards set out by Parker. What method they followed in this work I cannot discover; unless the rules afterwards given in King James's time, when the translation was revived, were copied from what was now done: which rules, for the curiosity of the thing, I shall put in the Collection, as I copied from B. Ravis's paper. They were given with that care that such a matter required. There were many companies appointed for every parcel of the Scripture, and every one of a company was to translate the whole parcel: then they were to compare these together; and when any company had finished their part, they were to communicate it to the other companies. So it is like, that at this time those several bishops that had undertaken the translation, did associate to themselves companies, with whose assistance they perfected it afterwards; and when it was set out,

Collect. Numb. 1.

* For Andrew Pierson Cantuar. † For Andrew Pern Eliensis.
‡ For Christopher Goodman.

at the end of every section, the initial letters of his name that had translated it, were printed, as W. E. E. W. for Will. Exon and Edwin Wigorn, and so in the rest. In what year this was first printed, I am not so well assured; for I have not seen the first impression of it, but I believe it was in the year 1561,* or soon after it; for the almanack prefixed for the moveable feasts, begins with that year.

As for the canons and rules of the church government, they were not so soon prepared. There came out some in the year 1571, and more in the year 1597, and a far larger collection of them in the first year of King James's reign. But this matter has yet wanted its chief force; for penitentiary canons have not been set up, and the government of the church is not yet brought into the hands of churchmen. So that in this point the reformation of the church wants some part of its finishing, in the government and discipline of it.

The beginnings of the divisions of this church.

Thus did Queen Elizabeth again recover the reformation of religion: and it might have been expected that under such moderate and wise councils, things should have been carried with that temper, that this church would have united in its endeavours to support itself, and become the bulwark of the Reformation, and the terror of Rome. But that blessing was, by the sins of the nation, the passions of some, the interests of others, and the weakness of the greatest part, in a great measure denied us. The heats that had been raised beyond sea were not quite forgotten; and as some sparks had been kindled about clergymen's habits in King Edward's reign; so, though Hooper and Ridley had buried that difference in their ashes, it broke out again concerning the vestments of the inferior clergy. Other things were also much contested. Some were for setting up ecclesiastical courts in every parish, for the exercising of discipline against scandalous persons; others thought this might degenerate into faction. These lesser differences were craftily managed by some who intended to improve them so far, that they might have the church-lands divided among them, and they carried these

* The new translation of the Bible was not printed before the year 1572.

PART II.

1559.

heats further in Queen Elizabeth's time than one would imagine, that considers the temper of that government. But since that, still by many degrees, and many accidents in the civil government, they are now grown to that height, that, though considering the grounds on which they have been, and still are maintained, they appear to be of no great force or moment; yet, if the animosities and heats that are raised by them are well examined, there is scarce any probable hopes left of composing those differences, unless our lawgivers do vigorously apply themselves to it.

The Reformation in Scotland.

Having given this account of the establishment of the Reformation here in England under Queen Elizabeth; I have, in some sort, discharged myself of the design of my engagement in this work; but since the settlement of religion in Scotland was made the same year, I shall next give some account of that, which I do with the more assurance, having met with several important things relating to it in Melville's Memoirs, that are in none of the printed books. When the treaty began for a peace between the two crowns of France and Spain, the secret reason of making it was to root out heresy; so much was expressed in the preamble to it, that to extirpate heresy, to have a general council called, and the church fully reformed, both from errors and abuses, those princes had entered into a firm peace.

The Cardinal of Lorrain writ to his sister, the Queen Regent of Scotland; that now, since they were making peace, they were resolved to purge the world of heresy. He also writ to the Archbishop of Saint Andrew's to the same effect. The Queen Regent was much confounded at this. She was now forced to break her faith with those who had served her interests hitherto; and to whom she had often promised they should not be troubled for their consciences. The danger was also very great from their combination, since the Queen of England would certainly assist them; both because the religion was the same in both countries, and because, by dividing that kingdom, she would secure the north

of England from the mischief Scotland could do it, if moved and set on to it by France. But the bishops in Scotland, shutting their eyes upon all dangers, resolved, by some signal instance, to strike a terror into the people.

The Archbishop of St. Andrew's having gathered a meeting of many bishops, abbots, and divines, brought before them one Walter Mill, an old decrepid priest, who had long given over saying mass, and had preached in several places of the country. They had in vain dealt with him to recant; so he now was brought to his trial. They objected articles to him, about his asserting the lawfulness of priests' marriages; denying the seven sacraments; saying the mass was idolatry; denying the presence of Christ's flesh and blood in the sacrament; and condemning the office of bishops; speaking against pilgrimages; and teaching privately in houses.

Mill's Martyrdom.

To these he answered beyond all their expectations; for he was so old and infirm, that they thought he could say nothing. He said, "he esteemed marriage a blessed bond, and free for all men to enter into it; and that it was much better for priests to marry, than to vow chastity and not keep it, as they generally did. He said, he knew no sacraments, but Baptism and the Lord's Supper; the rest he left to them. He said, the priests' sole communicating was, as if a lord should invite many to dinner, and ring a bell for them to come; but when they came, should turn his back on them, and eat all himself. He said, that Christ was only spiritually in the sacrament; and that there was no other sacrifice, but that which he offered on the cross. He held, that they were bishops indeed who did the work of a bishop; and not they who sought only their sensual pleasures, and neither regarded the word of God, nor their flocks. He knew pilgrimages had been much abused, and great uncleanness was committed, under the colour of going to them; but there was no ground for them in Scripture."

Upon these answers he was required to recant; but he said, he knew he was to die once, and what they intended to do with him, he wished they would do it soon. Upon this he was declared an obstinate heretic. But the country was so alienated from them, that they could not

PART II.

1559.

find a man to burn him; and he that had the jurisdiction in that regality refused to execute the sentence. Yet, at last, one of the Archbishop's servants was gotten to undertake it; but in the whole town they could find none that would sell them a cord to tie him to the stake; so they were forced to put it off till the next day; and then, since none other could be had, the Archbishop sent the cords of his own pavilion for that use. When Mill was brought to the stake, he said, he would not go up of his own accord, because he would not be accessary to his own death; but if they would put their hand to him, they should see how cheerfully he should do it. That being done, he went up, and said, "I will go in to the altar of God." He exhorted the people to be no more seduced by the lies of their priests, but to depend upon Christ and his mercy; for whose doctrine, as many martyrs had offered up their lives, so he blessed God that had so honoured him to call him to give this testimony, for whose glory he most willingly offered up his life. When the fire was set to him, he called to the people to pray for him, and continued to cry, "Lord have mercy upon me," till he could speak no more.

The nation was much provoked by it.

His sufferings was much resented by the inhabitants of St. Andrew's, who raised a great heap of stones in the place where he was burnt for a memorial of it; and though the priests scattered them often, they renewed them still, till a watch was set about it.

In all parts of Scotland, and especially in the towns, and in the families of the nobility and gentry, the reformation had been received, and secretly professed. So they began now to consult what to do. They had many meetings in several places; and finding their interest was great over the kingdom, they entered into confederacies to maintain the true religion.

Before the parliament met last year, they had sent a petition to the Queen Regent, "That the worship of God might be in the vulgar tongue, and the communion might be given in both kinds: that there should be great care taken in the election of ministers, that it might be according to the custom of the primitive church; and

that scandalous ministers might be removed, and more worthy men put in their places."

But the Queen Regent, to keep them in hopes till the Dauphin should be acknowledged King of Scotland, promised they should not be hindered to have prayers in their own tongue, so they would keep no public assemblies in Edinburgh and Leith.

In the parliament, they proposed the abrogating of the laws for churchmen's proceeding against heretics: and that none should be condemned of heresy, but according to the word of God; with some other limitations of the severities against them. But the Queen still gave them good hopes; only she said, she could not agree to those things, by reason of the opposition that would be made by the spiritual estate: but she suffered them to read a protestation in parliament, declaring their desires of a reformation; and that if upon the denial of it, abuses were removed violently, they were not to be blamed, who had begun thus in a modest way to petition for it.

This year it was become visible that she resolved to proceed to extremities. She ordered all the reformed preachers to appear at Stirling the 10th of May. When this was done, the Earl of Glencairn went to her in the name of the rest, and asked her the reason of that way of proceeding. She answered him in passion, "that maugre them, and all that would take part with them, the ministers should be banished Scotland, though they preached as soundly as St. Paul did." Upon this, he remembered her of her promises she had often made them: to which she answered, "that the promises of princes should be no further strained than seemed convenient to them to perform." Glencairn replied, "if she would keep no promises, they would acknowledge her no more, but renounce their obedience to her."

A revolt began at St. Johnstoun.

That very night she heard that in the town of St. Johnstoun, the people had sermons openly in their churches. Upon that she ordered the Lord Ruthven to go and reduce that town: he answered, he could not govern their consciences: upon which, she vowed she would make him and them both repent it. The minis-

PART II.

1559.

ters were coming from all parts, accompanied with many gentlemen, to appear on the day to which they were cited. The Queen hearing that, sent word to them to go home, for she would not proceed in the citation. Many of them upon that returned to their homes, but others went to St. Johnstoun: yet upon their not appearing, she made them all be declared rebels, contrary to her promise: this made many leave her, and go over to them at St. Johnstoun. The people began there first to break images; and then they fell into the houses of the Franciscans and Dominicans, where they found much more wealth than agreed with their pretended poverty. They also pulled down a great house of the Carthusians, with so much haste, that within two days there was not one stone left to shew where it had stood: but yet the Prior was suffered to carry away the plate. All that was found in these houses, besides what the monks carried away, was given to the poor. The Queen hearing this, resolved to make that town an example; and sent over all the kingdom to gather the French soldiers together, with such others as would join with her in this quarrel. But the Earl of Glencairn, with incredible haste, came to their assistance, with two thousand five hundred men: and there were gathered in all, in and about the town, seven thousand men. The Queen seeing it now turned to an open rebellion, employed the Earl of Argyle and the Prior of St. Andrew's to treat with them. An oblivion for what was past was agreed on: the Queen was to come to St. Johnstoun without her Frenchmen: and the matters of religion were to be referred to a parliament. Upon this she went thither; but carried Frenchmen with her, and put a garrison in the town; and proceeded to the fining of many, and the banishing of others. Being pressed with her promise, she said, "the promises of princes ought not to be strictly urged, and those were not to be kept that were made to heretics;" she declared, that she would take it on her conscience, to kill and undo all that sect, and make the best excuse she could when it was done. Upon this, all the nation forsook her: and in many other places they went on to cleanse the churches, and pull down monasteries.

1559.

When the news of this came to the court of France, it was at first not rightly understood. The Queen Regent represented it, as if it had been a design to shake off the French power, and desired a great force to reduce them. The King then saw too late, that the Constable had given him good advice, in dissuading the match with Scotland; and fearing to be entangled in a long chargeable war, he resolved to send one thither to know the true occasion of these stirs. So the Constable proposed to him the sending of Melvil, by whom he had understood that the reason of all their disorders was the Queen's breaking her word to them in the matters of religion. He carried Melvil to the King, and in his presence gave him instructions to go to Scotland, and see what was the true cause of all these disorders; and particularly, how far the Prior of St. Andrews (afterwards the Earl of Murray) was engaged in them; and if he, by secret ways, could certainly find there was nothing in it but religion, that then he should give them assurances of the free exercise of it, and press them not to engage any further till he was returned to the French court, where he was promised to find a great reward for so important a service: but he was not to let the Queen Regent understand his business. He found upon his going into Scotland, that it was even as he had formerly heard; that the Queen Regent was now much hated and distasted by them: but that upon an oblivion of what was passed, and the free exercise of their religion for the future, all might be brought to peace and quiet. But before he came back, the King of France was dead, the Constable in disgrace, and the Cardinal of Lorrain governed all: so he lost his labour and reward, which he valued much less, being a generous and virtuous man, than the ruin that he saw coming on his country.

The French King intends to grant liberty of religion.

But is killed.

The lords that were now united against the Queen-Mother, came and took St. Johnstoun. From thence they went to Stirling and Edinburgh: and every where they pulled down monastries; all the country declared on their side; so that that the Queen Regent was forced to fly to Dunbar castle. The lords sent to England for assistance, which the Queen readily granted

PART II.

1559.

them. They gave out, that they desired nothing but to have the French driven out, and religion settled by a parliament. The Queen Regent, seeing all the country against her, and apprehending that the Queen of England would take advantage from these stirs to drive her out of Scotland, was content to agree to a truce, and to summon a parliament to meet on the 10th of January. But the new King of France sent over M. de Croque, with a high threatening message, that he would spend the whole revenue of France rather than not be revenged on them that raised these tumults in Scotland. The lords answered, that they desired nothing but the liberty of their religion; and that being obtained, they should be in all other things his most obedient subjects. The Queen Regent, having gotten about two thousand men from France, fortified Leith; and in many other things broke the truce. There came over also some doctors of the Sorbonne to dispute with the ministers, because they heard the Scottish clergy were scarce able to defend their own cause. The lords gathered again, and seeing the Queen Regent had so often broke her word to them, they entered into consultation to deprive her of her regency. Their Queen was not yet of age; and in her minority, they pretended that the government of the kingdom belonged to the states: and therefore they gathered together many of her maladministrations, for which they might the more colourably put her out of the government. The things they charged on her were chiefly these: "That she had without law begun a war in the kingdom, and brought in strangers to subdue it; had governed without the consent of the nobility; embased the coin to maintain her soldiers; had put garrisons in free towns; and had broke all promises and terms with them. Thereupon they declared her to have fallen from her regency, and did suspend her power, till the next parliament." So now it was an irreconcileable breach. The lords lay first at Edinburgh, and from thence retired afterwards to Stirling: upon which, the French came and possessed themselves of the town, and set up the mass again in the churches. Greater supplies came over from France under the command of the

A truce agreed to in Scotland.

The Queen Regent is deposed.

Marquis of Elbeuf, one of the Queen Regent's brothers; who, though most of his fleet were dispersed, yet brought to Leith one thousand foot, so that there were now above four thousand French soldiers in that town. But what accession of strength soever the Queen Regent received from these, she lost as much in Scotland; for now almost the whole country was united against her; and the French were equally heavy to their friends and enemies. They marched about by Stirling to waste Fife, where there were some small engagements between them and the Lords of the Congregation.

The Scots implore the Queen of England's aid.

But the Scots, seeing they could not stand before that force that was expected from France the next spring, sent to Queen Elizabeth to desire her aid openly; for the secret supplies of money and ammunition, with which she hitherto furnished them, would not now serve the turn. The council of England apprehended that it would draw on a war with France: yet they did not fear that much; for that kingdom was falling into such factions, that they did not apprehend any great danger from thence till their king was of age. So the Duke of Norfolk was sent to Berwick, to treat with the Lords of the Congregation; who were now headed by the Duke of Chattelherhault. On the 27th of February, they agreed on these conditions: "They were to be sure allies to the Queen of England; and to assist her, both in England and Ireland, as she should need their help. She was now, on the other hand, to assist them to drive the French out of Scotland: after which, they were still to continue in their obedience to their natural Queen. This league was to last, during their Queen's marriage to the French King, and for a year after: and they were to give the Queen of England hostages, who were to be changed every six months."

This being concluded, and the hostages given, the Lord Gray marched into Scotland with two thousand horse, and six thousand foot. Upon that the lords sent and offered to the Queen Regent, that if she would send away the French forces, the English should likewise be sent back, and they would return to their obedience.

This not being accepted, they drew about Leith to

PART II.

besiege it. In one sally which the French made, they were beaten back with the loss of three hundred men. This made the English more secure, thinking the French would no more come out: but they, understanding the ill order that was kept, sallied out again, and killed near five hundred of the English. This made them more watchful for the future. So the siege being formed, a fire broke out in Leith, which burnt down the greatest part of the town: the English playing all the while on them, distracted them so, that the soldiers being obliged to be on the walls, the fire was not easily quenched. Hereupon the English gave the assault, and were beaten off with some loss; but the Duke of Norfolk sent a supply of two thousand men more, with the assurance of a great army if it was necessary; and charged the Lord Gray, not to quit the siege till the French were gone. Ships were also sent to lie in the Frith, to block them up by sea. The French, apprehending the total loss of Scotland, sent over Monluc, bishop of Valence, to London, to offer to restore Calais to the Queen of England, if she would draw her forces out of Scotland. She gave him a quick answer on the sudden herself, that she did not value that fish town so much as she did the quiet of Britain. But the French desiring that she could mediate a peace between them and the Scots, she undertook that, and sent Secretary Cecil and Dr. Wotton into Scotland to conclude it. As they were on the way, the Queen Regent died in the castle of Edinburgh, on the 10th of June. She sent for some of the chief lords before her death, and desired to be reconciled to them; and asked them pardon for the injuries she had done them. She advised them to send both the French and English soldiers out of Scotland; and prayed them to continue in their obedience to their Queen. She also sent for one of their preachers, Willock, and discoursed with him about her soul, and many other things, and said unto him, that she trusted to be saved only by the death and merits of Jesus Christ: and so ended her days; which, if she had done a year sooner, before these last passages of her life, she had been the most universally lamented queen that had been in any time in Scot-

1559. Leith is besieged by the English.

The Queen Regent of Scotland dies.

land: for she had governed them with great prudence, justice, and gentleness; and in her own deportment, and in the order of her court, she was an example to the whole nation: but the directions sent to her from France, made her change her measures, break her word, and engage the kingdom in war; which rendered her very hateful to the nation. Yet she was often heard to say, that if her counsels might take place, she doubted not to bring all things again to perfect tranquillity and peace.

A peace is concluded.

The treaty between England, France, and Scotland, was soon after concluded. The French were to be sent away within twenty days; an act of oblivion was to be confirmed in parliament; the injuries done to the bishops and abbots were referred to the parliament; strangers and churchmen were no more to be trusted with the chief offices; and a parliament was to meet in August for the confirming of this. During the Queen's absence the nation was to be governed by a council of twelve; of these the Queen was to name seven, and the states five: the Queen was neither to make peace nor war, but by the advice of the estates, according to the ancient custom of the kingdom. The English were to return, as soon as the French were gone; and for the matter of religion, that was referred to the parliament: and some were to be sent from thence to the King and Queen, to set forth their desires to them: and the Queen of Scotland was no more to use the arms and title of England. All these conditions were agreed to on the 8th of July; and soon after, both the French and English left the kingdom.

Reformation is settled in Scotland by parliament.

In August thereafter the parliament met, where four acts passed; one for the abolishing of the Pope's power. A second, for the repealing of all laws made in favour of the former superstition. A third, for the punishing of those that said or heard mass. And the fourth was a confirmation of the confession of faith; which was afterwards ratified and inserted in the acts of parliament, held anno 1567. It was penned by Knox, and agrees, in almost all things, with the Geneva confession.

Of the whole temporality, none but the Earl of Athol,

PART II.

1559.

and the Lords Somerville and Borthick, dissented to it: they said, they would believe as their fathers had done before them. The spiritual estate said nothing against it. The abbots struck in with the tide, upon assurance, that their abbeys should be converted to temporal lordships, and be given to them. Most of the bishops, seeing the stream so strong against them, complied likewise; and, to secure themselves, and enrich their friends or bastards, did dilapidate all the revenues of the church, in the strangest manner that has ever been known; and yet, for most of all these leases and alienations, they procured from Rome bulls to confirm them; pretending at that court, that they were necessary for making friends to their interests in Scotland.

Great numbers of these bulls I myself have seen and read: so that after all the noise that the church of Rome had made of the sacrilege in England, they themselves confirmed a more entire waste of the church's patrimony in Scotland; of which there was scarce any thing reserved for the clergy. But our kings have, since that time, used such effectual endeavours there, for the recovery of so much as might give a just encouragement to the labours of the clergy; that universally the inferior clergy is better provided for in no nation than in Scotland; for in glebe and tythes, every incumbent is by the law provided with at least 50*l.* sterling a year; which, in proportion to the cheapness of the country, is equal to twice so much in most parts of England. But there are not among them such provisions for encouraging the more learned and deserving men, as were necessary. When these acts of the Scottish parliament were brought into France to be confirmed, they were rejected with much scorn; so that the Scots were in fear of a new war. But the King of France dying in the beginning of December, all that cloud vanished; their Queen being now only Dowager of France, and in very ill terms with her mother-in-law, Queen Catharine de Medici, who hated her, because she had endeavoured to take her husband out of her hands, and to give him up wholly to the counsels of her uncles. So she being ill used in France, was forced to return to Scotland, and

Francis the Second died.

govern there in such manner, as the nation was pleased to submit to. BOOK III.

Thus had the Queen of England separated Scotland entirely from the interests of France, and united it to her own: and being engaged in the same cause of religion, she ever after this had that influence on all affairs there, that she never received any disturbance from thence, during all the rest of her glorious reign. In which, other accidents concurred to raise her to the greatest advantages in deciding foreign contests, that ever this crown had. 1559.

In July after she came to the crown, Henry the Second of France was unfortunately wounded in his eye at a tilting, the beaver of his helmet not being let down; so that he died of it soon after. His son Francis the Second succeeding, was then in the sixteenth year of his age, and assumed the government in his own name; but put it into the hands of his mother, the Cardinal of Lorrain, and the Duke of Guise. The Constable was put from the court, the princes of the blood were not regarded, but all things were carried by the Cardinal and his brother; between whom and the Queen-Mother there arose great misunderstandings, which proved fatal to the Queen of Scotland; for she, being much engaged with her uncles, and having an ascendant over her husband, did so divide him from his mother, that before he died, she had only the shadow of the government. This she remembered ever after against her daughter-in-law, and took no care of her afterwards in all her miseries. The civil wars of France.

But the Prince of Condé, with the Admiral, and many others, resolving to have the government in their hands, engaged some lawyers to examine the point of the King's majority: these wrote several books on that subject, to prove that two-and-twenty was the soonest that any king had been ever held to be of age to assume the government: and that no strangers nor women might be admitted to it by the law of France, but that it belonged to the princes of the blood, during the King's minority; who were to manage it by the advice of the courts of parliament, and the three estates. So that

PART II.

1559.

the design now concerted between these great lords, to take the King out of their hands who disposed of him, was grounded on their laws: yet, as this design was laying all over France, papists and protestants concurring in it, it was discovered by a protestant, who thought himself bound in conscience to reveal it. Upon this, the Prince of Conde and many others were seized on; and had not the King's death, in the beginning of December 1560, saved him, the Prince himself, and all the heads of that party, had suffered for it.

But upon his death, Charles the Ninth, that succeeded him, being but eleven years old, the King of Navarre was declared regent; and the Queen-Mother, who then hated the Cardinal of Lorrain, united herself to him and the Constable, and drew the weak Regent into her interests. Upon this, some lawyers examining the power of the Regent, found that the other princes of the blood were to have their share of the government with him; and that he might be checked by the courts of parliament, and was subject to an assembly of the three estates.

In July the next year, there was a severe edict passed against the protestants, to put down all their meetings, and banish all their preachers. The execution of it was put into the hands of the bishops; but the greater part of the nation would not bear it.

So in January thereafter, another edict passed, in a great assembly of the princes of the blood, the privy-counsellors, and eight courts of parliament, for the free exercise of that religion; requiring the magistrates to punish those who should hinder or disturb their meetings. Soon after this the Duke of Guise and his brother reconciled themselves to the Queen-Mother, and resolved to break that edict. This was begun by the Duke of Vassy, where a meeting of the protestants being gathered, his servants disturbed them; they began with reproachful words, from these it went to blows and throwing of stones, and by one of them the Duke was wounded; for which his men took a severe revenge, for they killed sixty of them, and wounded two hundred, sparing neither age nor sex. After this the

edict was every where broken. Many lawyers were of opinion, that the Regent could not do it, and that the people might lawfully follow the next prince of the blood in defence of the edict.

Upon this, his brother, the Prince of Condé, gathered an army. In the beginning of the war, the King of Navarre was killed at the siege of Rome; so that, by the law, the Prince of Condé ought to have succeeded him in the regency; and thus the wars that followed after this, could not be called rebellion; since the protestants had the law, and the first prince of the blood of their side, to whom the government did of right belong.

Thus began the civil wars of France, which lasted above thirty years; in all which time, the Queen of England, by the assistance she sent them, sometimes of men, but for the most part of money and ammunition, did support the protestant interest with no great charge to herself. And by that, she was not only secured from all the mischief which so powerful a neighbour could do her, but had almost the half of that kingdom depending on her.

The wars of the Netherlands.

The state of the Netherlands afforded the like advantages in those provinces; where the King of Spain, finding the proceedings of the bishops were not effectual for the extirpation of heresy, their sees being so large, intended to have founded more bishopricks, and to have set up the courts of inquisition in those parts; and apprehending some opposition from the natives, he kept garrisons of Spaniards among them, with many other things, contrary to the *lætus introitus*, that had been agreed to, when he was received to be their prince.

The people finding all terms broken with them, and that by that agreement they were disengaged from their obedience, if he broke those conditions, did shake off his yoke. Upon which followed the civil wars of the Netherlands, that lasted likewise above thirty years. To them the Queen gave assistance; at first more secretly, but afterwards more openly: and as both they and the French protestants were assisted with men out of Ger-

PART II.

1559.

many, which were generally led by the brave, but seldom fortunate, Casimir, brother to the Elector Palatine, so the money that paid them, was for most part furnished from England.

And thus was Queen Elizabeth the arbiter of all the neighbouring parts of Christendom. She at home brought the coin to a true standard: navigation prospered; trade spread, both in the northern seas to Archangel, and to the East and West-Indies; and in her long wars with Spain, she was always victorious. That great Armada, set out with such assurance of conquest, was, what by the hand of Heaven in a storm, what by the unweildness of their ships, and the nimbleness of ours, so shattered and sunk, that the few remainders of it returned with irrecoverable shame and loss to Spain again. She reigned in the affections of her people, and was admired for her knowledge, virtues, and wisdom, by all the world. She always ordered her counsels so, that all her parliaments were ever ready to comply with them; for in every thing she followed the true interest of the nation. She never asked subsidies, but when the necessity was visible; and when the occasions that made her demand any, vanished, she discharged them.

Vita de Sisto V.

She was admired even in Rome itself, where Sixtus the Fifth used to speak of her, and the King of Navarre, as the only princes that understood what it was to govern; and profanely wished he might enjoy her but one night, hoping they would beget a New Alexander the Great between them. But if that had been, and the child had taken after the father, it would have been more like Alexander the Sixth.

Notwithstanding all the attempts of Rome against her person and government, she still lived and triumphed. In the first ten years of her reign, all things were carried with such moderation, that there was no stir about religion. Pope Pius the Fourth, reflecting on the capricious and high answer his mad predecessor had made to her address, sent one Parpalia to her, in the second year of her reign, to invite her to join herself to that see, and he would disannul the sentence

against her mother's marriage, confirm the English service, and the use of the sacrament in both kinds. But she sent the agent word to stay at Brussels, and not to come over. The same treatment met Abbot Martinengo, who was sent the year after with the like message. From that time, all treaty with Rome was entirely broken off. Pius the Fourth proceeded no further; but his successor, Pius the Fifth, resolved to contrive her death, as he that wrote his life relates. Catena.

The unfortunate Queen of Scotland, upon the wars in her country was driven to seek shelter in England, where it was at first resolved to use her well, and to restore her to her crown and country; as will appear by two papers, which for their curiosity, being originals, I have put into the Collection. The one is the advice that Sir Walter Mildmay gave about it; the other is a long letter written concerning it by the Earl of Leicester to the Earl of Sussex. They were given me by that most ingenious and virtuous gentleman, Mr. Evelyn, who is not satisfied to have advanced the knowledge of this age, by his own most useful and successful labours, about planting, and divers other ways, but is ready to contribute every thing in his power to perfect other men's endeavours. Collect. Numb. 12.

But while the English council intended to have used the Queen of Scotland well, her own officious friends, by the frequent plots that were in a succession of many years carried on, sometimes by open rebellion, as in the north of England, and in Ireland, but more frequently by secret attempts, brought on her the calamities of a long imprisonment, and death in the conclusion.

Her death was the greatest blemish of this reign, being generally censured by all the age, except by Pope Sixtus the Fifth, who was a man that delighted in cruel executions, and so concluded her to be a happy woman that had the pleasure to cut off a crowned head. But Queen Elizabeth's own preservation from the many designs that were against her life, made it in some sort, if not necessary, yet more excusable in her: especially that unfortunate Queen having herself cherished the Vita de Sisto V.

PART II.

1559.

plot of Babington and Ballard, and having set her hand to the letters that were written to them about it, though she still denied that, and cast the blame of it on her secretaries; who (as she said) had gotten her hand to them without her knowledge. The Pope had deposed the Queen (as will appear by his sentence, which I have put in the Collection); and the Queen of Scotland being the next heir to the crown, and a zealous papist, those of that religion hoped, by destroying the Queen, to set her in her room; which put England in no small disorder, by associations, and other means that were used for preserving the Queen, and destroying the popish interest. The rebellions and plots in England and Ireland, were not a little supported by the assistance of King Philip, of Spain, who did all he could to embroil the Queen's affairs at home, though still without success. But the steps of the Queen's proceedings, both against papists and puritans, are so set out by her great and wise secretary, Sir Francis Walsingham in so clear a manner, that I shall set it down here as a most important piece of history; being written by one of the wisest and most virtuous ministers that these latter ages have produced. He wrote it in French to one Monsieur Critoy, a Frenchman, of which I have seen an English copy, taken (as is said) from the original.

Collect. Numb. 13.

" SIR,

Walsingham's letter concerning the Queen's proceedings against both papists and puritans.

" Whereas you desire to be advertised, touching the proceedings here in ecclesiastical causes, because you seem to note in them some inconstancy and variation, as if we inclined sometimes to one side, and sometimes to another; and as if that clemency and lenity were not used of late, that was used in the beginning: all which you imputed to your own superficial understanding of the affairs of this state, having, notwithstanding, her Majesty's doings in singular reverence, as the real pledges which she hath given unto the world of her sincerity in religion, and of her wisdom in government well meriteth. I am glad of this occasion, to impart that little I know in that matter unto you, both for



Francis Walsingham.

your own satisfaction, and to the end you may make use thereof, towards any that shall not be so modestly and so reasonably minded as you are. I find therefore her Majesty's proceedings to have been grounded upon two principles.

"The one, that consciences are not to be forced, but to be won and reduced by force of truth, with the aid of time, and use of all good means of instruction and persuasion.

"The other, that causes of consciences, when they exceed their bounds, and grow to be matter of faction, lose their nature, and that sovereign princes ought distinctly to punish their practices and contempt, though coloured with the pretence of conscience and religion.

"According to these principles, her Majesty, at her coming to the crown, utterly disliking the tyranny of Rome, which had used by terror and rigour to settle commandments of men's faith and consciences. Though, as a Princess of great wisdom and magnanimity, she suffered but the exercise of one religion; yet her proceedings towards the papists was with great lenity, expecting the good effects which time might work in them; and therefore her Majesty revived not the laws made in the twenty-eighth and thirty-fifth of her father's reign, whereby the oath of supremacy might have been offered at the King's pleasure to any subject, so he kept his conscience never so modestly to himself, and the refusal to take the same oath, without further circumstances was made treason. But contrariwise, her Majesty not liking to make windows into men's hearts and secret thoughts, except the abundance of them did overflow into overt and express acts, or affirmations, tempered her law so, as it restraineth every manifest disobedience, in impugning and impeaching, advisedly and maliciously, her Majesty's supreme power, maintaining and extolling a foreign jurisdiction: and as for the oath, it was altered by her Majesty into a more grateful form; the hardness of the name, and appellation of Supreme Head, was removed; and the penalty of the refusal thereof, turned only to disablement to take any promotion, or to exercise any charge, and yet of liberty to be reinvested therein,

PART II.

1559.

if any man should accept thereof, during his life. But after, when Pius Quintus excommunicated her Majesty, and the bulls of excommunication were published in London, whereby her Majesty was in a sort proscribed; and that thereupon, as upon a principal motive or preparative, followed the rebellion in the north; yet because the ill humours of the realm were by that rebellion partly purged, and that she feared at that time no foreign invasion, and much less the attempt of any within the realm, not backed by some potent power and succour from without, she contented herself to make a law against that special case, of bringing in and publishing of any bulls, or the like instruments; whereunto was added a prohibition upon pain, not of treason, but of an inferior degree of punishment, against the bringing of the *Agnus Dei's*, and such other merchandize of Rome as are well known not to be any essential part of the Romanish religion, but only to be used in practice, as love-tokens, to enchant and bewitch the people's affections from their allegiance to their natural sovereign. In all other points her Majesty continued her former lenity; but when, about the twentieth year of her reign, she had discovered in the King of Spain an intention to invade her dominions; and that a principal part of the plot, was to prepare a party within the realm that might adhere to the foreigner; and that the seminaries began to blossom, and to send forth daily, priests and professed men, who should by vow taken at shrift reconcile her subjects from their obedience; yea, and bind many of them to attempt against her Majesty's sacred person; and that, by the poison which they spread, the humours of most papists were altered, and that they were no more papists in conscience and of softness, but papists in faction: then were there new laws made for the punishment of such as should submit themselves to such reconcilements, or renunciation of obedience: and because it was a treason carried in the clouds, and in wonderful secrecy, and come seldom to light; and that there was no presuspicion thereof so great, as the recusancy to come to divine service, because it was set down by their decrees, that to come to church before recon-

ciliation, was to live in schism; but to come to church after reconcilement, was absolutely heretical and damnable. Therefore there were added laws containing punishment pecuniary, *videlicet*, such as might not enforce consciences, but to enfeeble and impoverish the means of those about whom it resteth indifferent and ambiguous, whether they were reconciled or not: and when, notwithstanding all this provision, the poison was dispersed so secretely, as that there was no means to stay it, but by restraining the merchants that brought it in. Then lastly, there was added a law, whereby such seditious priests, of new erection, were exiled; and those that were at that time within the land, shipped over, and so commanded to keep hence upon pain of treason. This hath been the proceeding, though intermingled, not only with sundry examples of her Majesty's grace towards such as in her wisdom she knew to be papists in conscience, and not faction and singularity; but also with extraordinary mitigation towards the offenders in the highest degree, committed by law, if they would but protest, that if in case this realm should be invaded with a foreign army, by the Pope's authority, for the catholic cause, as they term it, they would take part with her Majesty, and not adhere to her enemies.

"For the other party, which have been offensive to the state, though in another degree, which named themselves Reformers, and we commonly call Puritans, this hath been the proceeding towards them: a great while, when they enveighed against such abuses in the church, as pluralities, non-residence, and the like, their zeal was not condemned, only their violence was sometimes censured. When they refused the use of some ceremonies and rites, as superstitious, they were tolerated with much connivancy and gentleness; yea, when they called in question the superiority of bishops, and pretended to a democracy into the church; yet their propositions were here considered, and by contrary writings debated and discussed. Yet all this while, it was perceived that their course was dangerous, and very popular: as because papistry was odious, therefore it was ever in their mouths, that they sought to purge the church from the

PART II.

relics of papistry; a thing acceptable to the people, who love ever to run from one extreme to another.

1559.

"Because multitude of rogues and poverty was an eyesore, and a dislike to every man; therefore they put into the people's head, that if discipline were planted, there should be no vagabonds nor beggars, a thing very plausible: and in like manner they promised the people many of the impossible wonders of their discipline; besides, they opened to the people a way to government, by their consistory and presbytery; a thing, though in consequence no less prejudical to the liberties of private men, than to the sovereignty of princes; yet in first shew very popular. Nevertheless, this, except it were in some few that entered into extreme contempt, was borne with, because they pretended in dutiful manner to make propositions, and to leave it to the providence of God and the authority of the magistrate.

"But now of late years, when there issued from them that affirmed, the consent of the magistrate was not to be attended; when, under pretence of a confession, to avoid slander and imputations, they combined themselves by classes and subscriptions, when they descended into that vile and base means of defacing the government of the church by ridiculous pasquils; when they began to make many subjects in doubt to take oaths, which is one of the fundamental parts of justice in this land, and in all places; when they began both to vaunt of their strength, and number of their partizans and followers, and to use combinations that their cause would prevail, through uproar and violence, then it appeared to be no more zeal, no more conscience, but mere faction and division: and, therefore, though the state were compelled to hold somewhat a harder hand to restrain them than before, yet was it with as great moderation, as the peace or state of the church would permit. And therefore, Sir, to conclude, consider uprightly of these matters, and you shall see her Majesty is no more a temporizer in religion:—it is not the success abroad, nor the change of servants here at home, can alter her; only as the things themselves alter, she applied her religious wisdom to methods correspondent

unto them; still retaining the two rules beforementioned, in dealing tenderly with consciences, and yet in discovering faction from conscience, and softness from singularity. Farewell.

"Your loving friend,

"F. WALSINGHAM."

Thus I have prosecuted, what I first undertook, the progress of the Reformation, from its first and small beginnings in England, till it came to a complete settlement in the time of this Queen: of whose reign, if I have adventured to give any account, it was not intended so much for a full character of her and her councils, as to set out the great and visible blessings of God that attended on her; the many preservations she had, and that by such signal discoveries, as both saved her life, and secured her government; and the unusual happiness of her whole reign, which raised her to the esteem and envy of that age, and the wonder of all posterity. It was wonderful indeed, that a virgin queen could rule such a kingdom, for above forty-four years, with such constant success, in so great tranquillity at home, with a vast increase of wealth, and with such glory abroad. All which may justly be esteemed to have been the rewards of Heaven, crowning that reign with so much honour and triumph, that was begun with the reformation of religion.

THE END OF THE THIRD BOOK.